

UNIVERSITY OF ARIZONA



39001020572361























No longer the property of  
The University of Arizona

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

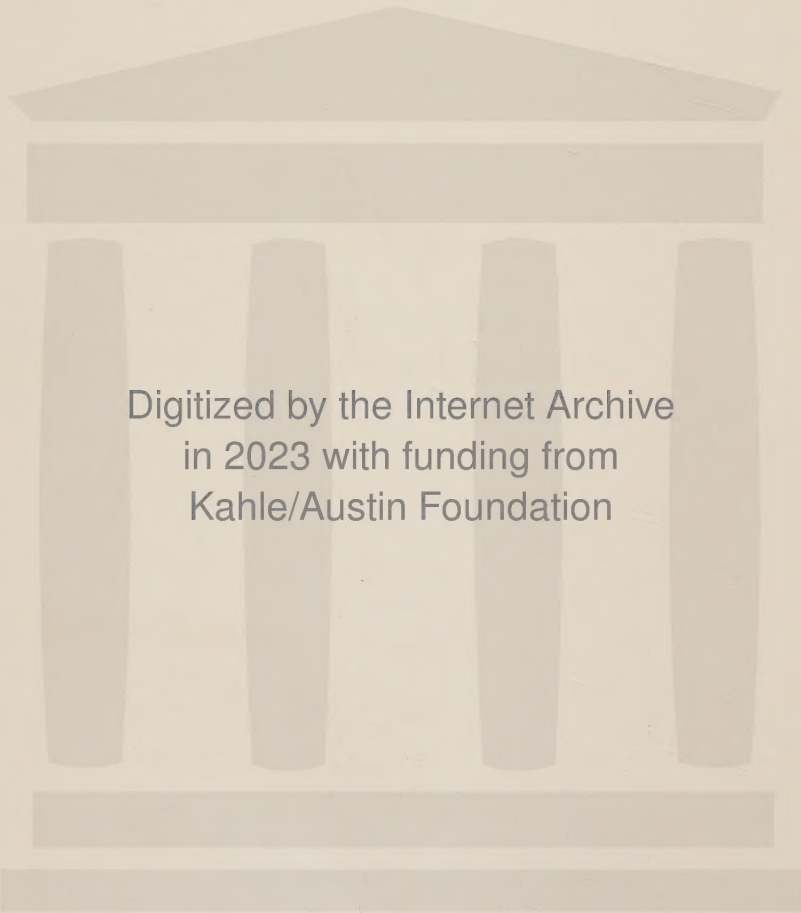
VOLUME VII.

1916

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

No longer a property of  
the University of Washington



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2023 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation



# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Board of Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
J. N. BOWMAN, Seattle.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	OLIVER H. RICHARDSON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
E. O. S. SCHOLEFIELD, Victoria, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VII. NO. 1

JANUARY, 1916

ISSUED QUARTERLY

## Contents

M. ORION MONROE.....	A Critical Discussion of the Site of Camp Washington .....	3
C. L. ANDREWS.....	Marine Disasters of the Alaska Route .....	2
JUNIUS THOMAS TURNER.....	A Tribute to the Memory of Brigadier General James Clark Strong....	38
JOHN EDWIN AYER.....	George Bush, Voyageur.....	40
VITOR J. FARRAR .....	Pioneer and Historical Societies of the State of Washington.....	46
EDITH G. PROSCH .....	The Pioneer Dead of 1915.....	51
DOCUMENTS—Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House. Edited by Clarence B. Bagley .....		59
BOOK REVIEWS .....		76
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		86
NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS .....		90

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

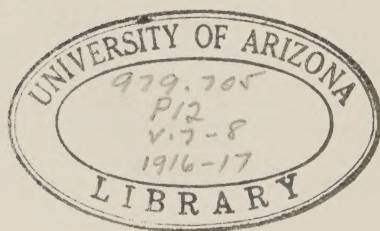
JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL



## The Washington Historical Quarterly

### A CRITICAL DISCUSSION OF THE SITE OF CAMP WASHINGTON\*

On the 28th day of October, 1908, the Washington State Historical Society, assisted by the Four Mound Grange, School Children and Friends, erected a massive granite monument on the south-eastern portion of Four Mound Prairie, which was to commemorate and point out to posterity the spot upon which was located Camp Washington, where Governor I. I. Stevens and his exploring and surveying parties camped from October 25th to 30th, 1853. The granite marker is located on the N. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$ , S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$ , Section 4, Township 26 N., R. 40, E. W. M., and is on the farmstead of Mr. O. B. Gilstrap. It is situated in front of and to the right of the Four Mound Grange Hall and faces the farm residence of Mr. Gilstrap.

The Commemorative Exercises began at 11:30 o'clock on the morning of the 28th of October<sup>1</sup>, just fifty-five years to the day from the time Governor Stevens and Captain McClellan were joined at the camp by Lieutenant Donelson with the main party of the eastern division of the survey<sup>2</sup>, and was attended and witnessed by a large gathering of people. Among the persons present at that time were, the Hon. R. L. McCormick, President of the Washington State Historical Society; the Hon. Albert E. Mead, Governor of the State of Washington; Mr. Owen B. Gilstrap of Four Mound Prairie; Judge L. B. Nash; Colonel L. Febiger of the United States Army and Mr. W. H. Gilstrap, a cousin of Mr. Owen B. Gilstrap. Mr. W. H. Gilstrap gave the principal address of the day, in which he recounted historically the exploring and surveying expedition organized and sent out by the United States Government under the command of Isaac I. Stevens, and also set forth the

\*This article was written as a partial fulfillment of a course of study in History Twenty-two, "Frontier History of the United States," at the State College of Washington during the Second Semester of the year 1915.—M. Orion Monroe.

<sup>1</sup>Washington State Historical Society, Publications, II, 132.

<sup>2</sup>Explorations for a Railroad Route from the Mississippi River to the Pacific, 1853-56, XII, part 1, 149. Note: All subsequent citations to the volumes which comprise this work will be given as "Reports."



reasons why the Washington State Historical Society had agreed upon that particular spot as the ground upon which to locate the monument commemorating the site of Camp Washington.

The looseness of the work of the Historical Society in its efforts to locate the camp site together with the inconsistency of the arguments advanced by Mr. Gilstrap and a careful study of the evidence at hand concerning the proposition, leads us to believe that the granite slab erected by the Washington State Historical Society to commemorate the ground once occupied by Camp Washington has not been placed in the correct location. It seems that there has been some contention over the location of the monument for on page 232 of Volume II of the Washington State Historical Society Publications, Mr. Gilstrap makes the following statement:

"There are some points in history which historians, it seems, cannot agree upon. Some relate to the spots where historical events occurred, others relate to who were the principal characters. We do not propose to try to settle any of these debatable questions today; time will not permit us to enter into the discussion of any of them. However, my attention has been called to the fact that there are parties who contend that Camp Washington, where Generals Isaac I. Stevens and George B. McClellan, and their parties met and camped some two weeks in 1853; where Governor Stevens began and planned some of his work as Governor of Washington Territory, is not where the Historical Society erected a monument in 1908 to commemorate that great event.

"According to Governor Stevens' report his party went about eight miles beyond, or west of Spokane House to where there was plenty of water and grass, and six miles south of the winding ford on the Spokane River, which would make the spot at a small lake and spring on Four Mound Prairie. Indians who were there claim that was the place; they even go into details telling how the camp was laid off. Those who claim it was at another place, point out a spot fourteen or fifteen miles from Spokane House, and about nine miles from the winding ford. The former place is the only site in that neighborhood where there was plenty of both water and grass, which was necessary for the large party of both men and horses connected with the expedition."

The purpose of this article is to place before the public some facts concerning the matter and to prove that the site of Camp Washington was not where the marker erected by the Washington State Historical Society now indicates, but that the true site of the "First Capital of Washington Territory" is located in the forks of Coulee Creek, a branch of Deep Creek, and very near the center of Section 22, Township 26, N. R. 40, E. W. M., which is some six miles south-west of the location of the

granite slab on Four Mound Prairie. The writer's attention was first called to the possible error in the location of the camp Washington monument by Mr. Jacob A. Meyers of Meyers Falls, Washington. Mr. Meyers is a pioneer of Stevens County and a very close student of Northwest History and to him the writer is indebted for numerous photographs of the locality.

Mr. W. H. Gilstrap in his address at the exercises on Four Mound Prairie set forth some apparently good reasons for locating the monument on the spot the Historical Society placed it, but a careful reader of the "Reports of the Explorations and Surveys to Ascertain the Most Practical and Economical Route for a Railroad from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean, 1853-56" will notice that Mr. Gilstrap cited only such references as would allow the impression that the monument was being erected in the correct place. Even these references carry very little weight as far as locating the site of Camp Washington on Four Mound Prairie is concerned, as it is plainly evident that Mr. Gilstrap misinterpreted the records left by Governor Stevens and the members of his expedition. Mr. Gilstrap gave four reasons why the spot on Four Mound Prairie was selected, namely, that certain Indians, who claimed to have been present at the camp, said that the monument was being placed correctly; that Governor Stevens, in his reports, stated that the camp was located about eight and one-half miles beyond the Spokane House; and that the Governor also stated that it was located some six miles south of the winding ford on the Spokane River; and finally, that at the camp there was an abundance of grass and water, and that the spot on Four Mound Prairie abounded with these two necessities and furthermore, it was the only spot in that vicinity which did.

Mr. Gilstrap's first argument, which is his best, he states as follows:—

"Indians who were there claim that was the place; they even go into details telling how the camp was laid off".

This remark must be taken for what it is worth and no more, inasmuch as Mr. Gilstrap did not produce the names of any of the Indians, who were supposed to have been present at the camps some fifty-five years before, and consequently the reader is left in doubt as to the proof of the facts in the case. In considering the testimony of the Indians, we must remember that their minds are rather child-like and that they are easily influenced and consequently their word cannot be relied upon explicitly. Then to, it seems to be a trait of human nature for an individual to set forth the claim of having seen and talked to some great historical personage or witnessed some important historical event, and so, it is possible that the testimony of the Indians was entirely false, or it may be, that they were mistaken and confused in the time, the place, and the party, since sev-

eral parties had passed through that portion of the country during the period from 1840 to 1870.

Mr. Gilstrap insisted that Camp Washington was located some eight miles west of the Old Spokane House and he quotes the Stevens reports to that effect, but in no portion of the reports can a statement by Governor Stevens, Captain McClellan, Lieutenant Donelson or any other member of the party, be found, which expressly states that Camp Washington was located eight miles west of the ruins of the Spokane House. The records do show that the camp of the 17th of October was located some ten miles northwest of the Spokane House and this is the only camp of the Stevens Party which was situated within eleven miles of the Spokane House, but this camp was for one night only and in no portion of the writings was it ever mentioned as Camp Washington. There are many references<sup>3</sup> in the records which indicate that the site of Camp Washington was located twelve and one-half miles from the ruins of Spokane House, but no mention is made of "eight miles from Spokane House" when referring to Camp Washington. Even though the true location for Camp Washington were eight and one-half miles from the Spokane House, the granite marker erected by the Historical Society on Four Mound Prairie would be out of position, inasmuch as it stands only a distance of five and one-half miles from the ruins of Spokane House. In his speech, Secretary Gilstrap made the following quotation<sup>4</sup> from Governor Stevens' Reports:—

"October 17th,

leaving camp, Antoine, Osgood, Stanley and myself, turned from the trail to visit the falls of the Coeur d'Alene River, while La Vatte took the train ahead to the Spokane House. The road to the Spokane House was over a sandy prairie, interspersed with groves of pine. Crossing a dividing ridge with high steep banks, we came into the prairie in which the Spokane House is situated, in which there are two Indian villages. The train we found a mile below the junction, across the Spokane. The Indians indicating a good camp some distance beyond, we moved on eight and one-half miles to it, which we reached a half hour before sun-down. Here there was good grass and plenty of water, and we soon made a large fire. After arranging matter in camp, I observed about night-fall a fire down towards the river, and, strolling down to the place, came upon a little band of Spokane Indians, \* \* \* \* \*

This is the particular reference upon which Secretary Gilstrap based his assertion, that Camp Washington was located eight miles west of the Spokane House. Let us notice the distance. The ruins of the Spokane

<sup>3</sup>Reports, I, 66-68; 363-364; XII, part 1, 146; XI, map 3; and profile map, Fort Benton to Walla Walla; I, 270.

<sup>4</sup>Washington State Historical Society, Publications, II, 141.



House is located about three-quarters of a mile from the junction of the Spokane and Little Spokane rivers, and the Governor states that he overtook the train a mile below the junction, across the Spokane, and then moved on from that point eight and one-half miles to the camp. This would place the camp of October 17th, which was not Camp Washington, some ten and one-quarter miles from the Spokane House.

The next fact to be taken into consideration in taking up this particular reference, is, that in the early days the present Spokane River from Lake Coeur d'Alene to the junction of the Little Spokane River, was called Coeur d'Alene River, while the present Little Spokane River was known as the Spokane River, and General Stevens always designated them accordingly in his writings. Lieutenant Saxon was the only member of the party who indicated<sup>5</sup> the river above the junction with the Little Spokane as the Spokane. When Governor Stevens speaks of visiting the falls of the Coeur d'Alene River, he refers to the Spokane Falls, around which the present city of Spokane is located. Stevens speaks of reaching the Spokane House and of finding the train "a mile below the junction, across the Spokane". By the "junction," he means the junction of the present Spokane and Little Spokane rivers near the site of the Spokane House, and the "across the Spokane" refers to the fact that the train had crossed the Little Spokane River. Mr. Gilstrap would have us infer that Governor Stevens was referring to the present Spokane River, but such was not the case, and here at this point Secretary Gilstrap and the Historical Society clearly made a very serious misinterpretation.

When we take into consideration that Governor Stevens always referred to the Little Spokane River as the Spokane River and that when he departed from Father Gazzile and the Coeur d'Alene Mission on the 15th of October, he left with the express purpose of visiting Colville, we arrive at but one conclusion, and that is, that Stevens overtook the train after it had crossed the Little Spokane, about a mile below the junction of the rivers, and on the right bank of the Spokane. The party then moved on down the river eight and one-half miles and encamped for the night in the vicinity of the present village of Tum Tum. Common sense would have not allowed Stevens to cross the Spokane River and move over to Four Mound Prairie, for in doing so, he would have journeyed five or six miles out of his way, not to mention having to ascend and descend an elevation of nearly one thousand feet and making it necessary in moving on to Colville to recross the river next morning, which the Governor does not mention recrossing. Then too, there was a trail leading along the right bank of the Spokane, which branched across to the Chemakane

<sup>5</sup>Reports, I, 256.

through the hills near Tum Tum<sup>6</sup>. Again, Mr. Gilstrap quotes Stevens as follows:—

“After arranging matters in camp, I observed about nightfall a fire down *towards* the river, and strolling down to the place, came upon a little camp of Spokane Indians, \* \* \* \* \*.”

Mr. Gilstrap has supplied the word “towards”, as the original report<sup>7</sup> does not contain that word, but states:—

“\* \* \* \* \*, I observed a fire down the river, and, strolling down to the place, came upon a little camp of Spokane Indians, \* \* \* \* \*.”

If the word “towards” was intentionally supplied, the reason for so doing can be readily understood, inasmuch as, after traveling all day, a stroll of some five miles to and from the Spokane River with an elevation of nearly one thousand feet to overcome on the return, would have been a considerable distance, especially since the Governor and his party did not reach the camp until just a half an hour before sun-down.

There is little doubt but that the camp prepared by Governor Stevens and his party on the evening of October 17th, 1853, was located on the right bank of the Spokane River at a distance of about nine and one-half miles below the junctoin of the Little Spokane. And it is upon the location of this camp of the 17th, which as stated before was not Camp Washington, that Secretary Gilstrap and the State Historical Society base their claims for locating the Camp Washington monument on the farmstead of O. B. Gilstrap on Four Mound Prairie. The monument is located about seven and one-half miles south-east of the camp of the 17th. As further proof that the camp of October 17th was on the Spokane River, we have the report of Mr. Stanley, a portion of which reads as follows<sup>8</sup>:—

“October 18—Left our camp and the Spokane River at an early hour, and taking a more northerly course over a succession of pine clad hills, reached a valley from two to five miles broad, affording good grass and some arable land.”

Their change of direction to a “more northerly course” in order to cross the succession of pine clad hills, which are situated just north of Tum Tum, indicates clearly that the party had been following the trail which led along the right bank of the river in a north-westerly direction. The final statement of the report by Mr. Stanley is:—

“Distance from *the camp on the Spokane* to Colville, sixty miles.”

This fairly closes the point in question to any further argument.

Perhaps there are some who will argue that Governor Stevens estab-

<sup>6</sup>Reports, I, 368, line 41, and Mullan's map.

<sup>7</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 136.

<sup>8</sup>Reports, I, 368, 369.

lished Camp Washington on the 17th of October and then on the following day made the hurried journey to Colville in order to meet Captain McClellan and his party. If the camp prepared on the evening on the 17th was a permanent camp, why did the Governor send the train on through to Colville? It could have been left at the camp as the information he received made it practically certain that it was Captain McClellan and his party that had reached the bank of the Columbia River, just opposite to Fort Colville. The Governor reached Colville at 9 o'clock in the evening of October 18th, and after conferring with Captain McClellan, he makes the following statement in his report<sup>9</sup>:—

"I accordingly resolved to bring the whole party together at a camp south of the Spokane River, \* \* \* \* \*"

This was dated the 19th of October, apparently after the Governor had been in Colville some twelve or fourteen hours, and it is noticeable that he used the word "a" and not "the", which he would have done had he been speaking of a camp already established. Again on the 20th of October, Stevens states<sup>10</sup>:

"Garry started with a letter to Donelson, appointing as the place of meeting a valley south of the Spokane River, some ten or twelve miles south of the Spokane House. This spot is only a short distance off the trail leading from Walker and Eell's Mission to Walla Walla."

This statement refers to the true site of the camp, which was afterwards designated as "Camp Washington" or as it was called by some members of the party, "Camp Helse-de-lite"<sup>11</sup>, and it shows that as late as October 20th, Governor Stevens had not viewed the camp site, in fact, he does not intimate that he even knows just exactly where it is, which is borne out by the fact that he placed the camp "ten or twelve miles south of the Spokane House" when the correct designation should have been ten or twelve miles south-west of the Spokane House.

A perusal of the Governor's writings will show that he and his party left Fort Colville on October 21st<sup>12</sup> and that they expected to reach the appointed place of meeting—Camp Washington—on the evening of October 24th<sup>13</sup>, but were unable to do so, and encamped that night near the Chemakane Mission, where Governor Stevens and Captain McClellan laid plans to accompany Chief Garry to the Spokane House on the following day, for on the 25th of October, we have the following statement<sup>14</sup> by the Governor:—

<sup>9</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 146.

<sup>10</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 146.

<sup>11</sup>Reports, I, 386.

<sup>12</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 147.

<sup>13</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 147, 148.

<sup>14</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 148.



"Having left the necessary directions for raising the camp and moving it to the place of meeting with Donelson, agreeable to the arrangement made yesterday, Captain McClellan and myself accompanied Garry to the Spokane House, hoping there to hear from Donelson. \* \* \* \* \* We then went to our *new* camp south of the Spokane, *which had been established whilst we were visiting Garry's place.*

Finally, if the camp established on the 17th day of October was Camp Washington, as claimed by Secretary Gilstrap, why should Governor Stevens, in speaking of the camp on the 25th day of October, designate it as a "new camp"?

Mr. Gilstrap's third argument, that Camp Washington was located, according to Governor Stevens' reports, some six miles south of the winding ford on the Spokane River, is approximately correct. The true site of the camp in question was located at a point six miles south-east (twenty-two and a half degrees east of south)<sup>15</sup> of the winding ford, which is located about a half mile above the Long Lake Canyon. We shall have more to say concerning the location of this ford a little later.

The fourth point put forward by Mr. Gilstrap, which is concerning the abundance of water and grass, is stated as follows<sup>16</sup>:—

"According to Governor Stevens' report his party went about eight miles beyond or west of Spokane House to where there was plenty of water and grass, and six miles south of the winding ford on the Spokane River, which would make the spot at a small lake and spring on Four Mound Prairie. \* \* \* \* \* The former place (Four Mound Prairie) is the only site in that neighborhood where there was plenty of both water and grass, which was necessary for the large party of both men and horses connected with the expedition."

To begin with, Mr. Gilstrap is referring to the camp of October 17th, the location of which we have established to be on the right bank of the Spokane River some ten and one-quarter miles from the Spokane House, and not on Four Mound Prairie as Mr. Gilstrap would have us believe. To be sure, Governor Stevens states that there was an abundance of grass and water here<sup>17</sup>, but this was not Camp Washington. No mention is made in the reports of the camp of the 17th being six miles south of the winding ford on the Spokane River and it was not so located, as we have already shown, nor can a reference be found in which the site of Camp Washington is placed on a "small lake". No doubt there was plenty of water and grass at the spot on Four Mound Prairie in the year 1853, but Secretary Gilstrap is in error in stating that Four Mound Prairie was the only site in that neighborhood where there was a sufficiency of water

<sup>15</sup>Reports, XI, map 3.

<sup>16</sup>Washington State Historical Society, Publications, II, 233.

<sup>17</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 136.

and grass for such an expedition. Notwithstanding the fact that there is no statement by Governor Stevens which explicitly says that there was a good supply of water and grass at the site of Camp Washington, which in itself only goes to show that Mr. Gilstrap erred in one of his most important arguments for placing the camp-site on Four Mound Prairie, it can be taken for granted that there was an abundance of both water and grass at Camp Washington, inasmuch as it was situated, as we shall show later, in the forks of Coulee Creek and we have the report of Engineer J. F. Minter which indicates that there was an ample supply of grass. The statement is as follows<sup>18</sup>:—

“October 26.—

To camp Helse-de-lite [Camp Washington]. \* \* \* \* \* ;  
camp in a deep and narrow valley, with *good grass on the plateau.*”

A visit to the true site of Camp Washington in the forks of Coulee Creek will show that there was a great abundance of both water and grass, sufficient for the needs of an adequate camp-site, especially when we remember that the party only remained five and one-half days at the camp.

This brings us to the final consideration of the granite marker erected by the Washington State Historical Society on Four Mound Prairie. On the face of the monument is the following inscription:—

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

\*    COMMEMORATING THE ESTABLISHING    \*

\*        OF CAMP WASHINGTON        \*

\*        BY GOVERNOR ISAAC I. STEVENS        \*

\*                ON THE SITE                \*

\*        IN FRONT OF THIS MONUMENT        \*

\*        WHERE HE AND GEN'L THEN        \*

\*        CAPTAIN GEORGE B. McCLELLAN        \*

\*                AND THEIR MILITARY                \*

\*        AND ENGINEERING FORCES MET        \*

\*                AND CAMPED FROM                \*

\*        OCTOBER 17TH TO 30TH 1853        \*

\*                ERECTED BY THE                \*

\*        STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY        \*

\*        ASSISTED BY THE FOUR MOUND        \*

\*        GRANGE SCHOOL CHILDREN        \*

\*                AND OTHER CITIZENS                \*

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

<sup>18</sup>Reports, I, 386.

If we are to believe the evidence left us by the reports of Governor Stevens, Captain McClellan and other members of the Stevens party, as set forth in the "Reports of the Explorations and Surveys to Ascertain the Most Practical and Economical Route for a Railroad from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean, 1853-56," and it is needless to state that the above mentioned reports are authentic historical evidence concerning the subject in question, we have every possible reason to believe that the statement set forth on the face of the Four Mound Prairie Monument, that the Stevens Party met and camped at Camp Washington from October 17th to 30th, 1853, is absolutely false. The Governor, Captain McClellan and their parties met and camped at Camp Washington from October 25th to 30th, 1853. It is certainly clear that Governor Stevens and Captain McClellan were together at Fort Colville from the evening of the 18th day of October until the 21st day of the same month, Stevens leaving Colville on October 21st<sup>19</sup>, and McClellan on October 22nd<sup>20</sup>. Camp Washington was not erected until October 25th, the Governor and Captain McClellan arriving at the camp, after their call with Garry at the Spokane House, on the evening of the same day<sup>21</sup>. Lieutenant Donelson and his party arrived at the camp on the 28th day of October<sup>22</sup>. From the Stevens Narrative of 1853, we have the following statement:—

"October 26, 27, 28, and 29—During these days I was occupied at our camp [Camp Washington] in making arrangements for moving westward."

Governor Stevens departed from Camp Washington at 4 o'clock on the afternoon of October 29th<sup>23</sup>, and Captain McClellan left the following day, October 30th<sup>24</sup>. Thus the location of the monument was not the only mistake made by Secretary Gilstrap and the Washington State Historical Society in the exercises in commemoration of the establishment of Camp Washington, held on Four Mound Prairie on the 28th day of October, 1908. The error in the date of the camp was due to Mr. Gilstrap identifying the camp of October 17th with Camp Washington, but there is very little excuse for this mistake, as every point in question concerning the date of Camp Washington is clearly set forth in the records, and the error in the location of the monument is just as absurd, for there is no reason to think that any of the parties mentioned, ever saw, much less camped upon, the spot upon which the monument is located, at the time mentioned.

<sup>19</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 147.

<sup>20</sup>Reports, I, 199.

<sup>21</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 148.

<sup>22</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 149; I, 57.

<sup>23</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 149.

<sup>24</sup>Reports, I, 199.

The site of Camp Washington is clearly described in several portions of the Stevens reports and by different members of the party, and by summing each and every statement concerning the description of the site of the camp, we are compelled to conclude that the official and true Camp Washington was located (1) some twelve and one-half miles south-west of the Spokane House<sup>25</sup>, (2) six miles south-east of the winding ford on the Spokane River<sup>26</sup>, (3) in the forks of a small stream<sup>27</sup>, (4) in "a deep and narrow valley"<sup>28</sup>, (5) and only "a short distance off the trail leading from Walker and Eel's Mission to Walla Walla"<sup>29</sup>. The winding ford on the Spokane River is just five miles south of the Chemakane Mission<sup>30</sup> and the trail leading from the ford to the camp site "passed one small lake on the left"<sup>31</sup>. This lake is evidently one of several small lakes located in Sections 9, 10, 15, and 16, Township 26, N. R. 40, E. W. M. The above description of the "First Capital of Washington Territory", from which no difference of opinion can be found among the statements of the members of the expedition, places the camp site in the forks of Coulee Creek, in a small valley near the center of Section 22, Township 26, N. R. 40, E. W. M.

Let us determine exactly why the above location, namely, the forks of Coulee Creek, fulfills all the descriptions for the location of the camp site. The first points to be taken into consideration are that the records show that Camp Washington was located at a point twelve and one-half miles from the Spokane House and six miles from the winding ford on the Spokane River. These two facts have been proven by the written reports and by Map No. 3, which is entitled, "Rocky Mountains to Puget Sound", from the Explorations and Surveys made under the Direction of the Hon. Jefferson Davis, Secretary of War, by Isaac I. Stevens, Governor of Washington Territory. There is a slight discrepancy in the written descriptions of the direction of the camp site from the Spokane House, inasmuch as the Governor designates that it is located "some ten or twelve miles south of the Spokane House"<sup>32</sup> and the spot in the forks of Coulee Creek is twelve and one-half miles south-west of Spokane House. This is due to the fact that the Governor gave this description of the location of the site while he was at Fort Colville, before he had ever seen the exact site of the camp and it is very probable that Stevens never made the trip between the Spokane House and Camp Washington. In his report<sup>33</sup> he tells of visiting Garry at Spokane House and then states:—

<sup>25</sup>Reports, XI, map 3; XII, part 1, 146; I, 67, 68, 69, 270, 363, 364.

<sup>26</sup>Reports, XI, map 3; XII, part 1, 148; I, 386.

<sup>27</sup>Reports, XI, map 3; I, 199, 363.

<sup>28</sup>Reports, I, 386.

<sup>29</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 146.

<sup>30</sup>Reports, I, 386; XII, part 1, 148.

<sup>31</sup>Reports, I, 386.

<sup>32</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 146.

<sup>33</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 148.



“We then went to our new camp south of the Spokane, which had been erected whilst we were visiting Garry’s place. From the Chemakane Mission the train [trail] left the river, and passing over a rolling country covered with open pine woods, in five miles reached the Spokane, and crossing it by a good and winding ford ascended the plain, and in six miles, the first two of which was through open pine, reached Camp Washington.”

This might be interpreted to mean that Stevens and McClellan, after visiting Spokane House, retraced their steps and proceeded to Camp Washington via the winding ford. At least, the Governor says nothing of the trail from Spokane House to Camp Washington, and if the above is true, it can readily be understood how the Governor, in his description, might err in the direction of the camp from the Spokane House, his knowledge being based on information received at Colville. In Donelson’s report there is a statement<sup>34</sup> which says:—

“ \* \* \* \* \* . The main party crossing to the Spokane River, thence proceeded to a point twelve miles west, where we met yourself and Captain McClellan and his party.”

This statement refers to Camp Washington and locates the site twelve miles from the crossing at the Spokane House, which was situated about one-half mile below the house.

Map No. 3 is probably the most authentic evidence we have concerning the direction taken by the parties and the location of the different camps, being a recapitulation of the work and travels of the engineers of the expedition, and was drawn after Donelson and party had made the survey from the Spokane House to the site of the camp. It shows the route from Chemakane Mission to the winding ford on the Spokane River to be 12 degrees west of south and a distance of five miles, which places the ford correctly, on the boundary line between Spokane and Lincoln counties and a half mile above the high, rocky bluff at the Long Lake Canyon. The ford at this place is the only point on the Spokane River in that vicinity where such a rocky bluff is located. From the report by Second Lieutenant J. K. Duncan, we have the following statement<sup>35</sup>:—

“From the mission the trail runs over a low hilly country, covered with open pine woods, to the Spokane River, leaving the Chemakane on the right. The descent to and the ascent from the Spokane River is abrupt and rocky. There is a tolerably good diagonal ford at this point—bottom gravelly and somewhat stony. The river is about seventy-five feet wide and three deep, current rapid. A very precipitous, high, rocky bluff is on the left bank, half a mile below the ford.”

<sup>34</sup>Reports, I, 270.

<sup>35</sup>Reports, I, 216.

This description coincides exactly with the point mentioned above, which is just above the Washington Water Power Company's Dam at Long Lake, Washington. From the winding ford the trail to Camp Washington runs twenty-two and a half degrees east of south, a distance of six miles, and from the crossing at Spokane House to the camp, the trail leads twenty-two and a half degrees (two points<sup>36</sup>) south of west, a distance of twelve miles. The above mentioned points can be shown by the use of a protractor and scale on Map No. 3, and if an up-to-date map of Spokane County is employed and the same directions followed, the same point is located, namely, the N. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$ , S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$ , Section 22, Township 26, N. R. 40, E. W. M.

The second point to be noticed is that the camp is located in the forks of Coulee Creek as shown by the Stevens Map No. 3, this alone being sufficient to locate the camp correctly even if there had been no written descriptions left concerning it, and the above mentioned point in Section 22 places it accordingly. The third point is that the written descriptions of the camp site place it in a valley. Assistant Engineer J. F. Minter in his report states that the camp was in "a deep and narrow valley", and he further substantiates this assertion by the statement<sup>37</sup>:—

"October 30.—

To Sul-ilt-kwu. Ascended from the valley of our camp to the plateau."

Governor Stevens also describes the camp as being located in a valley south of the Spokane, and the forks of Coulee Creek being in a valley answers to this description. It is highly possible that Mr. Minter's description, "a deep and narrow valley," will convey to the reader the idea that Camp Washington was located in a canyon-like depression, but in all probability the representation is a trifle far-fetched. The valley in which the forks of Coulee Creek is located is not so very deep and canyon-like, but it does answer to the description of a valley and is a rather deep one when we take into consideration the contour of the surrounding country. The fourth point in the description of the location, places the camp "a short distance off the trail leading from Walker and Eell's Mission to Walla Walla". It is a difficult problem to exactly locate this old trail, but it is very probable that the Stevens party followed this trail in the journey from the Chemakane Mission to Camp Washington and from there on to Walla Walla. In several portions of the reports the word "trail" is employed in describing the road taken by the party. the Old Colville Wagon Road, which joined Fort Colville with Fort Walla Walla, followed the trail from Walker and Eell's Mission to Walla Walla and a glance at the map of the Colville Wagon Road and the road followed by the Stevens party will show that the two coincide very closely, especially

<sup>36</sup>Reports, I, 174.

<sup>37</sup>Reports, I, 386.

in the vicinity of Camp Washington. An inspection of the ground about the forks of Coulee Creek will show very clearly the remains of an old road or trail, which leads down the slope from the north-west and crosses the creek about two hundred and fifty yards below the camp site.

As further proof that the spot in the forks of Coulee Creek is the correct location for the site of Camp Washington, we have the following notation<sup>38</sup> from the reports of J. F. Minter:—

“October 30.—To Sul-ilt-kwu. Ascended from the valley of our camp to the plateau. Pass over a high rolling country, with occasional ravines and narrow strips of pine timber. Cross a deep and boggy stream  
\* \* \* \* \* 5½.”

The figures 5½ designate that the stream crossed was a distance of five and one-half miles from Camp Washington. The stream referred to is the north fork of Deep Creek, which they would cross after covering a distance of five and one-half miles, their direction being slightly west of south<sup>39</sup>. If Camp Washington had been located on Four Mound Prairie, the first stream to be forded would have been Coulee Creek, which they would have reached after having traveled a distance of two miles. Deep Creek would have been crossed after journeying four and one-half miles further. But notice the very next statement of Mr. Minter—

“Travel over a perfectly open and slightly rolling country; pass over rocky ridge near camp; camp on a small running stream, with good grass and poor wood \* \* \* \* \* 2½.”

This locates Camp Sul-ilt-kwu, which was erected on the evening of October 30th, on the south fork of Deep Creek, which by the trail and map is just two and one-half miles south of the north fork. The Stevens Map No. 3 shows the camp of the 30th to be on the south fork of Deep Creek, although there is a mistake in the direction of the main body of Deep Creek, which was due to false information received from Spokane Garry<sup>40</sup>. This discrepancy in the direction of the main body of Deep Creek as shown on the map only serves to prove that Camp Washington was not located on Four Mound Prairie, for if it had been so situated, the parties in moving south would have probably crossed the main stream of Deep Creek instead of the forks, and consequently the correct location of Deep Creek would have been ascertained. Secretary Gilstrap and the State Historical Society admit that the camp of October 30th, Camp Sul-ilt-kwu, was on the south fork of Deep Creek, and their map on the back page of the program of the Commemorative Exercises shows the camp so situated, but Mr. Gilstrap does not explain how Engineer Minter, in

<sup>38</sup>Reports, I, 386.

<sup>39</sup>Reports, XI, map 3.

<sup>40</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 150.

traveling south from Four Mound Prairie, could cross Coulee Creek without making a note of it in his journal.

The map of the region around Camp Washington, which is incorporated in the program of the Exercises, is a very mistaken affair even to the point of being ridiculous. In the first place, it is drawn, so it states, to the scale of one-fourth of a mile to the inch, and accordingly "Camp Washington" is shown located a bare one-quarter of a mile from the Spokane House and a trifle better than a quarter of a mile from the ford on the Spokane River. Such a discrepancy only serves to exhibit the carelessness with which Mr. Gilstrap and the Historical Society handled the entire proposition. The map shows the ford on the Spokane far from being in the correct location being situated about five miles up the river from the true winding ford at Long Lake, this being done in order to show the site on Four Mound Prairie a distance of six miles from the ford, the effect being lost, however, on account of the mistake in the scale. Another very peculiar mistake is the indicating of the route taken by Lieutenant Donelson and his party in reaching Camp Washington. According to Secretary Gilstrap, Lieutenant Donelson and his party in journeying down from Clark's Fork and the Pend d'Oreille, crossed the Spokane at a point above the mouth of Latah Creek and then followed along the left side of the river. One naturally wonders why such a mistake could be made, especially when the map and written reports by Lieutenant Donelson show his route from Lake Pend d'Oreille to be along the right side of the Spokane River until he crossed the river at the ford near the Spokane House, the ford being just below the junction with the little Spokane River, but a careful study of the situation at hand will show the reason why Secretary Gilstrap wished to have Donelson's route to the camp follow down the left bank of the Spokane, and his camp of the 17th of October at the junction of Latah Creek, instead of on the right bank of the Spokane in the Spokane Valley, as shown by the map<sup>41</sup>. The mouth of Latah Creek is about a mile and three-quarters south-west of the site of Donelson's camp of the 27th.

We know that Lieutenant Donelson and his party were, at this time, at work making a odometer and barometer railroad reconnaissance, and in the course of his work and under orders from Governor Stevens, he effected a junction with the Governor and Captain McClellan and their parties at Camp Washington on October 28th, 1853. From the report of Lieutenant Donelson, in an estimate on a permanent wagon road from Fort Benton across the Rocky Mountains to Walla Walla, we have the following statement<sup>42</sup>:—

<sup>41</sup>Reports, XI, map 3.

<sup>42</sup>Reports, I, 363, 364.



"113th day.—They go nineteen and a half miles and encamp on the Coeur d'Alene prairie.

"116th day.—They go nineteen and a half miles, cross the Spokane, and encamp on its left bank.

"117th day.—The wagons go 12.5 miles and encamp on a small stream in the prairie."

Turning to the next page, page 364, we find the following:—

" \* \* \* \* \* ; 8 days to open the road to the Couer d'Alene prairie, 3 days to prepare the road as far as the crossing of the Spokane.

"116th day.—To prepare the road as far as Camp Washington.

"117th day.—8 hours' work."

In considering these two references, we must bear in mind that the Donelson party had no wagons after they left Fort Benton<sup>43</sup>, in fact this entire report by Lienteuant Donelson is hypothetical in nature, as shown by the statement at the beginning of the report:—

"The report is in the form of a narrative of the supposed daily progress of the wagons; an accompanying table exhibits the quantity and kind of work, and the time required for its performance."

In other words, Lieutenant Donelson and his party made a preliminary survey of the wagon road and stated his reports in terms of what the party building the road would have to do. The two extracts from the report signify that on the 113th day from the time the party is supposed to have left Fort Benton, they would move nineteen and a half miles and encamp on the Coeur d'Alene prairie, i. e., the Spokane Valley, some nineteen and a half miles from the crossing of the Spokane River, and then for three days they would labor preparing the road to the crossing, and on the 116th day, they would move on nineteen and a half miles, cross the Spokane River and encamp on its left bank. In order to interpret this correctly, we must bear in mind that Lieutenant Donelson traveled the route of the road, and, as stated before, the map shows that Donelson crossed the Spokane River at the Spokane House and this agrees with the written matter, for Donelson stated that on the next day, 117th day, they would move the wagons 12.5 miles and encamp on a small stream in the prairie, which would be the site of Camp Washington. Undoubtedly the spot referred to would be Camp Washington, for in the second extract, Donelson states that on the 116th day they would prepare the road as far as Camp Washington, while the camp and wagons are to be moved over on the 117th day, the camp and wagons always being moved after each new portion of the road has been completed.

The writer takes it, that the reason Secretary Gilstrap placed Donelson's camp of October 27th on the left bank of the Spokane at the mouth

<sup>43</sup>Reports, I, 27, 38, 78.

of Latah Creek, was due to the fact, that, inasmuch as Lieutenant Donelson had plainly stated that from the camp of the 116th day, which would be situated near the ford on the left bank of the Spokane River below and across from the ruins of Spokane House, they would move on 12.5 miles to Camp Washington, and since the supposed site at Four Mound Prairie would be only four miles from the camp, if the camp was located on the left bank of the Spokane across from Spokane House, it became necessary, in order to gain his point, to place the camp at the mouth of Latah Creek, which is a distance of twelve miles or better from the site of the monument on Four Mound Prairie. To build a road from the mouth of Latah Creek along the left side of the Spokane River to Four Mound Prairie in one day, would have been a wonderful engineering feat, since they would have had to overcome a continual series of ravines and gullies. When we remember the trouble the Great Northern Railroad experienced in forcing an opening through that particular locality, we are forced to say that it would have been a blot on the engineering ability of Lieutenant Donelson, had he outlined the road along that same route. It is also interesting to note that the camp of the 116th day, which was a hypothetical one, had nothing to do with the Donelson camp of October 27th, and that the mouth of Latah Creek is seventeen or eighteen miles from the point in the forks of Coulee Creek.

Should anyone doubt that Lieutenant Donelson did go to the Spokane House, a perusal of pages 55 and 63 of Volume I of the Reports will put all such doubts to flight, especially when it is remembered that the expedition was of a military nature and moved under military orders. On page 55 we have an extract from the report by Governor Stevens, which reads:—

“To guard against Captain McClellan passing us, Lieutenant Donelson was instructed to send Lieutenant Arnold to Colville from the crossing of Clark’s fork by the northern trail, and to repair to the Spokane House, on the Spokane River, to receive additional instructions.”

On page 63 we find Order No. 3, dated from the Flathead Village of St. Marys, on the 2nd of October and addressed to Lieutenant Donelson. A portion of the order reads:—

“Your general course will be by the Jocko River to the Clark’s fork of the Columbia, thence to where the fork was crossed by Lieutenant Saxon, or some practical route between Clark’s fork and the Kootenaies River, and thence to the Spokane House, at the *crossing of the Spokane River*. \* \* \* \* \* The Spokane crossing, near the Spokane House, is a central position, trains [trails] leading therefrom both to Colville and Walla Walla. At the crossing you may expect intelligence of Captain McClellan’s movements, and additional instructions either from Captain McClellan or myself.”

These orders were not changed for we have an extract, which has already been quoted in this article, from the report of Lieutenant Donelson, which reads:—

“The main party crossing to the Spokane River, thence proceeded to a point twelve miles west, where we met yourself and Captain McClellan and his party.

“Here terminated the operations directed in your instructions to me on the 2d day of October.”

On the 25th day of October the Governor and Captain McClellan made the trip to the Spokane House from their camp on the Chemakane, hoping to hear from Lieutenant Donelson<sup>44</sup>.

Let us now compare the site in the forks of Coulee Creek with the spot upon which the monument is located on Four Mound Prairie in the light of the evidence at hand. It has been proved beyond reasonable doubt that the true site of Camp Washington was located at a point twelve and one-half miles south-west of the winding ford on the Spokane River, and the spot in the forks of Coulee Creek satisfactorily fulfills this description, while the point of Four Mound Prairie is about five miles from the ruins of Spokane House and some nine and one-half miles south-east of the winding ford on the Spokane. The reports show that Camp Washington was situated in a valley and the forks of Coulee Creek are so located, while the monument at Four Mound Prairie stands on a small knoll in the flat, open prairie. Governor Stevens stated that the camp was located a short distance off the trail leading from Walker and Eell's Mission to Walla Walla. Secretary Gilstrap brought forth no evidence which would show that the trail leading from Walker and Eell's Mission to Walla Walla passed across Four Mound Prairie near the site of the monument, while we have every reason to believe that the Walker and Eell's Mission Trail crossed Coulee Creek at a point about two hundred and fifty yards from the site, namely, a spot in the forks of said Coulee Creek, in a small valley in the N. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$ , S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$ , Section 22, Township 26, N. R. 40, E. W. M.

Taking everything into consideration, it seems quite clear that the Washington State Historical Society located its marker and fixed the dates in the inscription without adequate study of the historical documents or wise interpretation of the material at hand. It has been eight years this October (1915) since the monument was erected on Four Mound Prairie, and it appears only right and proper that the Historical Society should re-open the question and take immediate steps to have the present slab removed and another stone, suitably and rightly inscribed, erected on the correct location, in order that the site of the “First Capital” of our Great Commonwealth may be located and set right for all time.

<sup>44</sup>Reports, XII, part 1, 148.

## MARINE DISASTERS OF THE ALASKA ROUTE

The thousand mile long channel extending north from Seattle to Skagway, Alaska, with its by-ways among the islands, constitutes an unique waterway, like to none other in the world. The story of the casualties that have happened to the fleet that has been plying on this course for over half a century is a long one. It begins in Russian days, and even before the Muscovite had made his settlement on the Alaskan Islands. The way as traced today has names that recall Vancouver, Quadra, Gray, Butterworth, Valdes, Caamano, and others, all of whom helped to trace out this intricate maze.

The first account of a marine accident comes to us from the pages of Vancouver<sup>1</sup> when in August, 1792, surveying the unknown waters of Queen Charlotte Sound, he says, "we suddenly grounded on a bed of sunken rocks about four in the afternoon." The "Discovery" had struck an unknown rock, and the ship had little more than extricated itself from its unfortunate position than the hidden dangers arrested the progress of the "Chatham." Thus began the long line of accidents, some of them disasters, that have marked the coast with wrecks. While all have not been so fortunate as Vancouver in saving their vessels, the loss of life has been remarkably small when the stretch of coast without a lifesaving station is considered.

As late as 1897 the farthest north light-house to shed its beams across the way was situated on Entrance Island at Nanaimo Bay, on the Gulf of Georgia. The first light-houses to be established in Alaskan waters were those at Five Fingers in Stephens Passage and Sentinel Island, Lynn Canal, both in the year 1902.<sup>2</sup>

For more than fifty years before the first light-house was constructed in Alaska the steamers of Russia and of Great Britain had been conducting their traffic on the route. The Hudson's Bay Company's boats, the "Beaver," "Otter,"<sup>3</sup> and "Labouchere," went on their company's busi-

<sup>1</sup>Vancouver's Voyages, 1901 Ed., Vol. 2, pp. 209, et seq.

<sup>2</sup>Light List Pacific Coast, U. S. Govt. Ptg. Ofc., 1914.

The Russians maintained a light in the cupola at top of the Baranof Castle, during many years. When the United States assumed control the Collector requested an allowance to maintain a light, and the request was answered by the Collector being appointed as Superintendent of Lights for the Territory of Alaska, Nov. 11, 1868. A soldier was detailed to keep the light burning, for which an allowance of 40c per diem was paid. This was the first light in Alaskan waters under the United States rule. See Customs Records of Alaska, Letters.

This service was probably discontinued with the withdrawal of the Military from Alaska, for, in 1878, the Special Agent for the District reports "there is not a single lighthouse in the whole district." Report Wm. Gouverneur Morris, 1879, Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 59, 45th Cong., 3rd Sess., pg. 20.

<sup>3</sup>The H. B. Co.'s boats had several minor accidents and in 1880 the Otter struck a rock near Bella Coola, and sank, but was afterward raised and again put into service.

See Lewis & Dryden's History, page 46.



ness, and, though they met with some accidents, were attended with general good fortune, but as much cannot be said for their neighbor in the fur trade, the Russian American Company. We find their steamer, the "Nikolai I," a total loss near Kake Village in 1861, and the crew owed their lives to the good offices of the natives who saved and entertained them until a vessel arrived from Sitka.<sup>3½</sup>

The transfer to the United States had scarcely been consummated until the list of losses of American vessels began. The schooner "Growler" was one of the first vessels to reach Sitka, having on board H. M. Hutchinson who purchased the property of the American Company at Sitka. She returned to Victoria and in the Spring of 1868 outfitted for sealing on the Pribylof Islands, sailed by way of the Queen Charlotte Sound and was lost at sea with all on board. Her wreckage and the bodies of some of her crew drifted ashore on the south end of Prince of Wales Island and that is all that tells the story of her fate.<sup>4</sup>

November 25th, 1868, the American schooner "Thomas Woodward" was one of the first victims of the dangerous shoals of Point Mudge. She was under charter to the Quartermaster's Department of the U. S. Army and was laden with stores for the post at Sitka.<sup>5</sup> The vessel was a total loss but a portion of the supplies were saved and were carried forward by the Br. Str. "Otter" to their destination. Other disasters overtook the transports of the War Department, for on February 16th, 1874, the Schooner "Margaret," sailing from Sitka for the San Juan Islands, was driven ashore near the Kake Village with complete loss of the vessel. The Indians followed the ancient law of the beachcombers and pillaged the cargo.<sup>6</sup> The U. S. Transport "Newbern" on leaving Wrangell on a stormy fall night in 1869, in Clarence Strait, struck an uncharted rock, tore away her keel, sustaining damages that required her being beached for repairs.<sup>7</sup>

To attempt to chronicle the number of vessels that struck on reefs with more or less damage would be an endless task and in this article only the more important will be noted. The charts used in those years were the ones based upon the surveys of Vancouver in 1793 and 1794, with additions made by British, Russian and American navigators. A ship generally carried all she could secure of each, and then was poorly

<sup>3½</sup>Alaska and its Resources, 1870, by Wm. H. Dall, pg. 349.

<sup>4</sup>The Seattle Intelligencer, May 4, 1868, May 18, 1868, and May 29th, 1868.

Lewis & Dryden's History, pg. 168.

<sup>5</sup>Seattle Intelligencer, December 14th, 1868.

<sup>6</sup>Report to Treasury Department of Coll. Customs of Alaska of December 16th, 1868.

<sup>7</sup>Report of Coll. of Customs, Alaska, May 24th, 1874.

<sup>8</sup>Report Special Agent, Wm. Gouverneur Morris, pg. 55-6.

equipped.<sup>8</sup> The revenue steamers "Wayanda" and "Lincoln" seldom made a cruise to Alaska without striking a rock. The Treasury Agent Morris says in 1879: "The U. S. S. 'Saginaw' struck several times while in Alaskan waters. The Alert, an English man-of-war, struck going into Sitka Harbor. The schooner Roscoe, in going to Klawack, struck an unknown ledge and came near being a total loss. The schooner 'Northwestern' struck a rock in Clarence Straits and was beached to save the lives of passengers and crew. The schooner 'Louise Downs,' in Lynn Canal shared a similar fate. The schooner 'Langley' struck a reef in Chatham Straits and was a total loss."<sup>9</sup> These were before the days of making wreck reports in Alaska and the records of the Custom Office do not record them.

The U. S. S. Suwanee was lost on a sunken rock at the entrance to Queen Charlotte Sound, July 9, 1868, with great loss of life.<sup>10</sup>

The first serious wreck along this coast, with great loss of life, was that of the Str. "Geo. S. Wright," and all those who were in Oregon or Washington in 1873 will remember the weeks of waiting and the thrill of horror that went over the coast when day after day passed and no news came from the vessel. The last that was known of her was that she cleared from Sitka on January 20th of that year with officers of the garrison and other passengers. All that was known of her fate was the wreckage that strewed the shores from Queen Charlotte Sound to Prince of Wales Island, and the body of Paymaster Walker, U. S. A., that drifted ashore at Port Bazan, on Dall Island. To the natural terrors of the situation was added the report that the passengers had been captured and tortured by the Hydah Indians, but this last is probably without any foundation whatever.<sup>11</sup>

In 1875 the U. S. S. Saranac struck the sunken rock in Seymour Narrows, was barely beached and the crew and provisions and ship's papers ashore when she slid off into deep water and sank out of sight.<sup>12</sup> These Narrows claimed another boat in April, 1883, when the Br. Steamer Grappler, trading on the coast, took fire on entering, the tiller ropes burned,

<sup>8</sup>Id., pg. 55. He says: "The want of reliable charts is the great drawback to Alaskan navigation. From the boundary line north, Cape Fox, to the head of inland navigation, including the coast to Bering Bay (Yakutat) the Russian and American charts are entirely unreliable. The English have published no charts north of 54° 40'."

Also says: "Even the best pilots in these waters are continually finding unknown rocks, and if a man goes a few feet out of the track he is liable to fetch up."

What he says is still applicable, as a proof note the Mariposa of July 16th, 1915, the California, on Aug. 17, 1913, the Curaco, on June 21st, 1913, etc.

<sup>9</sup>Id., pg. 56.

<sup>10</sup>Seattle Intelligencer, July 20th, 1868, also July 27th, 1868.

<sup>11</sup>Daily Morning Call, San Francisco, Cal., April 23rd, 1877. Seattle Intelligencer, March 3rd and March 24th, 1873. The body of Paymaster Walker was taken to Portland, Or., for burial, on the Rev. Cutter Wolcott, in 1875. See the report of J. G. Swan, Commr. for Centennial Exhibit from Alaska, Appendix to Morris' Report, pg. 148.

<sup>12</sup>Daily Morning Call, S. F., Cal., June 22, 1875.

the boats swamped, and the passengers were driven overboard only to sink in the swirling waters.<sup>13</sup>

Sept. 13th, 1886, the Str. *Ancon* struck the rock at the entrance to Glacier Bay that is since known as Ancon Rock, off Point Gustavus, and was only saved from sinking by the empty salmon barrels stowed in her hold.<sup>14</sup> She was kept afloat by them until she reached shore where she was beached. The respite of the *Ancon* was brief, for August 28th, 1889, she went on a rock in Naha Bay, at Loring, and her wreckage may yet be seen on the rock at low tide.<sup>15</sup>

The number of boats that plied on the Inside Passage to Alaska were few in the earlier years. During the first years of American Occupation the steamers went from San Francisco. Then for a period of nearly ten years Portland was the point of departure for Sitka and once in a month was the time for a trip. During the eighties the route was changed to Seattle and the service increased to twice a month in summer and this service continued with little change until 1897, when the gold rush to the Klondike brought numbers of ships of every description on the run and with an increased number of casualties. Considering the number of boats, their condition, and the lack of aids to navigation, it is only a source of wonder that the marine disasters were not more in number during the closing years of the century.<sup>16</sup>

Scarcely had the first ships unladen at the new ports at the head of Lynn Canal, when the S. S. "Mexico," on her way south, passing from Clarence Straits through Dixon's Entrance, struck an uncharted rock in the open sea. The passengers, hand baggage, and the mail were hurriedly

<sup>13</sup>Appleton's Guide to Alaska, 1898, by E. R. Scidmore, pg. 22.

<sup>14</sup>The Sitka Alaskan, September 18th, and October 2, 1886.

<sup>15</sup>Seattle Post-Intelligencer of September 5, 1889, says "early morning of Wednesday, August 28th," with 111 passengers and 15,000 cases of salmon.

<sup>16</sup>In 1867, the Str. John L. Stephens ran to Alaska from San Francisco and was present at the transfer of the Territory. In 1868 the "California" came on the run in March and made monthly trips. The Str. Geo. S. Wright made one trip in July. In 1869 the Str. "Youkan" entered April 26th, from San Francisco. The Br. Str. "Otter" made regular trips from Victoria to Wrangell via Sitka, commencing in 1867. The U. S. Transport Newbern made trips to Sitka and other Army posts in 1869 and other years. The Am. Str. "Active" came in 1869, with the party of Secretary Seward. In 1869 the California and the Geo. S. Wright came from Portland, Or. and the same year the Str. Constantine made trips from Portland. The Gussie Telfair came to the run in Sept., 1871, and the Str. Idaho, in 1872. The Str. Los Angeles made a trip in 1881, and the Eureka cleared on April 26th, and on the margin is the note "wrecked near Peril Straits." In 1884 the "Ancon" came as an excursion boat under Captain Carroll and made three trips during the year. The "Olympian" came 7 trips in 1887, and in 1888 the Idaho and the Ancon alternated in trips, both being on the run, and the Geo. W. Elder made four trips during the year. This year initiated the semi-monthly service. In 1889 the City of Topeka entered the Alaska trade, and in 1890 the Santa Cruz appears and also the Jeanie, as well as the Queen and the Mexico, the Queen being on the tourist run. The route was changed from Portland to the Puget Sound about 1886.

In the earlier years all boats went outside Cape Ommaney, to Sitka, and only small vessels used Wrangell Strait, but in 1884 Captain Coughlin, U. S. N., surveyed and buoyed the channel and it was used from that time forward. See E. R. Scidmore, Alaska Guide 1898, page 73.

transferred to the ship's boats, and a few minutes later she sank. All of the crew and passengers safely landed at Port Chester, on Anette Island.

The winter of 1897-8 every vessel that had been lying in the harbors and waterways of the Pacific coast was renovated and put in the Alaska trade. Old hulks that had not seen service for years were repaired and sent out to the north. Forty-four different vessels entered the port of Skagway during th month of February, 1898.<sup>17</sup> Of this fleet the *Corona* was one of the first to meet misfortune, but she was in a position to escape with no loss of life and was afterward raised and taken south. Not so fortunate was the "*Clara Nevada*." Leaving Dyea on a stormy night, February 5th, she was seen from Berner's Bay to be on fire and soon after an explosion occurred and the lights went out. Boats attempted to set out from Seward City to go to her assistance but the winds of Lynn Canal drove them back. The next day the *Str. Rustler* set out from Juneau to search for the survivors, but of the crew of 28 men and of all the passengers on board the lost steamer, the number unknown, but one body, that of Purser Beck, was found. The wreck lay on the reef of Eldred Rock, the spars above water at low tide, and a gaping hole confirmed the story of the explosion told by those who witnessed the fire from Berner's Bay.<sup>18</sup> In this month the *Oregon* was blown ashore at Juneau and when the tide receded she was left on shore dry to her very keel. On the 19th the Bark "*Canada*" went on a rock four miles below Skagway, and when the tide fell the vessel heeled over until the horses on board had to be shot to end their misery. The *Str. "Whitelaw"* took fire in the harbor at Skagway on March 4th, went ashore with the wind and burned with a loss of \$75,000.00 in ship and cargo. On April 11, the *Am. Bk. "Mercury"* was driven ashore at the same place and so badly damaged that she was towed to the head of the Tyea Sahnka and abandoned. On August 3rd the towing steamer "*City of Astoria*" struck an unknown rock between Dyea and Skagway, rolled over under the strong wind and tide, and the crew had barely time to escape when she disappeared. October 13th the *Str. "Brixham"* was wrecked on the rocks of Blashke Island, and on November 24th the *Str. "Detroit,"* bound from Skagway for Juneau, went on a reef at the north end of Shelter Island in a driving snowstorm and became a total loss. The list for December closes with the wreck of the fishing schooner "*St. Lawrence*" on her way from Seattle to Juneau, the 28th of December, in a storm near Pybus Bay.

The year 1899 was a fortunate one for the vessels on the southeastern Alaska route, the only vessel to go down being the *Br. Str. "Cutch,"* one

<sup>17</sup>Customs Records, Skagway Office, Alaska.

<sup>18</sup>Alaska Searchlight, Juneau, February 12th, 1898.

Skagway Alaskan, February 14th, 1898.

The *Clara Nevada* was formerly the Revenue Cutter *Hassler*.



of the fleet that came with the northern rush. She had been the private yacht of a Rajah of a province of India, was brought to these waters, sank in Stephens Channel, was raised and sold to the United States of Colombia, and there used as a gunboat.

The loss of the Str. "Townsend," January 16th, opened the year 1900. She went ashore about three miles below Haines, in a storm. On December 8th the Str. "City of Topeka" struck on the rocks at the south end of Sullivan Island, Lynn Canal, and her passengers and crew were fortunate enough to reach the shore with enough equipment to make a camp in the midst of the storm that was howling down the Chilcat Inlet.

On a pleasant evening, August 14th, 1901, the Br. Str. Islander left the port of Skagway on her way south, and made her way down the magnificent waterway of Lynn Canal. The night was calm and there was not a hint of danger as she plowed her way along the inland waters. At 2 A. M. the next morning, just west of Douglas Island, in Stephens Passage, a sudden shock nearly threw the sleeping passengers from their berths. All was excitement, many of the passengers rose, dressed and hurried out to find the boats being made ready and the ship headed toward shore under command of the Pilot. The Captain, coming on deck, assured the frightened people that there was no danger, ordered the ship on her course and the boats taken in. He had no sooner done so when it was seen that she was taking water fast and the boats were again ordered out and the ship headed for shore. Then confusion prevailed and a rush was made for the boats. One boat was launched and with women and children on board was swamped by others jumping from the sinking vessel. Another boat was swinging at the davits and a man handed his wife into it. He was a moment after knocked into the boat by some one running against him, and the same moment the after fall was loosed, the boat swung by the prow, he fell to the water and his wife hung to the thwarts. The ship was hardly headed for the shore when she sank, taking with her one of the boats and a raft that had been launched. A woman on the deck was carried down the ventilator by the water as the ship sank. A fog hung over the water, making it impossible to distinguish the land, though it was but a short distance away. Soon a boat reached the land, a fire was built and the work of rescuing the survivors, and resuscitating them after the chill of the waters, was begun by those fortunate enough to be able to work. Hour after hour they toiled but many of those rescued from the water died of cold and exhaustion after being brought ashore. Of the crew of 62 men and the passenger list of 111, on board the ship, there were 42 persons who lost their lives, as shown by the official report

of the wreck.<sup>19</sup> The loss of the ship was attributed to striking an iceberg, but it was more than likely that she was off her course and crushed her bottom on the rocks off Point Hilda.

Of all the numerous wrecks on the Inside Passage this has the greatest loss of life.

The Br. Str. "Bristol" was lost Jan. 2, 1902, on the reefs of the islands known as the Gray Island and the Green Island, two round, glacier polished rock masses that rise at the side of the route a little way below Dixon's Entrance in British waters. She was a freighter laden with coal and the master, Captain McIntyre, and six of the crew were lost, while two boats were picked up by the "Cottage City" and their occupants saved.<sup>20</sup> The "Cottage City" went on the rocks at midnight on September 8th, 1902, about twenty miles south of Wrangell, on the shores of Etolin Island. The passengers and crew were taken off by the City of Spokane, which fortunately arrived a short time after. The ship was afterward raised and continued on the route until, on Jan. 26, 1911, she piled up on the treacherous shores of Cape Mudge, near the Seymour Narrows, and became a total loss.<sup>21</sup>

As the years passed the rocks took their toll. To attempt to describe the losses in detail would be a lengthy task and but a few of the more important ones can be mentioned. The Bark Richard III stranded and was lost in Clarence Strait on January 23rd, 1907. In 1909 the Str. Ohio was wrecked in Heikish Narrows, above Milbank Sound, with a loss of two lives. In 1911 the Str. Spokane struck Ripple Rock in Seymour Narrows, and there was barely time to beach her in a cove beyond the Narrows. Two lives were lost in consequence of the wreck.

Next to the Islander, the loss of life on the Str. State of California is the greatest that has occurred in any disaster on the Inland Passage up the coast. On a clear, bright day, August 17th, 1913, the ship left the wharf at the Gambier Bay Cannery, swung round from the landing, and settled down on her course toward the mouth of the harbor. Four minutes after she left the dock an uncharted pinnacle rock ripped open the bottom of the boat as she passed over. The ship was headed for shore and the whistle sounded for assistance. Within three minutes after striking the rock the vessel was beached on the rocky shore and the cannery tugs were on the way to her assistance. No sooner had she reached the beach than the stern settled beneath the surface and she slid back into the deep water, taking with her many of the passengers and crew. The decks

<sup>19</sup>Daily Alaskan Despatch, Juneau, August 19th, 1901.

Daily Alaskan, Skagway, August 17th and 18th, 1901.

Alaska Traveler's Guide, Skagway, August 16th, 1901.

Official Report Purser of Islander.

Report of Customs Officer Allen J. Walker.

<sup>20</sup>Daily Alaskan, Skagway, Jan. 11, 1902.

<sup>21</sup>Records of Pacific Coast S. S. Co., Seattle, Wash.

were raised as by an explosion; the bridge floated off with the Captain shouting his orders as it drifted away; the masts went overboard, smashing the boats that lay in their path; and the next moment there was nothing on the surface but a struggling mass of human beings among the wreckage. The cannery tenders and available small boats rendered every assistance possible, but of the hundred and forty-six persons on board the ship, thirty-five went down to their death.<sup>22</sup>

The Str. "Jeanie" after her many years of adventure among the fogs and ice of the north came to her last resting-place at the south end of Calvert Island, Queen Charlotte Sound, on December 19th, and this closes the list of 1913.

In this article the intention has been to confine the account of the wrecks that have occurred directly upon the line of the most traveled highway along the coast between Seattle and Skagway. By going to one side of this route the list would be lengthened accordingly as the digression extended. It would include the "Star of Bengal," Sept. 20, 1908, on the rock mass of Coronation Island as she was being towed to sea, that smashed to fragments on the cliffs with the loss of over an hundred lives; the "Curacao," on June 21st, 1913, on an uncharted rock in the passages west of Prince of Wales Island; the "Delhi," January 18th, 1915, on Sirait Island, Sumner Strait, and many others; but no attempt will be made to do so, beyond appending a list of the vessels lost in Alaskan waters so far as is to be procured from the records.

This year of 1915 has claimed one ship, the liner "Mariposa," that went on the rocks at Pointer Island, B. C., near Lama Pass, during a fog on the morning of October 8th. She was northward bound with passengers and freight at the time of the disaster, but fortunately there was no loss of life.<sup>23</sup> This is not the first time she has been near the same end, for, on July 16th, she sustained \$10,000.00 damage by an uncharted rock off Pt. Harrington, Etolin Island, and on July 27th, 1914, she was stranded near Ellamar with a loss of \$14,000.00.<sup>24</sup>

The waterway from Seattle to Skagway is almost a continuation of the reaches of Puget Sound; a deep channel behind protecting islands that enclose it like a river that has no sandbars and whose current is the tide. When storm or fog does not close down upon the ship, the way is as safe as a harbor; but when the waterway is wrapped in mist, or the snow drives down the inlets, until the shores are scarcely distinguishable a boat length away, then there is danger. The other dread of the navigator is the presence of pinnacle rocks in the channels. A submerged rock may lie where

<sup>22</sup>Alaska Daily Empire, Juneau, August 18th, 1913.

<sup>23</sup>Juneau Daily Empire, Juneau, Alaska, October 8, 1915.

<sup>24</sup>See extracts from Customs Records of Puget Sound, and Alaska, as appended hereto.

soundings are made on all sides and indicate deep water; boats may pass over time after time; then on an especially low tide a deeply laden ship will crush her planking and unless she can limp ashore she is lost.

On every trip the log of the ship shows how long is the run on each course, and notes the wind and tide. On running in the fog or storm the same courses are run, checked by past experience, and the echo of the fog signal against the mountain sides give additional warning.

Each year the aids to navigation along the way add to the safety of the boats, and the long delayed drag survey is at last locating the sunken rocks that heretofore cost a ship to find, in almost every case.<sup>25</sup>

Because of the lack of aids to mariners the marine insurance to Alaska is greater than to almost any part of the world. The rate from Seattle to Skagway is as much as the rate from Seattle to Liverpool, *via* the Panama Canal, in times of peace. The government tax on canned salmon is less than 1%, while the marine insurance on this same salmon from Bristol Bay to Seattle is 3%. With adequate aids to navigation along the coast the rate need not be greater than to other parts of the civilized world. The buoys and lights, the fog signals and the wireless telegraph are fast putting aside the marine dangers of Alaskan waters. Some of them are badly needed, have been long delayed, and are warmly welcomed as they arrive. Thirty-five years elapsed before the first light-house was built and nearly half a century has passed and not a light on Bristol Bay, a place from which there is 1,500,000 cases of salmon shipped each year.

The government has not done, and is not now doing, what it should do toward the upbuilding of the Territory of Alaska. Its policy has heretofore been that of repression, rather than of assistance. If, instead of building forts and maintaining military establishments in the country at an immense cost, only to be abandoned, there had been light-houses and coast protection provided, the advancement of the land would have been secured and property amounting to millions of dollars would have been saved. In every instance it has waited for private enterprise to go ahead in the development, while it reaped a benefit before it made an investment.

<sup>25</sup>The waters of British Columbia, through which the ships pass on the Inland route to Alaska, are better lighted than the American channels. They are not so well protected, however, that vessels do not go ashore or strike sunken rocks, for, in addition to the wrecks already referred to in this article, the following notes are appended, to-wit: Str. "Mexico," Apr. 1, 1887, struck rock in Active Pass; Nov. 24, 1888, Str. "Idaho" struck reef, Queen Charlotte Id.; July 5, 1895, Str. "Portland," pinnacle rock, Dundas Id.; Apr. 17, 1898, Str. "Cottage City," rock, Heikish Narrows; Feb. 12, 1900, Bk. "Colorado," stranded, Johnstone Str.; Feb. 6, 1904, Str. "Cottage City" struck bottom, Seaforth Channel; Jan. 4, 1905, Str. "Santa Ana" stranded, Heikish Narrows; Aug. 16, 1905, Str. "Edith" struck Ripple Rock, Seymour Narrows; Feb. 17, 1907, Str. "Portland" struck rock, Entrance Id.; Sept. 8, 1907, Str. "Santa Barbara" stranded, Active Pass; Feby. 8, 1911, Str. "San Juan" struck rock in Graham Reach; June 29th, 1913, Str. "Dolphin" stranded, Pearse Id., Johnstone Str.; July 5, 1914, Bge. "Gerhard C. Toby" struck Ripple Rock, Seymour Narrows.



With an income greater than the expense, which is a condition that has existed in no other territory of the Union, practically thirty years elapsed before a single permanent public improvement was constructed by the United States. It forgets, that, owning almost the whole of the public domain, it is one of the greatest beneficiaries by the development of the land.

On the other hand, the ones who have realized the greatest results have contributed very little to the cause of advancement. The policy has been to rob the resources and export the proceeds. The salmon fisheries paid absolutely nothing for many years, and today evade a large part of their duties by releasing salmon fry to provide a supply for fish for their own canning the next year. The whole amount paid by the millions of dollars of fish that are taken from Alaska is but a trifle compared with the amount contributed to the other commonwealths to which the wealth thus taken from the country is transferred. The immense sums of gold taken out of the ground have left practically nothing to aid local institutions. The vast sums extracted from the placer mines of the interior, amounting in some years to the sum of over \$15,000,000.00, paid not one cent of revenue and did not add one dollar in permanent improvement of any kind. The lode mines for many years paid no tax of any kind and for years, thereafter, all the revenue received from them was the sum of \$1.00 per stamp in the stamp mills. A mill of three stamps producing a thousand dollars a day paid \$3.00 per year tax, for all purposes. Other mines paid nothing. A million dollars a month of copper ore exported pays no revenue to the Territory whatever.

If the great industries that are exploiting the resources of Alaska, and are taking out vast sums from its mountains and seas, would contribute a reasonable amount toward the expenses of coast protection, and other local needs of the country, and the government would wisely apply that sum, the record of loss would be greatly diminished, and the decrease in the marine insurance would cover the expense.

The government should have, long ago, placed the ordinary safeguards to commerce along the shores, as a sane business investment to prevent the loss of existing revenue producing property, and to add such property by encouraging and safeguarding development.

The Government owns the great bulk of values in Alaska. This property is useless and non-productive of revenue until used. The chief owner should take the initiative in development, instead of lagging behind and waiting for private interests to take the initiative, as it has done in the past.

To this article is appended a list of wrecks in Alaskan waters, that covers only total losses, taken from the Pacific Fisherman of Seattle, Alaska

Fisherman's Number, November, 1914. Also a wreck list taken from the records of the Customs Office at Juneau, Alaska, and this is supplemented by a list of wrecks upon the Customs Records of Puget Sound that have occurred in Alaskan waters.

C. L. ANDREWS.

# LIST OF WRECKS IN ALASKAN WATERS FROM PACIFIC FISHERMAN

Year Lost	Name of Vessel	Where Lost	Value of Hull and Cargo
1848	Bark Gem	Bering Sea	\$ 75,000
1848	Ship Richmond	Bering Sea	80,000
1851	Ship Mary Mitchell	Arctic	22,000
1851	Ship Acushnet	St. Lawrence Is.	50,000
1851	Ship Mexican	Arctic	22,000
1851	Ship Honqua	Arctic nr. C. Oliver	40,000
1851	Ship Arabella	Near East Cape	25,000
1851	Ship Susan	Arctic	25,000
1851	Ship Washington	Pitt's Island	25,000
1851	Ship Hy Thompson	Diomedes Island	30,000
1851	Ship Globe	Bering Straits	35,000
1851	Ship Armata	Cape North	30,000
1851	Ship Bramin	Arctic	20,000
1853	Ship Liverpool	Bering Straits	35,000
1853	Ship Marcus	Bering Straits	20,000
1853	Ship Kingfisher	Bering Straits	30,000
1853	Ship Citizen	Bering Sea	32,000
1853	Ship Mongongahela	Arctic	35,000
1856	Bark Iris	Arctic	20,000
1862	Sch. E. R. Sawyer	Nunivak Island	15,000
1864	Ship Louisiana	Kotzebue Sound	20,000
1867	Bark Washington	Cook Inlet	50,000
1870	Ship Hibernia	Arctic	25,000
1870	Ship Almiral	Arctic	42,000
1870	Bark Awashonks	Arctic	42,000
1871	Bark Carlotta	Arctic	45,000
1871	Ship Gay Head	Arctic	53,000
1871	Bk. Geo. Howland	Arctic	50,000
1871	Bk. Massachusetts	Arctic	57,000
1871	Bark Oriole	Arctic	35,000
1871	Ship Reindeer	Arctic	43,000
1871	Bark Navy	Arctic	55,000
1871	Bark Seneca	Arctic	55,000
1871	Bark Thomas Dickason	Arctic	60,000
1871	Ship Champion	Arctic	50,000
1871	Bark J. D. Thompson	Arctic	50,000
1871	Ship William Rotch	Arctic	43,000
1871	Bark Monticello	Arctic	41,000
1871	Ship Florida	Arctic	62,000
1871	Bark Eugenia	Arctic	40,000
1871	Bark Fanny	Arctic	51,000
1871	Bark George	Arctic	38,000
1871	Bark John Wells	Arctic	40,000
1871	Bark Oliver Crocker	Arctic	40,000
1871	Bark Roman	Arctic	41,500
1871	Bark Emily Morgan	Arctic	42,000
1871	Bark E. Swift	Arctic	40,000
1871	Bark Henry Taber	Arctic	38,000
1871	Bark Minerva	Arctic	40,000
1871	Bark Concordia	Arctic	55,000
1871	Ship Mary	Arctic	53,000
1872	Bark Roscoe	Arctic	55,000
1876	Ship Arctic	Arctic	60,000
1878	Sch. St. George	Kodiak Island	25,000
1878	Sch. Kodiak	Geese Island	25,000
1879	Bark Mt. Wallaston	Arctic	100,000
1879	Bark Vigilant	Arctic	100,000
1880	Sch. Nagay	Shumagin Island	2,000
1881	Sch. Henrietta	St. Lawrence Is.	25,000
1882	Sch. Sapho	Arctic	25,000
1882	Sch. General Miller	Shumagin Island	15,000
1882	Sch. H. L. Tiernan	Shumagin Islands	17,000
1883	Sch. Wild Gazelle	Shumagin Islands	20,000
1885	Bk. Amethyst	Arctic	50,000
1885	Bark Montana	Bristol Bay	50,000
1885	Bark Gazelle	Arctic	50,000
1885	Bark Rainier	Arctic	50,000
1885	Bark George and Susan	Arctic	50,000
1885	Bark Mabel	Arctic	50,000

1885	Bark Napoleon	Bering Sea	50,000
1886	Sch. Clara Light	Arctic	10,000
1886	Bk. John Carver	Arctic	50,000
1886	Slp. Western Shore	Bristol Bay	100,000
1888	Bk. Young Phoenix	Pt. Barrow	50,000
1888	Bk. Julia Foard	Karluk	42,000
1888	Bark Ohio	Pt. Hope	25,000
1888	Sch. Isabel	Shumagin Islands	15,000
1888	Sch. Vanderbilt	Bering Sea	12,000
1889	S.S. Ancon	Loring	100,000
1890	Bark Eliza	St. Lawrence Is.	50,000
1890	Bark Lagoda	Arctic	50,000
1890	Sch. Silver Wave	Pt. Barrow	10,000
1890	Bk. Thomas Pope	Pt. Hope	50,000
1890	Bkn. Korea	Kalgin Island	75,000
1890	Bkn. Lizzie Williams	Tugadak Is.	100,000
1890	Bkn. Oneida	Sannak Island	125,000
1890	Bark Corea	Cook Inlet	51,000
1890	S.S. Wm. Lewis	Pt. Barrow	150,000
1891	Sch. Sadie F. Caller	Chignik	56,000
1891	Sch. Dashing Wave	Bering Sea	25,000
1892	Bk. Abraham Barker	Arctic	50,000
1892	Brig Alexander	Arctic	50,000
1892	Bk. Helen Mar	Arctic	55,000
1892	Bk. John P. West	Arctic	50,000
1893	Bark Ohio	Nunivak	10,000
1893	Sch. John Hancock	Shumagin Islands	30,000
1894	Schooner Mary H. Thomas	Bering Sea	8,500
1894	Sch. Mascot	Bering Sea	8,000
1894	Schooner Mathew Turner	North Pacific	7,500
1895	Bk. Jacob Howland	Strong Island	50,000
1895	Ship Raphael	Karluk	54,000
1895	Bark Montana	Nushagak	10,000
1895	Launch Annie May	Karluk	1,300
1896	Bk. Jas. A. Borland	Tugidak	114,000
1896	Brig Hidalgo	Arctic	30,000
1897	S.S. Mexico	Dixon's Entrance	100,000
1897	Bkn. Jessie Freeman	Pt. Barrow	50,000
1897	S.S. Orca	Pt. Barrow	100,000
1897	Sch. Rosario	Pt. Barrow	40,000
1897	S.S. Navarch	Arctic	100,000
1898	Ship Sterling	Cape Constantine	75,500
1898	S.S. Clara Nevada	Lynn Canal	50,000
1898	S.S. Brixam	Clarence Straits	100,000
1898	S.S. Anita	Cook Inlet	1,000
1899	Pioneer	Arctic	45,000
1899	S.S. Laurada	Bering Sea	150,000
1899	Bk. Wildwood	Nushagak	95,000
1899	Launch Karluk	Karluk	5,200
1899	Bk. Lizzie Williams	Nome	5,500
1899	Bge. N. A. T. & T. Co. 3	Tugidak	73,000
1900	S.S. Orizaba	St. Michael	15,000
1900	Sch. Jessie	St. Michael	100,000
1900	Bark Merom	Karluk	64,000
1900	Barge Colorado	Wrangell Narrows	50,000
1900	Bark Hunter	Bering Sea	50,000
1900	Bkn. Catherine Sudden	Bering Sea	50,000
1900	Bark Alaska	Bering Sea	25,000
1901	Grampus	Pt. Barrow	50,000
1901	Sch. Laura May	Kvichak	6,000
1902	S.S. Balaena	Bering Sea	100,000
1902	S.S. Chas. D. Lane	Nunivak Island	100,000
1902	S.S. Discovery	Yakutat	50,000
1901	S.S. Islander	Douglas Island	225,000
1902	Sch. Lettle	Port Moller	500
1902	Sch. Anna	Bering Sea	18,000
1903	S.S. Cleveland	Bering Sea	75,000
1903	Launch Delphine	Karluk	900
1903	Sch. Mary and Ida	Bering Sea	20,000
1904	Sch. Mary D. Hume	Nushagak	15,500
1905	Sch. Wm. & John	S. E. Alaska	2,000
1905	Bark Servia	Karluk	205,000
1905	Sch. Pearl	Shumagin Islands	18,000
1905	Sch. Nellie Coleman	Shumagin Islands	20,000
1905	Sch. Francis Alice		15,000
1905	Sch. Laura Madsen	Off Pt. Barrow	20,000
1905	Sch. Marlon	Sannak Island	20,000
1905	Sch. Mary Ann	Unga	15,000
1905	Sch. Mayflower	Solomon	3,000
1905	Sch. Seven Sisters	Kotzebue Sound	15,000
1905	Sch. Volant	Birstol Bay	18,000
1905	Gas s. Admiral	Andreosofsky	10,000
1905	Gas s. Anglo Saxon	Chiniak	8,000
1905	S.S. Gov. Perkins	Nome	10,000

1905	S.S. John Reilly	Cape Blossom	60,000
1905	Bg. John J. Mitchell	Yukon Flats	10,000
1905	Sch. Margery	Sanborn Harbor	4,000
1905	Sch. Pirate	Pirate Cove	5,000
1905	Sch. Florence	Egowik	3,500
1905	Sch. Bozanza	King Point	18,000
1905	Bark Coryphene	Off Prince of Wales Island	40,000
1905	SS. Arctic Bird	Kobuk River	10,000
1906	Bark Nicholas Thayer	Kodiak Island	20,000
1906	S.S. Oregon	Cape Hinchinbrook	200,000
1906	S.S. Mariechen	Chatam Straits	300,000
1906	S.S. Themis	Hardigan Reef	120,000
1906	S.S. Miami	Kvichak	10,000
1906	Sch. Excelsior	Nelson's Lagoon	23,000
1906	S.S. Koyukuk	Tanana River	40,000
1906	S.S. Lotta Talbot	Fairbanks	60,000
1906	S.S. Miami	Kvichak River	25,000
1906	S.S. Explorer	Russian Mission	11,000
1906	Bge. Sesnon No. 6	Nome	4,000
1906	Bge. Sesnon No. 9	Nome	4,000
1906	S.S. Rock Island	Chenoo	55,000
1906	Slp. Lila	Dauphin Is. Bay	2,000
1906	Sch. Mary Gray	Dauphin Is. Bay	2,200
1906	Sch. Olivia	Dauphin Is. Bay	2,500
1906	Sch. Sehome	Point Gardner	2,800
1906	S.S. Alexander	Cape Parry	50,000
1906	S.S. Leah	Yukon River	50,000
1906	S.S. Tanana Chief	Kautishua River	20,000
1906	Scow Skip	Mount Andrew	5,000
1906	Barge Gold Star	Tanana River	15,000
1907	Ship John Currier	Nelson's Lagoon	145,000
1907	Sch. St. Paul	Sukhlisk Island	25,000
1907	Bk. Wm. Bayliss	Arctic	50,000
1907	Slp. Alta	Ugashik	15,000
1907	Launch Odiak	Prince William Sound	3,000
1907	Gas s. Rita Newman	Simeonof Island	50,000
1907	Bark Servia	Karluk	205,000
1907	Sch. Glen	Unimak Island	20,000
1907	Barge Richard III.	Virago Sound	20,000
1907	Sch. Defender	Kuskokwim Bay	4,200
1907	Gas s. Anglo Saxon	Cape Woolley	8,000
1907	Sch. Bender Bros.	Good News Bay	14,000
1907	Sch. Martha W. Tuft	Kattalla River	14,000
1907	Sch. St. Paul	Chowiet Island	6,000
1907	Sch. Vine	Deering	15,000
1907	S.S. Ella	Tanana River	40,000
1907	Gas s. Hammond	Storey Island	8,000
1907	Barge No. 3	St. Michael	20,000
1907	Slp. Nymph	Hadley	3,000
1907	Gas s. Greyhound	Nome	8,000
1907	Sch. Ivy	Arctic	6,000
1908	Ship Lucille	Ugashik	180,000
1908	Bk. Star of Bengal	Coronation Island	330,000
1908	S.S. Saratoga	Bushby Island	175,000
1908	Sch. John F. Miller	Unimak Island	20,000
1908	Sch. Petrel	Pybus Bay	6,000
1908	Sch. Comus	Lynn Canal	2,500
1908	Sch. Olga	Pt. Freemantle	5,000
1908	Sch. Seven Sisters	Cape Espenberg	10,000
1908	S.S. Agnes E. Boyd	Kobuk River	14,000
1908	Scow Chignik No. 1	Cape Cleare	8,000
1908	Sch. Bear	Near Unalaska	4,000
1909	Ship Columbia	Unimak Pass	78,000
1909	Barge Quatsino	Dixon Entrance	30,000
1909	Barge Charger	Karta Bay	25,000
1909	S.S. Uyak	Karluk	20,000
1909	Gas s. Olga	Arctic	20,000
1909	Gas s. Cavella	Vanks Island	4,500
1909	Sch. Linea L.	Portage Bay	4,000
1909	S.S. Florence	St. Michaels Canal	15,000
1909	S.S. Nunivak	Tanana River	35,000
1909	Gas s. Iona	Nome	4,500
1909	Scow Camilla A.	Chignik Bay	15,000
1909	Barge Michigan	Tanana River	18,000
1909	Gas s. Winthrop	Nunivak Island	12,000
1910	S.S. Farallon	Iliamna Bay	80,000
1910	S.S. Portland	Katalla	55,000
1910	S.S. Olympia	Bligh Island	150,000
1910	Revenue Cutter Perry	St. Paul Island	150,000
1910	Sch. Stanley	Sannak Island	8,000
1910	Gas s. Sea Light	S. E. Alaska	5,000
1910	Sch. Bob	Juneau	3,000
1910	Sch. Never Mind	Lynn Canal	3,000
1910	Gas s. Bertha	Carter	8,000



1910	Gas s. H. Johnston	Pt. Hope	25,000
1910	Gas s. Louise	Cape Prince of Wales	10,000
1910	Bge. C. L. Hutchinson	Kaltag	6,000
1910	Bge. K. S. L. Co. No. 7	Channing Island	4,000
1910	Barge Sesnon No. 6	Nome	4,000
1910	Barge Sesnon No. 7	Nome	6,000
1910	Scow Teller	Tuksuk River	5,000
1910	S.S. Princess		5,000
1910	S.S. Elsie	Valdez	20,000
1910	Bge. S. L. Co. No. 4	Willow Bay	5,000
1910	Gas s. J. Matthews	Cape Darby	8,000
1910	Gas s. L. S. Sorensen	Cape Addington	15,000
1911	Sch. Czarina	Nagal Island	30,000
1911	SS. Ramona	Cape Decision	150,000
1911	Ship Jabez Howes	Chignik	105,000
1911	Gas. Sch. F. S. Redfield	Cape Prince of Wales	20,000
1911	Sch. Jessie Minor	Nelsons Lagoon	12,000
1911	S.S. Koyukuk	Tanana River	25,000
1911	Scow P. C. S. Co. No. 1	Norton Sound	4,000
1911	Gas s. St. Anthony	Metlakahla	5,000
1911	S.S. Grant	Hecate Straits	45,000
1912	Bk. Hayden Brown	Montague Island	10,000
1912	Sch. Joseph Russ	Chirikof Island	20,000
1912	Gas. s. Laclabell	Near Ketchikan	5,000
1912	Sch. Compeer	Bristol Bay	25,000
1912	Gas s. Oakland	Dry Bay	70,000
1912	Bge. Sesnon No. 13	Nome	12,000
1913	S.S. Yukon	Sannak Island	170,000
1913	S.S. State of California	Gambier Bay	225,000
1913	S.S. Curacao	Warm Chuck	225,000
1913	S.S. Kayak	Yakutat	12,000
1913	S.S. Weiding	Queen Charlotte Island	55,000
1913	Gas Sch. Elvira	Arctic	35,000
1913	Sch. Transit	Kotzebue Sound	15,000
1913	S.S. Armeria (L. H. tender)	Cape Hinchinbrook	400,000
1914	Bk. Gay Head	Chignik Bay	44,000
1914	Revenue Cutter Tahoma	Aleutian Islands	310,000
1914	Bk. Paramita	Unimak Pass	200,000
1914	Sch. W. H. Dimond	Bird Island	35,000
1914	S.S. Karluk	Arctic	45,000
1914	Gas s. Alice	Cape Decision	15,000
1914	Purse Seiner Schold	Frederick Sound	7,000
1914	Gas s. Alert	Near Snettisham	9,000
Total			\$12,792,250

#### LIST OF WRECKS IN ALASKAN WATERS FROM RECORDS OF CUSTOMS OFFICE, JUNEAU, ALASKA

1868	Am. Sch. Growler, Dixon's Entrance, total loss.	
1874	Feb. 16, Am. Sch. "Margaret," near Kake Village, went ashore, total loss.	
1875	Sept. 20, Am. Sch. "Sitka," near Wrangell, driven ashore, total loss.	
1879	Oct. 30, Am. Sch. "W. H. Wood," near Unga, driven ashore, total loss.	
1880	Apr. 6, Am. Sch. "Nicholas," Elalnia Is., driven ashore, total loss.	
1879	Dec. 5, Am. Sch. "Bella," Unamak, went ashore in storm, total loss.	
1881	April 2, Am. Sch. "Goldhunter," driven ashore east of Yakutat, total loss.	
1881	April 27, Am. Sch. "St. George," unknown rock near Nuchek.	
1881	October 6, Am. Sch. "Pauline Collins," Karluk, total loss \$7,000.	
1884	Apr. 28, Am. Sch. "St. Paul," north of Kodiak, total loss \$1,800.	
1885	Nov. 22, Am. Sch. "Mary," went ashore in storm, total loss, north point Admiralty Id.	
1886	Nov. 2, Am. Sch. "Flying Scud," lost at sea near Karluk, 18 lives lost.	
1887	March 30th, Am. Sch. "Ounimak" near Pirate Cove, total loss, 7 lives lost.	
1886	Sept. 13, Am. Str. "Ancon," near Pt. Gustavus, unknown rock, loss \$20,000.	
1890	Jan. 22, Am. Str. "Despatch," ashore in storm, Seymour Canal, damage \$3,000.	
1892	Aug. 20, Am. Sch. "Albatross," stranded, Lituya Bay, total loss.	
1893	May 26, Am. Bk. "Sea Ranger," uncharted ledge, Kayak Id., total loss \$40,000.	
1893	Sept. 23, Am. Sch. "Albert Walter," near Kodiak, total loss \$4,400.	
1893	Nov. 6, Am. Str. "Yukon" went ashore in storm, Juneau, loss \$1,500.	
1894	May 3, Am. Sch. "Helen," near Yakutat, beached, loss \$6,000.	
1894	March 7, Am. Sch. "Undaunted," near Kayak Id., total loss, \$4,100, stranded.	
1894	May 11, Am. Whaling Bk, "Jas Allen," sunken rock east of Amlia Id., total loss \$30,000 and 15 lives lost.	
1884	Jul. 10, Am. Sch. "Alice," Cook Inlet, stranded, total loss, \$1,200.	

- 1894 Jan. 18, Am. Sch. "Mary Wood," near Kodiak, total loss, stranded, \$800.
- 1894 Oct. 12, Am. Sch. "Mist Wood," foundered in storm, off Sitka, total loss \$600.
- 1894 Aug. 20, Am. Sch. "Two Brothers," stranded, Unalaska Id., total loss, \$1,250.
- 1895 Sept. 27, Am. Sch. "Crystal," stranded, Yakutat Bay, total loss, \$3,000.
- , Am. Sch. "Seventy Six," off Kodiak, lost at sea, \$2,000, 7 lives lost.
- 1896 July 30, Sch. "Hero," struck rock, Barren Id., total loss, \$1,000.
- 1897 April 17, Am. Sch. "Therese," Cold Bay, S. E. Gale, total loss, \$3,000.
- 1897 May 31, Am. St. "Arctic," Yukon River, ice, total loss, \$20,000.
- 1898 Jan. 31, Str. Scow, Dixon's Entrance, —?
- 1898 March 8, Am. Sch. "Sitka," off Cape Ommaney, total loss, \$800, 3 men, all on board.
- 1898 Mar. 4, Am. Str. "Whitelaw," fire and ashore, Skagway, \$72,000.
- 1898 Apr. 11, Am. Bk. "Mercury," stranded, Skagway, loss \$11,000.
- 1898 Apr. 25th, Am. Sch. "Elsie," stranded, Chichagoff Id., total loss, \$18,-600.
- 1898 Dec. 22, Am. Sch. "Alexandra," Kodiak, Goose Id., stranded, \$800, 10 lives, total loss.
- 1898 April 11, Am. Bk. "Mercury," stranded at Skagway, loss \$3,000.
- 1898 June 2, Bge. "General," foundered at sea, loss ?
- 1898 July 3, Str. "Alfred J. Beach," foundered at sea, total loss, \$42,000.
- 1898 June 21, Am. Scow "Argo," foundered off Dixon's Entrance, \$4,500, total loss.
- 1898 July 4, Am. — "Constantine," foundered at sea, total loss \$37,000.
- 1898 July 25, Br. Str. "Mono," went on rocks, Bushy Id., loss ?
- 1898 June 28, Am. Steel Barge, foundered at sea, \$15,000.
- 1898 June 17, Am. Steel Barge "No. 1," foundered at sea, total loss \$17,-000.
- 1898 July 1, Br. Str. "Marquis of Dufferin," foundered at sea, \$41,000.
- 1898 June 20, Am. Bge. "No. 5," off Cross Sound, foundered, total loss \$4,000.
- 1898 July 27, Am. Bge. "No. 6," foundered near Dutch Harbor, \$4,000, total loss.
- 1898 —, Am. Bge. "No. 7," off Cross Sound, foundered \$4,000, total loss.
- 1898 July 28, Am. Bge. "No. 8," near Dutch Harbor, foundered, \$4,000, total loss.
- 1898 Aug. 7, Am. Bk. "Guardian," stranded, Unimak Pass, total loss \$12,-000.
- 1898 Aug. 3, Am. Str. "City of Astoria," unknown rock near Dyea, \$7,000, total loss.
- 1898 Aug. 19, Am. Sch. "Louise J. Kennedy," near Pt. Hope, total loss, \$17,000.
- 1898 Aug. 1, Br. Str. "Stickline Chief," foundered at sea, total loss, \$37,000.
- 1898 Nov. 24, Am. Str. "Detroit," stranded on reef near Shelter Id., \$12,000, total loss.
- 1898 Dec. 28, Am. Sch. "St. Lawrence," Pybus Bay, ashore in storm, \$4,000, total loss.
- 1899 Apr. 1, Am. Sch. "Foam," near Unga, total loss, stranded, \$400.
- 1899 Jul. 31, Am. Bge. "St. Michaels No. 8," stranded, near St. Michael, \$5,000, total loss.
- 1899 July 31, Bge. "St. Michaels No. 1," near St. Michaels, loss \$5,000.
- 1899 Aug. 26, Am. Str. "St. James," capsized in Yukon, total loss, \$8,000.
- 1899 Nov. 4, Am. Str. "Dora," struck ice in Icy Straits, damage \$2,000.
- 1899 Nov. 27, Am. Sch. "Adventure," stranded, —, total loss \$500.
- 1899 Oct. 28, Am. Bk. "Mermald," whaling in Arctic Ocean, storm, \$29,000.
- 1899 Dec. 12, Am. Bk. "Colusa," near Sitka, on rocks in storm, \$20,000.
- 1900 Jan. 16, Am. Str. "Townsend," near Haines, went ashore, \$40,000, total loss.
- 1900 Jan. 31, Am. Sch. "Wolcott," struck rock near Ayak Bay, Kodiak, total loss, \$—?
- 1900 June 23, Bktn. "Leslie D.," stranded Nunivak Id., total loss, \$23,000.
- 1900 June 6, Am. Bk. "Alaska," stranded near Nome, total loss, \$55,000.
- 1900 June —, Am. Sch. "Eclipse," stranded near Cape Romantsoff, \$80,000, total loss.
- 1900 Sept. 17, Am. Str. "Orizaba," stranded on ledge near St. Michael, \$75,-000, total loss.
- 1900 Sept. 12, Sch. "Genl. McPherson," Safety Harbor, total loss \$7,000.
- 1900 Sept. 10, Am. Sch. "Sequoia," stranded in storm, Nome, loss \$18,000.
- 1900 Sept. 12, Sch. "Prosper," stranded near Nome, total loss, \$—?
- 1900 Sept. 12, Am. Bge. "Skookum," stranded in storm, Nome, total loss, \$43,000.
- 1900 Nov. 29, Am. Str. "Tillamook," stranded at Wood Island, \$30,000, total loss.
- 1900 Dec. 8, Str. "City of Topeka," stranded, reef near Sullivan Id., \$25,000.
- 1900 Dec. 23, Am. Sch. "Idler," stranded Coronation Id., total loss, \$—?
- 1900 Oct. 13, Am. Sch. "Francis Alice," Bering Sea, total loss, \$6,000.
- 1901, Mar. 3, Am. Sch. "Anna," ashore in storm, Sannak Id., total loss, \$29,000.

- 1901 Feb. 20, Am. Sch. "Lliamna," stranded, Kogatoska, total loss, \$4,000.  
 1901 Sept. 12, Am. Str. "Dusty Diamond," stranded Golovin Bay, \$2,000, total loss.  
 1901 July 15th, Am. Bk. "Oakland," stranded near Port Clarence, \$23,000, total loss.  
 1901 Oct. 20, Am. Bge. "Maude," stranded, 3 miles east Lamont Pt., \$6,000, total loss.  
 1901 Nov. 2, Str. "City of Topeka," collision with ice, Taku Inlet, \$6,000.  
 1901 July 23, Am. Str. "Queen," struck rock near Five Fingers, \$5,000 damage.  
 1901 Mar. 30, Ch. Sl. "Fearless," struck rock near Dutch Harbor, \$30,000, total loss.  
 1901 Nov. 9, Am. Str. "Oriole," carried away by ice, Kotzebue Sd., \$2,000.  
 1902 Apr. 21, Am. Sch. "Viking," stranded, Unga, total loss, \$10,000.  
 1902 Aug. 20, Str. "Will H. Isom" and 2 bges. ashore Pt. Romanoff, \$35,000 damage.  
 1902 Sept. 7, Am. Str. "Cottage City," stranded, Etolin Id., damage \$50,000 ship and cargo.  
 1902 Sept. 6, Am. Sch. "J. B. Ward," stranded, Unimak Id., total loss \$2,000.  
 1903 Jan. —, Am. Sch. "Norwest," stranded Wrangel Bay, total loss \$——?  
 1903 Feb. 4, Sloop "Marina," stranded, reef, total loss, \$250, four lives.  
 1900 Aug. 3, Am. Str. "Hattie B.," stranded Nome, loss \$5,000.  
 1903 Sept. 4, Am. Sch. "Abbie M. Deering," struck reef, Akutan Pass, \$5,000, total loss.  
 1903 Sept. 6, Am. Str. "Excelsior," fire, Wrangel Narrows, loss \$25,000.  
 1903 Oct. 25, Am. Str. "Rainier," struck rock, Icy Straits, total loss \$7,000.  
 1904 Feb. 24, Am. Sch. "Sehome," stranded, total loss, Douglas Id., \$1,200.  
 1904 May 12, Am. Ship "Baleiutha," stranded, Geese Id. Strait, \$50,000, total loss.  
 1904 Aug. 8, Am. Scow, "Elizabeth," foundered, off Cape Cheerful, \$500.  
 1904 Aug. 4, Am. Sch. "Viking," stranded, Wales Id., total loss, \$9,000.  
 1904 Sept. 4, Am. Str. "Sadie," uncharted rock, Kotzebue Sound, \$77,500.  
 1904 Oct. 23, Am. Sch. "J. L. Perry," stranded on Kayak Id., total loss, \$1,500.  
 1904 Nov. 30, Am. Sch. "Columbia," stranded McLeod's Bay, total loss, \$1,000.  
 1905 June 21, Sch. "Geo. W. Perkins," stranded, Nome beach, loss, \$6,000 total.  
 1905 July 28, Am. Sch. "Barbara Hernster," stranded, Bering Sea, \$36,000, total loss.  
 1906 May 20, Str. "Koyokuk," rock, Tanana River, damage \$12,000.  
 1906 Sept. 13, Am. Str. "Oregon," struck rock near Hinchinbrook Cape, \$25,000 damage.  
 1906 Dec. 27, Sch. "Lesnoy," stranded, Wossnessensky Id., total loss \$700.  
 1907 June 12, Am. Str. "Ohio," damaged \$75,000 in ice, Bering Sea.  
 1907 June 29th, Sch. "Lizzie Colby," stranded, uncharted reef, Bering Sea, loss \$25,000.  
 1910 Aug. 5, Br. Str. "Princess May," stranded, Sentinel Id., \$20,000 damage.  
 1911 Sept. 7, Str. "Northland," struck reef, Tangas Narrows, damage \$1,000.  
 1914 Sept. 20, U. S. Revenue Cutter "Tahoma," uncharted reef, off Aleutian Islands, total loss.  
 1915 Jan. 18, Am. Str. "Delhi," unknown reef, Sumner Strait, \$140,000 loss.  
 1915 Sept. —, Am. Str. "Edith," foundered, near Kayak Id., loss, total, \$250,000.  
 1915 Sept. 23, Am. St. Sch. "P. J. Abler," fire, Douglas Id., loss \$——?

#### WRECKS IN ALASKAN WATERS, FROM CUSTOMS RECORDS, SEATTLE

- 188- —, Sch. "Edward E. Webster," sunken reef, off Unga Id., \$13,000, total loss.  
 1897 Sept. 7, Am. Sch. "Hueneme," stranded Unimak Id., total loss, \$32,500.  
 1898 Aug. 7, Am. Bk., "Guardian," Unimak Pass, struck reef, total loss, \$12,000.  
 1898 June 28, Am. Str. "Western Star," blown on reef, Katmai Bay, \$46,000.  
 1898, March 1, Str. "Eliza Anderson," stranded at Unalaska, total \$10,000 loss.  
 1898 Nov. 1, Am. Str. "Wallowa," stranded at Mary Id., uncharted rock, \$——?  
 1898 Nov. 4, Am. Bk. "Columbia," near Portland Canal, stranded, \$14,000 total loss.  
 1899, March 29, Str. "City of Topeka," struck rock, Wrangell St., \$20,000 damage.  
 1898 Nov. 25, Am. Sch. "Reub L. Richardson," near Seal Rocks, \$2,000, stranded.  
 1899 June 25, Str. "Geo. Mathews," stranded, near Nome, total loss \$5,000.  
 1900 Aug. 14, "Elvin Thompson," near Cape Newingham, total loss, \$1,400.  
 1900 Oct. 16, Sch. "Ruby A. Cousins," sunken reef, Fr. Wm. Sound, \$15,000, total loss.  
 1900 Oct. 12, Sch. "Emma Louise," near Hone, Alaska, total loss, \$13,500.  
 1900 Nov. —, Sch. "Reub L. Richardson," near Cape Nome, stranded, \$10,000, total loss.

- 1904 Nov. 23, Am. Str. "City of Seattle," struck rock at Eagle Harbor, \$9,-000 damage.
- 1907 Nov. 13, Str. "Jeanie," stranded, Wrangell Narrows, buoy shifted, \$1,-600.
- 1911 Feb. 7, Str. "Victoria," stranded, thick weather, Hinchinbrook, \$25,000.
- 1911 April 19, Str. "Dora," stranded, Akun Pass, thick weather, \$2,500 loss.
- 1911 Dec. 10, Sch. "Zapora," Nesbit reef, Zarembo Id., stranded, \$8,000 damage.
- 1912 May 6, Str. "Santa Ana," stranded, Channel Id., Tongas Narrows, damage \$3,500.
- 1913 Jan. 10, Str. "Latouché," stranded, Icy Strait, thick weather, \$15,000 damage.
- 1913 Aug. 15 Str. "City of Seattle," grounded, Tongas Narrows, \$1,200 damage.
- 1913 Jan. 15, Str. "Cordova," grounded, Wrangell Narrows, \$3,000 damage.
- 1914 Feby. 27, Str. "Mariposa," stranded, near Ellamar, damaged \$14,000.



## A TRIBUTE TO THE MEMORY OF BRIGADIER GENERAL JAMES CLARK STRONG\*

In the death of Genl. James Clark Strong, at Oakland, California, on the 3rd of September, 1915, at the advanced age of 89 years 3 months and 23 days, the writer lost a cherished friend and *companion de guerre*, and the nation an unselfish, intrepid, brave and noble soldier of the republic. His patrician nature responded to all that was noble and true. The friends he had—and they were many—were linked to his heart with hooks of steel.

As a soldier, a citizen, a civil or judicial officer he was *sans peur et sans reproche*. In the prime of his young manhood, he entered the army of his beloved country, in the civil war. As a captain of Co. "E," 21st regiment, N. Y., Vol. Infantry, and was commissioned as captain of said company (which he raised), May 7, 1861. His entrance into the service was not to fight for power, for plunder, or extended rule, not to overthrow or uphold a dynasty, but he went out to face wounds and if need be death, in order that this—"the world's last hope of a free government on earth"—should not perish.

His simple creed was to do honestly what was given him to do. He, in early life, adopted the homely motto of Davy Crockett: "Be sure you're right and then go ahead." He did not ask or lead his men to face an unknown peril. It was his habit, regardless of personal danger, to make a reconnaissance of the field, and he always led the advance when and where duty called. In one of the great battles of the war—Williamsburg, Va.—while gallantly leading his regiment into the very jaws of hell, he received, what was at the time regarded, as a mortal wound, but after a long and painful illness he partially recovered, but the wound was of such a character that it never healed and he suffered from it up to the hour of his death. This noble patriot—this Christian soldier—has responded to the final summons—he has answered the last roll-call. We know not on what sphere of nightless glory, my friend and companion, now builds his altar. But this we know, that somewhere, I know not where, somehow, he still lives.

We need no priest to tell us this, nor sophist to deny it, for there is before each of us the testimony of his own soul and thought, as disclosed in

\*A few words should be said about these two men. General Strong was a member of Washington's first Territorial Legislature. So far as known, his death leaves not a single survivor of that body. Major Turner, who writes the tribute to his friend, is in his ninetieth year. He is a survivor of four wars—the Mexican war, two Indian wars in Oregon and Washington and the Civil War.—Editor.

the autobiography of his life, now lying open before me, a "soul and thought" as a witness never suborned.

Good-night, dear comrade! Farewell for a time, brave, gentle and loving spirit! Yet a little while and we who, like you, have marched under the starry splendor of Old Glory, battling for a nation's life and the freedom of man, will bid you good-morning on a brighter shore!

"Lay him gently on his Mother Earth!

"While tears like rain

"Bedew his grave from nation and from hearth,

"There rests no stain

"Upon his sword, no tarnish on his worth—

"So dust to dust again."

JUNIUS THOMAS TURNER.

Washington, D. C., October 19, 1915.

## GEORGE BUSH, THE VOYAGEUR

The history of the northwest settlement cannot be fully written without an account of George Bush,\* who organized and led the first colony of American settlers to the shores of Puget Sound. His great humanity, shrewd intelligence, and knowledge of the natives who then numbered thousands about the headwaters of the Sound had much to do with carrying the first settlers safely through the many crises of famine and war while the feeble colony was slowly gaining enough strength to protect itself.

Mr. Bush claimed to have been born about 1791 in what is now Missouri but was then the French Colony of Louisiana, and in the extreme far west, only reached by the most daring hunters. His early manhood was spent in the employ of the great trading companies who reached out into the Rocky Mountains each season and gathered furs from the Indians and the occasional white trappers.

Bush first began this work with Robideau, the Frenchman, who made his headquarters at St. Louis, but later on enlisted with the Hudson's Bay Company which had been given unrestricted dominion over all Canada outside of the settlements in the East, and, not satisfied with that, sent its trading parties down across the National line where it was safe to do so. It was during this employment with the Hudson's Bay Company that Bush reached the Pacific Coast in the late twenties, and while he did not get as far south as Puget Sound (then occupied by the Company and claimed as a part of the British Dominion), he learned of its favorable climate, soil and fitness for settlement. He then returned to Missouri about 1830, settled in Clay County, married a German-American woman and raised a family of boys.

In 1843, Marcus Whitman made his famous trip from Oregon to the National Capitol and excited the whole country by his stories of the great possible future of the extreme northwest and the duty of the Government to insist upon its claim to dominion over the western Coast from the Mexican settlement in California up to the Russian possessions in the far north.

Everything got into politics then, even more than now, and the Democratic party, which until then had been the most aggressive in extending the National bounds, took up the cry of "Fifty-four Forty, or Fight" to win what they knew would be a close contest for president in 1844. This

\*George Bush was one of the first and certainly the greatest man of his race to enter the history of this state. He was a negro.—Editor.

meant the taking possession of the whole thousand miles or more of coast by settlement and driving the English out by threats or force.

As I have indicated before, the people of St. Louis and Missouri had become deeply interested in the extreme west through their trading interests and as the retired voyageur was one of the very few who knew about the western coast, and had sufficient fitness for leadership, he was encouraged by his friends to make up a party and cross the plains to the new Oregon. This was in the winter of 1843-4 and early in the Spring, he, with four other families and three single men, set out with a large outfit of wagons and live stock over what is now known as the "Old Oregon Trail."

The names of this company were as follows: George Bush, his wife and sons (Wm. Owen, Joseph, R. B., Sanford—now living—and Jackson); Col. M. T. Simmons, wife and seven children; David Kindred, wife and one son; Gabriel Jones, wife and three children; Wm. McAllister, wife and several children, and the three young bachelors, Samuel Crockett, Reuben Crowder, and Jesse Ferguson. Of these families, the Jones and Kindreds are now extinct, and of the original party only two sons of Col. Simmons, and Sanford Bush are now living. Lewis Bush, the youngest son of George Bush, was born after their arrival, in 1847 on Bush Prairie, and, by the way, is perhaps the oldest living white American born in the Puget Sound basin. The Bush party had suffered the usual hardships of the overland journey but met no great disaster, and reached The Dalles late in the fall of 1844. There and at Vancouver they camped for the winter and decided their future plans.

At that time the headquarters of the Hudson's Bay Company, the sole official representative of the British Government, was on the Columbia river with its chief settlements at Vancouver and The Dalles. It was the policy of the company to prevent all settlement north of the Columbia river and confine its use to the fur bearing industry and depend upon the Indians for the necessary hunting and trapping. The employes of the company consisted of the necessary factors and clerks, some English but more Scotch, while the rest, boatmen, etc., were nearly all Canadian French.

The great Chief Factor for the whole west was Dr. McLoughlin, a benevolent despot well fitted to govern his savage dominion so long as the Yankees kept away but at the period in question he found himself in a painful conflict between the interests of humanity and the demands of his superiors. The governing board in London was composed of members of the government and aristocracy who were extremely resentful of the demands and claims of the American politicians and gave most imperative orders to Dr. McLoughlin and the other factors and agents on the Coast



to discourage all settlement by the Americans north of the Columbia river and to furnish no supplies or other assistance to the American travelers or settlers. This prohibition also extended, though less rigidly, to the Oregon settlements south of the Columbia, for the company saw clearly that unless the emigration could be checked the vast profits of their fast growing trade in the west would soon be lost.

Sanford Bush, who though a small boy at the time, remembers the trip well, tells me that the main dependence of his father's party and the other early settlers was the friendliness of the French Canadians who had much more sympathy for the poor settlers than with the English stockholders, and did not hesitate to smuggle all sorts of supplies, especially of food, from their farms into the hands of the Americans and it was in this emergency that the former experience and intimate acquaintance of George Bush with the French, and their desire to assist him, turned his attention to the Puget Sound country, and made it possible for him to smuggle his party up into the country which was yet claimed by the British, though with a private understanding between Bush and the Chief Factor. At that time, the road from the Columbia river, or rather from the landing on the Cowlitz river, to the head of the Sound at Tumwater was only a single trail through dense forests, and that was always more or less blocked by falling timber. No vehicle could get through and, while Sanford says that the party did get some of the twenty wagons with which they left Missouri through to The Dalles, they only reached the Sound with what they could pack on their animals or on sleds.

In this condition the little party reached the extreme head of the Sound at Tumwater early in the Spring of 1845 and proceeded to take possession of such tracts of land as took their fancy, covering what is now the town of Tumwater and back along the west side of the little Des Chutes river, and out on the prairie which begins about a mile south of the landing and extends down about three miles to a rise of ground not far from the river. Upon this commanding site, George Bush pitched his last camp and there his family have lived to the present time, and the prairie of some five square miles extent has always been known as Bush Prairie.

Mr. Bush was a farmer and having brought as much live stock as possible he at once broke up some of the best of the open prairie. He was so successful that in a very few years his farm was the main resource for grain, vegetables and fruit for supplying the newcomers in that region. Let me say in passing that his memory is honored to this day among the early families for the fact that while he was at times the only man in the country with food for sale he would never take advantage by raising the price nor allow anyone to buy more than his own needs during an emergency.

In 1845, there were no mills on the Sound for grinding grain nor sawing lumber and as quick as the necessary outfit could be secured, which was about three years later, all of the Bush party, with Mr. Simmons as manager, joined in constructing a combined saw and grist mill at the foot of the lower Tumwater fall, where the small steamers and rafts of timber could reach it at high tide. For the grist mill, the main question was a pair of grinding stones and these were secured from a granite boulder on the shore of Mud Bay, the western branch of Budd's Inlet, at the head of which Tumwater and (two miles north) Olympia are situated. A man named Hamm, a stone cutter by trade, worked out and dressed the stones for use. I have tried to find these but am told that one was allowed to sink into the mud near the old mill site, while the other was taken out to the Bush farm but it cracked to pieces many years ago and is now all gone.

It may be of interest to add that in the late seventies a man by the name of Horton originated the patent wood pipe industry in a mill on the site of the first mill.

In the same year of the first mill, in 1848,\* was loaded the first cargo of freight for export from the head of the Sound. This was on the Brig *Orbit* which had just come from the East around the Horn, and for this also Bush and his party made up a cargo of piles and hand-sawed shingles, etc. The vessel had brought quite a quantity of supplies and these made the first respectable stock of goods for the little store which the party had started in connection with the mill.

The Bush family still possess and use an interesting relic of that first vessel. The *Orbit* brought out from the East two families named Rider and Moulton, and in their outfit were two fanning mills. So far as known, these were the first ever brought to the Sound and were certainly the first outside of Nisqually, the Hudson's Bay Company station for the Sound. As Bush was the greatest grain raiser and the new grist mill could not well get along without it, Mr. Bush secured one of these fanning mills and for some time all of the settlers who attempted to raise grain were permitted to use it. It is singular that this old hand mill, which was such an important and hard worked factor in the first settlement, should, sixty-five years later, still be as efficient as ever and still be a necessity for the grandchildren of the old pioneer. The other mill was secured by John R. Jackson who was the first settler in Cowlitz Valley and was also a former employe of the Hudson's Bay Company.

As I have said before, George Bush was not only remarkable for his

\*The author is here in conflict with other writers. Hubert Howe Bancroft, *History of Washington, Idaho and Montana*, p. 15, and Lewis & Dryden, *Marine History of the Pacific Northwest*, p. 25 note, both give early January of 1850 as the time of the *Orbit's* arrival. Both agree that she was the first American vessel to arrive at the head of Puget Sound. These authors mention many names of the pioneers who had part in the transactions connected with the *Orbit* but they omit the name of Bush.—Editor.

time in the virtues of humanity, sympathy and wise justice, which virtues have been well kept by his descendants, but he had a rare power over the natives, and, while the different tribes often fought out their quarrels in the neighborhood, none of the Bush family or his party were ever molested, so long as they kept west of the Des Chutes river. Sanford Bush tells of one occasion when two tribes, numbering many hundreds, fought all day on the Bush farm but both sides promised not to injure the whites. As, however, the natives had only a few very poor guns and little ammunition, only a few were hurt and the battle consisted mostly of yells and insults.

I asked Sanford and Lewis about Chief Leschi. They say he often came to their place up to the time of the war, and as his mother belonged to the more fierce Yakimas of the trans-mountain tribes, so Leschi, like his brother, Chief Quiemuth, was more of a positive and aggressive character than his clam-digging followers, but was always friendly and respectful to those who treated him fairly.

It was during one of Leschi's visits to their place, about 1850, that one of the ponies was killed by some wild animal. The same thing had happened several times about the country, but none of the Indians nor any of the French trappers had, up to that time, ever seen any animal that was capable of the mischief. Mr. Bush set a large bear trap, that he had brought from Missouri, near the remains of the pony, and was fortunate enough to capture what proved to be a remarkably long bodied and long tailed cougar, the first, so far as the Bush brothers could learn, that had ever been seen on the Sound. In honor of the event, Leschi was allowed to take charge of removing and preparing the skin of the new kind of game.

Asked about the cause of the Indian war, which was started by Leschi on the ground that his people had been deceived and robbed in the outlining of their reservation on the Nisqually, Sanford and Lewis assert positively that all of the whites of the Tumwater and Bush prairie section were agreed that the Indians were badly wronged and there was much sympathy with the Leschi party. When the war opened, Leschi sent word to Bush, promising that none of the whites on the west side of the Des Chutes would be molested and this proved to be true, though all of the natives were in a restless condition over the trouble for many months.

The most critical experience that the Bush company had with the Indians was a few years before in May, 1849, when Pat Kanim, chief of the Snoqualmies, landed at Olympia with a great fleet of war canoes, and made it known that they were going to destroy all of the whites. In this emergency, a squaw went down and told them that Chief Bush had a terrible great gun that would sink all of the canoes as soon as they should come around what is now known as Capitol Point. This alarmed

the natives so much that they finally gave up their purpose and returned down Sound. It is only to be added that the "terrible gun" was a very heavy rifle, carrying an ounce ball, that Bush had brought from the East, and which kicked so badly that nobody dared fire it twice.

Mr. Bush carried on his farm with great success and kept the high respect and good will of all the settlement, until his death in 1867, at the age of 76, his wife having died in September the year before. His eldest son, William Owen, who succeeded his father as the recognized head of the family, was born in 1832 and was twelve years old when he crossed the plains. He had the same gentle virtues of his father and was always consulted in the affairs and politics of Thurston County. During the first state legislature of 1889-90, he was an active and influential member. While he carried on both logging and farming business, he was also greatly interested in the world fairs and at Philadelphia, Chicago and St. Louis took several notable prizes for his remarkable exhibits of Puget Sound productions, all raised on his farm. At the Centennial fair in 1876, he took the world's prize for wheat; and from the Chicago fair he brought back over two hundred kinds of grain which he raised in separate rows in one field.

Wm. Owen died in 1906 and his brother, Sanford, with two sons of Col. Simmons are all that are now left of the first American colony of Puget Sound.

JOHN EDWIN AYER.



## PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETIES OF THE STATE OF WASHINGTON

As announced in the January, 1915, Quarterly, a survey of the pioneer and historical societies of the State of Washington will be given each year. Effort has been made to get all the changes of officers for the year. Co-operation is desired with these organizations. Any news of historical work, of publications, the marking of historic sites, or the celebration of historic events, as well as changes in the officers of the societies listed will be welcomed by the Washington Historical Quarterly.

Following is a compilation of the societies:

**WASHINGTON PIONEER ASSOCIATION.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1915 were W. H. Pumphrey, president; Edmond S. Meany, vice-president; W. V. Rinehart, secretary; W. M. Calhoun, treasurer; trustees: F. H. Winslow, M. R. Maddocks, W. V. Rinehart, James McCoombs, Leander Miller. This society is the most noted pioneer association in the state. The original membership requirements were residence on the coast prior to 1870; at present a person to become a member must have lived in the Territory forty years prior to date of application for membership. The actual membership of the society includes 531 women and 251 men, a total of 782. The records of the society, however, include as many more, as many of the older pioneers have failed to keep up their membership dues. The Association was founded October 23, 1883, at Olympia.

**WASHINGTON STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.** The headquarters are at 401 North Cliff Avenue, Tacoma. The officers for 1915 were Henry Hewitt, Jr., Tacoma, president; George Turner, Spokane, vice-president; W. P. Bonney, Tacoma, secretary; William H. Dickson, Tacoma, treasurer; curators: P. G. Hubbell, Tacoma; C. S. Barlow, Tacoma; L. L. Benbow, Sumner; W. J. Bowman, Puyallup; John Arthur, Seattle; Walter S. Davis, Tacoma; Walter N. Granger, Zillah; Harry M. Painter, Seattle; Thomas Huggins, Tacoma; L. F. Jackson, Pullman; W. D. Lyman, Walla Walla; Sarah S. McMillan-Patton, Hoquiam. For two years the society published the Washington Historical Magazine, now discontinued. It now publishes its "Proceedings." The society was founded October 8, 1891, and any citizen of the state may become a member.

**WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.** The headquarters are at the University of Washington, Seattle. The officers

for 1915 were Clarence B. Bagley, president; Edmond S. Meany, secretary; Roger S. Greene, treasurer. Since October, 1906, the society has published the *Washington Historical Quarterly*. The society was founded at Seattle, January 1, 1903, and any person may become a member.

**NATIVE DAUGHTERS OF WASHINGTON.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1914 were Nellie Russell, president; Julia N. Harris, vice-president. Any native daughter over sixteen may become a member.

**NATIVE SONS OF WASHINGTON.** This is a state organization but the number and location of the various camps are not known to the *Quarterly*. Alki Camp, No. 2, located at Seattle, had the following officers for 1914: Arthur R. Griffin, captain; T. C. Naylor, financial secretary and treasurer; F. L. Conners, historian.

**NATIVE DAUGHTERS OF WASHINGTON PIONEERS.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1915 were Mrs. Rena Bagley Griffith, president; Miss Hilda Gaches, secretary. Any daughter of a pioneer who resided on the coast prior to 1870 is eligible to membership.

**WOMEN'S PIONEER AUXILIARY OF THE STATE OF WASHINGTON.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1914 were Mrs. J. W. Denny, president; Mrs. H. O. Hollenbeck, secretary; Mrs. D. T. Davies, treasurer. The society meets four times each year. Membership is restricted to women who have resided in the State prior to 1889, the year of statehood.

**ADAMS COUNTY.** See Lincoln and Adams Counties.

**BENTON COUNTY.** Old Settlers' Union. The headquarters are at Prosser. The officers for 1914 were: G. W. Wilgus, president; A. G. McNeill, vice-president; M. Henry, secretary. The society has an annual meeting. Membership is restricted to those having a residence of twenty years in the County.

**CHEHALIS COUNTY.** See Grays Harbor County.

**GRAYS HARBOR COUNTY.** Pioneer Association of Grays Harbor County. The headquarters are at Aberdeen. The officers for 1915 were: George Scammon, Westport, president; Mrs. Jean B. Stewart, Aberdeen, 1st vice-president; William E. Campbell, Hoquiam, 2d vice-president; J. W. Himes, Elma, 3d vice-president; Mrs. J. S. McKee, Hoquiam, secretary; Joseph Redman, Melbourne, treasurer. The association collects and preserves local historical documents. Membership is restricted to those resident in the County prior to January 1, 1885.

ABERDEEN PIONEER ASSOCIATION. The headquarters are at Aberdeen. The officers for 1914 were: Reverend Charles McDermoth, president; Mrs. Jannetta M. Walker, vice-president; Mrs. William Irvine, secretary; Mrs. J. G. Lewis, treasurer; Mrs. A. D. Wood, historian; trustees: Mrs. Jean B. Stewart, J. B. Haynes, J. G. Lewis, E. C. Finch and J. C. Smith. The society has four meetings, the annual meeting occurring in January and a memorial meeting on the first Sunday in March in memory of the members who have died during the year.

KING COUNTY. Seattle Historical Society. The headquarters of the society are at Seattle. The officers for 1915 were: Mrs. Morgan J. Carkeek, president; Mrs. William P. Trimble, vice-president; Mrs. Redick H. McKee, secretary; Mrs. William F. Prosser, treasurer; Mrs. Frederick E. Swanstrom, historian. The society has collected many manuscripts.

KITSAP COUNTY. Kitsap County Pioneers' Association. Organized at the Kitsap County Fair, October 10, 1914. The headquarters are at Charleston. The officers for 1915 were: H. M. Williams, Tracyton, president; Lillie L. Crawford, Charleston, secretary; Paul Mehner, Bremerton, treasurer. The annual meeting for the election of officers is held the third Wednesday in June, at Bremerton.

LINCOLN AND ADAMS COUNTIES. Lincoln and Adams County Pioneer and Historical Association. The headquarters of the society are at the office of the secretary at Davenport and the annual picnic and meeting is held at the society's grounds on Crab Creek. The officers for 1915 were: W. R. Peters, president, Ritzville; J. W. Sawyer, vice-president, Davenport; C. E. Ivy, secretary-treasurer, Davenport; E. W. Bethel, historian, Harrington; directors: J. H. Bartholomew, Reardan; Matt Brislawn, Sprague; S. E. McDonald, Harrington; Fred Thiel, Ritzville; George N. Lowe, Lamona.

OKANOGAN COUNTY. Okanogan County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Conconully. The officers for 1915 were: P. H. Pinkston, Conconully, president; David Gubser, Conconully, secretary; William C. Brown, Okanogan, historian.

PIERCE COUNTY. Pierce County Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at Tacoma. The officers for 1915 were: Fred Bonney, president; Mrs. Addie Hill, vice-president; Mrs. Mary F. Bean, secretary; Mrs. Celia P. Grass, treasurer. Meetings are held in January, April, July and October. The society has erected monuments on historic sites. Local historical documents are deposited in the society's rooms in the State Historical Building. Membership is restricted to those who have resided on the Pacific Coast prior to 1870.

**SAN JUAN COUNTY.** San Juan County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Richardson. The officers for 1915 were: Charles McKay, Friday Harbor, president; Ervin Eaton, Islandale, vice-president; R. L. Hummel, Port Stanley, secretary-treasurer; directors: C. A. Kent, Lopez; Stanley Kepler, West Sound; Bert Fowler, Shaw Island; William Reed, Decatur. The society was organized October 31, 1915, at Bloor Grove, Richardson, 65 persons taking part. Membership requirements and by-laws will be decided upon at the next meeting, which will occur at Bloor Grove, Richardson, June 20, 1916.

**SNOHOMISH COUNTY.** Stillaguamish Valley Association of Washington Pioneers. The headquarters are at Arlington. The officers for 1915 were: Dr. W. F. Oliver, president; D. O. Pearson, vice-president; M. M. McCaulley, secretary; Charles H. Gracy, treasurer. The annual meeting occurs the second Thursday in August.

**SPOKANE COUNTY.** Spokane County Pioneer Society. The headquarters are at Spokane. The officers for 1915 were: R. A. Hutchinson, president; S. A. Eslick, vice-president; Joseph S. Willson, secretary;; W. W. Waltman, treasurer. The above with John I. Daniels make the board of directors. There are four meetings a year including the annual outing. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in Spokane County prior to November 29, 1884.

**STEVENS COUNTY.** Stevens County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Colville. The officers for 1915 were: C. R. McMillan, Orin, president; Mrs. Clara Shaver, Colville, secretary; W. L. Sax, Colville, treasurer; John B. Slater, Colville, historian; trustees: Frank Habein, J. H. King, Thomas Graham, John L. Wheeler and George H. Knapp, all of Colville. The annual meeting is held on June 30, of each year. Membership restricted to those who were residents of the State prior to June 30, 1895.

**THURSTON COUNTY.** Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County. The headquarters are at Olympia. The officers for 1915 were: General Hazard Stevens, president; George N. Talcot, 1st vice-president; Allen Weir, secretary and curator; F. W. Stocking, treasurer. There is an annual gathering at Priest's Point, Olympia, in summer, also a meeting in March. The society gathers local historical documents which are kept with the curator. Membership is restricted to those having resided in the County prior to 1870.

**WHATCOM COUNTY.** Old Settlers' Association of Whatcom County. The headquarters of the society are at Pioneer Park, Ferndale. The officers for 1915 were: J. B. Wilson, President; T. B. Wynn, vice-



president; Miss Edith Thornton, secretary; W. E. Campbell, treasurer. The annual gathering, election of officers, etc., is in August, at Pioneer Park, Ferndale. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in Whatcom County ten years.

WHITMAN COUNTY. Whitman County Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at Rosalia. The officers for 1915 were: M. H. West, Rosalia, president; M. W. Merritt, Rosalia, vice-president; Fred Stone, Rosalia, secretary; William Lippitt, Colfax, treasurer. The annual meeting is in June. Membership is restricted to those who were residents of the State prior to October, 1882.

YAKIMA COUNTY. Yakima Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at North Yakima. The officers for 1916, elected on December 11, 1915, are: A. J. Splawn, president; David Longmire, 1st vice-president; James Beck 2nd vice-president; John H. Lynch, secretary; Mrs. Zona H. Cameron, treasurer; Mrs. A. J. Splawn, historian; directors: Mrs. D. D. Reynolds, Mrs. A. J. Splawn, Elmer B. Marks, Fred Parker and E. A. Cleman. The annual meeting has been changed from the second Saturday in December to the first Saturday in November. The annual dues are one dollar. Regular membership in the association is restricted to all citizens of white or Indian blood who were residents in the original County of Yakima prior to November 9, 1889, and their descendants. All documents are kept in the custody of the historian. The society has been working in conjunction with the Sons of the American Revolution and Daughters of the Revolution regarding the erection of monuments on historic sites. Persons not eligible to membership in the society but who are interested in its work may become associate members.

YAKIMA COLUMBIAN ASSOCIATION. This is a Catholic organization the headquarters and officers of which the Quarterly has been unable to ascertain. It is said to have as its principle object the preservation of the old St. Joseph Mission on the Atanum River.

VICTOR J. FARRAR.

## THE PIONEER DEAD OF 1915

[This record has become a feature of each January issue of the Quarterly. For a number of years it was compiled by Thomas W. Prosch, himself a distinguished pioneer. On his death, his daughter, Edith G. Prosch, consented to continue this valuable service. She has followed the plan used by her father by scanning the newspapers for the announcements and selecting those cases for comment where the pioneer had come to the Pacific Coast as early at 1860 or earlier.—Editor]

Power, John M., was born in Ohio, September 23, 1835, and died at Oak Harbor, January 11, 1915. He came to Olympia from Iowa in 1859 and eventually settled as a farmer on Whidby Island.

Scholl, Mrs. Elizabeth Fulton, died in Walla Walla on the 5th of February at the age of 72. She came with her parents, Colonel and Mrs. James Fulton, from Mississippi in 1847. The family settled in Wasco County, Oregon, where they lived for half a century. She was married at The Dalles in 1863, to Louis Scholl, following his retirement from the United States Army. He afterwards took part in the Nez Perce War and was draftsman for General O. O. Howard. She is survived by three sons, Carl, Bismark and Louis.

Griffith, Mrs. Rebecca, died February 26 at the home of her sons near Crawford, Clarke County, Washington. She was born in Mississippi in 1837 and came to Oregon in 1843. She resided for a number of years in Douglas County, Oregon. The last years of her life were spent with her sons on a farm in Clarke County, Washington.

Mattoon, Mrs. Elizabeth Trullinger, was a pioneer of 1848. She crossed the plains with her parents, Daniel and Elizabeth Trullinger, in that year. The family settled in the Willamette Valley ten miles from Salem. In 1852 she married Runa Mattoon. She was born April 16, 1838, and died at the home of her son near Walla Walla, February 26, 1915.

Chase, Mrs. Caroline, died in Olympia, March 5, at the home of her son, Mr. C. D. King. She came to Puget Sound in 1855 and has resided in Olympia ever since that time.

Tollner, Mrs. Eliza J., who has lived on the Pacific Coast since 1849, died at the home of her daughter, Mrs. J. H. Irving, on the 7th of March. She was born in Ireland and came to America when she was two years old. Her husband was one of the first barbers in the North-

west. She came to Puget Sound from California in 1863, and has resided in Olympia and Seattle.

Phipps, William C., a pioneer of Oregon, died at the home of his son at Toppenish, Washington, March 10, 1915, as a result of injuries received when a conveyance in which he was riding was struck by a passenger train near Toppenish. He was born in Indiana in 1827, moved with his parents to Missouri, and crossed the plains with his bride in 1853. They located near Portland on a donation claim. Later he moved to LaFayette, then to North Yamhill, and still later to Polk County, Oregon. His four children settled in central Washington, and this brought him from his Oregon home to the country around North Yakima, where his life was ended.

Folsom, Col. Frederick W., died on March 8 at Junction City, Oregon. He went to California in 1857. He remained there for only a month, coming that year to Portland and Walla Walla. His residence in Washington was of short duration, most of his life being spent in the Willamette Valley.

Torrance, Mrs. Mary Jane, was the daughter of Lot Whitcomb, who, with Berryman Jennings and S. S. White, built the steamer Lot Whitcomb at Milwaukie in 1850, the first American-owned steamer to run on the Willamette and Columbia Rivers. Mrs. Torrance was born in 1833. Her husband was also one of the earliest steamboat men of Oregon. In 1875 the Torrance family removed to Eastern Washington and Mrs. Torrance died in Spokane on March 8.

Leonard, Mrs. Eva Hanselman, died in Tacoma, March 11. She was born in Vancouver, Washington, November 30, 1854, the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Phillip Hanselman. Her father was a veteran of the Mexican and Indian Wars. He came as a soldier to the United States garrison at Steilacoom in 1859, and his family resided there until his term expired, when they moved out on the prairie near the Flett homestead. After Mrs. Leonard's marriage to Winfield S. Leonard she moved to Steilacoom and later to Tacoma.

Manville, Mrs. Adaline, died at the age of 80 years on March 11, at her home in Tacoma. She was born in Pennsylvania and in 1853 came with her family to Oregon in the pioneer train of Capt. Medorem Crawford. She was married in 1859, and in 1882 located on a farm near Tumwater. She was the mother of eleven children.

DeVore, Mrs. Evelyn Babb, widow of Rev. John F. DeVore, the builder of the first Protestant Church in Washington, died in Tacoma, March 15. She was born in Ohio in 1829, one of thirteen children. Her

sister, Jane, married John F. DeVore, a Methodist minister. They came to Puget Sound in 1853, Evelyn accompanying them. In 1860 Mrs. DeVore died, and in 1861 Evelyn married her brother-in-law. They lived at Steilacoom, Olympia and The Dalles, Portland, Seattle and Tacoma, where Mr. DeVore died in 1889. Mrs. DeVore was one of the first school teachers in Steilacoom. She is survived by one son, George.

Prosch, Thomas W., who with his wife, Miss M. L. Denny and Mrs. H. F. Beecher, lost his life on the 30th of March in an automobile accident at Allentown, on the Duwamish River, was born in Brooklyn, New York, June 2, 1850. He was the only surviving child of Charles and Susan Prosch, and came with his parents to the Pacific Coast in 1855. From San Francisco the family moved to Steilacoom in 1859, where his father published the Puget Sound Herald. In 1872 Thomas W. Prosch became the owner of the Pacific Tribune, then published in Olympia. Later he moved it to Tacoma, and still later to Seattle. Selling that paper, he, with Samuel L. Crawford, bought the Intelligencer in 1879. In 1881 they bought the Post and merged the two into the Post-Intelligencer. When he sold his interest in this paper he devoted his time to his private affairs, and to writing articles concerning the Pacific Northwest. For two years he was postmaster of Seattle, receiving his appointment from President Grant.

Prosch, Virginia McCarver, was born April 17, 1851, at Oregon City. She was the daughter of Gen. Morton M. McCarver, who founded Tacoma. Her father was a pioneer of 1843, and her mother of 1847. The family lived in Oregon and Idaho before coming to Washington, the final home.

Denny, Miss Margaret Lenora, daughter of Arthur A. Denny, founder of Seattle, was born in Illinois in 1847, and came with her parents to Oregon in 1851. The family embarked at Portland on the schooner Exact and landed at Alki Point November 13, 1851. Miss Denny was well-known and beloved for her gifts to charity, never failing to respond to the many calls upon her sympathy and generosity. The extent of her gifts to charity, and to affairs of historic interest in the State, will never be known.

McMillin, Capt. Thomas H., died in Seattle in April. He was the son of Rev. and Mrs. D. R. McMillin and was born in Marion County, Oregon, in 1858. The family moved to Washington in 1862, residing at Kent for many years. Captain McMillin early became interested in steamboating, and followed this calling for thirty years. He built nine steamers during his life.

Olson, Gustav, was a pioneer of 1849, going to California with the



gold seekers. He was born in Norway in 1828, and came to America in 1842. He came to Seattle in 1867, but business necessitated his return to California, where he remained until 1887. He spent much of his time, during the later years of his life, at his home on Bainbridge Island. He died in Seattle, April 28.

Landry, Rene, was born in Arcadia, Quebec, Canada, December 5, 1827. His family were among the earliest of the French settlers of that province. Landry went to St. Louis in 1847, and in 1850 he crossed the plains to California. The Fraser River gold excitement brought him to the Northwest and he lived at Fruitland, Washington, for thirty years. He died in Colville early in April, after a lingering illness of many months.

Downey, Robert M., a resident of Pierce County since 1853, died in Tacoma in May, 1915. The Downey family settled in Pierce County, taking up a donation claim. Warned by friendly Indians of an intended massacre of the whites, the family moved to Steilacoom, where they resided for many years. Mr. Downey was born in Kentucky, November 23, 1841.

Cooper, Mrs. Isaac, died suddenly in California, where she had gone to see the Exposition. Mrs. Cooper was widely known for her work in church and philanthropic circles. She was born in San Francisco in 1856, and she resided in Idaho before coming to Seattle, her home for many years. Her death occurred on May 5. She was president of the Ladies' Hebrew Benevolent Society for many years, and also president of the Council of Jewish Women and Ladies' Auxiliary of the Temple de Hirsch, and she was an active worker in the Charity Organization Society.

Constable, Mrs. Frances, who died at Cathlamet, Washington, May 20, crossed the plains to Oregon in 1849. She was twelve years old at the time. She has resided in Wahkiakum County for forty years.

Cavitt, Mrs. Lydia, died May 19 at her home at Camas, Washington. She was born in 1848 and went to California in 1853. She came to the Northwest forty years ago.

Byrd, George W., was the son of Mr. and Mrs. Andrew Byrd, who came to Puget Sound in 1853. His father took up a claim on Lake Steilacoom, and built the first grist mill in the county. Byrd's Mill was a landmark for many years. George Byrd was born in Illinois, March 7, 1843, and died at his home at Fern Hill, June 17.

Hill, Captain John S., died at Wallace, Idaho, June 19. He was a sea captain and came around the Horn in 1850. He settled at an early date on Commencement Bay. Captain Hill was one of the first men to operate a steamboat on Puget Sound. He was 83 at the time of his death.

Longmire, Elcaine, proprietor of the famous Longmire Springs, and a member of one of the oldest families of Pierce County, died at the Springs after a year's illness, on June 21. He was born in Indiana and came to the Sound with his parents in 1853. He was a member of the first immigrant train that crossed the Cascades by way of the Naches Pass. He was 74 years old, and is survived by a widow and eleven children.

Lloyd, Mrs. Jane, aged 77, died at her home in Colfax, June 26. With her husband, she crossed the plains from Iowa to Benton County, Oregon, in 1851, moving to Waitsburg, Washington, in 1860, and to Colfax in 1871. Her husband died twenty-nine years ago. She leaves six sons and three daughters.

Bogue, Mrs. Gilbert, died at her home in Seattle, June 21. She was born in San Francisco nearly sixty years ago. When she was two years old her parents decided to return to New York. Their vessel was wrecked while passing Cape Horn and her father was lost. She was married to Judge Bogue in Iowa, and the family came to Seattle in 1892.

Nation, Mrs. Matilda, who has lived on the Pacific Coast since 1860, passed away on June 22. She was a native of England and was 88 years old at the time of her death. She lived in San Francisco for a number of years, coming to Seattle in 1876.

Henry, Dudley S. B., died in Olympia on July 5, at the age of 73. He crossed the plains in 1852 with his parents. His father, Anson B. Henry, was surveyor-general of Washington Territory, receiving his appointment from President Lincoln.

Forbes, Jared, a native of Philadelphia, came to this coast by way of the Isthmus of Panama in the year 1852. In 1865 he made a horseback trip from San Francisco through Oregon to Puget Sound, and from there to Walla Walla. He moved to Seattle in 1901. Mr. Forbes was the last of five brothers, all of whom lived to be octogenarians.

Masterson, Mrs. M. G., died at her home at Grand Mound, Washington, July 26. She was born near Centralia in 1857, her parents being early French-Canadian settlers there.

Smith, Dr. Henry A., a pioneer physician, who was prominently identified with the development of the Pacific Northwest, died August 17, at his home at Smith's Cove, in Seattle. He made the trip by ox team from Ohio in 1852. Dr. Smith took part in the Indian Wars, being one of the last survivors of the Battle of Seattle. At one time he was resident physician at the Tulalip Indian Reservation.

Collier, W. H., who died August 16, was born in Georgia in 1847. At the age of twelve he came to Puget Sound on the vessel of which his

father was master. His stay was short at that time (1859), but he returned to Seattle to make it his home in 1874. He was a marine engineer. Mr. Collier is survived by a widow, four daughters and two sons.

Neely, David Franklin, a native son of Washington, died August 28. He was born in King County in 1857. His family came to the White River Valley in 1856, taking up a claim near Kent. The Indian War compelled them to abandon their claim for three years, the family living in Seattle during that time.

Bruce, James W., was born at Eugene, Oregon, in 1859. He was taken from Oregon when two years old to the valley adjacent to Waitsburg. There his father took up a claim. The son followed farming and acquired valuable agricultural holdings in the Walla Walla country.

Strong, Gen. James Clark., was born in Ontario County, N. Y., on May 6, 1826. At his death, in Oakland, Cal., September 3, 1915, he had nearly reached his ninetieth birthday. He came to Oregon in 1849 with his brother, William, who had been appointed a judge for the new Territory. James Strong was living at Cathlamet, Wahkiakum County, when the representative to the first Territorial Legislature of Washington from that county died. Another was elected and died as he took the oath of office. Then Strong was elected. When he died, the last survivor of that first Legislature had gone. He had had experience in the Indian Wars and later in the Civil War.

Rudio, Peter, a native of Germany, was a gold seeker of 1849. Mr. Rudio was born near Strasburg in 1825, coming to the United States in 1825. He was married at Corvallis, Oregon, in 1854. He died at Centralia, September 25, and was buried in Walla Walla.

Bucklin, Nathan, a pioneer of 1859, died at his home near Eagle Harbor, September 11. He was born in Maine in 1839. His first home on Puget Sound was at Seabeck, moving from there to Eagle Harbor.

Lindsley, Mrs. Abbie Denny, daughter of Mrs. Louisa Boren Denny, was born August 29, 1858, in Seattle, seven years after her parents, Mr. and Mrs. David T. Denny, had helped to found the city. She was well known as a writer, using the pen-name, Chelana. She was also skilful as a painter. Mrs. Lindsley had been seriously ill for two years before her death, at her home on Lake Chelan. Beside her husband, three daughters and a son, she leaves her mother, a sister, Miss Emily Inez Denny, and two brothers, D. T. Denny and Victor Denny.

Wallace, Mrs. Esther Tallentire, was the widow of Captain David Wallace, a well-known sea captain of the Pacific Coast. Mrs. Wallace was born in Portland in 1846, her parents, Thomas and Agnes Tallentire,

having crossed the plains in 1845. Her parents moved to Steilacoom in 1851. Her husband was master and pilot on the Sound as early as 1858, and later sailed to California for many years. Mrs. Wallace died October 11 at the home of her daughter.

Cann, Judge Thomas Hart, died October 25. He was a native of Illinois. He went to California in 1854. He followed a gold rush from California to the Snake River in Washington. He became express messenger for Wells-Fargo, carrying gold between the mines and Lewiston. It was a perilous life, full of thrilling adventures, which the Judge enjoyed recalling in later years. He moved to Seattle thirty-five years ago, after pioneering in California, Oregon, Idaho and Washington.

Patton, John C., a native of Cowlitz County, died at his home in Kelso, the latter part of October. Mr. Patton was born on the Leonard homestead, which now forms a part of West Kelso, November 15, 1859. His widow, a daughter and his mother survive him.

Laman, Mrs. Agnes Woolery, of Walla Walla, died in Seattle, November 28. Mrs. Laman was a member of the Ezra Meeker party which came to Steilacoom in 1853. She was then a child of eight. She was born in Missouri. After her marriage to J. D. Laman, she moved to Walla Walla, which thereafter was her home.

Eustace, Michael, aged 85, died in Puyallup early in November. He was the last of a pioneer family, who settled in Pierce County sixty-five years ago. They took up a claim at Spanaway and Michael Eustace lived there continuously until a year ago, when he moved to Puyallup. He was a native of Ireland. His wife was a daughter of John Rigny, another of the early settlers of Pierce County.

Heisen, Mrs. Mary E., a resident of Clarke County since 1850, died November 28 at Yacolt, Washington, aged 81. She came to Oregon by way of the Isthmus of Panama, when she was 16 years old.

Murray, Mrs. Hester Clark, a pioneer of 1852, died at the old homestead at American Lake, December 5, at the age of 75. She was born in Missouri and when she was fifteen she came to Oregon. The party in which she traveled was visited by cholera, and she lost her parents and a brother. The other children were taken to Rickreal, Oregon, and were cared for by the Nesmith family. In 1871 she married Garm Murray, and they moved to Pierce County, where they took up a claim on Muck Creek, near American Lake.

Impett, William Robert, was a pioneer of 1857. He was born in Philadelphia, but early was taken to Canada. He was sent to England to finish his education and from there went to New Zealand and Australia.



From Australia he went to California, and at the time of the Caribou gold excitement he visited the mines in British Columbia. In 1860 he moved to Seattle, where he established his home. He was 81 years old when he died, December 8.

Allen, Robert Perry, who crossed the plains in 1854, died in Griggsville, Illinois, at the age of 86. He was on Puget Sound during the early fifties, but of late years has made his home in Illinois.

Willis, Edwin A., a native of England, died in Ellensburg at the age of 82. He came to America from England in 1854, and joined the regular army. In California he enlisted in Company G, Third Artillery, in 1855 and was sent the following year to the scene of Indian disturbances, near Spokane. After the Indian War he engaged in business at The Dalles, and in 1883 he went to Ellensburg, which has since been his home. There he engaged in the mercantile business. He died on the 13th of December.

Reed, Silas Amory, 88 years old, died in Seattle, December 26. Mr. Reed went to California in 1849, where he engaged in mining for a number of years. He moved to Seattle in 1891.

Morse, Captain George W., died at his home in Oak Harbor, December 23. Captain Morse came of a ship-building, sea-faring family of Maine. At the age of nine his father took him on a voyage to Europe. In 1850 the young man shipped on the *Macedonia* to San Francisco, and then by India, around the world. On his return he again shipped for California. At the Golden Gate he gave up sailing, going in to the mines, where he engaged in freighting. In 1858 he visited the Fraser River mines. When that excitement was over he moved to Washington, living for a time on the Nooksack River, and later at Oak Harbor. For a time he was sub-Indian agent at Tulalip. He was a member of the first State Legislature, and was returned to three of the later sessions. He was 85 years old.

Cooper, Charles, of Cooper Brothers' Logging Company, died at the logging camp on Hood Canal, December 28. He was born in 1860, near Port Ludlow, Washington. He went to Alaska in 1900, where he remained four years, after which he returned to Hood Canal, where he has since been continuously engaged in the logging business.

EDITH G. PROSCH.

## DOCUMENTS

---

### Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House, 1833

#### INTRODUCTION

In this third installment of the document here being published for the first time, the same care has been used to remain faithful to the original manuscript and to add footnotes only where the record seems to need explanation or where additional information is deemed advisable. It is planned to conclude the first volume of these journals in the next installment.

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY.

---

(Continued from the Quarterly for October, 1915, page 278.)

[MAY] 1834. [page 73]<sup>70</sup>

to return on their road and remain at Nesq]uall[y until further orders. In the evening we all reached the Fort which we found under the management of three masters viz Ouvre Trader Brown Store Keeper, and Pierre Charles Master of works. On my arrival I assumed the whole duty and ordered the men to prepare for building up the place. The Indians arfe few. fair weather—

19th Monday The men at the place are nine in number, namely Ouvre Charles, William Brown, Plomondon, Louis Sagohaneuchta, Silvan Bourgeau, Aneweskum—McDonald, John McKee and Tai. Most of them employed at taking down the frame of a kitchen and erecting it into a better situation. Besides this building there are the dwelling house of 50 feet by 21 twenty feet of which is floored &c and was the residence of the Gentleman in charge, the rest of it without flooring. A store of thirty feet very imperfect and another building of the same size [for] the men. The Bastions are good, but not complete, wanting the roof. Inventory of Goods on hand taken as also the Furs, the later as follows 180 Large Beaver, 42 Small, 4½ [ ] Cuttings ditto 8 Bearsfi 44 Otters, 9 Fishers, 153 rats and 21 Racoons. Passing showers of rain in course of the day

<sup>70</sup> Owing to the bookbinder's blunder the pages of the Nisqually Journal containing the records from March 2 to May 19 have been left out of the present volume, and other pages, quite irrelevant, have been substituted. These pages have been numbered with the rest, and the Journal is continued in this issue as page 73, page 72 being left blank.

20th Thursday. Five men out squaring wood fir a dwelling house, the present one to be taken down and made a store of. [Page 74] The rest of the men employed in the kitchen. Weather as yesterday.

May 21 [1834] Wednesday. The same duty for the men. Traded a few skins. The weather cloudy in the morning, some hail fell and it thundered.

2 Thursday. Pierre Charles, Brown and Tai were employed at making a chimney, McKee was hauling Earth for the same, and the rest squaring wood. A few Indians arrived to trade. Rained some in the forenoon.

23rd Friday. The men employed as yesterday. Traded 13 Beaver skins and an Otter. Rained all day.

24th Saturday. The men employed at changing the doors of their dwellings so as to have them facing the square, The Gable end of the Indian shop and that of the men's house, facing it, were plastered and whitewashed. The end of the men's house made into an Indian Hall. The Chimney of the Kitchen completed and part of the roof on. Fair at intervals—

25th Sunday. Every Body at rest about the place. Twenty Indians were dancing in front of the Fort in honor of the day. Fair weather.

26th Monday. Plomondon, Louis, McDonald and Ta-i were all employed squaring. Brown and Bourgeau were plastering the house and P. Charles completing the roof and flooring. [page 75] McKee was hauling logs and water Ouvre, as usual, attending to the Indians. Traded 85 pieces of Cedar Bark for roofing the store. Venison and fresh salmon were also got for ammunition. Fair weather.

27th Tuesday. The same routine as yesterday. Traded a few Beaver Skins. Fine warm weather.

28th Wednesday. The Kitchen now completed and looks like a farmer's cottage. Changed my place of residence for the above. The men were employed taking down the Bourgeois house, two squaring, and two sawing wheels for a new wagon. Indians bring a few fresh salmon which are small and traded at two Ball & Powder a very dear price—Clear and very warm weather.

29th Thursday. The same works going on as yesterday. Rained much today.

30th Friday. No change in the employment of the men. The Princess' husband arrived and brought us Letters from Vancouver, en-

closing others from London, all's well. The Brig Lama<sup>71</sup> is on her way hither. Fair weather.

31st Saturday. The square of the new store commenced, and the wood for the new dwelling all squared. In the afternoon the men were put at cleaning the Fort. [Page 76] The trade since my arrival, as follows, 43 Large Beaver 10 Small do. 2 lb Cuttings do—5 Large Black Bears—1 Small Black do—2 Fishers—5 Minks—49 Musquash—17 Otters—29 Racoons—2 Lynx—1 Dressed Red Deer Skin—18 Dressed Chev do—12 fresh salmon and 300 lbs Venison. More Indians have arrived to trade. Fair weather. [page 77]

June 1st [1834] Sunday. All hands at rest. Indians as last Sabbath passed the day here dancing in honor of it. Very warm weather.

2 Monday. Plomondon<sup>72</sup> and another man were busy covering the bastions, two men off for Cedar Bark, one hauling logs and the rest employed about the Store. Indians trade as usual. Fair weather.

3 Tuesday. The same duty for the men. Two Indian Chiefs arrived from the northward and brought a few skins to trade. Very warm weather.

4th Wednesday. The Bastions completed and Plomondon was set to making doors for the store. P. Charles, Louis, McKee, Brown and Ta-I all were busy at squaring wood for flooring the store. The men out at getting bark have done little or nothing. Fair weather.

5th Thursday. From the want of provisions I had to send Plomondon and P. Charles out hunting deer, across to the Island. Got the road to the Sound completed, and the Oxen have brought up all the Bark lying on the Beach. One man with all the women were employed hoeing earth about the Potatoes. Louis Sagohaneuchta sick. Traded 9 Beaver skins from two Yackanaws. Fine weather—[page 78]

June 6 [1834] Friday. All the men again employed at reducing

<sup>71</sup> The Lama or Llama is as interesting as her commander. In 1832, William McNeill a Boston Yankee and his brig Llama entered the Columbia River ostensibly for the purpose of trading with the Indians. Instead of blankets, capots and cloth—staples of Indian commerce—the Llama carried every toy and contraption which might appeal to the vanity of the child of the forest, and a goodly store of firewater as well. Whether McNeill's purpose was actually to compete with the Hudson Bay Company or to play his little game with Chief factor McLoughlin, will never be known. Nevertheless, the latter saw no way to rid himself of this nuisance than to buy the vessel and to entice her captain into the service. It has been claimed that McNeill was on the coast as early as 1816. He was actually in Oregon in 1826, and after his connection with the Hudson Bay Company served faithfully as captain of the Llama, his intimate knowledge of the coast rendering him a most valued man. Afterward he commanded the Nereid, and later the Beaver. He retired from the service in 1861, while in charge of Fort Simpson, to Victoria, B. C., where he had property, and died in 1875. In the meantime he had become a British citizen.

<sup>72</sup> Simon Plomondon, or Plomondeau, entered the service of the company in 1821, and although a servant, knowing neither how to read or write, was associated with three important historical events. In 1827 he was a member of the McMillan party which founded Fort Langley on the Fraser River; in 1837 he was retired to the Cowlitz Prairie by McLoughlin, and in a way became the forerunner of Cowlitz Farm; in 1841 he conducted Wilkes overland from Cowlitz Farm to Astoria.



the hill to the Sound which was found yet too steep for the Oxen. Indian came in to trade. It rained a little.

7th Saturday Got the Indian Corn hoed up. Plomondon and P Charles absent since the 5th have this evening arrived with the meat of two animals. McDonald and Bourgeau have also come home with only 100 pieces Cedar Bark. Weather cloudy and a little rain fell.

8th Sunday. All quiet about us. No Indians. The weather fair.

9th Monday. The men resumed squaring logs for the Store and roofing this building. About 2 P. M. we heard a couple of Cannon shot, soon after I started in a canoe with six men, and went on board the "Llama" with the pleasure of taking Tea with McNeill who pointed out two Chinese he picked up from the Natives near Cape Flattery where a vessel of that Nation had been wrecked not long since. There is still, one, amongst the Indians, Inland but a promise was made of getting the poor fellow on the Coast by the time the "Llama" gets there.<sup>73</sup> The Captain says he had a fair voyage from the Columbia. Cloudy weather. [p.79]

10th [1834] Tuesday. The men busy as usual. The Llama now anchored opposite the road and preparations made for the Cargo and Cattle. The Indians are now poring upon us however they are all friendly. To day it rained.

11th Wednesday. All the Outfit safely landed and received in Store.

The Cattle were also got they are very wild and wicked, one of the cows wounded one of the men (Brown) in the Testicles and nearly killed a couple more. The Cattle received are three Cows with their Calves and a Bull. It rained at intervals—

12th Thursday. The men kept at covering the store. Gave out the mens private orders. The 'Llama' has taken in five horses for Fort Langley where she is to go next. Charitable donations given us by Captain Mc Neill of great use, say, a couple Iron Pins for our waggons and about one fathom of Bower Cable (Chain) The Llama has taken in more fresh water. More showers today.

13th Friday. The work getting on well. Captain Mc Neill off. Traded a few Beaver skins. Fair weather.

<sup>73</sup> The news of this disaster was conveyed to the officials at Vancouver in the form of a piece of China-paper on which was a drawing showing the three shipwrecked persons, the junk on the rocks, and the Indians engaged in plundering. Thomas McKay with thirty men was sent overland to Cape Flattery but got only as far as Point Grenville when they gave up the task as impossible. Captain McNeill in the Llama then set out for the wreck and enticing some of the natives aboard his vessel held them as hostages for the return of the three. They proved to be Japanese. According to Wilkes they were sent to England and thence carried to China, where they ultimately remained in consequence of their inability to procure passage to Japan.

14th Saturday. The goods put into the main store now nearly done. The men variously employed all day. The weather fair [page 80]

June 15 [1834] Sunlay. The day passed away in quietness. No Indians to trouble us. Fair weather.

16th Monday. Pierre Charles, Bourgeau, Mc Donald and an Indian have all gone to the Island to get Cedar Bark. Plomondon and Louis busy completing the store which job was done by noon. Ouvre attending to the Indians Brown and Mc Kee sick, the former from his late blow from a Cow, and latter suffering much with a violent sore thumb. Ouvre always doing a little about the place besides watching the Indians with myself. Ta-i, our other man is off with the Llama to Fort Langley. Indians come in by degrees to trade. Fair weather.

17 Tuesday. Plomondon with his man Louis began working at the wood for the new dwelling house; Brown was also assisting them. Mc Kee still very bad. Fair weather.

18 Wednesday. The same work for the men, excepting Mc Donald who I have ordered home for going to Vancouver with Letters. Indians keep going and coming for the sake of Trade. The weather fair.

19 Thursday. No change in the duties of the place. About noon Mc Donald and Plomondon's slave started for Vancouver with Letters informing Mr. Chief Factor Mc Loughlin our state of affairs here. The men at the Cedar Bark getting on well. Fair weather. [page 81]

20th [June] Friday. The men still employed at ther various duties. Sent a couple of Indians lad to Pierre Charles for the purpose of assisting getting Cedar Bark. In the evening they both came home with 159 pieces Bark. The Indians from distant quarters come and go every time trading a few skins. Very warm weather.

21 Saturday. The men at the Cedar have come home and their week's job is 600 very well for only three men including an Indian. Few Indians have come from toward the Cowlitz and report that the ague is raging in that quarter. Ouvre's Brother in Law gone to Vancouver with Mc Donald. The weather fair.

22nd Sunday. The Sabbath kept as usual. The Indians that are about keep out. Very warm weather.

23rd Monday. Bourgeau with a couple of Indians have gone to gather more Cedar Bark. Pierre Charles has been busy at repairing the Boat. Plomondon, Brown and Louis working at the new Building. Ouvre doing sundry jobs besides attending to the Indians Mc Kee still very unwell with his left hand thumb, yet gets in water and brought up the Bark with his Oxen. The Indians are doing well and support us in meat. I have already one Cask Salted. Fair and very warm weather. [page 82]

June 24 [1834] Tuesday. Sent Pierre Charles to join his party

at the Cedar Bark. Plomondon with his men getting up the new house. Indians are always about us and bring us a few things to trade. Fair weather.

25th Wednesday. The same duty with the men. Plomondon's Brother-in-Law got this morning a thrashing for his insolence to the men and was turned out of the Fort. Weather as usual.

26th Thursday. About a dozen of Cowlitz Indians arrived last evening with a few skins. They commenced to day to trade and of course very troublesome their Chiefs the greatest beggars I have known. In the evening Pierre Charles arrived with his party 500 pieces of Bark got by them which now makes 1100 pieces besides what was put on the store. Very warm weather.

27th Friday. The men kept at their employment About one P. M. Anieveskum Mc Donald arrived from Vancouver with Letters. The Brigade from the Interior had arrived at that place on the 16th Inst. under Chief Factor Dease, accompanied by Messrs. Black and S. Mc Gillivray, all well in those quarters.<sup>74</sup> The weather very warm.

28th Saturday. Trade continued with the Cowlitz Indians and I am happy to say that it [page 83] was got over without much trouble at last, though yesterday I turned several out of the shop. Fair weather.

29 Sunday. Indians all away and the day was got over without seeing any. Cloudy weather.

30 Monday. Still employed at the new dwelling house. More Indians have come to trade, and everything got on in quietness. This month returns are as follows, viz

127	Large	Beaver
48	Small	do.
1½	lb	Cutting do.
8	Large	Black Bear
2	Small	" do.
5	Fisher	
5	Lynx	
8	Minks	
81	Musquash	
45	Large	Otters
2	Small	do

<sup>74</sup> The party were from New Caledonia and each of the three mentioned was an important personage, hence, the notice in the Nisqually Journal. Chief-factor Peter Warren Dease received his appointment to New Caledonia in 1831, succeeding William Connolly. He remained there until 1835 when Peter Skeen Ogden became chief factor. Samuel Black was formerly of the Northwest Company and most of his time was spent in command at Fort Kamloops. He was an all round man and especially skilled in geology and geography. He was killed by an Indian lad in 1841. Simon McGillivray figured very prominently in the consolidation of the Hudson's Bay and Northwest companies in 1821.

47 Raccoons  
15 Cheveran Skins  
10 Fresh Salmon  
528 lbs Venison. [page 84]

July 1st Tuesday. The square of the new house up, it is thirty two feet by 18 and nine feet post from the foundation which being two feet higher than the ground makes it 11 feet altogether. This afternoon we were surprised at the arrival of a Chief by name Chalicum with Letters from Mr. Yale who sends me some Iron work wanted here, and informs me that having no Potatoes, the Llama would not touch here on her way back to Vancouver. The Chief was well received and is now encampel for the night and tomorrow the day he leaves us. Very warm weather.

2nd Wednesday. The men employed at making two Chimneys in the new building. Traded about twenty Beaver skins from the Indians now come with the Chief Chalicum. Had made my packages for sending by the Llama but as she is not coming I have taken the Bales of Furs asunder in order to build them up into packs of 90 lbs for land transportation.

3rd Thursday. The same employment for the men as yesterday, making Chimneys and Packs. Fair weather.

4th Friday. The men employed as usual Indians all off the ground Send a young man for horses in order to get returns across the portage. Fairweather and very warm. [page 85]

5th Saturday. Got the Chimnies completed and the men were at work squaring for the flooring of the house. Brown was employed about the potatoes. John Mc Kee still sick with the sore hand. Cloudy and some rain.

6th Sunday. All quiet about us. Indians do not trouble us as formerly with their dance. Fair weather.

7th Monday. The men employed covering the house excepting Brown and Bourgeau who were busy at hoing up the potatoes. Traded 4 horses for the purpose of carrying our packs over the portage. Cheaper method then hiring them. Fairweather.

8th Tuesday. The Indians away again. The House completely covered and looks well though done with Bark. Fair weather.

9th Wednesday. Pierre Charles, Bourgeau and Brown off to Vancouver with the returns on hand amounting to as follows

399 Large Beaver  
86 Small do  
11 lbs Cutting [do]  
16 Fishers  
5 Lynx



276 Musquashs  
 109 Large Otters & 3 Small Do.  
 5 " Blk Bear  
 19 Chev Skins [page 86]

of the forementioned number of Beaver and Otters the following belong to this month.

32 Large Beaver  
 3 Small "  
 1 lb Cutting "  
 8 Large Otters  
 1 Small do.

The rest of the men that is to say Plomondon, Mc Donald and Louis were employed about squaring wood for the flooring of my new dwelling house Ouvre attends at sundry jobs and the Indians. Mc Kee still unable to work. Fairweather.

July 10th Thursday. The same employment for the men This afternoon in taking my round about the place saw a most miserable object in a poor child, ruptured, and in starving state. Gave it a covering and ordered some food, with instructions to the Indians to take better care of their children or they would suffer for their brutality. Fair and very warm.

11th Friday. All last night the Indians nigh us were singing to a medicine man who was doing his best in the killing of Plomondon's wife who has been sick for some time, I have endeavored to stop the business but believe to no purpose as she is bent on getting blowed by her countryman. Fair weather. [page 87]

12 Saturday. The men still continue at their work excepting Plomondon who is busy at watching his wife. A few Indians arrived and traded a few skins. Fair weather.

13th Sunday. All quiet about us. The Indians have all gone away to their different homes. Warm weather.

14 Monday. Louis and Mc Donald at work about a flooring for the Indian Hall. The rest of the men very little employed. Some indians arrived and brought us a little fresh meat which looks fat. Fair weather.

15 Tuesday. Plomondon with his two men resumed squaring wood for flooring the new house Ouvre and McKee have been employed at taking down the roof and Chimnies of the Indian hall in order to get it done better. Trade a few skins from Indians near us. A Cowlitz and family arrived and being a murderer is much afraid of his life. The Chickelitz Chief made his appearance two days ago with a few skins, he

said that fear made him come here instead of going to the Chinooks.<sup>75</sup> From him we got 10 Beaver skins and a couple of Otters. Fine clear weather but warm

16th Wednesday. The men employed making Chimnies in the Indian house. The Cowlitz off. Fair weather. [page 88]

July 17 [1834] Thursday. The men were employed as yesterday. An Indian of the Chinkalitz<sup>76</sup> tribe arrived with a few skins. Fair weather.

18th Friday. Plomondon and the rest of the men completed the Chimnies and got roofing sticks for the house now in repair. Indian trade as usual. Cloudy weather.

19th Saturday. The house covered, and the fort put into some order for the Sabbath. Some rain fell.

20th Sunday. The Chickalitz Indian and family off. Plomondons wife has been unwell some time, and all her care is to give away property to Indian Doctors for curing her, though at times she applies to me for medicines, which are given, but the relief she gets is attributed to her Doctors. Fair weather.

21 Monday. Plomondon, Louis and Anawiskum were employed at the floor of the Gentlemen's house. Ouvre and Mc Kee plastering the Indian house. Traded five Beaver from a couple of Indians who are from the *Too-an-noo* tribe.<sup>77</sup> The weather cloudy.

22nd Tuesday. Plomondon and Louis assaying the floor above stated. Anawiskum squaring wood for the floor of the Indian hall. Ouvre and Mc Kee still plastering. [page 89] Got the meat of an animal and a couple of Chevino skins from an Indian of the Mount Renier. Many of the natives about us are living on berries which are numerous—Fair weather.

23 Wednesday. The same employment for the men. Late in the afternoon Pierre Charles and Party arrived from Vancouver with the small requests from that place. I am informed by Mr. Chief Factor Mc Loughlin that the furs sent were recd at his place in good order. The Ague there not severe, and all is well. Very warm weather.

24 Thursday. Began flooring the Indian hall which work is done by McKee & Ouvre. Laves on the sick list. Fair weather.

25 Friday. The Indian hall finished. Men as usually employed about the place. Traded a few skins. Laahlette arrived from the Yacka-

<sup>75</sup> Chehalis. It is a well attested fact that the Chinook Indians endeavored to secure the trade with the posts for themselves and forced the interior Indians to bring their furs to them instead of carrying them directly to the post.

<sup>76</sup> Chehalis.

<sup>77</sup> The Twana which dwelt on both shores of Hood Canal.

naw<sup>78</sup> and says that the Brigade passed up the river seven nights ago. The weather continues warm.

26 Saturday. We this day completed the flooring of Ouvre's house which is attached to the Indian hall. The weather really very warm.

27 Sunday. This day observed as usual. Fair weather. [page 90]

July 28 [1834] Monday. Plomondon and Louis working about the new dwelling house. Pierre Charles has been out getting wood for a couple of Ploughs. Mc Donald, Bourgeau and Brown were employed at squaring wood for the men's houses. John Mc Kee and Ouvre doing sundry jobs about the fort. The weather much the same.

29 Tuesday. The pease being ripe five of the men were put at gathering them along with the women, only 1-6 of the field done. The rest of the men as usual employed. Fair weather.

30 Wednesday. With Indian assistance we got up all the Pease. During the night and day a man is kept at the sole purpose of watching the pease as the natives would soon make a [hole] in them. The weather cloudy at night; fair day time.

31st Thursday. Gathered all the Pease about the spot we are to thrash them at, where we leave them for a few days to dry. Plomondon still keeps at his dwelling. In course of the day the other men were employed squaring. The Trade of the month as follows.

125	Large Beaver	
19	Small	"
2	lbs Cutting	"
1	Fisher	
71	Lynx	
13	Large Black Bear	
2	Small	" "
33	Musquash.	This includes what sent to Vancouver.
41	Otters	
5	Horses and 1 Colt	
2	Parcht Deer Skins	
48	Dress	" "
1	Elk Skin	
910	lbs Venison	

[page 91]

August 1834 1st Friday. The Pease being entirely dry to thrash were all gathered up about the thrashing floor, made for the purpose. The work getting on slowly. The weather cloudy in the morning, fair and warm rest of the day.

<sup>78</sup> The Yakima River.

2nd Saturday. The same employment for the men. Some Indians have come to trade as also to pass the Sabbath with us. The weather as yesterday.

3rd Sunday. The day kept as usual and the natives were dancing near us. Weather very warm.

4th Monday. Two men employed thrashing the Pease three squaring wood for erecting the men's house, two still working about my dwelling house and Ouvre doing sundry jobs. The Indians keep going and coming bringing at every time they arrive something to trade. Fair weather.

5th Tuesday. The same duty for the men excepting Pierre Charles who has fallen sick he is supposed to have the ague. Late in the afternoon twenty four Clalums arrived with a good lot of furs to trade. They received a pipe to smoke and a piece of tobacco for the night. The weather still very warm.

6th Wednesday. The same employment for the men till breakfast when they were all called into the Fort and here put to work in [page 92] preparing the wood for the square of the men's houses and as the men are done thrashing the Pease they are here, one is employed winding the same indoors. The plan of getting the men about us is on account of safety during the Clalums are here. These Indians made an attempt of getting the Blankets for one Beaver I immediately turned them out of the shop, and told them they may go home with their furs. This step has caused several of the Chiefs to speak but I paid no attention to their ill humor. Fair weather.

7th Thursday. We have now completed the cleaning of our Pease and our crop in that article is thirty five kegs of nine Gallons out of 100 Gallons of seed. The men still employed indoors. The Clalums traded as I wished, and they all left us well pleased, excepting the son of the Chief killed by our party in Mr McLeod's expedition.<sup>79</sup> This fellow traded a few skins but carried off four large Beaver. The trade from this nation to day is 98 Beaver skins mostly large and a few small furs. Pierre Charles bled at the nose yesterday, and to day he has had a fit of ague. Medicines were given him, and this evening he seems much better. The weather continues warm though the night has been cooler than usual. [page 93]

<sup>79</sup> On the 17th of June, 1828, an expedition against the Clallaam Indians was fitted out at Fort Vancouver under the command of Alexander R. McLeod to avenge the murder of Alexander McKenzie. The result was a severe chastisement of the tribe, some twenty-five of their number being slain. These Indians, naturally, were somewhat timid in approaching the company's post after this affray, but there are few ills that time cannot efface, and now, six years afterwards, the son of the slain chief, himself, is the trusted messenger of the company. See, for source account: Frank Ermatinger, *Earliest Expedition Against Puget Sound Indians*, (in *Washington Historical Quarterly*, January, 1907).



8th Friday. The square of the men's house up. A Skacet Indian has arrived with a bundle of beaver to trade. Some scamp or other have stolen one of our horses, if true I shall make an example of him so as to stop these Indians from stealing. Clear weather, nothing of any wind to cool us.

9th Saturday. The men have been employed squaring wood and working about the different jobs of the place. The mare lost yesterday has been found, and as suspected Louis's Brother in Law took it to carry himself home. Traded with the Indian that arrived yesterday. A large party of Indians have come in order to pass the Sunday with us. There is a camp of Oh-qua-mishes<sup>80</sup> Indians below the hill as also Sin-no-oh-mishes.<sup>81</sup> These Natives have pitched near us for the purpose of gathering acorns and berries. Fair weather.

10th Sunday. The natives assembled and requested me to point out to them what was proper for them to act in regard to our Divine Being. I told them that they should endeavor to keep their hands from killing and stealing to love one another, and to pray only to the Great Master of Life, or as they say, the Great Chief who resides on high. In fact I did my best to make them understand Good from Evil, they, on their part promised fair, and had their devotional Dance, for without it they would think very little of [page 94] what we say to them. The weather warm & fair.

Augt. 11th [1834] Monday. Plomondon and Mc Donald still about my dwelling house. Louis, Bourgeau, Brown and Mc Kee have been employed squaring wood for filling up pieces. Pierre Charles still unwell and Ouvre plastering. The Indians about the place traded a few Beaver skins. Some of them have gone off to their old quarters. The mornings are now cool and the day warm. We are much troubled with wasps which are very numerous and voracious.

12 Tuesday. The men continue at their daily work. The natives still come in with something or other to trade. Fair weather.

13th Wednesday. The squarers have done their work, and have begun to fill up the square of the men's house. Traded 20 Beaver skins from the Sin-no-oh-mish Indians. Fine weather.

14th Thursday. The men have been employed indoors. Fair weather.

15th Friday. The men's house is now ready to begin the Chiminies. Pierre is still unwell and Plomondon is getting on slowly with his work. Cool mornings us usual.

16th Saturday. Sent four men to cut roofing sticks for the house

<sup>80</sup> Suquamish.

<sup>81</sup> Snohomish.

now building, the rest of the men employed as usual. Fair weather. [page 95]

17 Sunday. All the Indians assembled to hear the wonders of our Divine Being. Fair weather to day though rained all night.

18th Monday. Plomondon was working at making doors. Pierre Charles, Mc Donald, Louis, Mc Kee, Brown, and Bourgeau were employed making Chiminies, two completed in course of this day. Traded a few beaver from two Cowlitz Indians. A few of the Oh-qua-mish and Sin-no-oh-mish left us for their own lands north of this. Fair weather.

19 Tuesday. Pierre Charles and Plomondon on the sick list; the rest of the men were employed at the Chiminies. Le Francais<sup>82</sup> an Indian Chief arrived, but seems to be poorly off in the way of furs. The weather fair.

20 Wednesday. Plomondon at work making doors. Brown and Bourgeau with an Indian were across to the Island for Bark. 240 pieces brought to the Beach. The Chiminies were completed and the men began fixing the roofing sticks. Pierre Charles still sick. It rained most part of the day.

21st Thursday. The same employment for the men. Indians come and go but trade dull. Fair weather.

22nd Friday. Began covering the mens house with bark most of it done. Two men [page 96] were out for more bark, in the evening they came back with 100 pieces. More Oh qua mish Indians arrived on the score of trade. Cloudy weather.

23rd Sunday. I have this day got into my new dwelling house what is now done is well and I hope in a few days it will be completed. The mens house fairly covered and the Gable ends filled up. We have now about us three hundred Indians belonging to eight different tribes. A Chief by name Babillard got into a scrap with me, but the coward soon drew in his horns. This scamp has ever been troublesome as Ouvre says, and on that account I made him run from the Fort in a fright though provided all the time with a Brass bludgeon. The weather fine.

24th Sunday. A great day for the Indians who assembled all here for a dance and to hear from me what was right to do. I made them a speech in the Flat Head language, which was understood by the Chief Frenchmen who was the linguist for the rest of the tribes present. Every one seemed to pay attention to what I said, and it is to be hoped that these Indians will become as good as those of the Interior. A Clallum chief arrived but could not see me owing to the number of Indians. There was

<sup>82</sup> Le Francais, "The Frenchman," a sobriquet given this Indian because of his attempted imitation of European customs. He was chief of the Skagit tribe. See: ante, not 56.

about 250 men [page 97] Women, Boys and Girls in the dance every one peaceable. The weather cloudy.

25th Monday. The men employed as usual. many of the Indians away to their homes. Pierre Charles has had another attack of the Ague but I am happy to remark it was a very slight one. Rained all day.

26th Tuesday. The men employed as follows, three squaring wood for the flooring of the men's house two fixing the same. Pierre Charles making a plough and Plomondon working in my house. Traded a few Beaver skins. A Sea Otter was brought me but did not agree in the price. The night has been stormy with rain. Fair all day.

27th Wednesday. The men employed as usual. The Indians numerous about us. The Clallums have gone away and carried back their Sea Otter. Fair weather.

28th Thursday. All the men employed indoors. Got the scythes put in order. Pierre Charles again sick of the ague. The weather fair.

29th Friday. Sent letters to Mr Yale by the Chief Nes Clam who proceeds to Langley. Some plastering done to the men's house, the flooring and division [page 98] made for each family. Pierre Charles still sick. The natives keep going and coming with some skins and a little meat. The weather fair.

Augt, 30th 1834 Saturday. The plastering nearly completed. The Indians keep near us for the purpose of passing tomorrow with us. Fair weather.

31 Sunday. The men have kept at rest and the natives were also attentive to their devotions. The Returns of the month as follows,

193 Large Beaver  
 43 Small do.  
 3 lbs Cutting do.  
 8 Black Bears  
 3 Fishers  
 24 Badgers  
 42 Minks  
 102 Rats  
 53 Otters  
 7 Elk Skins  
 37 Deer "  
 9 Animals (the meat of)  
 13 Mats [page 99]

September 1st [1834] Monday. This morning Pierre Charles and family took their departure for Fort Langley, along with the chief Frenchman Two men have been put at cutting grass for making hay, the rest of

the men employed in the Fort. Many of the Indians have left us. Fair weather.

2 Tuesday. The same employment for the men. This morning Atsay-le-mish's sister died she has been unwell this some time back, and all the Indian Doctors did their best but without success. The articles received by them were, on her Death, returned to the relatives. The Princess's husband has gone to Vancouver, and by him I have written to the Gentlemen there. The old Chief Chickalitz arrived and traded 18 Beaver skins besides a few Otters. The weather fair and the nights cool. We are much troubled with mosquitoes.

3rd Wednesday. The men have this day entered into their different lodgings, which are complete, and every man is now well lodged. Traded a few Beaver skins, several other arrivals, and have brought more furs. Fair weather.

4th Thursday. Sent a man with the Oxen and wagon to gather up the hay and make stacks. Plomondon employed making a Table—Mc Donald [page 100] and Louis were put to chopping the large trees about the Fort—Traded about 20 Beaver and a few Otters. The weather clear and very warm.

Sept. 5th 1834 Friday. Two men employed at cutting up a large tree that lies in our way. Three others were busy making hay, and Plomondon has been at work making a pair of stairs. The Indians are still numerous about the place. The weather fair.

6th Saturday. Got the Barley pulled up by the roots as it was too short for the sickle or scythe. The stairs completed. The weather warm and we are surrounded by a thick smoke owing to the fire being put to the field behind us.

7th Sunday. All quiet and the natives had their dance at La ah lets lodge. Weather cloudy.

8th Monday. Three men were cutting poles for making a fence. One carting away the wood cut from the big tree; some part of it we had to use powder. Plomondon was out cutting some roofing sticks for the Store, those put good for nothing. The weather the same. Smoky.

9th Tuesday. Three men employed getting poles, one ploughing the pease field, and Plomondon usually employed, the weather the same. [page 101]

10 Wednesday. The men variously employed. Two getting cedar bark from the Island, one ploughing, one driving the Oxen for the same, one squarng wood for a water spout, and another hauling home fence wood. The Indians have all gone on war to the Too-an-nooes but I really believe it is only to get something from those Indians as a remuneration for



the loss of one of the Oh-qu-a-mish Chief in the death of a Son. The weather much the same.

11th Thursday. One man cutting wood for making a Stable. Two others getting home the remaining Cedar bark from the Island and another hauling it up from the Sound. A flag staff has been brought home and a fence is under way for making a Park for the Cattle. The weather has become clear and the smoke has partly disappeared.

12 Friday. Sent men and women to gather up the hay, and the remainder of the men working about the place. The weather fair.

13th Saturday. Two men ploughing, the rest employed about the place. The Indians have all returned from the Too-ah-noos, and have all paid me a visit. Clear weather.

14th Sunday. It rained mostly all night and most part of the day. [page 102]

15 Monday. The men variously employed; Wheat sowed in the peas-field. Wiscum Mc Donald has had an addition to his family, a daughter. Fair weather.

16 Tuesday. We are going on with our ploughing and sowing. A stable is under way for sheltering our Cattle during the rainy season. Indians are still numerous about us. Fair weather.

17 Wednesday. The usual employment for the men, and weather continues fair

18 Thursday. Indians keep coming on us with some furs. No change in our duty. Cloudy weather.

19 Friday. Four strangers arrived from up Hoods Canal and have brought a few skins. The Princess' husband has committed an unbecoming action saying that those people above mentioned had stolen a slave for which the scamp took 7 Beaver skins and a Gun. I of course called him to account, and made him give back the skins. Fair weather.

20 Saturday. The wheat all in the ground—Gave two young Indian lads each a drubbing for riding our horses. Etienne Quaze arrived from Vancouver with letters, and this evening the Chief Frenchman cast up from Langley with Letters bearing the [page 103] same date as those of Vancouver—all well at both places in the way of trade but I am sorry to say that the Ague is very severe about Vancouver. An American Brig<sup>83</sup> has cast up in the Columbia, its views are not known. The weather fine.

21 Sunday. The natives were all present at the dance to the amount of 200. In course of it a young handsome woman (La Grande Bish) was married to a good looking lad of the So-qu-a-mish tribe. Fair weather.

22 Monday. Two men were out ploughing but came home soon the

<sup>83</sup> The May Darce, Captain Lambert.

plough not good, altered it a little and it seemed to go better. The rest of the men employed about the place. Etienne [Quaze] and the Chief Frenchman off for Langley with Letters. Some say a cannon was fired a few days ago about Clallum's point. Fair weather.

23 Thursday. The Cow house completed and the ploughers have done a little work. Plomondon and slave are sent to Vancouver with letters. Traded about thirty Beaver skins from the Tough-no-wau-mish.<sup>84</sup> Fine weather.

24 Wednesday. Got the Kitchen newly covered with Bark and an upper flooring put on. Ouvre was employed repairing an oven. Traded a half an Elk weighing about 100 lbs. Fair weather. [page 104]

25 Thursday. Two men attending to the plough. The rest of them were employed at squaring wood. The weather cloudy.

26 Friday. Same duty for the men. Indians are as usual employed at gathering acorns for the winter. The weather cloudy.

27 Saturday. Got the Fort cleaned up and other necessary jobs done about it. Traded several Beaver skins to day. Rained during the night

28 Sunday. All the natives as well as ourselves at rest. The weather was cloudy and at intervals we got rain.

29 Monday. One man hauling in squared wood while the rest of the hands are squaring more. All what was wanted is now on the place.

30—Tuesday—Two men were ploughing and the rest employed near the place. Trade of the month—

144	Large Beaver
74	Small "
1½	lb Cutting "
5	Black Bear
57	Lar Otters
2	Small "
159	Rats
22	Chev Skins
1	Elk
1½	Animal meat of
100	lb Elk "
16	fresh Salmon
22	Dried "
90	fm Hyouquois <sup>85</sup>

Fair weather

<sup>84</sup> Touch-no-wamish—probably the Dwamish.

<sup>85</sup>Theodore Winthrop, in "The Canoe and the Saddle," spells the word 'Hiaqua.' It is a slender, slightly curved shell used as money by the Indians. It was a sort of western wampum. The shells were strung on sinew and, as this entry indicates, was measured by the fathom when brought to the white man's trading post.

## BOOK REVIEWS

---

PAPERS OF JAMES A. BAYARD, 1796-1815. Edited by Elizabeth Donnan. (Washington, American Historical Association, 1915. Pp. 539.)

This is Volume II of the Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1913. Though bearing that date of two years ago it is fresh from the press. The book constitutes the eleventh report of the Historical Manuscripts Commission. For the year 1913 the members were as follows: Worthington C. Ford, Clarence W. Alvord, Herbert E. Bolton, Julian P. Bretz, Archer B. Hulbert and William O. Scroggs.

As Bayard was one of the five commissioners who negotiated the treaty ending the War of 1812, readers in the Pacific Northwest would be justified in hoping for new light in the papers on the Oregon question. As to this the first test is disappointing. The copious index makes but one citation. There, under date of November 16, 1813, is found: "The Count R[omanzoff] told me after dinner, as he remarked en confidence, that he had information that the British had fitted out an expedition to destroy our settlemt. at the mouth of Columbia river." The editor, in a footnote, adds: "Astoria, founded 1811, was in December, 1813, occupied by the British vessel Raccoon, sent from Rio Janiero for the purpose."

Meager as is that lone entry, it is important in that it shows that the American commissioners had a hint of the British designs on Oregon a full year before the treaty was signed. It is now known that the commissioners were receiving instructions from the State Department at Washington to insist on Astoria being considered within the ante bellum clause of the treaty, no matter what should happen to the settlement during the war. That hint by Count Romanzoff ought certainly to have strengthened that purpose which was eventually accomplished.

Because of this Oregon contact, readers in the Northwest are interested in the complicated negotiations for the great Treaty of Ghent, to the literature of which the present volume is an important contribution. Most of the correspondence which occupies the book to page 384 pertains to the period of stress and war. Pages 385 to 516 embraces Bayard's European Diary while on the fruitless mission with Albert Gallatin and John Quincy Adams at St. Petersburg and the successful one at Ghent with the same men and also with Henry Clay and Jonathan Russell, who made the commission of five. The participation in those negotiations by Adams,

Clay and Gallatin have been fully treated. The present volume fills a gap that has heretofore existed and deserves a cordial welcome for that reason.

Miss Donnan, as editor, has given evidence of a high grade of scholarship. The footnotes are apt, full and illuminating. Under the modest title of "Preface," she has given in brief but interesting form all the essentials that are available of Bayard's biography. She frankly says: "He was not a great statesman, he had not a mind of marked originality or vision, but he was a careful and judicious lawyer, with a thoroughly competent grasp of the subjects with which he dealt, a sincere and high-minded public servant, and a warm-hearted and amiable man. That he gained not only the respect but also the devotion of those who came into close association with him is clearly shown by the letters, as is also his devotion to his family, the separation from which never ceased to be a source of sorrow to him."

On pages 9 and 10 she tells the story of a search for pictures of the Americans made by P. van Huffel at the time of the negotiation. Dr. J. Franklin Jameson of the Carnegie Institution of Washington visited Ghent in 1912, in connection with the then proposed celebration of the century of peace. He there learned of the pencil portraits by the well known artist. The celebration was abandoned on account of the great war but Dr. Jameson's vigorous search revealed the pictures. They were in the possession of a grandson of Christopher Hughes in Baltimore. Hughes was secretary of the American commission at Ghent and was later United States Minister to Sweden. The rescued pencil portrait of Bayard by Van Huffel in 1814 and an engraving by St. Mémin about 1798 appear as the frontispiece and the only illustration in the book.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

---

TRAVELS IN ALASKA. By John Muir. (Boston, Houghton-Mifflin Company, 1915. Pp. 327. \$2.50 net.)

Here is a posthumous volume from the pen of the greatest exponent of nature yet developed in the far west. The Scotch boy was moved in early life to Wisconsin where he lived a wonderful boyhood. But his long years of vigorous manhood were lived joyously and effectively upon the Pacific Coast.

The preface of the present volume is written by William Frederic Badé, ripe scholar and Professor of Oriental Theological Literature and Semitic Languages in Pacific Theological Seminary, University of California. He begins: "Forty years ago John Muir wrote to a friend: 'I am hopelessly and forever a mountaineer. \* \* \* Civilization and



fever, and all the morbidness that has been hooted at me, have not dimmed my glacial eyes, and I care to live only to entice people to look at Nature's loveliness.' How gloriously he fulfilled the promise of his early manhood! Fame, all unbidden, wore a path to his door, but he always remained a modest, unspoiled mountaineer."

The professor also pays a beautiful tribute to Mrs. Marion Randall Parsons, close friend of the great naturalist, who had worked much with him and knew well the pencilled notes on the manuscripts. "The labor involved," says the preface, "was the greater in order that the finished work might exhibit the last touches of Muir's master-hand, and yet contain nothing that did not flow from his pen. All readers of this book will feel grateful for her labor of love."

The contents of the volume are divided into two parts, one giving the trip to Alaska in 1879 including the wonderful experiences that resulted in the discovery of the great glacier since called by his name and also in the writing of the American classic, the little dog story called "Stickeen." The other part of the book gives the trip of 1880, the most charming portion of which is "My sled-trip on the Muir Glacier."

Those who love the out-of-doors in the great far west and especially the numerous hosts who already know the writings of John Muir will greet with keen delight this new volume. They will also rejoice over the promise in the preface of further salvage from the naturalist's unpublished writings.

---

WASHINGTON STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY PUBLICATIONS,  
Volume II, 1907-1914. (Olympia, Public Printer, 1915. Pp. 483.)

The appearance of this book was noted in the *Washington Historical Quarterly*, Volume VI, pages 284-285. As there stated, it is to tie by publication, the work of the Society back to its former publication in 1906.

The book carries thirty illustrations, mostly portraits. Following the lists of officers and committees, the book contains eight chapters or parts as follows: History of the Washington State Historical Society, Dedication Exercises of the Monuments Erected by the Washington State Historical Society, Unveiling of the Statues of Francis W. Cushman and Robert L. McCormick, Documents Relating to Other Historical Events, Papers Relating to the History of the State of Washington, Papers Relating to Mt. Tacoma-Rainier, Biographical, The Tacoma Research Club of the State Historical Society.

A few of these need further comment. The documents relating to other historical events are an account of the reception to Ezra Meeker on his return from recrossing the continent with an ox team, golden anniver-

sary of the Washington Standard, addresses by Secretary W. H. Gilstrap at the dedication of the monument to Robert Gray and the tablet at the end of the Oregon trail, and addresses at the banquet to Gen. Hazard Stevens. The papers relating to history of the State of Washington are the story of the Indian attack on Seattle, by Lucile W. Hewitt; notes on early wagon roads, by Secretary Gilstrap; reminiscent article, by Gen. J. C. Strong; notes by Secretary Gilstrap of interviews with Mr. Van Ogle, of Orting, relating to the Naches Pass emigrants and the Indian wars; Washington Territory's first legislature, by Allen Weir, of Olympia; the anti-Chinese riots of 1885. The papers relating to "Mt. Tacoma-Rainier" are the first ascent, a reprint of the article by Gen. Hazard Stevens in the Atlantic Monthly for November, 1876; Indian superstitions of the mountain, by Rev. P. F. Hylebos; letters relating to the naming of the mountain is an interesting collection of letters written by and to Benjamin L. Harvey of Tacoma in an effort to substantiate the claim that Tacoma was the Indian name for Mount Rainier.

---

THE MOUNTAINEER, VOLUME VIII, 1915. Edited by Winona Bailey. (Seattle, The Mountaineers, Incorporated, 1915. Pp. 188. 50 cents.)

The annual volume of this organization is always prized by those who love the grandeur of the mountains. This year the book is devoted to the Mount Rainier National Park. For the first time a large party circled the great peak at or near snow line. The book has an unusual wealth of beautiful illustrations and also a body of literature of real and historic value.

The accounts of the trip around the mountain will in time be much sought for, but probably the most striking feature of the book is a sheaf of greetings from General Hazard Stevens, P. B. Van Trump, Bailey Willis, Ben Longmire, E. S. Ingraham, H. M. Sarvant, J. B. Flett, C. V. Piper and F. E. Matthes, dating from the first successful ascent of Mount Rainier to the recent careful survey by the Government. One needs only to reflect on how precious would be a similar group of writings about any of the great mountains of Europe to realize how unique and valuable is this collection made while the pioneers are still living.

Miss Ruth Hanna has an article giving in brief summary the information about the earliest ascents which had been given at the campfires of the summer outing. G. F. Allen describes the forest types of the park, Professor Edwin J. Saunders gives the geological story of Mount Rainier, F. E. Matthes, of the United States Geological Survey, tells of the survey of the park and the measurement of the mountain, fixing the height definitely

at 14,408 feet above the sea. There are numerous other articles of special interest to followers of mountaineering.

---

GOVERNORS OF WASHINGTON, TERRITORIAL AND STATE. By Edmond S. Meany. (Seattle, Department of Printing, University of Washington, 1915. Pp. 114. \$1.00.)

For the first time the biographies of the Territorial and State governors of Washington have been gathered into a book. The essays appeared first in daily installments on the editorial page of the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*. The little book is dedicated to Mr. Scott C. Bone, editor of that newspaper.

Each biography is preceded by a photograph of the governor with the single exception of Richard D. Gholson, third governor of the Territory, of whom no picture could be found. In addition to the portraits there are reproductions of the great seals of the Territory and the State. The essays number twenty-two, fourteen for the Territorial period and eight since statehood to the present time. The edition is limited, printed from the original type, and each book is numbered and signed by the author.

---

HISTORICAL RECORDS AND STUDIES. Edited by Charles George Herbermann. (New York, The United States Catholic Historical Society, 1915. Pp. 276.)

The second study in this volume is the one that all readers in the Northwest will find of greatest interest. It is by Rev. Thomas J. Campbell, S. J., and is entitled *Dr. John McLoughlin*. The author on page 93 frankly says his study is chiefly interested in Dr. McLoughlin's Catholicity, but in proving his case he has assembled thirty-three pages of valuable facts about this great character. His opening paragraph gives a good idea of the sympathetic approach:

"Over the Speaker's desk in the legislative halls of Oregon there is a portrait of a venerable man whose aspect is almost startlingly like that of an old lion. A great mass of snow-white hair falls like a mane on his broad shoulders; his head is erect, his eyes piercing; the features are regular and firmly set, conveying an impression of indomitable resolution coupled with a consciousness of power, yet without any suggestion of haughtiness or pride. On the contrary, there is a glow of kindness and benignity in his whole demeanor. Looking at it, one is instinctively prompted to say, 'Here is a born leader of men, one whose followers must not only have feared and obeyed but loved and almost worshiped him.' The pic-

ture represents Dr. John McLoughlin, and under his name is the inscription 'Founder of Oregon.' "

The essentials of Dr. McLoughlin's biography are given and even the most recent writings like those of Frederick V. Holman, C. B. Bagley and Agnes C. Laut are cited and quoted. The author seeks to demonstrate that Dr. McLoughlin was a Catholic from infancy rather than a convert to that faith in later life.

It may be a kindness to the author and publishers to point out a slight slip of the types on page 100 where Bonneville is made to write in 1634 instead of 1834.

---

TRAIL TALES. By James David Gillilan. (New York, The Abingdon Press, 1915. Pp. 182. 75 cents.)

This sprightly and interesting little volume is sent by The Methodist Book Concern, 150 Fifth Avenue, New York. In his preface the author says: "These few stories, culled from the repertoire of an active life of more than thirty years, are samples of personal experiences, and are taken almost at random from mining camp, frontier town and settlement, public and private life. As a minister the writer has had wide and varied opportunities in all the Northwest, but more especially in Utah, Oregon, and Idaho. Many a man much more modest has far excelled him in life experiences, but some of them have never told."

That statement gives a good idea of the author and his work. The contents embrace brief chapters under such headings as God's Minister, The Western Trail, The Desert, Sagebrush, The Iron Trail, Indians of the Trail, The Stagecoach, Mormondom, Great Salt Lake, The Great Northwest. One of the most interesting portions is entitled Chief Joseph and His Lost Wallowa, which he concludes as follows: "Chief Joseph died near Spokane not many years since, wailing out the one great desire of his life, a final glimpse of the land of his birth, the hunting ground of his manhood and the graves of his sires."

---

THE PACIFIC NORTHWEST PULPIT. Edited by Paul Little. (New York, The Methodist Book Concern, 1915. Pp. 278. \$1.00 net.)

This is an interesting compilation of sermons. It is divided into three parts. The first or introductory part contains a foreword by Charles M. Stuart, president of the Garrett Biblical Institute, an introduction by the editor and a sermon by Resident Bishop Richard Joseph Cooke, Portland, Oregon.

Part II contains the main portion of the book, a collection of sixteen sermons by prominent Methodist ministers in the Pacific Northwest. These



are grouped under the following heads: Oregon, Puget Sound, Columbia River, Idaho, Montana and North Montana. The Washington ministers represented include the following: Rev. A. W. Leonard, First Church, Seattle; Rev. Joseph P. Marlatt, First Church, Everett; President Edward H. Todd, Tacoma; Rev. Robert Brumblay, Superintendent of Wenatchee District, Spokane; Rev. Harold O. Perry, Superintendent of The Dalles District, Kennewick; Rev. Francis Burgette Short, First Church, Spokane; and Rev. Gabriel Sykes, Waterville.

Part III is a symposium on "The Problems of the Pacific Northwest: How Best Shall We Solve Them?"

---

THE DALLES-CELILO PORTAGE; ITS HISTORY AND INFLUENCE. By T. C. Elliott. (Portland, Ivy Press, 1915. Pp. 42. Also published in Oregon Historical Quarterly for June, 1915.)

This pamphlet gives in appropriate and convenient form the historical address delivered at the opening of the Dalles-Celilo Canal of the Columbia River, at Big Eddy, May 5, 1915. It contains a carefully prepared account of the history of early transportation on the Columbia. The influence of the Dalles obstruction to the free navigation of the river is shown to have been of great importance in its bearing upon the history of the Columbia River Basin. During the Indian War of 1855-56, it is noted that nearly all of the munitions and supplies from Fort Vancouver to the upper country were carried across a portage road of about fifteen miles from the present city of The Dalles over the hills to the mouth of the Des Chutes River and then transferred to boats. Had there been no obstruction in the river, the war might have been brought to a termination much sooner.

---

READINGS IN AMERICAN HISTORY. By David Saville Muzzey. (Boston, Ginn and Company, 1915. Pp. 594. \$1.50.)

The professor in Barnard College, Columbia University, author of a text-book in the same field, has prepared this supplement source book. It is a good piece of work. The Pacific Northwest is represented by three references to Oregon. On pages 212-214 is given an extract from the ship's log showing Captain Robert Gray's discovery and naming the Columbia river. On pages 258-260 under the head of "An Era of Hard Feeling" is an extract from Senator Benton's plea for the occupation of Oregon in 1825. On pages 322-330 Senator Benton attacks the "Fifty-four Forties" on May 22, 1846.

The Lewis and Clark expedition is represented by President Jeffer-

son's letter to Meriwether Lewis of June 20, 1803, and by Sergeant Ordway's letter to his parents of April 8, 1804.

---

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY, PROCEEDINGS, 1914-1915. (Boston, The Society, 1915. Pp. 553.)

The committee on publication consists of Henry Cabot Lodge, James Ford Rhodes, Edward Stanwood and Worthington C. Ford. The book, as usual, is scholarly to an eminent degree. It is packed with valuable materials but as those materials do not pertain to the Northwest an extended review of the book is not expected in this Quarterly.

---

THE AMERICAN INDIAN IN THE UNITED STATES, PERIOD 1850-1914. By Warren K. Moorehead. (Andover, The Andover Press, 1914. Pp. 440.)

This large and beautifully illustrated volume is from the pen of the author of *The Stone Age in North America*, who is Curator of American Archaeology in Phillips Academy. In the introduction he says: "With some diffidence I present a history of the American Indian during the transition period."

The frontispiece is a portrait of Red Cloud, war chief of the Ogallala Sioux, whom he calls the greatest Indian of modern times.

Chapter XXV is entitled *Indians of the Northwest*. It covers pages 253 to 264. Besides the Crows, Utes and other Rocky Mountain tribes, he here deals with the Nez Percés, Modocs and Yakimas, giving the volume that much of bearing in this region.

In addition to the wealth of illustrations, the book carries two maps showing the Indian reservations in 1879 and in 1913.

---

IN THE FOOTSTEPS OF NAPOLEON. By James Morgan. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1915. Pp. 524. \$2.50.)

This beautifully illustrated book is by the author of "Abraham Lincoln, the Boy and the Man," who retraced Napoleon's footsteps from Corsica to St. Helena. Chapter XVIII touches the Northwest. It is a brief one entitled "Selling Louisiana," pages 143 to 146. One paragraph will show the author's method of treatment:

"After two weeks of chaffering over the biggest land transaction in history the entire parcel was sold to the Americans for \$11,250,000 cash and a remission of spoliation claims against France to the amount of \$3,750,000, or a total of \$15,000,000. One shearing of sheep in the

states of the Louisiana purchase now would suffice to pay the original price of those more than eight hundred thousand square miles."

---

#### Other Books Received

AMERICAN CHURCH HISTORY SEMINAR. Report, 1914-1915. (Washington, Catholic University of America, 1915. Pp. 68.)

AMERICAN IRISH HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Journal, Volume 14, 1914-1915. (New York, The Society, 1915. Pp. 393.)

BIGGS, ASA. Autobiography. Edited by R. D. W. Connor. Publications of the North Carolina Historical Commission, Bulletin Number 19. (Raleigh, State Printer, 1915. Pp. 51.)

CAMPBELL, MARIUS R., AND OTHERS. Guidebook of the Western United States, Part A. The Northern Pacific Route. (Washington, United States Geological Survey, 1915. Pp. 212.)

COON, CHARLES L. North Carolina Schools and Academies, 1790-1840, a Documentary History. (Raleigh, North Carolina Historical Commission, 1915. Pp. 846.)

DARTON, N. H., AND OTHERS. Guidebook of the Western United States, Part C. The Santa Fe Route. (Washington, United States Geological Survey, 1915. Pp. 194.)

DILLER, J. S., AND OTHERS. Guidebook of the Western United States, Part D. The Shasta Route and Coast Line. (Washington, United States Geological Survey, 1915. Pp. 142.)

GRAVES, FRANK PIERREPONT. A Student's History of Education. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1915. Pp. 453.)

ILLINOIS STATE HISTORICAL LIBRARY. Collections, Volume 12. The County Archives of the State of Illinois. By Theodore Calvin Pease. (Springfield, State Historical Library, 1915. Pp. 730.)

JAPANESE DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION. Report on Education in Japan for the Panama-Pacific Exposition. (Tokyo, The Department, 1915. Pp. 187.)

LAKE MOHONK CONFERENCE. Report of the Twenty-first Annual Conference on International Arbitration. (Mohonk Lake, N. Y., The Conference, 1915. Pp. 196.)

LEE, WILLIS T., RALPH W. STONE, HOYT S. GALE AND OTHERS. Guidebook of the Western United States, Part B. The Overland

Route. (Washington, United States Geological Survey, 1915. Pp. 244.)

LULL, HERBERT G. Survey of the Port Townsend Public Schools. (Seattle, University of Washington, 1915. Pp. 112.)

MILLETT, F. B. Craft Guilds of the Thirteenth Century in Paris. (Kingston, Canada, Queen's University, 1915. Pp. 23.)

NEW HAMPSHIRE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Collections, Volume II. The Indian Stream Republic and Luther Parker. By Grant Showerman. (Concord, The Society, 1915. Pp. 272.)

NORTH CAROLINA STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION. Proceedings of the Fifteenth Annual Session. Edited by R. D. W. Connor. (Raleigh, State Printer, 1915. Pp. 150.)

PIPER, CHARLES V., AND BEATTIE, R. KENT. Flora of the Northwest Coast. (Lancaster, Pa., The New Era Printing Company, 1915. Pp. 418.)

SAPIR, EDWARD. A Sketch of the Social Organization of the Nass River Indians. (Ottawa, Geological Survey, Department of Mines, Canada, 1915. Pp. 30.)

SKELTON, O. D. Federal Finance. (Kingston, Canada, Queen's College, 1915. Pp. 34.)

SPECK, F. G. Memoir 70, Family Hunting Territories and Social Life of Various Algonkian Bands of the Ottawa Valley; and Memoir 71, Myths and Folk-lore of the Timiskaming Algonquin and Timagami Ojibwa. (Ottawa, Geological Survey, Department of Mines, Canada, 1915. Pp. 87.)

STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WISCONSIN. Index to Volumes I-XX of the Wisconsin Historical Collections. (Madison, The Society, 1915. Pp. 573.)

LORD SYDENHAM OF COMBE. India and the War. (London, Hodder & Stoughton, 1915. Pp. 77.)

WASHINGTON BANKERS ASSOCIATION. Proceedings of the Twentieth Annual Convention, Seattle, September 6-7, 1915. (Ritzville, Wash. W. H. Martin, Secretary, 1915. Pp. 164.)

WASHINGTON STATE CONFERENCE OF CHARITIES AND CORRECTION. Proceedings of the Eighth Session, Everett, June 8-10, 1915. (Everett, Women's Book Club, 1915. Pp. 58.)



## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### Marking the Spot Where Stevens Fell

On October 2, 1915, a granite monolith with a bronze tablet was erected to General Isaac I. Stevens on the spot where he fell in the Battle of Chantilly on September 1, 1862. A similar monument was dedicated to General Philip Kearny who fell in the same battle.

The ground on which the monuments were erected was given by Captain Ballard who owns the farm on which the battle was fought.

The inscription on the Stevens memorial is as follows:

"Here fell Major General Isaac Ingalls Stevens with the flag of the Republic in his dying grasp September 1st, 1862."

There were present at the ceremonies unveiling it: General Hazard Stevens, son of the hero honored, who was himself wounded in the same battle; Richard S. Eskridge and Captain Oliver S. Eskridge, grandsons of General I. I. Stevens, forty Union veterans, twenty Confederate veterans and sixty civilians.

The State of New Jersey some years ago created a commission to erect a statue and monument to General Kearny. The monument to General Stevens was erected by that commission assisted by General Hazard Stevens. This appropriate honor for Washington's first Territorial Governor by a commission of another state suggests once more that the State of Washington should take steps to erect a suitable statue of General Isaac Ingalls Stevens.

---

### American Historical Association

The thirty-first annual meeting of this great organization was held in Washington City from Monday, December 27, to Friday, December 31. The programmes were rich and varied. Professor H. Morse Stephens discussed Nationalism and History in his presidential address. He was a worthy representative of the Pacific Coast, being of the faculty of the University of California.

The programmes did not contain topics this year bearing directly on the history of the Pacific Northwest.

---

### Pacific Coast Branch

The Pacific Coast Branch of the American Historical Association held its twelfth annual meeting at Stanford University on Friday and Sat-

urday, Novemebr 26 and 27. Readers of this Quarterly will be most interested in the participation of Professor Ralph H. Lutz of the University of Washington. This year he is at Stanford University taking the place of Professor Krehbiel, who is absent on leave. Doctor Lutz gave a chapter from his European studies. The title of his paper was: "Rudolf Schleiden and the Visit to Richmond, April 25, 1861."

---

#### **Oregon Historical Society**

The seventeenth annual meeting of this organization was held in Portland, Oregon, on December 18. The annual address was given by O. B. Sperlin, Head of the Department of English in the Stadium and Lincoln Park High Schools of Tacoma. His theme was: "The Indians of the Northwest as Revealed in the Journals of the Earliest Fur Traders and Explorers."

---

#### **Historic Spot in Yakima Valley**

L. V. McWhorter, Sul-lil, the medicine man, and William Charley, as interpreter, made a trip in a heavy storm late in November to fix upon the exact spot where the Yakima Indians murdered their agent, A. J. Bolon, thus inciting the Indian war of 1855. Sul-lil, the medicine man, is supposed to be the last living witness of that tragedy. It is now proposed to mark the spot permanently for the sake of history.

---

#### **Article by General Chittenden**

General H. M. Chittenden, of Seattle, has an article on "Manifest Destiny" in the January number of the Atlantic Monthly. The main interest of the article lies in the eminent engineer's view of a just and sensible dealing with the problems presented by man and nature in the Imperial Valley, California.

---

#### **Living Pioneers of Washington**

The editor of this Quarterly has been writing a series of biographical sketches of living pioneers of the Pacific Northwest and especially of Washington for the editorial page of the Seattle Post-Intelligencer. It is not at all likely that the articles will be collected into book form. However, they will be useful to future genealogists and historians. For their benefit and convenience the articles are cited here with the date of the Post-Intelligencer in which they appeared, the year being 1915, and the present address of each pioneer:

October 28, Edwin Eells, Tacoma.

October 29, Mrs. Louisa Boren Denny, Seattle.

- October 30, Samuel Leroy Crawford, Seattle.  
November 1, Mrs. Phoebe N. Judson, Lynden, Wash.  
November 2, Edgar Bryan, Seattle.  
November 3, Robert L. Dixon, Seattle.  
November 4, Thomas Pier Hastie, Mount Vernon, Wash.  
November 5, Rev. William Shaw Harrington, Seattle.  
November 6, Edward Sturgis Ingraham, Seattle.  
November 8, J. W. Edwards, Seattle.  
November 9, Mr. and Mrs. R. C. Crawford, Seattle.  
November 10, Mrs. Catharine Maple Van Asselt, Seattle.  
November 11, Junious Thomas Turner, Washington, D. C.  
November 12, Walter Graham, Seattle.  
November 13, Prof. O. B. Johnson, Seattle.  
November 15, Mrs. Lydia Clark Stark, Lynden, Wash.  
November 16, Rev. Albert Atwood, Seattle.  
November 17, Mr. and Mrs. W. V. Rinehart, Seattle.  
November 18, Clarence Booth Bagley, Seattle.  
November 19, David Graham, Seattle.  
November 20, Mrs. Flora A. P. Engle, Coupeville, Wash.  
November 22, J. T. A. Bulfinch, Seattle.  
November 23, Dr. G. V. Calhoun, Coupeville, Wash.  
November 24, Judge and Mrs. R. S. Greene, Seattle.  
November 25, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Cooke, Berkeley, Cal.  
November 26, Gen. Hazard Stevens, Olympia, Wash.  
November 27, Joseph A. Kuhn, Port Townsend, Wash.  
November 29, Capt. John A. Mattson, Port Blakeley, Wash.  
November 30, Mrs. Jane M. Kineth, Coupeville, Wash.  
December 1, Mrs. Eliza Spalding Warren, Walla Walla, Wash.  
December 2, Mr. and Mrs. D. B. Ward, Seattle.  
December 3, Capt. George W. Morse (died December 23).  
December 4, Allen C. Mason, Tacoma, Wash.  
December 6, Henry C. Comegys, Snohomish, Wash.  
December 7, Capt. W. B. Seymore, Charleston, Wash.  
December 8, Mr. and Mrs. J. W. Gillespie, Seattle.  
December 9, Thomas Prather, Olympia, Wash.  
December 10, Clark Ferguson, Snohomish, Wash.  
December 11, Allen Weir, Olympia, Wash.  
December 13, Mr. and Mrs. Robert Moran, Rosario, Wash.  
December 14, Charles W. Bethel, Harrington, Wash.  
December 15, Mrs. Mary Jane Huson, Seattle.  
December 16, Ellis H. Gross, Seattle.  
December 17, Clarence Hanford, Seattle.

- December 18, Mrs. E. W. P. Guye, Seattle.  
Decemebr 20, F. H. Whitworth, Seattle.  
December 21, Billy Seehorn, Spokane, Wash.  
December 22, Rev. F. G. Strange, Muckilteo, Wash.  
December 23, Mrs. Cassandra Eckler George, Seattle.  
December 24, Charles T. Terry, Coupeville, Wash.  
December 25, Eben S. Osborne, Seattle.  
December 27, John McReavy, Union City, Wash.  
December 28, Mrs. Mary F. Bean, Tacoma, Wash.  
December 29, William P. Bonney, Tacoma, Wash.  
December 30, Philip D. Moore, Olympia, Wash.  
December 31, Mrs. Elizabeth M. Harris, Tacoma, Wash.



## NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS

---

[The aim of this department is to furnish outlines that will aid those who wish to study the subject systematically. It is expected that its greatest use will be as a guide for members of women's clubs, literary societies, and classes in colleges or high schools. It will be a form of university extension without the theses and examinations necessary for the earning of credits toward a degree.]

---

### XVII. Creation of Washington Counties

1. By Provisional Government of Oregon.
  - a. Vancouver District, June 27, 1844.
    - i. From Columbia River to  $54^{\circ} 40'$ .
    - ii. From Pacific Ocean to Rocky Mountains.
  - b. Lewis County, December 21, 1845.
    - i. From Cowlitz River to Pacific Ocean.
    - ii. From Columbia River to  $54^{\circ} 40'$ .
    - iii. Name in honor of Capt. Meriwether Lewis.
  - c. Vancouver County, December 22, 1845.
    - i. Balance of area north of Columbia River after the creation of Lewis County.
    - ii. From Cowlitz River to Rocky Mountains.
2. By Territorial Government of Oregon.
  - a. Clarke County.
    - i. In legislative session of 1850-1851.
    - ii. Change of name only.
    - iii. Area same as Vancouver County.
    - iv. New name in honor of Capt. William Clark.
  - b. Pacific County, February 4, 1851.
    - i. Cut out of Lewis County.
    - ii. Named for the Pacific Ocean.
  - c. Thurston County, January 12, 1852.
    - i. Cut out of Lewis County.
    - ii. Named in honor of Samuel R. Thurston, Oregon's first delegate to Congress.

- d. Jefferson County, December 22, 1852.
    - i. Named in honor of Thomas Jefferson.
  - e. Pierce County, December 22, 1852.
    - i. Named in honor of Franklin Pierce, then President-elect.
  - f. King County, December 22, 1852.
    - i. Named in honor of William R. King, then Vice-President-elect.
  - g. Island County, January 6, 1853.
    - i. So named because it comprised Whidby and Camano Islands.
3. By Territorial Government of Washington.
- a. Whatcom County, March 9, 1854.
    - i. Name of Indian origin.
  - b. Skamania County, March 9, 1854.
    - i. Cut out of Clarke County.
    - ii. Name of Indian origin.
  - c. Mason County, March 13, 1854.
    - i. First given Indian name Sawamish.
    - ii. Changed to honor Charles H. Mason, first Territorial Secretary of Washington.
  - d. Chehalis County, April 4, 1854.
    - i. Name, said by Myron Eells to mean "Sand," was name of tribe of Indians, sometimes spelled Chi-ke-lis.
  - e. Cowlitz County, April 21, 1854.
    - i. Name of Indian origin.
  - f. Wahkiakum County, April 25, 1854.
    - i. Name of Indian origin.
  - g. Walla Walla County, April 25, 1854.
    - i. Lewis and Clark in 1905 called the Indians there "Wolla Wollah."
    - ii. Name is Nez Perce word having reference to water.
    - iii. Myron Eells says it means "running water."
    - iv. E. S. Curtis says it means "little river."
  - h. Clallam County, April 26, 1854.
    - i. In original law spelled "Clalm."
    - ii. Myron Eells says the Indian word means "strong people."

- i. Kitsap County. January 16, 1857.
  - i. First called Slaughter County in honor of Lieut. W. A. Slaughter, U. S. A., killed in the Indian war.
  - ii. Changed by vote of the people to Kitsap County in honor of an Indian chief.
  - iii. Myron Eells says word means "brave."
- j. Spokane County, January 29, 1858.
  - i. Indian name has some reference to the sun.
  - ii. One definition is "child of the sun."
- k. Klickitat County, December 20, 1859.
  - i. E. S. Curtis says original Indian word means "beyond (the mountains)."
- l. Snohomish County, January 14, 1861.
  - i. Myron Eells says among the Snohomish Indians the word has reference to a style of union among them.
- m. Stevens County, January 27, 1862.
  - i. Named in honor of Isaac I. Stevens, first governor of Washington Territory.
  - ii. Creation of Idaho Territory in 1863 made it necessary to readjust bounds of Stevens and Spokane Counties.
  - iii. Needed readjustments made by law of January 9, 1864.
- n. Yakima County, January 21, 1865.
  - i. Name of Indian origin.
- o. Whitman County, November 29, 1871.
  - i. Named in honor of the missionary, Dr. Marcus Whitman.
- p. San Juan County, October 31, 1875.
  - i. Named for the principal island in the archipelago of which the county is composed.
- q. Columbia County, November 11, 1875.
  - i. Named for the river.
  - ii. The name originally derived from Christopher Columbus.
- r. Garfield County, November 29, 1881.
  - i. Named in honor of President James A. Garfield.
- s. Asotin County, October 27, 1883.
  - i. The Indian word means "eel creek."
- t. Lincoln County, November 24, 1883.
  - i. Named in honor of Abraham Lincoln.

- u. Kittitas County, November 24, 1883.
  - i. The Indian word means "gray gravel bank."
- v. Franklin County, November 28, 1883.
  - i. Named in honor of Benjamin Franklin.
- w. Adams County, November 28, 1883.
  - i. Named in honor of John Adams.
- y. Skagit County, November 28, 1883.
  - i. Name of Indian origin.
- z. Okanogan County, February 2, 1888.
  - i. The Indian words means "rendezvous."
  - ii. The name was variously spelled by the early explorers.
4. By State Government of Washington.
  - a. Ferry County, February 21, 1899.
    - i. Named in honor of Elisha P. Ferry, first governor of the State of Washington.
    - ii. First name suggested was "Eureka."
  - b. Chelan County, March 13, 1899.
    - i. Named for the large lake.
    - ii. First name suggested was "Wenatchee."
  - c. Benton County, March 8, 1905.
    - i. Named in honor of Thomas H. Benton.
  - d. Grant County, February 24, 1909.
    - i. Named in honor of Gen. U. S. Grant.
  - e. Pend Oreille County, March 1, 1911.
    - i. Name is French, meaning "ear bobs."
    - ii. Name had been given to a tribe of Indians.
  - f. Grays Harbor County.
    - i. County so named enacted February 27, 1907.
    - ii. Supreme Court annulled the law November 4, 1907.
    - iii. Legislature of 1913 changed the name of Chehalis County to Grays Harbor County.
5. Summary.
  - a. Counties were created as follows
    - i. By Provisional Government of Oregon ..... 2
    - ii. By Territorial Government of Oregon ..... 6



iii. By Territorial Government of Washington .....	26
iv. By State Government of Washington .....	5
<hr/>	
Total .....	39
b. Counties were named as follows:	
i. For Indian chiefs or tribes .....	18
ii. For men of national fame .....	13
iii. For men of local fame .....	4
iv. For geographical features .....	4
<hr/>	
Total .....	39

BIBLIOGRAPHY.—From the nature of the case the original laws creating the counties would be the prime sources. They are not as widely accessible as one would think, as collections of the Territorial laws have been difficult to make. The other books cited are more easily obtained.

BANCROFT, HUBERT HOWE. *Works of*, Volumes XXIX, XXX and XXXI. These comprise the history of Oregon in two volumes, of Washington, Idaho and Montana in one volume. The indexes will guide the reader to the counties as studied.

CURTIS, EDWARD S. *The North American Indian*. The monumental work in twenty volumes and twenty portfolios, now half completed, is to cost \$3,500 a set. It will not be very generally accessible. Those fortunate enough to have it within reach will find in Volume VII, page 36, a reference to the name Klickitat. The same volume throws light on other names as well.

EELLS, MYRON. In *American Anthropologist* for January, 1892. This prolific writer has here an important article on the origin and meaning of many of the Indian names in Washington.

GROVER, LAFAYETTE. *Oregon Archives*. This is one of the prime sources of Northwestern history. It is not very satisfactory to the present study, however, as there appears under date of June 27, 1844, page 52, this entry: "The bill to amend several acts for the organization of counties, was considered and adopted." That seems to be the only record of the creation of Vancouver District so far as the "Archives" reveal it. The index is inadequate and each item must be traced by date.

MEANY, EDMOND S. *History of the State of Washington*. Consult Chapter XVI and Appendix I for consideration of the counties.

OREGON, LAWS OF. Where these are available for the dates involved they will give first hand information. The "General Laws of Oregon," compiled by Matthew P. Deady, is accessible but not applicable to this study as the laws creating counties are not included. The volumes needed are the session laws.

SMITH, CHARLES W. The Naming of Counties in the State of Washington. The Associate Librarian of the University of Washington has made a useful study of this subject. It appeared first in *The Magazine of History*, Volume X, pages 9 to 16 and 78 to 85 (1909) and was reprinted as a *Bulletin of the University of Washington, University Studies*, Number 6, October, 1913. In one form or the other, it ought to be available.

WASHINGTON, LAWS OF. The session laws of the Territory and State should be consulted where available for the text of the laws creating counties since March 2, 1853, when Congress created the Territory of Washington.



# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Board of Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
J. N. BOWMAN, Seattle.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	OLIVER H. RICHARDSON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
E. O. S. SCHOLEFIELD, Victoria, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VII. NO. 2

APRIL, 1916

*ISSUED QUARTERLY*

## Contents

W. D. LYMAN.....	Some Observations upon the Negative Testimony and the General Spirit and Methods of Bourne and Marshall in Dealing with the Whitman Question .....	99
MARY PERRY FROST .....	Experience of a Pioneer.....	123
LULU DONNELL CRANDALL.....	The "Colonel Wright" .....	126
JOHN A. GRIFFIN.....	Washington Thirty Years Ago....	133
EDMOND S. MEANY.....	First American Settlement on Puget Sound .....	136
DOCUMENTS—Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House. Edited by Clarence B. Bagley .....		144
BOOK REVIEWS .....		168
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		176
NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS .....		181

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON



# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### SOME OBSERVATIONS UPON THE NEGATIVE TESTIMONY AND THE GENERAL SPIRIT AND METHODS OF BOURNE AND MARSHALL IN DEALING WITH THE WHITMAN QUESTION\*

The Whitman controversy has been quiescent for some time, and possibly it may be an evil deed to reopen it. Nevertheless there are certain aspects of the case which seem to have so important bearing upon the methods of writing and interpreting history as to take it from the domain of the special case of Marcus Whitman and to place it among the questions of general interest to all students and teachers of history. I shall not endeavor mainly to support any certain view of the Whitman controversy, but rather certain principles which I think should govern the investigator and the writer in the acquisition of data, and the serious, even sacred, responsibility of presenting them to the world. In the writings of Bourne and Marshall I find certain attitudes and methods and assumptions which seem to me to violate the fundamental requisites of correct historical interpretation. They furnish a text therefore upon which I will offer this contribution. The readers of the Quarterly are familiar with the general literature of this subject, and with the names and opinions of the leading advocates and opponents of the central proposition in the Whitman case; viz., That Dr. Marcus Whitman was a great, if not a decisive factor in "saving Oregon to the United States."

When about a dozen years ago Professor E. G. Bourne of Yale University and Principal W. I. Marshall of Chicago entered the field as critics of the Whitman story, it was generally supposed that they would mark a new era in the discussion. They claimed to be

---

\*While Bourne and Marshall are both dead, there are many who would feel impelled to defend them. This article is published, not to reopen the controversy but simply to give the other side what they consider a fair hearing on certain points.—Editor.

"scientific, unprejudiced investigators." There is no question that they greatly influenced opinion. No less a distinguished historian than John Fiske announced his change from belief to disbelief in the Whitman claims. Many readers East and West considered these books a final adverse settlement of the case. About a year ago Leslie Scott, in a review in the *Oregon Historical Quarterly* of Marshall's final work on the "Acquisition of Oregon," expressed the belief that this was the last word and that the Whitman "myth" might be considered exploded for good. But in spite of the considerable acceptance of this opinion, there is now a decided swinging of the pendulum the other way, and a disposition on the part of candid students to question the whole spirit and methods of Profs. Bourne and Marshall. This revival in the belief of the essential truth of the Whitman story is largely the fruit of the modest and unobtrusive yet convincing work of Myron Eells (convincing because of fairness, candor and honesty) in his "Reply to Professor Bourne," and his "History of Marcus Whitman," and although both Bourne and Marshall, the latter especially, have treated Eells with contempt (See page 45 of Marshall's "History vs. the Whitman Saved Oregon Story" for an example of his tone of petty spitefulness) I am ready to submit to any candid reader of both that Eells is as superior to Marshall in fairness, candor and dignity, as he is inferior to him in capacity of "scientific" abuse and misinterpretation.

As the limits of this article forbid long or numerous citations I will refer readers to the books concerned, Bourne's "Essay on Historical Criticism," and Marshall's "History vs. the Whitman saved Oregon Story," and "Acquisition of Oregon." Reference will also be given to Eells' "Reply to Professor Bourne," and "Marcus Whitman."

First, the spirit of these two writers. I shall refer mainly to Marshall. Professor Bourne was a "gentleman and a scholar," and his essay contains relatively few examples of abuse and vituperation, though not entirely free from them, as shown on page six of Eells' Reply. The chief feature in Professor Bourne's spirit to which I would call attention is that he is somewhat supercilious and academic. I would submit to close readers of this essay that it leaves the impression that he is more concerned in illustrating his theory of history than in ascertaining the real facts in the Whitman case. It has been asserted on supposedly good authority, although I do not claim it for I know nothing of it first hand, that some Yale student from this state presented Professor Bourne a class thesis on this subject which so much pleased him that he himself took up the theme, and that this

was the genesis of the essay. It certainly sounds like it. It has the spirit of certain historians and schools of history which go gunning to see if they can find some available target to shoot at in the way of some fine story or current belief. William Tell, Pocohontas, Washington and the Cherry tree, many other popular stories have been exploded by some "tireless and patient investigator with scientific methods!" What can Professor Bourne of Yale and his major students find to expose? They must find something in order to maintain their reputation as "scientific historians." Well, here is that Whitman story which some missionaries and college builders in a distant state seem to take much comfort in as an example of heroism and patriotism! How would it do to punch the eyes out of that by way of a little class practice? Such seems to me largely the attitude of Professor Bourne.

But when we turn to Mr. Marshall we find a prevailing tone of bitterness, abuse, and vituperation which removes him from the class of reliable historians and places him in that of mere controversialists. We refer readers to his own books for examples. His stock in trade is the imputation of dishonesty and falsification to men whom the Pacific Northwest honored in their time as models of Christian devotion and honesty. On page 50, Vol. 2, of the "Acquisition of Oregon" note his reference to "three credulous clergymen, all eager to get money from the national government, and profoundly ignorant of the \* \* \* diplomatic struggle, etc." He refers to Spalding, Atkinson and Eells. He then gives certain letters of Atkinson in connection with the Dalles mission land. On page 51 he declares that "the Whitman legend would never have been heard of had the national government paid the thirty or forty thousand dollars claimed by Spalding and Eells for the destruction of the mission and allowed their claims for a square mile of land around each mission station." In the next paragraph he says that until he read Atkinson's letters he "had no idea that it (the 'legend') sprung up first from a contest with the Methodists as to which of them had saved Oregon, and so as a reward was entitled to a square mile townsite at the Dalles." Hence "the origin of the legend was vastly more sordid than I had previously supposed." And I would ask the people still living in Oregon and Washington who knew Eells and Atkinson, as well as their descendants who knew of them, what they think of a historian who places those heroes and saints in the ranks of petty grafters. Read those letters of Atkinson and see whether Marshall gives them any fair interpretation. And what of Father Eells? When we call up his long years of unselfish devotion, how he and his faithful wife almost worked their



hands off at their farm at Waiilatpu in order to raise money to found Whitman College, how he travelled up and down on horseback through Eastern Washington, sleeping under a tree at night and living on dried salmon, parched corn and spring water, superintending schools, founding churches, ministering to the needy, with never a thought for personal gain or comfort, making such a place in the hearts of people of all sorts that throughout this state he is considered a veritable St. Paul,—then for a soured and spiteful old man who never saw him, or had any conception of the motives of his life, to so distort the letters about the Dalles town-site as to hold him up to history as a grafter and looter who fabricated the “Whitman legend” as a basis for plundering the national treasury! The reviewers who commend Marshall’s book must have a curious conception of justice and “finality.” The very use made by Bourne and Marshall of the words “Myth” and “legend” is a commentary on their spirit. It is the spirit of the advocate, of the prejudiced pleader, not of the fair and impartial historian. In the regular use that they make of those words they beg the whole question. The very point at issue is, *Is this a myth?* They assume that it is, name it “myth,” hammer the idea in like a persistent advertiser, and at the end triumphantly exclaim, “We have proved our case!” What kind of a spirit does that show in a historian? On pages 7 and 8 of Eells’ Reply are quotations from letters by John Fiske to Marshall in which he counsels him “to be less vehement,” and says “there is great value in a quiet form of statement.” Marshall, on pages 50 and 51 of his “History vs. the Whitman saved Oregon Story,” goes into a clumsy explanation of this in order, I should judge, to make an extra slap at Eells, and to convey to his readers the impression that he and John Fiske were great friends. It is worth noticing that Fiske in a private letter to a man in this state, said in substance: “I think that Marshall makes a strong case, but what is there for him to be so angry about?” What indeed? In view of his habitual anger, villification, and general bad temper, inexcusable in a historian, may we not go beyond Professor Fiske and conclude that he makes a strong case—against himself? We ask readers to turn to Marshall’s own pages to find proof of his habits of villification. Among numerous examples note his attempts in chapter 7 of volume 2 to belittle Whitman, to misinterpret and distort his letters, to minimize the greatness of his efforts, to under-rate the privations of that first missionary journey across the continent in 1836, and the fortitude of those two women, Mrs. Whitman and Mrs. Spalding, the first white women to cross the mountains. None but a man of microscopic soul could quote, as Marshall does in pages 190.

Vol. 2, from one of Whitman's letters as to the good health of the party, and then comment: "All of which shows that the journey was its own sufficient reward, as tens of thousands of people have since found the journey by wagon, train or saddle animal to be." So those two devoted women setting out on such a journey, that was to sunder them from every tie that made their lives worth living to them personally, were just out for a little health tour, or a little pleasure jaunt! Very easy for those women to cross the plains! Nothing particularly worthy of notice in that! Had good health!

Not less marked is Marshall's exhibition of a morose and prejudiced spirit to be found in chapter 8, Vol. 2, on the Massacre. His venomous spirit is found in nearly every reference to the victims of the tragedy. In giving his summary of causes for the Massacre he finally arrives, on page 261, at the conclusion that the chief cause was Whitman's unwisdom in continuing to practice medicine among the Indians though he knew perfectly well that they were in the habit of killing unsuccessful medicine men, while on page 268 he assures us that Whitman had ample warning, but that he possessed extreme obstinacy, and disinclination to accept good advice. So this is the conclusion of the whole matter. Dr. Whitman was to blame for his own murder? This clears the skirts of Hudson's Bay Company, renegade white men, half breeds, and probably Indians themselves! Whitman himself was the guilty party! If the Lord had not mercifully interposed to stay the constructive hand of the author of the "Acquisition of Oregon" we would probably have another chapter demonstrating that Whitman himself instigated the whole thing for the sake of raising the price of vegetables at Waiilatpu, or getting the government to give two or three sections of land to the mission. Really it seems to us that Whitman, besides all sorts of other obliquities and mendacities, must have been responsible for one crime that not even this "broad minded historian" would have thought of. If he had not been so foolish as to get himself massacred we might never have had all this bother about the Whitman controversy, and might even have been spared the writings of W. I. Marshall!

In connection with the Massacre notice one other illustration of Marshall's spirit in the ready acceptance of the letter of Mr. William McBeari, page 233. There he gives McBeari's version. In several places, among others in the Columbia River by myself, page 207, Josiah Osborne's version is given. Knowing the daughter of Mr. Osborne, Mrs. Nancy Jacobs, formerly of Walla Walla, now of Portland, and having a view of those events directly from her, I have no hesitation in saying that I would believe Mr. Osborne in such a con-

diet of statements instead of McBeari. Marshall, knowing neither one, follows the line of prejudice and accepts McBeari's version. Marshall seems to feel it incumbent on him to give the Hudson's Bay Company and the Catholic priests the benefit of every doubt, and at the same time open his large battery of rancorous hatred against the American missionaries.

Further in illustration of Marshall's spirit note his continuous epithets for Spalding; as "Spalding's crazy brain," page 276; "Lunatic," page 278. While it is no doubt true that Spalding's mind was impaired by the dreadful experiences of the Massacre any decent historian would find a more humane style in dealing with him.

But Father Eells was so totally different a type of man that no shadow of excuse can be found for Marshall's imputations of dishonesty and untruthfulness to so revered a character. On page 196 he refers to Eells' "ingenious and wholly fictitious version of that tale." He builds up substantially the charge that Eells fabricated the whole story for the sake of accomplishing two things; first, to get possession of that townsite at the Dalles; and second, to humbug people into giving money to Whitman College. Are the thousands of people in this state who know the heroic and unselfish devotion, the clear mind, the tenacious memory, the simple and guileless honesty, the almost painful rectitude of that good man, likely to accept such imputations?

Space forbids adding others of the numerous available examples of the spirit of this historian. We must enter upon the more important and more philosophical part of our subject, an analysis of the historical theory and methods which underlie the treatment of the Whitman controversy by both Bourne and Marshall.

In considering this philosophical phase of the subject the two authors may justly be considered as a unit. They employ the same general theories of historical evidence, and to a considerable degree the same arguments and the same matter. On page 71 of Bourne's "Essays in Historical Criticism" he names Langlois, and Seignobos, and Edward L. Pierce as references upon the relative credibility of recollections and cotemporary writings as sources of history. As they seem to apply the theory it is substantially this: Memory testimony given some considerable or appreciable time after the events cannot be accepted as evidence, unless supported by contemporary writings, if such exist. That is the first working hypothesis. On page 99, volume 2, of Marshall's "Acquisition of Oregon" the same principle is stated in a quotation which he calls an unquestioned canon of historical investigation, as follows: "A single authentic contemporaneous written statement of the reasons which impelled any man to

do any deed must be held to outweigh any number of subsequent explanations, however ingenious, that he, and much more that his friends may have put forth to account for his actions." There is a second working hypothesis, not so specifically stated, but practically worked to the limit by both Marshall and Bourne. It is this: Errors by a witness in one part of his testimony invalidate the rest of it. Such, simply and briefly stated, is the basis employed by these two writers in the Whitman case. Starting with this basis they lay down two fundamental propositions. The first is that the letters and other written matter of the period when Whitman is alleged to have "saved Oregon" contain no definite reference to the alleged fact, and that the Whitman claim is built on recollections found in print only after 1864, or more than 20 years after "Whitman's Ride" and 17 years after the Massacre. The second proposition is that the various advocates of the "legend" make many errors in details and numerous contradictions both with the contemporary written records and with each other, and that therefore all their assertions must be rejected. From these two fundamental propositions they arrive at certain conclusions given with definiteness by Bourne on pages 99 and 100, and by Marshall at various points throughout his lengthy work. Divested of verbiage and epithets, the conclusions of both writers may be summed up in the following points: That "Whitman's Ride" was executed for the purpose of influencing the American Board of Foreign Missions to continue the Mission at Waiilatpu; that Whitman had no thought of national aims, and was no appreciable factor in getting Oregon before the attention of the National Government; that his part in organizing the immigration of 1843 and in getting it to Oregon was unimportant; that Whitman, instead of being a patriot and a hero, was a third rate or a fourth rate man of poor judgment and largely responsible for his own murder; that Whitman's extant letters written between his return to Waiilatpu in 1843 and his death in 1847, in which he claims an important part in the immigration of 1843 and in shaping events to the acquisition of Oregon, were simply an exaggeration of his own services which grew up in his own mind after the immigration of 1843; that the "saved Oregon" idea was never thought of even by Eells, Gray, Walker, Spalding, and other subsequent claimants until about 1864, in which year S. A. Clark, in an article in the *Sacramento Union*, and soon afterward Spalding, Atkinson, Eells, Gray, Treat, and others interested in Missions, developed the "legend" with such effect that historical writers of national reputation passed it on as veritable history, and it became embedded in many standard works; that the letters to the American Board written by the missionaries in



the period 1836-47 were "suppressed" and that there was a conspiracy to hide those letters, which when examined were seen entirely to disprove the "legend"; that the real reasons for the fabrication of the "legend" were an attempt by Atkinson, Eells and Spalding to get possession of the Mission land at the Dalles, valuable for a townsite, and later, on the part of Eells especially, to create a basis for an appeal for contributions to Whitman College. Such is substantially the line of argument.

Let us now consider the most important part of this whole matter, the application of those two fundamental historical postulates to the evidence, written and memory, in the Whitman case.

In connection with these two historical canons we must consider a third equally vital. This is, *that the testimony of the witnesses to an event takes precedence over all other testimony*, other things being equal. Now we come to the vitals of the whole subject—the interrelations of these three canons and the qualifications and limitations of each. We not only admit, but we insist upon the general validity of each. But truth can be arrived at only by remembering that each has its necessary limitations and exceptions.

Let us first consider then the proposition that memory testimony cannot be accepted unless supported by contemporary writing. As a general proposition this is entirely valid. Common observation shows of course that memory and imagination become interlocked, that with the passage of time clouds obscure the clearness of vision, and that statements made after events must be subjected to the test of comparison with any existing records of those events. But now note the vitally important matter of qualifications to this general rule of historical evidence. First, it makes all the difference in the world whether the memory testimony be *directly contradicted* by the written record, or whether the written record *merely fails to mention certain things* contained in the testimony of memory. If the written record declares positively that a given thing *did not take place*, which given thing is claimed in the subsequent recollections, we must perforce, other things being equal, decide in favor of the written record. If on the other hand the written record merely omits the mention of certain things later embodied in recollections, those recollections would not necessarily have to be rejected at all. Their acceptability would depend entirely upon the circumstances, and here at once we come to another necessary qualification of that canon of evidence, the second essential qualification. It is this: In order to give the written record that paramount authority claimed for it, the conditions under which it is written must have covered *all* the subject matter of the subsequent

recollections. Otherwise there is no reason why matters might not be later reported by memory which might not have appeared at all and would not naturally have appeared at all in the written records. A third qualification: It must be supposed again that there were no positive reasons for *withholding certain matters* from the contemporary written record and that those reasons did not afterward exist for withholding subsequent testimony by memory.

Come now to the necessary qualifications upon what we named as the third canon of historical evidence—that is, the primary credibility of the original witnesses to any event. This is fundamental in law or history. Nobody can gainsay the proposition that the first requisite of evidence is to secure the original witnesses to the event, and, other things being equal, their testimony must take precedence of any other. But now there are some very important qualifications to this law of evidence. Were the witnesses competent to observe and report, were they honest and reliable, did they have any motives for distorting the truth, what were their relations to contemporary records if any such exist? Obviously all these qualifications must be taken into account in listening to testimony, and this is the basis for cross examinations in court or cross examinations in history.

Placing thus in juxtaposition these two canons of historical evidence with the necessary limitations we are prepared to apply them to the Whitman controversy as it is revealed in the original written records and in the subsequent recollections of the original witnesses. This process leads us first to ask the question: "Are letters and other documents contemporary with "Whitman's Ride" in *direct contradiction* to the recollections which were reduced to writing some years later, or do they simply *omit to mention* those essential things embodied in the recollections? To answer this question we must ask what are the contemporary records. They are reducible practically to three groups: First, letters written by the missionaries from 1836 to 1847 to the American Board, and to various friends in the East; second, Government documents and correspondence; third, letters and other documents pertaining to the emigration of 1843. Time forbids me to quote these letters and documents, and I can simply say that they are found in greater or less fullness in the books themselves which we are considering. Now, boiled down to the smallest possible compass, the proposition of Bourne and Marshall is that the first group contains no mention of Whitman's aim being other than missionary business; that the second group contains no hint that Oregon was in danger of being lost, nor any mention of Whitman; and that the third group contains no evidence that he bore any important part in

organizing or leading the immigration of 1843. There we have the whole thing in a nutshell. (While it is a side issue, yet Marshall makes so much of it that I wish to interject a thought here about his claim that those missionary letters in group one were for a long time dishonestly concealed by the claimants of the Whitman "Legend." Now I want to ask why, if the missionaries, including Dr. Treat, who was connected with the American Board, were in a conspiracy to hide the evidence, they did not put the letters where they could not be found, and especially why did they allow Marshall himself free access to them so that the whole story was right there before him. Does that look like conspiracy to conceal the evidence?)

The space at our command compels us to limit our inquiry to the case of the first group of the written records, that is the missionary letters. But we are prepared to prove that the same general facts apply to the other two groups of letters, essentially the same conditions prevail in the subject matter of all.

And now for the examination of these records in the light of the three qualifications which we have laid down. First we assert, and the story as given by these very writers themselves sustains our assertion, that the missionary letters and reports do not at all *contradict* the claim in regard to Whitman's aims, subsequently reduced to writing. Examine these letters as given in Marshall's own book, and you will find that they nowhere claim that Whitman did *not* have such political and national aims. They merely say that he did go on his desperate winter ride in order to do some work connected with the missions, and, somewhat vaguely, declare that he had important business that compelled him, as he thought, to take that journey. Now right here is where the whole matter of the negative testimony of Bourne and Marshall comes in. They assume that *everything connected with Whitman's Ride must have gone into those letters*. Now would that necessarily have followed at all? We are indeed obliged to admit that those letters prior to Whitman's ride, so far as they are extant, do not make any definite claim of his political purposes. But does that at all prove the contention that he had no such aims? Not at all, unless it can also be proven that *all* the records and letters have been preserved and correctly interpreted and reported, that the letters must have covered the same subject matter as the later recollections, and that there was no reason for withholding from the letters the claim later brought up for those political purposes. And this, as the reader can see, involves at once the other qualifications which we have mentioned in connection with the written records. In other words, we claim broadly that not only do those letters *not contradict* the subse-

quent memory testimony, but that there were positive reasons why the missionary party did not wish to commit to writing at that time the political aims of Whitman. Or, to put it in the positive and more correct form: The advocates of the Whitman story claim; first, that the conditions were such that the missionaries would have covered in their letters *only* such things as would bear upon their special relations to the American Board, and to their special correspondents; and second, that there were positive reasons why they did not wish to commit the political matters to writing. If they can make these claims good they evidently have a good basis for claiming that the silence of those existing letters is no proof against the later testimony. I wish to emphasize here the proposition that Bourne and Marshall are depending almost entirely upon *negative testimony*. Their position substantially is that the claim for Whitman's political aims is not found in those letters; ergo, the claim must be rejected. Now it is always hard to prove a negative. Any logician must admit that the *absence of testimony* to some phenomenon by one group of witnesses does not prove the non-existence if supported by the *positive testimony* of another group of reliable witnesses. The negative testimony of any number of witnesses in a court does not disprove the positive testimony of even one or two witnesses to a crime, unless it can be shown that the one or two were either dishonest or incompetent. So in this case, Bourne and Marshall are logical enough to try to show that the claims for Whitman would necessarily have appeared in the correspondence to the Board and to their friends prior to Whitman's ride. They cling tenaciously to this contention, and well they may, for without it their labored argument falls to the ground. Do they sustain their point? They make a great parade of the absence of proof in those letters and their argument sounds quite plausible. It is not surprising that readers far remote in time and place from the conditions and the individuals concerned, entirely ignorant of the character of the witnesses, and considering the entire question rather from the abstract and theoretical viewpoint, should believe the argument convincing. But now what were the conditions? Here was a little band of missionaries in a land not owned by any civilized country, but under a joint Occupation Treaty between rival nations, sent out here to the ends of the earth to "save the souls of the heathen," the only white people in this vast region except the Hudson's Bay Company on whom they were dependent for mail service and for everything of a civilized nature that they had to purchase, surrounded by savages, some at least of whom were treacherous and murderous. It took letters six months to reach them. There was little incentive or op-



portunity for them to write for publication. Although they gladly recognized the great kindness and courtesy of the Hudson's Bay officers toward them individually, they knew that the great Company was necessarily opposed to the acquisition of Oregon by the United States and its development into a cultivated country. Under these conditions they naturally would do the very thing that they all testified that they did do; that is, withhold from their letters such things as would be likely to involve them with the Hudson's Bay Company, especially such a great and important question as to who should own Oregon. Every thing that they said at a later time, as well as the very nature of the case, confirms their explanation of their silence on that question. Moreover they had another reason. They felt that they had been sent out by a missionary board on "the Lord's work," and they supposed that they would be censured if they took up political or business matters. We must remember another thing too. It is likely that in the natural course of events many of their miscellaneous letters, especially to confidential friends, have been lost. Such might have contained some explanation of conditions outside of their regular correspondence.

In short, come to analyze the matter and look right at it from the standpoint of actual conditions, are not Bourne and Marshall making a sweeping and entirely unjustifiable assumption in their contention that since the definite proclamation of Whitman's political aims is not found in letters prior to his "Ride" that he had no such aims? Come to think about it candidly, would it not have been very surprising if he had proclaimed them? Would he not have been a great fool if he had? All testimony is that he was a close-mouthed, reticent, secretive, sort of man, just the kind who would have kept still on a ticklish question like that of the ownership of Oregon, and the other missionaries would very naturally have followed his example. In connection with this phase of the subject Marshall makes so much of the failure by Mr. and Mrs. Walker to record anything of Whitman's aims that I wish to insert here a brief reference to the explanation which they themselves later made of the reasons of such omissions, and this is the more significant from the fact that the Walkers always frankly admitted that they were strongly opposed to Whitman's political aims, and in some measure to his methods. I have in my possession a copy of the *Oregonian* of August 23, 1885, in which there is an interview by S. A. Clark with Mrs. Walker. Now Mrs. Walker was a woman of remarkable mental ability and high conscientiousness. In the article in the *Oregonian* referred to she is quoted as making the following statement:

"Mrs. Walker tells me it was understood among the missionaries that Dr. Whitman went East to bring out an immigration to occupy Oregon on the part of the United States, as well as to prevent the breaking up of the missions. The doctor always urged that he could bring wagons through; he was continually arguing that question. That was what Mr. Walker meant by his prayer for Whitman all the time of his absence, for Mrs. Walker says that her husband, during all that time, introduced into family prayer a petition bearing on Dr. Whitman and used the following expression: That if he was not doing what was right and best, 'may his way be hedged up, but if he is in the path of duty, may he be preserved and prospered.'"

From the same interview with Mrs. Walker we quote also these paragraphs, "At a council of the missionaries held in September Whitman explained his views to his associates and they knew how interested he was in the political future of Oregon. He made an excuse to go East to explain the value of the southern mission, but his great incentive was to reach the states in time to work for an immigration the following year, in which he succeeded."

"A joint or united appeal by Whitman, Spalding, Walker, and Eells and others would have satisfied the home Board of Missions as to the value of the stations on the south. Even if they deemed it expedient to send on a member of the mission it would have answered all needs had he gone in February or March, or even later in the spring of '43. But Whitman had this secular matter at heart, and his associates, as honorable men as live, write to say so now, more than forty years after."

"Whitman left without waiting for the arrival of letters that his associates had written to the home Board. Had it been his chief motive to correct the wrong information given to the Board he would have certainly fortified himself with all the evidence at command, and the protest and assurances of his associates would have been invaluable. There is no reason to doubt that he hurried to Washington, first taking steps to spread correct information of Oregon along the frontier. That he remained some time at Washington before going to visit the missionary Board is probably true, and also true that his superiors found fault with his course in meddling with political questions at their expense."

In a letter from S. T. Walker of Forest Grove, Oregon, the youngest son of Elkanah Walker, to myself, I find these sentences: "Up to the time that father died there had never been any question about the matter, and this accounts for the fact that is made much of by some of the other side, that father was silent on the subject.

There was no call for an answer. Soon after father's death the question was taken up by the Honorable Elwood Evans of Tacoma, Wash. He made a great deal of a meeting of the members of the A. B. C. F. M., held at Whitman station, going so far as to question the holding of such meeting, calling in question the account given by Rev. C. Eells, and finally went so far as to say that if 'written proof of the meeting could be found they would yield the question.' I looked up father's journal and copied it and sent it to the Oregonian, showing that Father Eells' account after 40 years was absolutely correct as to times of starting, places of camping, etc., except that he was one day early or late as to date of starting home. As Evans had called in question Father Eells' memory in respect to certain claims he made in respect to the purpose and incidents of Whitman's journey, I made the claim that if he remembered so well the facts in respect to this journey, which was made once or twice a year by Father Eells, and the camping places, etc., being governed by the time they started and variations in routes gone over, it would go to prove the reliability of his memory on other facts. Mr. Evans wrote me a long letter in answer to it promising to make a public acknowledgement, but never did so far as I ever heard. However, he never wrote anything more on the subject."

"I have often heard mother say, that even for years after the mission was disbanded, they were loth to say much about his (Whitman's) work, that much reproach had been brought upon the Methodist mission on account of many giving up the work for lands and other things."

So much for the attitude of Mr. and Mrs. Walker on this subject, of which Bourne and Marshall make a very illogical use.

To sum up briefly this immediate phase of the subject let us insist at this point that Bourne and Marshall, in order to sustain their negative line of argument, must maintain these propositions: First, that *everything* bearing upon the subject of Whitman's ride was necessarily preserved in the missionary correspondence and the missionary journals; second, that all of that correspondence is still in existence; third, that it has been fairly and accurately examined and honestly and correctly reported. Now we know that no such propositions can be for a moment sustained. For instance, Father Eells' journal which would have been contemporary writing, together with other valuable documents, was lost in a fire which destroyed his house. His record of the mission meeting of September, 1842, was destroyed in the Massacre. The same fate or other destructive agencies must necessarily have destroyed similar valuable matter. Taking all these

considerations into account is it not preposterous to claim that the absence of these claims to the extent noted by these historians, and in view of the fact that the missionaries themselves had a positive reason for not publishing it widely, necessarily invalidates their later testimony? Of course it was a curious inadvertance, one greatly to be deplored, and one that would almost justify a little extra choice villification by W. I. Marshall, that those narrow-minded, mercenary, ignorant, and quarrelsome missionaries at Wailatpu, Chimakain, and Lapwai, did not maintain regular correspondence with the Oregonian, P.-I. and Spokesman-Review, and telephone connections with the chief business centers, and send a daily night letter to Washington City. But they were so parsimonious and so anxious to sell vegetables to the immigrants, and general conditions in the Forties so unfavorable, that I suppose it never really occurred to them that they could do it.

Negative testimony! That is the basis of the whole argument against the Whitman legend. By the same line of reasoning or the same faulty application of an acknowledged canon of history we could reduce all history to a *reductio ad absurdum*. Grant that such letters of the missionaries prior to Whitman's ride as have been found and reported do not proclaim his national purposes, but suppose that the only people that had the opportunity of knowing his aims testified that he had them, but that he and they had sufficient reasons for not writing them at that time. Are we going to throw away such first-hand testimony for the sake of an assumption? All history is in the first place individual memory testimony. Greater or less time always must pass before any of it is reduced to writing. Some people would make errors if they wrote it down within an hour. Others would retain and correctly report their knowledge years afterward. And we may well emphasize in this connection the well-known fact of human nature that *the big things are ordinarily accurately retained and reported*. It is the little things in which memory is so treacherous.

Therefore at this point we must needs consider the character of the witnesses to the Whitman claims. We refer here to Eells' Reply to Bourne, page 54 *et seq.* These witnesses were men of unusual mental vigor and moral rectitude. I personally knew most of them and their families after them. Mr. Gray and Mr. Spalding, were the only ones who could be called "cranky," and they have been abused and maligned by the opposition beyond all reasonable limits. While they had some intense hatreds and prejudices, their general powers of observation and statement were excellent. No one who knew W. H. Gray ever questioned his force of mind or rectitude of character,



however much he may have been biased by strong prejudices. Of Father Eells it may be said that he was one in ten thousand for clearness of observation, retentiveness of memory, accuracy of statement, and conscientiousness. Dr. William Geiger, Alanson Hinman, A. L. Lovejoy, P. B. Whitman, Elkanah Walker, Mrs. Walker, and others whom Eells introduces as witnesses were every where known within their circles as of strong minds, accurate memories, and moral rectitude. Moreover, they were in the exact positions to know these things as no others could. Now when these witnesses unite in testifying to one central fact, even though they differ on unimportant details and even though their known published statements were committed to writing some years after the events, what is the historian going to do about it? Which principle of evidence has the greater weight, the united testimony of the original witnesses, accepted by all who knew them as competent and honest, or the negative testimony based upon the absence of direct claim in certain missionary letters written prior to 1843? Which choice is the fair-minded seeker for truth likely to make in such a conflict?

Now let us note another vitally important phase of the subject. Thus far I have been admitting the contention that there was not written contemporary evidence to the claims for Whitman's national aims, and that those claims did not appear in written form until 1864. This is the essential basis of the contention by Bourne and Marshall that the whole thing was an afterthought, or, according to Marshall a deliberate fabrication. Even admitting this gulf in time, my contention was that in view of the mere negation in the records and the character of the witnesses, the story was entitled to credence. Now I will say that our case is much stronger than that, for there is abundant collateral evidence of a knowledge by many of Whitman's aims prior to 1864. This is given in many forms by Myron Eells in his two books already cited. My own parents who came to Oregon in 1849 told me many times that Whitman's national aims and services were matters of common discussion among people of their acquaintance soon after their arrival. Prof. Thomas Condon who came a little later said the same. One other witness of that group is worthy of special mention for reasons that will appear. This is W. S. Gilliam, now deceased, son of General Gilliam who commanded the volunteers who went to Walla Walla after the Whitman Massacre. I knew Mr. Gilliam intimately for many years at Walla Walla. He was a broad-minded, liberal, not in sympathy with churches and not prejudiced in favor of missions, and hence not in the category of many of the witnesses adduced by Mr. Eells, and objected to by Marshall on the

ground of religious bias. Everyone who knew him was aware of his remarkable mentality, retentive memory, and high rectitude. Now he, as a boy in the Willamette Valley, son of a prominent pioneer, knew the general opinion held of Whitman by the pioneers, and was familiar with the discussions of the Whitman story, and he was a firm believer in it and a steadfast and convincing advocate of it. He has told me repeatedly that Whitman's political aims and ambitions were discussed in his hearing from the time of his settling in Oregon, a boy of fifteen, in 1844. Now it will be said of course by these critics that all this is memory testimony again. But when a great volume of such testimony comes from East and West giving the views formed during Whitman's life by all sorts of people, and when the essential propositions are maintained by this mass of testimony, even though there may be many differences in unimportant details, is the impartial seeker for historical truth justified in throwing it away in order to sustain a certain canon of historical investigation, which is indeed valid in general terms, but which may be, and in this instance I am satisfied is, so twisted as to defeat the very aim of history, the *establishment of a fact*? In short, are not Bourne and Marshall, by the arbitrary application of a canon, after all their parade of scientific investigation, sacrificing the vital facts to a hypothesis?

But I now go farther than this. A third vital point must be considered. I now declare that there is not a total lack of contemporary written matter. There are some writings of utmost significance belonging to the period or immediately after it, and in dealing with them we reach the weakest place in the writing of Bourne and Marshall. We have time but for two examples of these, although others may be found in the writings of Myron Eells and others. One example is the case of St. Amant. While this was not exactly contemporary with Whitman's Ride and Massacre, it came so soon after and is of such a nature, and is so juggled with by both of these authors as to be a most significant point. (See page 21 of Bourne for the original quotation in French). This was first publicly noted by Dr. J. R. Wilson of Portland in his address at the dedication of the Whitman monument in 1897. While we have not space to enter into any details of this we would submit to any candid reader whether this is not a strong link in the chain.

But a matter of much more significance is involved in the letters written by Dr. Whitman himself, between 1843 and his death in 1847. These letters constitute cotemporary written testimony of the highest importance, and they contain abundant claim on Whitman's own part that he had national aims. But now note how Bourne and Marshall

treat this fundamental testimony. They have been rejecting memory testimony and demanding contemporary written records. Now we produce this written testimony by the letters of the one man under consideration most competent to speak, and what is their treatment of it? Instead of dealing fairly and justly with these letters written by Whitman immediately after his return from the East they misapply, misrepresent, and avoid the logical inferences from them. I refer the reader to pages 177, *et seq.* in Marshall, Vol. 2. He mentions eleven letters by Whitman to D. Greene, one to the secretary of war, one to L. P. Judson, and one to Augustus Whitman. Now let the unbiased reader carefully study those letters, and he must make up his mind to one or the other of two things, either Whitman had made it the great aim of his life during as well as before the "Ride" to establish American possession and settlement in Oregon, or he was a consummate liar. Of course Marshall would at once accept the latter, for his short and simple method for anyone who disagrees with him is at once to declare that he is a liar. But what would any historian with ordinary decency and fair mindedness say? Note now that Bourne and Marshall have been demanding written contemporary evidence. We produce it in Whitman's letters. Having before them the very kind of evidence that they demanded they crawl out of it by attributing to Whitman "exaggeration, extravagant claims, lack of foresight, narrowness of mind, making claims of which only one is correct," etc., etc. If anything, more than the long list of epithets and vituperations, were necessary to damn Marshall as a historian, his handling of Whitman's letters would be. We urge every reader to thoroughly examine Whitman's letters and accompanying bill to the Secretary of War written in 1843 after his return from the East. It casts a flood of light upon this whole history. It shows that Whitman was a statesman as well as a hero. Either that letter was a downright forgery or the claims of Whitman are essentially true. That document may be found in the appendix of Eells' "Marcus Whitman," and how any candid student can evade its logical conclusion is beyond my power to understand. We have heard of "straining at a gnat and swallowing a camel" and we here see it illustrated to the limit. They try to nullify all the natural and logical inferences of Whitman's correspondence, but swallow without a wriggle the letter of McBean in regard to the Massacre. (Marshall, page 233, Vol. II).

But more and worse yet. After having rejected memory testimony for "scientific" reasons, and then having tried to nullify and distort the contemporary writing of the most important witness in the case, they finally land at the point where they throw away their own

theory by accepting memory testimony of much later date and far inferior inherent credibility. I have space for but two examples of this. On page 108 of Bourne is a letter from D. P. Thompson to P. W. Gillette, dated Feb. 6, 1900, in which Mr. Thompson says that he had many times heard "General Lovejoy say that all those statements claiming that Dr. Whitman made that winter ride to save Oregon was nonsense—mere bosh and wholly untrue—he always indicated that he was going in the interests of his mission." Now compare that with the letters written by A. L. Lovejoy himself over thirty years earlier to W. H. Gray and G. H. Atkinson, and the letter to Eells in 1876, from which there is an extract in Eells' Reply, page 60. Note also what Mrs. Lovejoy and Miss S. Barlow say, as quoted in the same book, page 61. Bourne gulps down Thompson's postscript in a letter of 1900, *quoting* Lovejoy, but Lovejoy's *own testimony*, entirely different, of *many years earlier*, is not "scientific." O no! Consistency, thou art a jewel! A "narrow minded missionary" or a "lunatic" would be called to sharp account for such juggling, but for a Yale professor of history we suppose that there is some "scientific" excuse.

The other instance is from Marshall, and deals with that much abused story of Gray and Spalding in regard to the Fort Walla Walla dinner, which Whitman is said to have attended and at which a young priest is said to have shouted that the Americans were too late and that the British had the country. Marshall and all the objectors seem to fall into a boiling rage over that story, and reject it at once as an afterthought of mere fabrication. It was "memory testimony" more than twenty years after the event. But now note on page 84 from Marshall, Vol. II, extracts from a letter from Archibald McKinlay to Elwood Evans, used by the latter in an article in 1881, in which McKinlay says, "that the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company knew enough of the rules of hospitality to avoid such tender topics as the boundary question, etc., and that he knew nothing of such an event." Evans and Marshall accept without question the negative memory of McKinlay written in 1881, while the positive affirmation of Gray in his history of about 1867 is rejected in a great rage. Now mind, I am not here expressing an opinion as to the truth of Gray's story or of McKinlay's reliability (he was a most admirable man) but I am simply making a commentary on Marshall's methods. With him it is, "heads I win, tails you lose!" How do these two examples do for straining at the gnat and swallowing the whole menagerie?

Of the two other important groups of written testimony, Government records and immigrant records, the narrowing limits of time forbid me to speak at any length. I will only say that the same



course of argument which I have developed in relation to the missionary records apply to the others also. Bourne and Marshall *fail to find* reference to Whitman in certain government documents and immigrant letters where they *assume they should be found*, and they therefore reject the claim that Whitman influenced Government or people. Negative testimony again! They make an arbitrary principle out of their historical canon in such fashion as would destroy the basis of all history. The fact that a dozen government officials or a hundred immigrants did not know of Whitman in connection with the immigration of 1843 does not at all invalidate the positive testimony of three or four public men and twenty immigrants to the effect that they did know of him and were influenced by him. Any lawyer knows that the testimony of one positive witness to a fact may be accepted in the face of that of a dozen who knew nothing about it, unless of course the dozen were in such relation to the alleged fact that they absolutely could not help knowing it in case it existed. In the nature of things Whitman could not have seen any large number of public men during his hurried trip. Those that he did see did not necessarily write everything that they ever knew or heard of or thought of. Bourne and Marshall make a great deal of the claim that Oregon was in no danger of being lost at that time. We suppose of course that they would not deny that there was a Joint Occupation Treaty between Great Britain and the United States. Nor would they probably deny that the Hudson's Bay Company and the government of England were playing a tremendous game to get as much of Oregon as they could. They probably would not deny the work of Floyd, Linn, Hannegan, and Benton in Congress during those long years of the Oregon struggle. All that is necessary is that the reader consult Benton's great work, "The Thirty Year's View," to be satisfied that a good many statesmen thought that there was danger of losing Oregon. Thousands upon thousands of people thought that there was such danger and that was one of the great incentives to the Great Immigration. No Whitman advocate is, of course, so foolish as to claim that all the immigrants of 1843 were influenced by Whitman or even knew of him. It has always been understood that that great decisive immigration was of composite formation and leadership. But when we do have testimony from many of them that Whitman was a decisive factor in their coming, what is the fair minded historian going to do about it? I knew Hobson, Zachery, Senator Nesmith, Almorán Hill, and many others of that immigration, and when Almorán Hill told me that he started without knowing of Whitman it did not at all prevent me from believing John Hobson when he told me that

Whitman induced his father and family to come to Oregon instead of going to Wisconsin, and that he himself drove one of the leading teams in the train, and that Whitman was almost always leading the caravan on horseback, but would frequently ride in Hobson's wagon, and at such times they would converse about the roads and the prospects in Oregon. Bourne and Marshall try again in the most dishonest fashion to throw away the testimony of these immigrants. But Hobson, as an example, was at that time a young man of eighteen at the very age for the most accurate and permanent impressions, and he was known throughout his long life as a man of very clear mind and reliable statements. Eells had testimony from sixteen immigrants who stated that their coming to Oregon was due to Whitman, while twenty-two out of the total number of thirty-eight from whom he had replies stated that they started without knowledge of Whitman. Again I ask what is the historian going to do? Is he going to reject the positive testimony of the sixteen on account of the negative testimony of the twenty-two? But for any further discussion of this branch of the subject I must refer to the unanswerable presentation by Myron Eells, in his *Reply* and in his *Marcus Whitman*.

There is a second general canon of historical investigation upon which Bourne and Marshall rely. It is that errors in one part of the testimony of a witness invalidate other parts of his testimony. As a general proposition this is a correct canon. But it too has important qualifications. People with imperfect knowledge in one line may have very accurate knowledge in another. People with prejudices or manias may give very reliable testimony in some field outside of their prepossessions. Here again I must refer to the fair and frank and candid treatment by Myron Eells of the errors of Spalding, Gray and others, including himself, and the weight that should be given to them in comparison with their general testimony. I claim that Bourne and Marshall usually grossly overestimate the degree, character, and significance of these errors, and that they draw unwarranted conclusions in considering such errors to destroy the credibility of the main story. If the reader will make a careful tabulation of the alleged errors he will find in a good many cases that it is a question whether they are errors at all, and again he will find that most of them are trivial and have no logical bearing upon the main proposition. Spalding, Gray, and Barrows seem to be the ones especially charged with error, but even most of their errors pertain to unimportant details, or to names, places and dates in which errors were natural and which have little or no bearing on the general harmony, continuity, and reliability of the Whitman story in its essential features. I can

give only a few illustrations. Take a few extreme cases, cases which seem to put most of the antagonists of Whitman in a foaming rage. They make a great deal of the fact that Spalding states that the Ashburton treaty was still pending when Whitman went East. This was an error, but when we come to analyze it, does it have any very important bearing upon the essentials of the story? Spalding was and had been far distant from the scene of operations in the "States," was probably not well posted on the details of history, but he knew (and was correct) that there was a question of treaty concerning Oregon between England and the United States in process of formation at that time. He knew that there was an Ashburton treaty, and he simply used the name Ashburton for the pending treaty. He had the fact, but used the wrong name for it. This was not scholarly, but it after all was an error in a name, and would not necessarily affect at all his knowledge of Whitman's aims in going East. Take the case of Spalding again, over which Marshall fairly gloats with the appetite of a vulture, in stating that Mrs. Spalding was killed in the Whitman Massacre. This is of course an extreme and very strange error, but it is obvious on the face of it that it was due to a mental lapse, or was merely an error in writing. Spalding could have had no possible motive in such an error as that, and it is monstrous to build up from such an obvious slip a general denial of all his testimony. Take another instance dealing again with that Walla Walla dinner in 1842 as narrated by Gray and Spalding. They refer to the fact that a courier entered the dining hall stating that the Red River immigration had just arrived at Colville. This story is rejected angrily on the ground that the Red River immigration had come the previous year, and hence it is argued that no such incident could have taken place. Now it is certainly true that the Red River immigration came in 1841, and Gray and Spalding are in error if they meant to affirm that it came in 1842. But analyze their statements. Do they undertake to affirm that the immigration did come in 1842? They only say that some courier *said that it had just come*, and that some young priest evidently accepted the statement, and as a result Whitman hastened home and made immediate preparation to go East. The courier and the priest might *have supposed that there was some second* Red River immigration. It might have been a mistake or misstatement by them, and yet had the same results. Now I am not vouching for the truth of that Walla Walla dinner story, but I do say that it has been distorted out of all proportion to its importance, and that the error about the Red River immigration does not in any way affect the larger aspects of the Whitman case. One more instance in connec-

tion with Gray, as to which Marshall again licks his chops with an unappeasable appetite. This is given on page 81 of Marshall's second volume. It is Gray's examination in the Hudson's Bay Company case, in which he says that he thought Fillmore was president in 1843. This is certainly a gross error, and it must be confessed that Gray does not show up very well as a student of American history. But it is a matter of common observation that men of mental power and accuracy in general are sometimes way off on some detail to which they may not have been paying any recent attention. Gray's critics have exaggerated that unfortunate error out of proportion to its importance. It really makes no difference to the essentials of the story whether Tyler or Fillmore was president. That was not the point at issue. Gray knew that it was *some* President and the fact that he made a blunder in the name has no necessary bearing on the credibility of his narrative. One more incident may be mentioned as a sample of the way in which Marshall gets hold of some trivial thing, and from it constructs some seemingly great matter. On page 295, Vol. II, he pours out great floods of scorn upon Pres. S. B. L. Penrose for what he calls "the silliest piece of testimony adduced in support of the Whitman story." Pres. Penrose quotes Cyrus Walker, the oldest son of Rev. Elkanah Walker, as remembering that his father was accustomed to pray that Dr. Whitman's life might be spared, but that he might fail in his purpose. Marshall with withering sarcasm, and mathematical accuracy, figures out that "the boy had reached the mature age of three years and ten months, when Whitman started, and four years and ten months when he returned," and adds that any comment on the silliness of Mr. Penrose's evidence is unnecessary. Now Mr. Penrose might be justly chargeable with a little carelessness of expression in seeming to assert that Cyrus Walker remembered that distinctly himself. But as to the general fact there is no question. As long ago as I can remember I heard Mrs. Walker and her sons tell the very same thing, together with much other matter of similar nature bearing and supporting the whole story. What Cyrus Walker had in mind was, of course, that he knew that matter as one of the family traditions,, which he knew as well as though he had been himself old enough to fully understand it. Anybody that ever wrote or gave testimony is liable to the class of errors of which Bourne and Marshall try to make so much. If we should apply to these historians themselves a similar rule of errors we would soon have them wiped off the map. On the first page of the introduction of Marshall's "History vs. the Whitman saved Oregon Story" he refers to H. W. Scott as a native of Old Oregon territory. This is an error.



Mr. Scott was a native of Illinois. On page 315 he speaks of the Walla Walla Union as being in very close relation with Whitman College. This is a surprising revelation to Walla Walla people, and is apparently thrown in by Marshall to account for the mention in the paper of a sermon by Dr. Hillis at Des Moines.

This article has already far exceeded the limits intended and must end. In conclusion let me say that my essential aim has been to indicate my conception of the spirit and methods in which history should be written, and to show the respects in which I believe Professors Bourne and Marshall have failed to exemplify them. I shall not close as Marshall does by using the sacred words of the Great President, "with malice toward none, with charity for all," but will simply say that if anything could excite malice in a breast of charity it would be the reading of the "Acquisition of Oregon" by W. I. Marshall.

Walla Walla, Washington.

W. D. LYMAN.

## EXPERIENCE OF A PIONEER

I was born at Garden Grove, Decatur County, Iowa, June 26, 1846. My father, Walter G. Perry, disposed of his farm and other possessions and, in April, 1854, started with team, loaded wagon and family of wife and four children for the West, intending to go no farther than Nebraska; but falling in with a large emigrant train, which was under the command of one J. P. Coats, bound for the, then, Territory of Oregon, he was persuaded to continue with them; which cost him his life.

After having traveled three or four months we came to where the Indians had burned the grass for the purpose of starving the stock of the emigrants. Confronted with this condition, the train was divided into three sections, the foremost being designated as the Ward train, from the fact of its being composed almost entirely of the Wards and their relatives, while the second section constituted the largest train, and we brought up the rear with four wagons.

Our last camping place, where all were to meet alive, was at a place designated in our guide books as "White Horse Creek," I think in Idaho now, the time being about the last of August or later. We had traveled perhaps an hour the following morning when Indians were discovered coming out of a canyon in great numbers, the foremost afoot, and apparently unarmed, followed by mounted Indians armed with guns. They came up squarely in front of our train and stopped the teams, but appeared friendly, shaking hands and asking for whiskey; upon being told that we had none they began to talk of trading with the men, and while my father was talking of trading a pistol for a pony, they opened fire on us, shooting my father, my uncle and my father's teamster. Guns were then brought into play and the Indians retreated beyond gun-shot range, but hung around for several hours trying to stampede the stock. Thinking they wanted our horses, they were turned loose and the Indians departed after catching them all.

Of those shot, my uncle was killed outright, my father's teamster was shot through the abdomen and lived until the following morning and my father was shot through the lungs and lived until the evening of the fourth day. We overtook the big train on the fourth day after the attack. My father was buried on the morning following, and a few days later we came upon the dreadful sight of the massacred

members of the Ward party, all of whom were slain except two boys, William Ward, a boy of fourteen or fifteen years, who was shot in the lung with an arrow, but hid away and made his escape to Fort Boise, where the arrow was extracted and he recovered, and Newt. Ward, a boy of nine years, who had been left for dead by the Indians, and was rescued by Mr. Yantis, later a prominent citizen of Thurston County, Washington, who owned a farm near Tenino. From appearances the Indians had attacked the Ward train on the same day that we were attacked, as the stench from the dead and mutilated bodies was terrible, but we stopped long enough to dig trenches and rude graves for the burial of our murdered companions. The women and children presented a sickening spectacle, having been burned by the savages.

After having performed that sad and sickening task, we pursued our journey to its end without further incident of note, many going to what is now the state of Oregon, while we, with several other families, including Mr. Meeker, the father of John and Ezra Meeker, of Puyallup, and the Whitesells of Orting, made our way to Puget Sound by way of the Naches Pass, over the Cascade Mountains, which was a perilous trip. In coming down the mountain sides the wagons had to be "snubbed" down, as it was called, which was done by making strong ropes fast to each wagon and taking half-hitches around trees to control them while going down steep places.

My first stopping place to call home after reaching Puget Sound was a log cabin with the earth for a floor, on the bank of Bushelien (now Spanaway) lake, about ten miles south of Tacoma, into which my widowed mother took her four children. This was in October, 1854. After a few weeks we moved into a comfortable log cabin erected on a donation claim which my mother located, on American Lake. Soon after this my oldest brother and myself were compelled to herd sheep for the Hudson's Bay Company to obtain provisions to sustain life, which consisted of salt salmon and potatoes with an occasional pan of flour. This was our vocation during the Indian war, our shield from harm, when questioned by the Indians, being that we were "King George Tillicums." After the close of the war we passed through nothing more eventful than the usual hardships of pioneer life of those days. We had our own cows, which supplied us with plenty of milk, but we were often without bread. On May 8th, 1859, while yet a very young girl, I married Andrew J. Frost, who came to the country ten years prior to my arrival, and since that time my home has been in the territory and state of Washington, ex-

cept for an interim of four years that we lived in Mendocino County, California, and less than two years spent in Alaska. We have raised a family of six children, all of whom are married; the boys being Walter G., Andrew J. and Robert E., and the daughters are Harriett E., now Mrs. Forest J. Hunt, of Ketchikan, Alaska; Anna M., now Mrs. A. W. Morgan, of Ketchikan, Alaska, and Amelia, now Mrs. D. C. Stewart, of Nagrom, Washington. My husband died on the 9th of March, 1909, at our home at Hillhurst, Pierce County, Washington, which I still occupy.

MARY PERRY FROST.



## THE "COLONEL WRIGHT"

The first white people to behold the waterway which drains the great Inland Empire were the members of the Lewis & Clark expedition, who camped at the junction of the rivers at the twin cities' location, October 10, 1805, and their primitive canoes were the first of the white man's boats to descend the Shoshone, or Snake River, and the Oregon, or Columbia, to its mouth.

Previous to 1859 the Columbia from The Dalles upwards had been navigated only by Indian canoes, the Hudson Bay Company's batteaux and, for a short time immediately before this date, by a few flat-bottomed sailing craft freighting to Wallula, which was then old Fort Walla Walla.

Successful steam navigation was established that year by the building of the "Colonel Wright," a stern-wheel boat, at the mouth of the Deschutes River, by Lawrence W. Coe and R. R. Thompson. These men had secured a Government contract for carrying freight for Fort Walla Walla, and this business they had handled with the flat-bottomed batteaux or schooners propelled by sail and wind power.

The pioneer steamboat was named for the distinguished colonel of the Ninth Regiment, United States Infantry, in command at Fort Dalles, who lost his life on the ill-fated "Brother Jonathan."

It was a happy circumstance which perpetuated the name of this gallant officer on a steamer which should be the pioneer to open up traffic on this great system as Colonel Wright, only the September before, had signed a peace talk with the tribes at the Sacred Heart Mission, on the Coeur d'Alene River, which opened this great empire to settlement after being closed for many years by Indian wars. Coe and Thompson probably remembered the commanding officer as the "party of the first part" on their contract.

The "Colonel Wright" was commanded by Captain Len White, an experienced steamboat man. He had spent some months in studying and navigating the river in batteaux for the purpose of learning its dangers before assuming charge of the new venture.

The boat was built with a mast that carried a huge square sail which proved of material advantage during the season of winds that are regular trades up the river. The question of fuel was a grave one and for the first season the boat was supplied with drift wood. It was compelled to carry enough wood for the round trip, comprising in bulk and weight the principal part of the cargo.

The start up the river was made on April 18th, with a dozen

passengers, the owners of the boat and fifty tons of freight to make a trial trip. The day was bright and clear when the boat's head was turned up stream from the Deschutes with a cheer from those on the bank, among whom there was but one dissenter, for a successful trip. That dissenter was Victor Trevitt, who now lies on Memaloose Island under a shaft which attracts more attention from the traveling public than the scenic grandeur of the Columbia River.

Trevitt kept a toll-bridge on the Deschutes at the time, which business would be seriously affected by the success of the boat. He offered to bet five hundred dollars that the boat would never make the trip. No one took up the bet but the next day he showed his foresight by disposing of his bridge property before he knew the result of the trip.

On board the spirit was cheerful, the owners and the captain confident as in the pilot house, in his shirt sleeves, he manipulated the wheel against the strong currents. The passengers were generally acquaintances. History does not name them and all minds were made up for an enjoyable trip.

The first obstacle was the John Day Rapid, a narrow, rocky passage with an island in the center of the river dividing it in two, either side being passable for the sail-boats but for the larger steamer now to be tested. The captain chose the right side, but the channel was too narrow, turns too short, the current too frightful; the boat bumped severely on the rocky bank and he dropped back for a "softer spot;" by taking the left hand channel and with the advantage of the eddies he succeeded in surmounting the short, sharp pitches in the stream until success was celebrated by a prolonged toot of the steam whistle, which would have startled the war-like tribes that formerly opposed the passage of the explorer and fur-trader of early days.

Indian Rapid, Rock Creek Rapid, Squally Hook and other strong points were steamed over as the boat came to them, the speed being fair with a good breeze distending the sail. The captain kept the lead line going constantly, a source of interest to all. Darkness found the trial boat within sound of the famous Umatilla Rapids, the most formidable obstacle on the river, where anchor was dropped for the night, as daylight was necessary for this effort.

The clear sound of the engineer's gong at dawn the next morning found everybody up, all interest centering in Umatilla Rapids, for if this obstruction could be passed, success for the enterprise and for the country was assured. These rapids are formed by three separate reefs, a half mile apart from each other, and will always be a

difficult place in the river, although the Government has expended thousands of dollars in improvements during the past years.

The three reefs were made without injury, the boat trembling and creaking in every part as it breasted the current, the water pouring over the bow and deck in a flood, and she glided into the open river again just as the breakfast bell rang calling to material things after the war of giants, water, steam and a man's mind.

General congratulations took place at the table. The owners were happy and the passengers could now go on by horse-back in a few hours to Walla Walla. But the captain was cautious: "Well, boys," he said, "we are up, but we have to go down." The thought of return was but an intimation of more trouble and new experiences; faith in the boat and her commander had now risen so that all believed they could perform any wonder and scoff at any doubter.

The "Colonel Wright" arrived at Wallula at nine o'clock, sighting the first home of a white man since leaving Deschutes, and Higgins, the solitary inhabitant, came out to take the lines. Here stood the old adobe fort, erected by the Hudson Bay Company years before, and now occupied by the army quartermaster who used the building as a warehouse.

Two hours later the load was discharged, the passengers embarked on the hurricane decks of Cayuse horses furnished by the Indians, the lines were cast off and the boat was headed down stream on the home-stretch.

The speed was astonishing. The Umatilla was run without accident, and, with a full head of steam on, the captain reached John Day at dusk but could still see threatening rocks rising from the boiling water. It was plain sailing to Deschutes, which was reached as the steward was lighting the cabin for supper, having been out on the famous run two days, inaugurating one of the greatest enterprises of the Northwest.

During this year regular trips were made between Deschutes and Wallula and an exploring trip up to Priest's Rapids. Up to 1860 the character of Snake River was wholly unknown. No white man since the fur traders had passed up or down. The Indians, when asked for information, would exclaim, "Oh, *hias* skookum chuck;" "very strong water."

With the new decade gold discoveries on the Clearwater attracted attention and miners were routed from Walla Walla oveland to the mouth of that river where it flows into the Snake, and on to the gold bearing district where the towns of Oro Fino and Florence sprang up like magic in these successful diggings. Early in the spring of this

year the army quartermaster employed the "Colonel Wright" to ascend the Snake River as far as the mouth of the Palouse, a point on the direct land route for army supplies by wagon to Fort Colville. The steamer succeeded in making Palouse and a warehouse was maintained there.

In June, 1861, a Mr. Seth Slater, of Portland, wished to transport a load of miner's supplies to the Florence district and agreed with the owners of the "Wright" to make the trip up the Snake River. When the boat left Deschutes (Celilo had not yet been used as a name for the lower end of this route), it was full of freight and passengers bound for the Salmon River diggings, and mining talk, sluices, long toms, rockers, pans, pay-gravel and bed-rock were terms heard from all sides. These people were to be dropped at Wallula, though all desired to share the fortunes of the boat, but the captain would undertake no further responsibility than Slater's contract.

After entering the Snake River the captain touched at an island where an enormous tree had lodged from a former high water, and the crew and volunteer passengers were landed with axes, kept for this purpose, to add to the supply of fuel. Upon disturbing the trunk of the tree a nest of rattlesnakes was also disturbed and a vicious war ensued in which a dozen snakes were killed, two of tremendous size.

At Palouse an enterprising person had strung a rope ferry and passage of the boat was barred by the wire cable which swung barely above the current in the middle of the river, far too low to pass under. The ferryman tried to persuade the captain that it was impossible for his boat to make the river on account of the rapids above, although his opinion may have been biased by the thought that if upper navigation were assured, his ferryboat business would be ruined. Unfortunately, the wheel of the steamer caught the wire and snapped it like a pipe-stem.

Palouse Rapids now confronted the boat, the river being in such immense volume with the June rise that the tide of speculation rose to high water mark among the passengers. Inch by inch, for two hours the gallant "Wright strove for the summit; reached it, and the first difficulty vanished. At the head of the rapid, on the right bank, was Fort Taylor (now called Grange City), a small earth embankment, with a single cabin remaining and a solitary soldier on guard, waving his hat as the boat passed by.

The rapids above, which were heard and feared, were named by Captain White "Texas Rapids," a polite term for a more unhappy place where no water is. A line was put out, the sail set and, a favorable breeze rising in the nick of time, the boat forged ahead faster



than the cable could be hauled in, entangling it in the wheel. Still the boat, propelled by both steam and sail, rushed over the crest, like a thing bewitched. A landing was made and an hour spent in cutting the cable out of the wheel.

No Indians had been seen on the river until now, when an encampment came into view: deer skin lodges beside a stream, canoes, fishnets on the bank, and a herd of horses browsing on the hillside, while Indians slyly pecked at the boat from within or behind their tents, making a picturesque scene. Indians rarely show any curiosity, but not so the horses. As the boat came puffing up the river, the horses, about forty in number, snorting and snuffing, galloped down to the bank and, with heads and tails erect, ranged themselves like a troop of cavalry with one a little in advance as a leader. The boat, when within a short distance, sounded the whistle, and a stampede up the mountain side took place, headed by the leader, until, a safe distance being reached, they stopped for another inspection of the great unknown.

A little further up the river the boat overtook a party of mounted Indians who were engaged in trying to ascertain the speed of the boat by first walking their horses, then trotting, then galloping them. Their experiments amused the passengers for some miles until a rocky bluff shut them off from view. The boat was now in the heart of the Blue Mountains which closed in abruptly to the river.

The evening was deliciously warm, a typical June evening, and the captain dropped anchor, declining to explore a new river by night. The evening was spent in music and song. Charley Frush and his banjo together with his charming tenor voice carried all to other days for away.

At daylight the boat was under way, so no one was long in bed. At eight o'clock a house was seen on the banks of the river on the trail from Walla Walla at Alpowa, where a ferry was located. This was on the great Nez Perce trail, the chief thoroughfare between the upper and lower countries, as these regions were called in those days. There was quite a crowd of people about the house waiting to be ferried over the river, and pack trains were strung along the trail on both sides of the river all in motion *one way*—going to the mines. As the boat came up, the travelers rushed down to the bank waving their hats, cheering, and some firing off guns and pistols, all of which was answered by tooting of the steam whistle and cheering in return.

The captain was for a time undecided which river to ascend, the Snake River, or the Clearwater, but as the packtrains were headed up the Clearwater, the boat was headed into that stream. As the boat

approached the Indian Agency at Lapwai, the Chief, Lawyer, cried out to his people. "Look! Here comes a water wagon." Few Indians had ever seen a steamboat. Here a few minutes were spent; the Indian agent and Lawyer were invited aboard, and then the boat steamed on. After a hard day's work the captain concluded he could go no further with safety, and, with Mr. Slater's consent, the merchandise was landed about twenty five miles above the Agency.

The "Colonel Wright" made two more trips up the Clearwater in the next three weeks and, as the water fell, a new depot had to be located. The tongue of land between the Snake and Clearwater rivers at their junction was selected as a terminus and as a suitable place for a town to grow up as a distributing point for mining and military supplies.

The name Lewiston was bestowed upon the new tent city by Victor Trevitt, who was at the landing one week later where three hundred people were awaiting transportation. In response to a demand for a name at the upper end of the route for the billing of goods, Trevitt said, "Call the place Lewiston for the first white man who set foot on the spot."

The boat's trip down was a rapid one, stiff places and rapids, which took hours to ascend, vanishing on the return. The mounted Indians were again overtaken and once more they tried to speed their horses with the boat; this time with a different result; as in a few minutes they were left out of sight.

As they passed Palouse the captain shouted to the ferryman that he need not put up his cable again, and he never did.

This trip from Deschutes to Slaterville consumed three and a half days, the return down stream being accomplished in eighteen hours.

Coe & Thompson's freight charges from Deschutes to Wallula by batteaux were one hundred and five dollars per ton. With the success of the "Wright" the charges were reduced to eighty dollars per ton and the batteaux had to go out of commission. Wood for fuel cost ten dollars per cord. Captain White's wages were five hundred dollars per month.

As an illustration of the large business done at this time the following figures, taken from the books at The Dalles for tickets for the *up* trip only, will be of interest:

Steamer "Colonel Wright,"	March 27th. . . .	\$2,625
	March 29th. . . .	2,446
	March 31st. . . .	1,570

This was in 1862.

Coe & Thompson added other boats to the service and in 1862, when the Oregon Steam Navigation Company was incorporated, a merger was formed, the owners of the upper river boats becoming heavy stockholders in the new company. The achievements of the Oregon Steam Navigation Company from this period until it was finally merged into the Oregon Railway & Navigation Company, form an important part of the history of the Northwest in its development.

LULU DONNELL CRANDALL.

The Dalles, Oregon.

### WASHINGTON THIRTY YEARS AGO\*

The first of September, 1885, I landed at Waitsburg from Yreka, California. The railroad from Portland to San Francisco was not then finished and I came up the Sacramento with a freight wagon. Deer was plentiful then in Northern California and I met two four-horse teams loaded with deer hides.

The next morning after I landed in Waitsburg, I borrowed a horse from Rev. Joseph Alter, the first United Presbyterian minister in the Territory of Washington, and rode out north of Dayton to Covello where I secured a school. As I did not begin school for a week I found work with Albert Phillips on the Copei, hauling in corn that was husked by a band of Indians. Here I saw a new way of husking corn that will seem queer to corn growers. There were about two hundred Indian men and women. The corn near the coast does not open out when ripe like corn in the east, but the husks stick as fast to the ear as if glued on and the stub on which the ear grows is hard to break off. The bucks or men pulled the ears off the stalk and laid them in piles and the squaws took a large butcher knife and with one stroke cut the husk off close to the big end of the ear. It was a quick and easy way to get them off.

I boarded around teaching the Covello school. I had about forty pupils. They burned wood in the school and the teacher was expected to cut the wood. They hauled dead logs, long as telegraph poles, and the teacher cut them before and after school. Sometimes he would have to walk four or five miles to his boarding house after cutting wood for the next day. One evening when I got to my boarding place I found the sheriff there. He had arrested the woman who was accused by her brother-in-law of poisoning a horse valued at \$1,500. He took her to Dayton where the jail awaited her had she not secured bail. She was tried and acquitted.

They had a smallpox scare in the school and I had to close for a time. Those were the boom times for Dayton. As much as 50,000 bushels of wheat were sold there in one day. Teams sometimes came to town as early as 4 a. m. to get a chance to unload without waiting too long. Sometimes four-horse teams would run a race to see who would get in first. Sometimes a sack would fall off but they never

---

\*Mr. Griffin, who is now manager of the Griffin Commission Company, at Stevenson on the Columbia river, has been recording his reminiscences. They were first published in a local paper, the Skamania County Pioneer, November 18, 1915, from which he sends them for reproduction in the Washington Historical Quarterly.—Editor.



stopped for a little thing like that. Wheat was twenty-five cents a bushel and flour was fifty cents for a fifty-pound sack of first class flour. Wages were good then and the common rate of interest eighteen per cent. Sometimes a man who had 10,000 bushels of wheat would find, after he had it all hauled off, that he had only a few dollars left. Wagons and machinery then cost nearly three times what they do now. Chickens were then two dollars per dozen in Walla Walla and they had to be dressed or you could not sell them at all. I remember seeing a row of empty oil cans about a rod apart from town out to the fort. I asked one man what they were for and he said the soldiers came to town and got drunk and couldn't find their way home without them.

There was only one railroad in Spokane and the city was not as large as Stevenson is now. There was only one wooden school house not as large as the grade building in Stevenson. Lizzie Halderman was county superintendent and principal of Spokane schools. There were sixty pupils and three teachers.

The best flour was fifty cents a sack and they were shipping two carloads a day to Rhode Island; that is one thing that was nearly on as large a scale then as now. There were lots of Indians in Spokane then and a large Indian who wore a high stove pipe hat and wanted to shake hands with everyone was Chief Joseph of the Nez Perce war. Indian ponies were plentiful and sometimes sold for two or three dollars each. Fort Spokane was seventy-five miles off and the supplies had to be hauled in freight wagon. Ore was hauled eighty miles from the old Dominion mine in sacks and shipped to Omaha. Freight on ore was eight dollars a ton from Spokane to Omaha. Pullman, where the agricultural college is, had one small store and livery stable. Mark Hopkins who was marshall of the territory later ran the Palouse Gazette at Colfax and I solicited ads for the book of marks and brands which he printed. Colfax then had three banks and did a big business in grain and agricultural implements. They had women's rights then and the women turned out in full force to vote the saloon down. About half the male teachers wore overalls in their school and at the county institute. Twelve years ago I again taught near Colfax and attended the institute and one lady remarked what a fine dressed body of teachers. But were they any better than those who helped make the great state what it is?

In many parts then more flax than wheat was grown and some thought the Palouse nothing but a stock country. They got all their apples from Walla Walla. They used small cayuse ponies to farm, many of them, and did not plow very deep. The average for the ter-

ritory was about fifteen bushels of wheat to the acre. Now it is nearly twice that much, as they farm better. Milk sold in Colfax for three cents a quart delivered. Now it is worth seven cents a quart. A good steer was worth about ten dollars, and some men who had three quarters of the best land, a homestead, a pre-emption and tree claim, 480 acres, found it hard to buy shoes for their children. Sometimes the hands on the threshing machines got so drunk on Sunday they had to wait till Tuesday for them to sober up before they could begin work.

JOHN A. GRIFFIN.

## FIRST AMERICAN SETTLEMENT ON PUGET SOUND\*

An Italian economist has declared that a colony is to history what a mountain is to geology: it brings past forms to view.

We read of the courage tested by hardship on the part of those who landed at Plymouth Rock, of those who first settled in the Ohio Valley and of those who braved the long journey over the plains and the mountains to settle the great western terraces, even these shores of Puget Sound. How surely are the past forms brought to view in those successive experiences! There are the same kind of log cabins for the first sheltering homes. There are very similar dangers from wild beasts and wild men, the same general series of hard knocks.

In one sense, the Puget Sound pioneers may be considered the last of the species. It is true that a similar fortitude was required of those who yielded to the lure of Alaska's gold and rushed into the new wilderness of the northland, but the pioneer there had advantages unknown to the one who first crossed the plains. I saw the Alaska pioneers packing up wire mattresses, collapsible stoves, dessicated eggs and evaporated fruits. He was to build a log cabin shelter and he was to have hard knocks aplenty, but somehow I feel that his pioneering, genuine in itself, was of a newer and different type.

Sometimes when you are in the great silent forest pause long enough to ask yourself a few questions. What would be the first thing you would do if you were landed there with a young wife and perhaps a baby or two? Unquestionably you would at once seek for your dear ones a shelter, fuel and food. The woods would quickly yield the shelter and the fuel. Perhaps, also, the woods and a nearby stream would add to the supply of food. In your mind you would be pioneering. If you would then add to your contemplations the ideas of great distances from your fellows, of loneliness, of dangers and of real needs, your mental pictures would be reproducing something of those past forms from Plymouth Rock to Puget Sound. You would then have a greater respect for those who never faltered in carrying the frontier from sea to sea, those who laid the foundations of the greater American Republic, the land of opportunity, home of the brave and the free.

---

\*The Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County held its regular annual meeting at Olympia on March 2, 1916. It had been planned to unveil a monument to the first American settlement on Puget Sound. The cost of the monument had been defrayed by the heirs of the late Leopold F. Schmidt. A severe and long continued snowstorm prevented the completion of the masonry work and the unveiling ceremonies were therefore postponed. Otherwise the programme of the meeting was carried out as planned. General Hazard Stevens, President of the Society, was in the chair and the address was given as here reproduced.—Editor.

Puget Sound was not wholly unknown or unsettled when the first American homes were established here. Captain George Vancouver, under the flag of Great Britain, discovered and named the region in 1792. The Northwest Company of Montreal had succeeded to the American fort at Astoria, changing its name to Fort George, during the War of 1812 and then proceeded to establish other fur trading posts in the lands drained by the Columbia and the Fraser rivers. A new impetus was given to these British efforts in 1821 when the Northwest Company was absorbed by the older and more powerful Hudson's Bay Company. Soon Doctor John McLoughlin arrived as Chief Factor and a new era dawned in the Pacific Northwest.

He moved the Hudson's Bay Company's chief post from Fort George to Fort Vancouver and soon thereafter, or in 1827, planted a post near the mouth of the Fraser river, calling it Fort Langley. The journey between Forts Vancouver and Langley was made by a voyage around by the Pacific or a more tedious trip up the Cowlitz river, a portage across the prairies to Puget Sound and thence in canoes to Fort Langley. Sailing vessels were not always available and the Cowlitz route came more and more into use. This soon showed the need of a dependable way station. Nisqually House was established in May, 1833, which became the first home of white men on Puget Sound.

Doctor McLoughlin and his associates in the Hudson's Bay Company were early impressed with the importance of Puget Sound and when the American missionaries began to arrive in 1834 he diverted them to the Willamette valley and to other sections south of the Columbia river. It is interesting to note that the Americans also realized the importance of Puget Sound from the beginning. William A. Slacum, an inspecting agent of the United States Government, crossed over the Columbia river bar on December 22, 1836, and remained in Oregon only until February 10, when he left for California. During that brief time he had made extensive observations. His report was published by the Government (United States Public Documents, Serial Number 314) under date of December 18, 1837. He showed how the Hudson's Bay Company was influencing the retiring employes to settle in the Cowlitz valleys so as to make more secure the British hold of the lands north of the Columbia river. He called attention to the work of the steamer *Beaver*, built in London the year before (1836), trading in and around the bays and rivers. He then declares:

"I beg leave to call your attention to the topography of Puget's Sound and urge, in the most earnest manner, that this point should never be abandoned. If the United States claim, as I hope they ever will, at least as far as 49 degrees of North latitude, running due west



from the Lake of the Woods, on the above parallel we shall take in Puget's Sound."

In additon to this eloquent urging by Mr. Slacum there was another interesting event when two American missionaries of the Methodist Episcopal church—J. P. Richmond and W. H. Willson—established themselves at Nisqually House in 1840. They remained but two years, still their temporary dwellings there constitute the first American homes in the Puget Sound region. The home of Doctor Richmond was blessed with the birth of a baby boy who was the first American child born north of the Columbia river. These homes were visited and highly praised by Commander Charles Wilkes of the United States Exploring Expedition in 1841, but soon after that visit the mission was abandoned and the missionary homes were burned.

If the Slacum inspecting tour was important to the United States the Wilkes Expedition was much more so. It resulted in the most thorough geographic survey of the whole region. Hundreds of bays, points, islands, passages, inlets and other features were described and named. The Fourth of July was celebrated with proper American vigor in the presence of our British cousins from Nisqually House. The reports were full and gave the United States all the information needed to tighten their hold on the region.

The whole nation had its attention drawn to the northern part of Oregon in 1844 when James K. Polk was elected to the presidency to the music of the famous cry of "Fifty-four, Forty or Fight." While that campaign was being fought out among the voters of the East, a train of ox teams was winding westward toward Oregon. Among those in the party was Michael Troutman Simmons, a Kentuckian who, Bancroft declares, was "unlettered though not unenlightened" and whose "courage was equalled only by his independence." This man was destined to be enshrined in memory as the first American leader to settle permanently on the shores of Puget Sound.

He decided to remain near Fort Vancouver during the winter of 1844-1845. It was there that his son Christopher was born and it was there also that he encountered something that aroused his Kentucky ire. He was informed that American settlers must not go north of the Columbia river. Now he had planned to settle in the Rogue river valley, but that opposition by the Hudson's Bay Company caused him to change his mind and he determined to have a look at the lands north of the Columbia river.

During that same winter with five companions (none of whom finally settled north of the Columbia river) he made a trip to the forks of the Cowlitz and returned to Fort Vancouver. In the following

July he started again, this time with eight companions, when the famous voyage was successfully completed. The eight companions were David Crawford, Charles Eaton, Niniwon Everman, John Hunt, David Parker, William Shaw, Seyburn Thornton and George Waunch. They were guided beyond the Cowlitz prairie by Peter Borcier, who had rendered a similar service for Wilkes in 1841.

Arriving at Puget Sound they made a canoe voyage of exploration to Whidbey Island but returned to the place where they had seen the Deschutes river tumbling over the falls toward tide water. Besides affording a fine water power, the place was not far from Nisqually House and Simmons decided upon that place as the site of his proposed settlement.

He returned to the Columbia river for his family and returned with them to his new location in October, 1845. Four other families came with him. These were the families of George W. Bush, Gabriel Jones, David Kindred and James McAllister. Two single men—Samuel B. Crockett and Jesse Ferguson—also joined the party. Those were the names of the men who, with Mr. Simmons and his companions of the former trip, constituted the important colony that began the permanent American settlement of Puget Sound.

How applicable to them was the song of Mrs. Hemans, written for the Pilgrims at New England:

“And the ocean eagle soared  
From his nest by the white sea’s foam  
And the rocking pines in the forest roared;  
This was their welcome home.”

The log cabin homes arose quickly and the pioneering began in real earnest. Each of the men and of the families no doubt bore a full share but Mr. Simmons seems to have sustained his leadership for the first years, organizing and building a grist mill and a saw mill. Later he began the first store in the town that was to receive the name of Olympia, on the claim of Edmund Sylvester, and still later he rendered most valuable service in his control of the Indians.

The Simmons settlement was first called Newmarket but a few years later the name was exchanged for the more beautiful one of Indian flavor—Tumwater. When those settlers first arrived, it was too late in the year to plant and mature a crop. They would surely be reduced to a diet of venison, grouse and clams unless they could secure supplies from Nisqually House.

We should here gratefully acknowledge the magnanimity of our British contenders for sovereignty in this region. Chief Factors McLoughlin and James Douglas sent orders to Nisqually House that the

Americans should be supplied with necessary food. The prices asked were very reasonable and the people to whom these favors were granted were the same ones who had so recently violated the orders not to settle north of the Columbia river.

For a long time it was the custom of American writers to claim that the British either did not know the importance of northern Oregon or else were frightened by the cry of "Fifty-four Forty or Fight" in 1844. Neither is true. A few years ago Professor Joseph Schafer of the University of Oregon published in the Oregon Historical Society Quarterly the Warre and Vavasour papers found by him in the archives at London. By these papers it was revealed that immediately following that presidential campaign of 1844 the British Government had sent those two officers in 1845-1846 on a tour of inspection and their reports showed just how the whole Oregon country could be seized and held for the British.

Forty years after the Polk campaign and while the Warre and Vavasour papers were still hidden at London the real reason of the British attitude was revealed by Doctor William Fraser Tolmie, last of the Hudson's Bay Company officers on Puget Sound. He was still living in retirement at Victoria when the Oregon Pioneer Association invited him to participate in their twelfth annual meeting. He did so by writing a letter which was published in the proceedings of the association for that year, 1884. From that letter I wish to quote as follows:

"True most part of the country sought for was lost, but it must be remembered that, between 1834 and 1846, the United Kingdom had—besides several fighting and other troubles in various parts of the world—great embarrassment in regard to Canada, during 1837-38 in a state of open rebellion. What seems more natural, in such a case than that apathy as to further acquisitions of territory in North America, should have prevailed in British councils? From this languid let-aloneism—not 'masterly inactivity'—the government was probably roused by the incessant, and not unnatural, nudging of the Hudson's Bay Co., and by Polk's loud crow of 'Fifty-four forty-or fight' at the time so captivating to the unreflecting of your people. But for these agencies all might have been yielded."

Here we have the real reason why the United States was permitted to win the great diplomatic triumph in the treaty of 1846.

Let me offer one more quotation from Doctor Tolmie's valuable letter:

"In 1845, Michael T. Simmons, George Bush, S. B. Crockett and a few others settled on the south end of Puget's Sound, calling their

settlement Newmarket, and by bringing cedar shingles to me for the Victoria and Sandwich Islands' markets, got useful supplies in return. To help them the more, the Hawaiian market was more than once by the company glutted with shingles."

In this same connection, I have recently had the opportunity of examining the original record known as the "Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House." It is there made evident that Michael T. Simmons and others of Newmarket were frequent visitors at Nisqually House. Mr. Simmons, Mr. Bush and some others are always referred to with apparent respect while some other Americans are recorded as Yankees. One entry, on April 13, 1847, nearly a year after the treaty was signed the Hudson's Bay Company was trying to improve its chances for a generous settlement by spreading out and improving its holdings. The entry includes the following:

"Slocum and gang planting potatoes, shifting sheep parks, etc. Messrs. Simmons & Bush engaged for building claims houses for the company."

It might also interest some to know that the winter of 1846-7 was unusually severe. The records speak of twelve inches of snow and weather six degrees below zero.

While contemplating the treaty of 1846, it is well to recall the splendid sequence of diplomatic triumphs by which Oregon was held for the Americans from 1814 to 1846. The recent publication of the papers of James A. Bayard reveals the fact that the American commissioners at Ghent were informed that the British had sent the sloop-of-war *Raccoon* from Rio de Janeiro to conquer Astoria. The commissioners were instructed by James Madison, Secretary of State, to insist that Astoria be considered an American possession when the "status quo ante bellum" clause was written into the treaty. That was accomplished and the actual transfer of flags was made with appropriate ceremonies in 1818.

In that same year, 1818, the second triumph of the series was achieved in what is known as the joint occupancy treaty by which both England and America held equal rights in Oregon for ten years. In 1819, the Florida purchase treaty contained a quit-claim deed of Spain's remaining interest in Oregon to the United States.

In 1827, the joint occupancy treaty was extended indefinitely, either side being permitted to terminate it by giving the other side twelve month's notice. At this time the British were increasing their trading posts rapidly and the Americans had not a single settlement.

The American missionaries and pioneers began to flow into Oregon. The Webster-Ashburton treaty of 1842 fixed the northern



boundary along the forty-ninth parallel but ending at the Rocky Mountains. The pioneers came in larger numbers and then came the climax in the sequence of triumphs when the treaty of 1846 divided the Oregon country and the great Puget Sound region was held for the United States. Three great Americans stand out conspicuously in this series of treaties—John Quincy Adams, Henry Clay and Albert Gallatin. Few yet realize the debt owed by the Northwest to the watchful and constant efforts of those leaders for more than thirty years.

And it is in the light of that long diplomatic struggle that such settlements as the one at Tumwater take on a new significance for Americans. Do we realize how well they wrought? Have we a tithe of their long vision into the future? We are reaping some of the fruits they sought to plant but are we thinking, acting and planning so that our heritage will pass undimmed to our children's children?

One characteristic of the pioneer was that his eyes were always looking forward. He was interested in the future. Less than ten years after the Simmons party landed at Tumwater, a pioneer legislature of the new territory of Washington assembled within a few miles of those first cabins to legislate for an area extending from the Pacific Ocean to the Rocky Mountains. To those pioneer law givers, Isaac I. Stevens, the first governor, spoke a wonderful note of prophecy as follows:

"The outpost of the great Northwest, looking on the Pacific and on Hudson's Bay, having the elements of a great and varied development, commerce, manufactures, agriculture and the arts, it has received the name of the Father of his Country, and has had the impulse of its life at a great era of American progress and civilization. Its name, its geography, its magnificent waters are known throughout the land. The emigrant looks forward to it as home; princely merchants as the highway of the trade of nations; statesmen and patriots as a grand element of national strength and national security. Our whole people have risen in their strength and are now reducing to subjection the vast wilderness between the two Oceans, and binding our people together with iron roads. The Eagle of our country's majesty has winged his course to the distant East, and Japan, China, Australia and Hindostan will be brought into fraternal and mutually beneficial communion with us. In this great era of the World's history, an era which hereafter will be the theme of epics and the torch of eloquence, we can play no secondary part if we would. We must of necessity play a great part if we act at all."

O, friends, lift up your heads in pride, pride in the achieve-

ments of your fathers. Let us, in profound gratitude, clasp the hands of the white haired remnants of that noble band of men and women, but above all let us press forward, carrying the torch of enlightened progress given us by the pioneers.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

## DOCUMENTS

---

### Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House, 1833-1835

#### INTRODUCTION

The first publication of this valuable journal was begun in the Washington Historical Quarterly for July, 1915. An installment has appeared in each issue since. The journal in manuscript is too extensive for reproduction in this magazine. It was not proposed to print more than the first volume of the manuscript. This gives the foundation of the famous old Hudson's Bay Company fort and the transactions there for the first two years.

The other fifteen or more volumes of manuscript are full of information bearing upon the very beginnings of Puget Sound history but on account of their bulk further publication in this magazine will be discontinued.

In submitting this last installment, I wish to extend my thanks to Victor J. Farrar, research assistant at the University of Washington, for the aid he has given in editing the journal.

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY.

---

(Continued from the Quarterly for January, 1916, page 75.)

#### OCTOBER [1834, page 104]

1st Wednesday. Two men employed at ploughing. Anawiscum, Louis and Bourgeau were busy at erecting Pickets from the men's house to that of the Gentleman's dwelling in order to keep out the Indians from behind the houses. Ouvre still attending to the Indians and doing sundry jobs about the place. The Indians are still about us gathering acorns. The weather fair.

2nd Thursday. The same employment for the men. There is not a day but Indians bring in some skins to trade. Sallacum has taken his departure for his home and it is expected others will follow. Rained a little during the night. Fair all day.

3rd Friday. We continue on with our work. The cattle have during the night got into our potatoes and eat up all the stocks of our good fruit. The weather fair.

4th Saturday. Part of the day we were employed in putting up our furs into Bales of 125 Large Beaver each. Traded some Elk

meat for amunition. The weather was cloudy and in the eve we got a heavy shower of rain.

5 Sunday. All still about us. Rained at intervals.

6 Monday. The ploughers still at their duty. The rest of the men employed about the place. The night past we got a little rain. [page 106]

October 7 [1834] Tuesday. John McKee and Brown ploughing, Mc Donald making gate doors, Bourgeau and Louis squaring wood, and Ouvre doing little or nothing. The weather cloudy and some rain fell.

8 Wednesday. Bales of furs packed up. The men at the same duty. Fair weather.

9 Thursday. Early this morning we were visited by thirty of the Mackah Tribe along with two Clallums headed by Little Jack and George. They tell me that they had seen Captain Dominus<sup>86</sup> with whom they traded some Canoes and a few skins. They have brought us some beavers skins. Late last night Plomondon arrived from Vancouver with the plough shares requested. The Eagle<sup>87</sup> has arrived safe and an American Brig<sup>88</sup> is anchored near Kiassinoes house, she is said to be loaded with sundry articles for salting salmon and with settlers for the Willamette. We have had a rainy night and day.

10 Friday. All the men at work about the place. Traded thirty one Beaver skins from the Mackahs and seventy [?] of Hyouquois<sup>89</sup>,

<sup>86</sup>In the early part of 1829 the brig Owyhee, Captain Dominus (or Dominis), and the schooner Convoy, Captain Thompson, entered the Columbia river for the purpose of engaging in trade with the Indians. These vessels were the property of an American firm, Marshall & Wild, of Boston. During the summer they cruised up and down the coast, after which the Convoy left for the Sandwich Islands, and the Owyhee passed the winter in the Columbia. Both ships were on the coast together during the following summer, 1834, and then departed, never to return again, although the venture had been a profitable one. During his short cruise with the Owyhee, Captain Dominus achieved great notoriety, if not fame. He introduced the first peach trees into Oregon, and exhibited the first cargo of Columbia river salmon in the city of Boston. Shortly after his arrival with the Owyhee, in 1829, a terrific epidemic of fever and ague, typhoid, measles, etc., diseases unknown to the Indians, broke out, which depopulated many of the Columbia river tribes and bands, and the natives, unable to account for the visitation of the strange maladies, ascribed their cause to the arrival of the Owyhee. What is known of his subsequent career is interesting. In August, 1834, we find him in command of the Hawaiian bark Bolivar Liberator, provided with a special agreement with the Russian American Company, and equipped with twenty Tungass, hunting the sea otter in the northwest waters. It is quite probable that he stopped to trade with the Makah Indians, as they were adept in the art of hunting the sea otter.

<sup>87</sup>The vessel referred to is probably the former American ship Eagle, Captain Meek, of Boston, which made her first appearance on the Columbia in 1818. She had evidently changed colors, as no record of a second vessel of the same name is extant at this time. From the tone of this entry one would infer her to be a British vessel, and this fact is borne out by the log of the schooner Vancouver, for July 8 to October 2, 1830, when the three ships, Cadboro, Eagle and Vancouver made an excursion to the Fraser river. Consult the indices of Lewis & Dryden's Marine History of the Pacific Northwest, and Bancroft's History of the Northwest Coast.

<sup>88</sup>Probably the May Dacre; possibly the Europa.

<sup>89</sup>See: ante, note 85.



the latter was merely to please in order to get them back to us. The natives are all going away to choose winter quarters. Cloudy and rainy weather.

11 Saturday. The ploughers at their work and all the rest of the men variously employed about us. Rainy weather. [page 107]

12 Sunday. As usual the Indians assemble and pay their respects to our Divine Being. Two young Cowlitz paid us a visit and after trading they left us for their quarters. Fair weather.

13 Monday. John McKee and Brown ploughing. Plomondon making a cupboard, Louis, Anawiscum and Bourgeau dressing up the Fort Pickets. Ouvre as usual attending to the Indians. This day last year from York left Fort Colville for Vancouver. The weather cloudy in the morning and fair rest of the day.

14 Tuesday. The same employment for the men weather cloudy.

15th Wednesday. A few Indians arrived from town and the Pisk caw house mountains they brought a few furs. Fair weather.

16 Thursday. Plomondon making wooden scales and Beam. Anawiscum, Louis and Bourgeau busy cutting wood for a Cellar. Traded about thirty skins from the Babillard and the other strangers. The fogs are very dense in the mornings but about noon they disappear.

17 Friday. The men working near the fort. Indians have again left us. The weather as usual.

18th Saturday. No change this day in our duty. [page 108]

Oct. 19 [1834] Sunday. We were only visited by seven Indians in course of the day. Fair weather.

20 Monday. Owing to the Oxen being lost we could not plough. The men were employed about the potatoe cellar. Cloudy weather.

21st Tuesday. Plomondon is now busy at making a new counter to the Indian Shop. Bourgeau & Louis sawing wheels, and Anawiscum getting the wood for making a wagon. The ploughers keep at their work. The Indians are few about us. Fair weather.

22 Wednesday. The ploughers still employed. Three men out cutting wood for the waggon and Plomondon as usual employed. This date last year the York express arrived at Vancouver. Delightful weather.

23 Thursday. Four men employed at taking up the Potatoes which are not much larger than a musket Ball. Plomondon still at his work of the 21st Instant. Louis sick. Traded 7 Beaver skins. Fair weather, foggy morning.

24 Friday. The same routine of employment for the men; the potatoes are all taken up and we have 13 kegs from eight of seed. Plo-

mondon finished his work and has now begun to make a door for [page 109] the potatoe house. Louis still stopping indoors through illness. Rained much during the night fair all day.

25th Saturday. The Oxen not found therefore no ploughing. Set the two men at squaring wood, two others making the waggon, Ouvre attending to the Indians. Plomondon and Louis on the sick list. Fair weather.

26 Sunday. This morning Master Plomondon got in an animal from the natives for which he was reprimanded for breaking through the rules of the Establishment. The natives assembled but did not dance owing to Bad weather. They were admitted into the Indian Hall and there they passed the day in quietness.

27 Monday. This morning Plomondon and family made their preparation for leaving the place. The ploughers continued at their work. McDonald and Bourgeau were employed at the wagon. Louis still stick; This forenoon J. B. Perrault and wife arrived in search of a woman slave which I had taken from the Princesse's husband. They brought us favorable news from Head Quarters and say that the Indians had reported that the express from York had arrived on the 15th Instant. The Americans do not trade furs. The weather fair.

28th Tuesday. Two more bushels of wheat put in the ground. Ploughing always on the go [page 110] This morning Plomondon and family left this for Vancouver, as also J. B. Perrault with his wife and slave, by them I have written to Mr. Chief Factor Mc Loughlin informing him of the state of our affairs. We have had a very stormy night and to day the rain and gale continued accompanied by a little thunder.

29 Wednesday. The men of the place now reduced to six have been employed as follows Two ploughing, two squaring, one making a door and Ouvre attending to Indians. This has been a very stormy day we have had rain, hail and very great thunder storm.

30 Thursday. A platform was made in the small square next to the Indian house. Ploughing continued. Betwixt each Picket of the Fort small poles were put in order to stop the Indians from looking inside. Passing showers.

31 Friday. The same employment for the men. The trade for the month as follows,

96 Large Beaver.	1 Fisher
62 Small Do.	1 Animal
20 Otters &	54 Fresh Salmon
1 Sea Do.	96 [?] Dried Do.

68 Rats.

26 Geese

6 Racoons

39 Ducks.

The weather cloudy and some rain fell. [page 111]

Nov. 1st Saturday. This being a day of rest for the people accordingly they were not put to work. Took a ride out towards the crossing place of Nisqually river in hopes of meeting some one from Vancouver but was disappointed. Passing showers all day.

2nd Sunday. No Indians and everything quiet about us. Fair weather.

3rd Monday. The men were squaring for flooring the Stable no ploughing this day owing to the oxen being late a coming. We got a few apple seeds put into a hot bed made for the purpose. Heavy showers in the forenoon. This evening the Cowlitz Chief Callupeegua arrived, and tells us that Perrault and Plomondon had only left Sinnetreyae's lodge this morning.

4 Tuesday. Ploughers have resumed their work. The rest employed as yesterday, squaring. Traded 1 Beaver and some wild fowls. The weather very Bad always raining

5th Wednesday. The same work for the men. The weather still unpleasant.

6th Thursday. The Stable completed. The ploughers have begun a new spot of ground near the little river; it appears better then the old field. The weather fair and delightful.

7 Friday. Three men employed squaring more wood for a small building. The ploughers at their job. [page 112] The Indians take a great many salmon with a hook attached to a long pole. This fish is very poor. Three of our horses missing since yesterday morning. Delightful weather.

Novr. 8 1834 Saturday. Got in our squared wood. Indians have come in and traded a few skins. It rained a little in the forenoon.

9 Sunday. An Indian from the Island brought us the meat of 4 animals which he traded. Weather fine, thick fog in the morning.

10th Monday. Two ploughers at their work. The rest of the men employed at the small building. Foggy morning as yesterday. The horses found. The meat of another animal brought us.

11 Tuesday. The same employment as yesterday Late this evening Vivet with a Pork eater arrived with the Empress from Y. which reached Vancouver on the 16th ulto. All well. Rainy weather.

12 Wednesday. Early this morning sent Vivet and his man back to Vancouver as the Doctor is very anxious about the non arrival of

the Dryad<sup>90</sup> and I am sorry to say we have no news of her as yet. The same duty for the men.

13th Thursday. Sent Ouvre with Mr. Yales Packet, he is to give it to the first Chief he meets [page 113] with on the track. The men employed as usual. The weather cloudy.

Novr. 14 Friday. The same occupation for the men. I have been very unwell all day and I am now barely recovered. Indians come in as usual for the purpose of getting amunition. Cloudy and rain.

15 Saturday. Ouvre returned and the letters sent. Still unwell but much better than yesterday. Fair at intervals.

16 Sundy. All quietness about us. Delightful weather in the afternoon.

17 Monday. Ploughers resumed their work. The small building completed. Le Francois<sup>91</sup> arrived with a Band of Indians to Trade. Fair weather at times with partial showers.

18 Tuesday. The same employment for the men. Traded a few Beaver skins from the new arrivals Fair at intervals

19 Wednesday. Getting Pack Saddles made, we are still lining our Fort Pickets the ploughers at their Work. The Frenchman and gang off Neilam and another party arrived with furs; no news from the Coast. weather as yesterday. [page 114]

Novr. 20 1834 Thursday. The same employment for the men as yesterday. Neidlum and Party away, and another band arrived with furs to trade. We are really at a loss of what keeps the vessel from coming, it is to be hoped that everything to the northward is safe, and that it is only the unfavorable state of the weather that detains the Ship from coming to us as ordered by Mr. Chief Factor Mc Loughlin. The nights are now colder and the fogs very dense about us in the mornings.

21 Friday. No change in our work or situation all dull and unpleasant. Weather much as yesterday but colder in the night.

22 Saturday. The ploughers have done only about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of acre this day, and very hard work for the oxen. The lining of the Fort Pickets is now completed and the Saddles also. To day we traded 11 Fresh Salmon which is very good, and this fish continues so far the winter season. Delightful weather.

23 Sunday. The weather continues pleasant.

<sup>90</sup>The British bark Dryad came to the Columbia in 1831 and figured prominently in connection with the frustrated attempt of Peter Skeen Ogden to found a post on the Stikeen river. The vessel returned to the Columbia in 1834, and in March, 1835, departed for the Sandwich Islands, having on board the notorious Oregon Question agitator, Hall J. Kelley. She was withdrawn from these waters that same year. See: post, note 94.

<sup>91</sup>See: ante, notes 56 and 82.



24 Monday. The ploughers did very little this day owing to the plough being out of order. The rest of the men variously employed. The natives have more fresh Salmon as also venison and fowls, we are now living on the fat of the land. Fair weather. [page 115]

25 Tuesday. Sent the men to Nesqually river for cedar boards in order to cover an Indian house which we are on the eve of erecting outside of the Fort for strangers. The ploughers have done much better today than yesterday working in the field. Anawiscum McDonald is making a wheel-barrow. Louis wife gave birth to a Daughter. Traded a couple of Beaver skins from a Chief of the Oquamish tribe he got a damaged Capot  $4\frac{1}{2}$  lbs for them Fair and most delightful weather.

26 Wednesday. The ploughers have done the spot of ground mentioned on the 6th Instant. Two men employed cutting wood for a new building intended for the Indians coming from a distante, it is to be erected outside of the Stockades. The wheelbarrow completed. Fair weather.

27 Thursday. Got the wood, cut yesterday, hauled home today and the men have employed building—Traded six beaver skins from Ats-say-lun and another Chink aye litz Indian. Fair weather.

28 Friday. Began building up the Indian hut. One man on the sick list. The Indians come in as usual with something to trade, however we will have but few for the month. Our oxen are now very much fatigued and on that account have stopt ploughing for a few days. Rained much last night [page 116]

Novr. 29 [1834] Saturday. The Indian hut completed, and now we are fairly settled for the winter in regard to indoor work. We shall now continue our ploughing and endeavor to get poles for our fences. The Indians from nigh at hand came in and brought us a few fresh salmon which are really very fat, so much so that it is impossible for me to eat any of them. The weather continues fair.

30 Sunday. This month trade is really poor and the Indians have so many on us that the expense of tobacco was more than usual.

56 Large Beaver	1 Chev skin
32 Small do.	1 Elk "
17 Otters	30 fresh Salmon
28 Rats	30 ps. D. "
2 Fishers	39 Geese
5 Racoons	192 Ducks
72 lb Cutting Beaver	14 Animals
	1 Keg Roots.

Decmr. 1st Monday. The ploughers are now ploughing up the ground near our potatoe field. Louis and Bourgeau have been employed at getting poles for fence work, and Aniscum Mc Donald was busy at repairing one of the ploughs. Two Indians came to trade a Beaver but could not agree they have gone back. Rained last night but fair this day.

2 Tuesday. The men have been employed as yesterday. The rascally Indians have again taken off all the Iron work about our boat, in this they will continue until I can find out the villains and give them a drubbing. Passing showers all day.

3rd Wednesday. No change in our employments. Ploughing and getting fence poles as usual. The weather boisterous.

4th Thursday. The oxen got this day's rest. The men were all employed about getting fence poles excepting Mc Donald who was out cutting wood for the making two ploughs. Sin ne tee aye came with three skins he traded and left me not altogether well pleased, he is a scamp and I determined to bring him down. The night has been a very boisterous one and the day fair.

5 Friday. The ploughers did a little more work to day, and the rest employed as yesterday. Traded an Otter. Fair at intervals [page 118]

Decr. 6 [1834] We have now 1100 poles cut this week. Our poor oxen are now very much fatigued and require some rest after the ploughing is done. The weather continues Boisterous at night and in the day time we have partial showers. We traded one Beaver, an otter and some fresh meat.

7 Sunday. The day passed away without seeing any Indians, they are gone now all to winter quarters. Partial showers all day.

8 Monday. Brown and Mc Kee resumed their work at the plough. Louis and Bourgeau splitting fence poles. Anawiscum was busy at repairing a plough, and preparing wood for another. Ouvre doing little or nothing but attending Indians at their smoking. Reports of a shipwreck about the Chickalitz Bay<sup>92</sup> and four Officers drowned, this has come by an old woman; We are doing our best to find out the truth. Rained all day.

9 Tuesday. The men were put at their work of yesterday, but on the arrival of a Band of Klalums at noon I called the men home Master Jack of the Makah tribe being rather impudent I brought him to an account and sent him about his business. Paying some attention to the Klalum Chief. La ah let has gone to Vancouver by him I have sent a note to the Doctor. Fair weather.

<sup>92</sup>The bay referred to is Grays Harbor. The Indian report is erroneous.

10 Wednesday. This morning Master Jack was very submissive and the trade was carried on in a [page 119] manner to the satisfaction of all present. We got about 75 Beaver and 14 Otters besides a small quantity of Dried Salmon—Soon after dusk all the Klalums went away well pleased. Fair weather.

11th Thursday. The men were put at their various duties such as ploughing and making fence poles—The weather foggy.

12 Friday. The men at the same employment. This afternoon Challacum arrived from Mr. Yale accompanied by an Indian of that quarter who is going to join Mr Cowie. On opening Mr Yale's note I was much surprised to find that the Box sent containing all his letters, new Papers and apples was not opened but put aside for Captain Darby<sup>93</sup> an old address such as it was sent me. On this account I had to send back an express immediately in order to put that Gentleman to right in respect to the Box. The weather much the same.

13th Saturday. The same occupation for the men. The Express off for Langley. The Indians come in numbers but bring nothing to trade. Fair weather.

14 Sunday. Though about thirty Indians on the ground none came to trouble us. The weather foggy.

15 Monday. The men have resumed their work about ploughing and fence jobs. The weather the same. [page 120]

16th Tuesday. This morning John McKee and Louis continued the ploughing with the oxen round the potatoe field, the old ploughed ground was run over with the plough by the horses. Mc Donald always kept about the place making several utensils required. Brown and Bourgeau accompanied by Mr Cowie's body servant left this for Fort Vancouver in order to apprise the Doctor with the news of this Post and that of Mr Yales place, besides informing him that no Ship had arrived. The Indians have traded a few more Beaver. Foggy weather.

17th Wednesday. The ploughing done for the present. The two men are set about cutting fence poles. Three Indians have cast up with a few skins. The weather fair, very cold mornings.

18 Thursday. Got the men at work about the Establishment plastering &c. for the winter appears to set in—Traded 5 Beaver and 1 Otter. The weather as yesterday.

19 Friday. The men employed as yesterday. The weather mild and cloudy.

<sup>93</sup>The identity of this person is not clear. In 1836 (more than a year subsequent to this entry) the steamship Beaver and the bark Columbia came to the northwest coast. A Captain Darby (or Derby) commanded the latter. There is a remote possibility that he is the person referred to.

20 Saturday. No change in our duty. Rained to day

21 Sunday—La-ah-let came back through fear and says that the Columbia is block up with ice. The note by him Brown took away. Rained a little in the morning [page 121]

22 Monday. All the men employed chopping wood for fires of the Establishment excepting Mc Donald who was busy at putting my dwelling house in order. The weather fine.

23 Tuesday. The men busy as yesterday. A few Indians arrived with a few skins which they traded and left us. Sin ne te ayes wife is also here with her Brother who are always employed hunting ducks. Cloudy weather.

24 Wednesday. The Fort was put into order and every house in it washed out. Indians go and come but no trade. It rained all day.

25 Thursday Christmas. All hands were allowed the best I had in the fort say ducks, Venison and each half pint of Rum. All quiet and no Indians. Mild weather but cloudy.

26 Friday. No work for the men. A couple of Indians arrived with a few beaver skins. The crows keep about us, and at times a Rook comes and gives the former chase. It rained at interval.

27 Saturday. Traded 8 Beaver skins and 1 Otter from the Indians who came yesterday. Weather continues cloudy.

28 Sunday. A very strong gale all night accompanied by rain, and to day we continued to have the same. It is mild for the season [page 122]

Decr. 29 Monday. The men employed at gathering up dung and laying it on the potatoe field. Mc Donald was busy at making a couple of chairs. The weather continues mild & rainy.

30 Tuesday. The two men of yesterday were employed to day at building a small shed for the calves. Mc Donald completed one of the chairs. Rainy weather.

31 Wednesday. The men variously employed. The Indians around us are drawing near understanding it to be a day of mirth tomorrow as the past new year. We shall however keep it to ourselves and rum amongst such brutes will not do. Trade of the month as follows:—

	169 pieces Dried Salmon
60 Large Beaver	161 Ducks
30 Small do.	14 Geece and Crains
27 Otters	331 lbs Venison
14 Rats	1 Dress'd red Deer Skin
1 Cub Blk Bear	5 Dress'd Chev do
3 Minks	1 Canoe



## 7 Bladders Oil besides a few roots and Berries [page 123]

## JANUARY 1835

1st Thursday. This day according to custom I gave the best rations I had in store with each one pint of rum after getting a few drams and cakes in my sitting room. They behaved well and the Indians being few were regaled with a dram each and a pipe of Tobacco. In the evening Brown and Bourgeau arrived from Vancouver with letters dated the 22nd. Ultmo. They had a very unpleasant voyage coming owing to ice in the Columbia and the high water in the portage. Sinne tre aye came with them and contributed much towards their coming as they could not cross one river without him—In that case I made him a present of a Blanket and took him once again into favor. The news brought is that the Stikeen party were back the Russians would not let them proceed up the river.<sup>94</sup> The Vancouver<sup>95</sup> was lost on Queen Charlotte's Island and the Officers and Crew escaped but with much risk as the natives were near killing them—The weather cloudy and rain fell in the forenoon, fair afterwards

2nd Friday. The men have not been ordered to work nor will they be till Monday next. The weather fair and cold.

3rd Saturday. Nothing stirring about us; the natives mostly off the ground. It rained very much during the night past, I have a common black bottle out to which is a tin funnel inverted of 8 inches diameter

<sup>94</sup>In 1834, the Hudson's Bay Company decided to establish a post on the Stikeen river, in British territory. The expedition sent out for this purpose was under the command of Peter Skeen Ogden, William Fraser Tolmie and A. C. Anderson, assisting, and was equipped with the Dryad and a full complement of stores. According to a treaty of 1825, Great Britain had a right to use the Russian rivers to gain access to her own territory but, despite the treaty, the Russians, who had anticipated the movement of the Hudson's Bay Company, decided to block it and, when Ogden arrived at the river's mouth, he found a blockhouse, the corvette Tally-ho, and two fourteen-oared gunboats ready to prevent his passage. Shortly after the Dryad had anchored, a small boat put out from shore, and a young Russian officer presented Ogden with a paper containing a proclamation from Governor Wrangel, which forbade both English and American ships to enter Clarence strait. To this proclamation Ogden made strong protest, and affirmed that his company had no intention to enter Clarence strait. As the young officer spoke no language but Russian, the interview was short; but the following day an officer of higher rank, accompanied by an interpreter, visited Ogden. The latter again made his protest, and reaffirmed that the Hudson's Bay Company had no intention to enter Clarence strait, but merely wished to use the Stikeen river to gain access to British territory, in accordance with the principles set down in the treaty. Thereupon, the Russian broadly hinted that the effect upon the Russian trade would be the same in either case, as a fort at Stikeen or thirty miles inland would carry the trade with it, and the Russian government would secure no advantage in owning the shore line. Ogden was forced to retire, as he had no authority to give battle. In the diplomatic bickering which followed, the Hudson's Bay Company, besides money damages, received Fort Wrangel, and a lease to a considerable shore strip. Consult: H. H. Bancroft, *History of the Northwest Coast*, II, 628 ff.

<sup>95</sup>The schooner Vancouver was built at Fort Vancouver in 1826 and was of 150 tons burden, but poorly constructed and a losing proposition from the beginning. She was wrecked on Rose Spit, Queen Charlotte Islands, her commander, Captain Duncan, having run her aground in broad daylight. See: ante, note 13.

and this morning [page 124] I found  $2\frac{3}{4}$  inches in the bottle.—Fair and most delightful weather all day—

4th Sunday. The Indians have been more about us to day than usual, but all was quiet. It rained much during the night and fair all day.

5th Monday. Four men have been put at cutting fence poles, and McDonald mending chimnies. Traded some venison. The rain has been so much during the night that I found my bottle just full. Fair all day, the air colder towards evening.

6th Tuesday. This afternoon Letters were received from Mr. Yale who wishes me to send a Boat for assisting in bringing some provisions. I have ordered a couple of men to repair the only one we have, and shall forward it with three men and two Indians. More poles cut this day. Our horse and cow keeper has got into bad humour and has left us; previous however I took away the property he got for his winters duty. It rained all night, though it was clear in the evening. To day we had several showers.

7 Wednesday. The men employed at the Boat. No trade of skins of any kind. It rained mostly all night and partial showers to day. [page 125]

8 Thursday. This morning about eleven o'clock Anawiscum, Lou-is and Brown with two Indians off in the Boat to Mr. Yale for provisions. The men now at the place three in number will be kept nigh at hand in ease of arrivals. Rained again last night and some showers towards the evening.

9 Friday. The two left to work were employed nigh hand. Several Indians arrived to trade; Neilam, Mr Yale's Comorade and the Yackamaw Chiefs Brother; they have some Beaver skins. It rained all night. To day partly fair.

10 Saturday. A number of Indians round us kept the men in doors mending chimnies. Traded 38 Beavers and 3 Otters from the Indians above mentioned. At one P. M. the bottle out in the rain was full making the second since the beginning of the month. It rained all day.

11 Sunday. The Indians have assembled to smoke a pipe in peace among themselves. Neidlum, the rogue, left us well pleased. The rain fell so thick that this evening the bottle was found full—

12 Monday. The men were employed chopping firewood. It rained again last night and fair to day.

13 Tuesday. The same busy times for the men. The moon shone

bright till about midnight then a little more rain—Fair all this day.  
[page 126]

14 Wednesday. McKee and Bourgeau were employed at ploughing a small piece of ground near the Fort. The Cattle were kept indoors all day and night. In the evening 15 Poo-leul-lop-pas arrived with little or nothing to trade. Last night we got a severe frost to day it became mild and rain fell.

15 Thursday. Men kept employed as usual. Traded a few skins and some venison. It rained a little during the night but fair all day.

16 Friday. The men ended their ploughing and have resumed their chopping. A little more rain the night past and at intervals during the day; the sun when it appeared was heating as in spring.

17 Saturday. The men kept at chopping near the Fort. Many Indians about us, and the most of them beggars. The night was beautiful and the moon appeared bright during it. To day it was fair and warm, so much so that flies were seen outside of the fort.

18 Sunday. The Indians about the place have all gone to La ah let to pass the day by request from him. This afternoon the Frenchman with a pis caw house Chief arrived with furs to trade. It rained from ten in the morning till night.

19 Monday. This morning the men were put to chopping wood. Traded 15 beaver [page 127] skins and two otters. We had a strong south east gale all night accompanied by rain. This morning about eight the plurometer was full—Fair rest of the day, till towards evening then cloudy.

20 Tuesday. The men kept employed about the place on account of the numerous Indians about us. The Frenchman and party off. Closed our years business. Inventory taken and our returns this month is 62 Large Beaver, 22 Small do, 2 Fishers, 7 Minks, 11 Rats, 14 Otters and 1 Racoon, 9 animals 230 pcs dried salmon, 6 fresh do. 50 Ducks and 2 Geese.

This year's returns are as follows commencing from March 1st 1834 and ending 20 January '35 making only ten and 2/3 months trade.

33 Large Bear Black.	80 Minks
13 Small " "	700 Rats
1038 Large Beaver	1 Sea Otter
12 Small Do	340 Land do
29 lbs Cutting do.	190 Racoons
9 Fishers	2 Elk Skins

40 Chev do

170 fam Hyouquois

It rained for the most part of the night and to day also [page 129; page 128 is blank]

21 Wednesday. The men have been employed at repairing the road down to the Sound—part of the day—and the remainder part chopping and bringing home firewood. This forenoon a few So qua mish arrived headed by a young man who is rising up a new religion. He came on purpose to see me, but as yet has not made up his mind to speak in respect to his vision of celestial beings. It is reported that in a dream he was presented with a written paper and 18 Blankets from above, the latter are invisible, but the former the Indians say he has about him. They have brought a few skins to trade. Asselim has also come with 1 Beaver, this fellow is one of the greatest liars in the country, he told at first he had ten skins at his lodge, but all turns out to be a lie. The night was stormy part of it, and the day was really delightful. This is I must say unexpected weather the sun was as bright and the day was as warm as in spring.

22 Thursday. The men still employed about us. The So qua mish have left us and taken their Beaver with them not agreeing in price The weather as yesterday.

23 Friday. To day the So-qua-mish returned and traded—Fair weather at intervals [page 130]

24 Saturday. The men were splitting firewood. The weather fair some rain during the night

25 Sunday. More rain in the course of the night and partial showers all day. The Indians had their devotional party near the Fort. the bottle full.

26th Monday. The men variously employed. About noon Chalcum and lady arrived from Mr Yale with the accounts &c of Fort Langley. All well. The boat sent from this reached Langley on the 13th mid-day and they will be here in a day or two if the wind keeps under. Cloudy weather and partial showers in course of the day.

27 Tuesday. This morning sent off John McKee and Bourgeau & family to Vancouver with the accounts of this place and Langley. An Indian is gone with them to take charge of the horses. I am now left with only Ouvre in the Fort, and surrounded with a large party of Indians. Showers during the night and forepart of the day, fair after.

28th Wednesday. Late last evening The Boat manned by our three men and two Indians arrived, the property was got up this morning, all appear in good order. About ten Dominigan Farron started



to overtake the party going to Vancouver and with it he is to continue. Rained a little at night and some to day. Our plurometer full this morning. [page 131] Articles received from Langley as follows viz

23 Bags Pease	35	Bushels	
24 " Potatoes	35	"	
3 " Wheat	5	"	
1 " Corn	11½	"	
1 "ear " & Onions			10 Mats
1 Keg Pork. 4 Gallons			2 Axes repaired
2 "Lard 2 " ea			2 Hooks.
Some Sausages			1 Bag Flour

29 Thursday. The men have rested after their voyage. Indians are gathering strong about us and gambling. We have at least eight men on the ground of six different tribes. The weather clear all night and to day it was fair and charming.

30 Friday. Got the dung put on our potatoe field and hay brought into the stable. Hill Indians coming in, some not sure of themselves. Delightful weather.

31 Saturday. Got more firewood brought home. The Indians are still coming in, and a small party went home. The weather has been fair and warm all day, the night was clear and a little cold. The trade from the 20th Instant is as follows:

44 Large Beaver	27 Musquash
24 Small "	11 Land Otters
2 Fishers	23 Racoons
2 Martins	1 Elk Skin
1 Mink	2 Chev do [page 132]

#### FEBRUARY—1835—

February 1st Sunday. We have had a great party of Indians about us all day. This morning the Chiefs attended on me for the sake of getting information of living well, and as there was a young man who understood the Flat Head language among the party, I thought proper to give them instructions respecting our duty to the Giver of Life as also the duty to one another. All what I said was taken in good part and fair promises for the future. The dance was well conducted and all behaved well. This devotional mode was for the present adopted and given to Indians as a mark of their showing they were pleased that they knew who their Creator was. There was

at least three hundred Indians on the ground. It rained during the night and the day was cloudy.

2 Monday. The Indians have mostly all left us we have now about a dozen Yackamaws by us. The weather cloudy and a little rain fell in the night—

3rd Tuesday. The men employed at making a new road. The Yackamaw traded and took their departure. Two strangers arrived with a few Beaver besides we are again visited by the beggars Sin nei yea and La ah let. Most delightful weather, flies about us and in the evening frogs were croaking [page 133] all around, prospects of fine weather.

4th Wednesday. The men employed at the road. Indians go and come and always bring something to trade. The weather has been clear all day, in the evening it became cloudy.

5th Thursday. Louis employed at hauling up the fence poles. Traded several Beaver skins. The weather foggy. The frogs still keep up their croaking at night.

6 Friday. The men have been employed at chopping down trees that are on our new road to the sound. This has been a foggy morning and fair the rest of the day.

7 Saturday. Chopping wood and clearing about the place were the duty of the men for the day. Sin nei tre ays and La ah let have at last left us. The weather still as yesterday.

8 Sunday. The Indians all at home none came to trouble us. About ten Cowlitz arrived on a visit to the natives. The weather as before.

9 Monday. The men employed about the place. The Cowlitz off to their homes. Sin nee tee aye and La ah let came on a visit, the former traded two otters, they are both away. The fog was so thick that it fell from the trees like a shower. We had a small shower in the afternoon [page 134]

10 Tuesday. Louis the Iroquois was out cutting fence poles and Mc Donald was busy getting firewood in the morning in the afternoon he began making a couple of ploughs. Indians are coming in daily but bring in nothing to trade. The So qua mish juggler mentioned on the 21st Ultó, is again doing wonders about his tribe—it is said he has a coat covered with dollars and is making presents to the natives by giving them Blankets of Cloth this is to be a yearly custom with him therefore they (his friends) will be well off. It rained much last night and cloudy part of the day but quite mild

11 Wednesday. Louis at the fence poles and Mc Donald making

ploughs, say repairing them. It rained much and this morning our plurometer was found full at 8 o'clock.

12 Thursday. The same duty for the men. Rained all night and this day at nine P. M. the Bottle was full. In the afternoon the weather was fair.

13 Friday. To day the men that is to say Louis and Mc Donald were both employed as yesterday. The Indians come and go as usual, but very little trade. Delightful clear weather.

14 Saturday. Men kept employed about the place. Several Indians have cast up and brought us some fresh meat. The weather cloudy and a little rain fell. [page 135]

15 Sunday. We have had several Indians on the ground paying their usual devotion. The weather has been various during the night and day partial showers. This afternoon six men arrived from Vancouver and I am happy to say that our transactions for the post outfit has been found satisfactory by all the great wigs of that place. Three of the men are to remain here and the others are to go to Langley. Our plurometer full.

16 Monday. Sent off the Langley men. The men newly arrived are resting and the others did a little work. The weather Fair.

17th Tuesday. Began repairing our fences. Indians are gathering on us, but very little trade is effected. The weather delightful.

18 Wednesday. Many Indians on the ground for the purpose of celebrating a marriage between a Scay waw mish lad and a Chickayelitz girl. On the side of the young man 8 Guns, 10 mountain Goat skins, and a slave were given in a present, the young woman's friends gave an equivalent. We traded a few beaver skins. The men were employed at fence work. Foggy morning fair afternoon—

19 Thursday. The men have been employed at the fence, that is Louis, Dominique, Quennell & Mowat at the above work. Anawiskum [page 136] Mc Donald was employed squaring wood for a barn and Ouvre as usual attending on the Indians. The Chief Challacum paid me a visit before leaving me for his land on an affair of importance a report has come to him that the So qua mish juggler was charged with robbing the dead and it is in this way that he made presents. The Chief came to me for advice in respect how the rascal was to be punished. I told him to gather the great men of his tribe and act according to their decision "for my part" says he "I shall banish him from my country never to return in fact he ought to be killed for such a crime" I said it was a very proper punishment that of banishment it would hurt him more than Death itself. The old man left me well

pleased and determined on doing the justice he proposed. The weather foggy morning and clear the remaining part of the day. Two animals got from the Natives.

20 Friday. The men employed as follows. Four at getting fence poles, and the other drawing dung and rotten hay on the potatoe field. This morning got the Scay waw mish to trade after giving one of the most troublesome a blow over the shoulders with butt end of my gun. Some hail fell today and then rain. Ouvre made 51 Candles.

21st Saturday. Mc Donald returned to his barn wood and the rest of the men at fence wood. It rained much night & day. A few strangers arrived with some furs. [page 137]

22nd Sunday. Indians from nigh hand were here to pass the day. I made them understand the villainous conduct of the So quash mish juggler and hope that none of them present would do the like. Keep on good terms with one another in that way you will always do well. Cloudy weather and a little rain fell towards evening.

23rd Monday. The men have resumed their work. Indians leaving us for their quarters. Last evening our Plurometer was full. About four this morning it began to snow at eight we had about an inch and a half on the ground, then the weather cleared up and before night the snow disappeared.

24 Tuesday. The same duty for the men. This morning we had snow after a very cold clear night—only half an inch on the ground, the weather clearing up about eight, the snow partly disappeared. Traded several Beaver skins from the Pendent Oreilles slave, say: "Tay Kill" by name.

25 Wednesday. Two men employed at hauling out fence wood, and boring the holes through the pickets while another was busy at sharpening one end of them. Anawiscum was employed in squaring wood and Ouvre still doing little or nothing about the place. The Pendent Oreilles Slave Tah Kill took his departure. Hard frost last night the ice in the kegs  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch thick [page 138]

26 Thursday. The men have been employed as yesterday. An Indian fell sick but through our care he got better, and for our thanks he was caught at stealing away from us a blanket which we lent him in the act of sweating him—The night we had a frost and to day it was cold, the wind north.

27 Friday. Kept the men employed at getting pickets for our gardens near the establishment. A party of seventeen Yackamaws arrived with a few skins. An inch of snow on the ground this morn-



ing and it snowed all day, the weather mild, at night three inches on the ground.

28th Saturday. From the bad state of the weather the men have been employed at chopping wood near the place. About the middle part of the night it commenced raining and continued so all day. The snow mostly all gone. Trade of the month as follows,

73	Large	Beaver	53	Musquash
27	small	do	6	Chev Skins
	1½ lb	Cutting do	1	Black Bear Appichiman
16	Otters		10	Animals (the meat of
41	Racoons		30	Dried Salmon & 5 Fresh do
16	Minks		5	Ducks [page 139]

March 1st Sunday. The natives were all very quiet. The weather has been stormy all night, about ten this morning it cleared up and became fine & clear. The Plurometer full.

2nd Monday. Louis, Quenelle, Dominique, and Mowat were employed at fence making. Anawiscum is stilling squaring [filling] up pieces for the Barn. Fine warm weather, wind.

3rd Tuesday. The same duties for the men as yesterday. The Indians nigh hand pay us a daily visit for the sake of smoking our tobacco. The weather had been fair during the night and continued so till 2 a. m. after cloudy and partial showers.

4 Wednesday. No change in our duties. Weather fair.

5 Thursday. The men still doing the same work putting up fences round our field of wheat. The weather has been cloudy for the most part of night and day; a little rain fell toward this evening.

6 Friday. The same routine of employment for the men excepting old Quenelle who is laid up from his rupture. Examined the Bales of furs and found that a few skins got wet by drops of rain falling on them. The weather fair; a strong gale during the night. [page 140]

7 Saturday. Mc Donald, Louis and Dominique were employed all day at splitting fence poles. Mowat was busy harrowing the field in which we are to put our seed potatoes. Quenelle still ailing and Ouvre doing little or nothing about the place. Traded a couple of Beaver skins. Weather overcast all day. rain commenced in the evening.

8 Sunday. The few Indians about the place kept themselves very quiet. It rained at intervals.

9 Monday. Three men employed at fence wood Mowat still harrowing. Quenelle unwell. Traded a few skins. About noon the bottle

that is out to measure the quantity of rain that falls was found full and the weather still continued boisterous hail and rain till the evening when it became fair.

10 Tuesday. Quenelle has resumed work, and the rest of the men at their various employments An Indian has been hired to assist at hauling out the fence poles The weather fair at intervals.

11 Wednesday. The men have done the fence about the wheat field. harrowing continued. La ah let has arrived with a fourth wife, this Indian makes the great man and at best he is hereabouts as a beggar. It is his wives that feed him. The weather fair foggy mornings. [page 141]

12 Thursday. A new fence is making round a small spot of ground intended for a kitchen garden, which was again ploughed over. Ouvre has been employed making horse collars. This afternoon Louis Delonais arrived from Langley sent hither as desired by Mr. Chief Factor McLaughlin to make up my seventh man—Mr. Yale writes me that the party sent from here on the 16th Ult. got up there and all is well about him. Delightful weather—foggy morning.

13th Friday. The men employed as usual about fences. Fair weather.

14 Saturday. Louis, Dominique, Delonais and Quenelle have been busy at getting a fence up round a spot of ground west of the Fort. Mowat kept at harrowing. Anawiscum and made up a few bales of furs. The weather cloudy a part of the day, and a little rain fell.

15 Sunday. The Indians assembled here for the day. The weather cloudy most part of the day.

16 Monday. Our fence round the west garden completed and the men have begun to fence in the ground laid up for our potatoes. The packs done and everything in a forward state for meeting the vessel. Fair weather. Three kegs of potatoes put in the west garden. [page 142]

17 Tuesday. The harrowing continued and the fence work also. The weather cloudy.

18 Wednesday. The same routine of employment for all hands. It rained during the night. We put a few garden seeds in the ground such as radishes, carrots, Turnips, onions, [cresses], lettuce, Broom corn and a keg of potatoes. Our apple plants look well.

19 Thursday. The work getting on as usual. More seeds put in the garden Traded a few Beaver skins More rain in the day and night. Our plurometer full.

20 Friday. No change in our duties. Indians have come in

but brought very little to trade. We got the meat of two animals. Rather cold during the night. The weather to day has been partially cloudy.

21st Saturday. The fence around the potatoe field completed and the field east end of the Lake<sup>96</sup> is now ready for the second plowing. Our wheat looks well. Challacum is arrived and I am told that the thief of the Dead is banished from his lands. No news of the ship coming. Fine weather.

22 Sunday. Many Indians on the ground; the meat of four animals got. It rained at intervals. [page 143]

23rd Monday. The harrowing and fence making resumed. Several Indians have arrived but as usual in need, and nothing to trade. Our plurometer full Cloudy and rain.

24th Tuesday. Our daily employment continued The Chief Challicum is getting a small piece of ground cleared for the purpose of planting a keg of potatoes got from Mr Yale. Snowed and rained at intervals.

25 Wednesday. We could not harrow on account of the weather. The men were employed at the fence excepting Anawiskum who was busy at making a horse waggon in order to relieve our poor oxen. Challicum off on a fishing excursion. Ta Kill the Yackamaw Chief formerly a Prisoner of War at the Pendent Oreilles has arrived with a beaver. This young man speaks the language I understand and with him I can convey all what I wish to say to the tribes hereabouts. The night and day have been very disagreeable continually raining with a strong westerly wind

26 Thursday. The same employment for the men. The rain has filled up our plurometer.

27 Friday. No change in our duties The afternoon the Chief Frenchmen cast up with some furs to trade. It rained all night and day. Our bottle again full this evening. [page 144]

28th Saturday. The fence round our new spot for sowing wheat and Barley is now completed. The Frenchman is an Indian altogether spoiled having been too highly treated here by the person in charge for outfit 33, this day he wished me to lend him a horse for riding about, and because I did not act according to his wishes got into the sulks however I did not mind him, but sent him to the Indian Hall to smoke. Got part of our seed potatoes cut. We traded the meat

<sup>96</sup>This is evidently Old Fort Lake, a small slough southeast of the old fort. The lake is laid down on Huggin's map, contained in Volume I of the Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House, but does not appear on Inskip's Map of 1846.

of 3 animals and a half. Rained again most part of the day. A very strong gale during the night

29th Sunday. The day passed away as usual. The natives though numerous were all quiet. Partial showers. Our plurometer full.

30 Monday. Ploughing commenced. Mc Donald was busy making a waggon. Rained again and our bottle full this evening.

31st Tuesday. We resumed our ploughing. A bushel and a half of wheat sowed. Two men employed at splitting more poles and pickets for renewing the fence of last year which is now coming down. Mc Donald made ear to one of the ploughs. Dominique sick. Partial showers of rain and hail. The trade of the month, 35 Large Beaver, 8 small ditto,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  lb. Cuttings, 6 Otters, 27 Racoons, 2 Minks, 29 Rats, 2 Bear skins, 3 Wolves, 1 Fisher, 20 wood Rats, 6 Chev skins,  $9\frac{1}{2}$  animals. [page 145]

April 1st Wednesday. Two men splitting fence poles. One sowing and harrowing, one plowing, and Mc Donald always working and repairing useful articles. We put in 21 quarts of clean wheat and  $4\frac{1}{2}$  Bushel potatoes in the ground next to the small river. Our garden seeds are coming on well. Plomondon's Brother in Law has arrived from Vancouver Tells us that the Dryad is off to Wahoo and that the Cadboro is on her way hither. Traded a few skins from the natives. Fair weather, the morning cool.

2 Thursday. The same employment for the men. A bushel of wheat put again into the above field. Louis is now plowing the field on the Nisqually road in order to sow our pease. Fair weather.

5 Sunday. This morning Neidham and the Borgeau arrived, they tell us that yesterday they heard the report of a cannon as coming from Cape Flattery. There has been five different tribes on the ground, as usual a little disagreement amongst them. This is owing principally to Chiefs who are jealous of one another. The natives of the place performed their devotion without regard to the strangers. This afternoon Niedlam came into the Shop to trade and only two beaver skins were got; he wanted to give me 1 Large and 1 Small for a blanket this I could not agree—he is off to his lands. Fair weather.

6 Monday. Three men at the fence, one sowing and harrowing, one plowing, one working about the place and one attending to the Indians. We have got  $3\frac{1}{2}$  Gallons of Indian Corn sowed by the women. The weather cloudy. Neidlam came back and traded.

7 Tuesday. Four bushels of pease sowed. The men employed as usual. A party of Chickayelitz arrived and traded a dozen of



skin most of them for rum. They were drunk and fighting among themselves on the beach. Some rain fell in course of the day. Ouvre sick.

8 Wednesday. The men at the fence finished their job about noon to day, and have been employed since at taking down a Chimney. Three bushels of Pease sowed. Challacum is building a hut next to ours that is out for strangers. Indians all away. Fair weather. [page 147]

9 Thursday. The ploughers and sowers continue their work The rest of the men employed about the place. Challacum away to his land. Three more bushels of Pease sowed. Partial showers in course of the day.

10 Friday. The same employment for all hands. Two and a half bushels of pease sowed making  $12\frac{1}{2}$  in the ground belonging to our last year crop. Very few Indians about us. We had a shower of hail and then rain late in the afternoon.

11 Saturday. Three bushels of Langley Pease sowed Work getting on as usual. Indians do little or nothing. It rained some in course of the day. I am sorry to say that poor Ouvre is still ailing and appears not sound in his mind.

12 Sunday. All quiet about us. Weather fair. Our bottle out for the rain was found full this morning.

13th Monday. Louis at the plough. Mowat sowing and harrowing. Three men cutting more fence wood, Mc Donald working about the place—Ouvre a little better in health. Three more bushels of Langley pease sowed. Thick fog in the morning—The night rather cold. Fair day.

14 Tuesday. The fence wood all on the ground where it is wanted. The last  $1\frac{1}{2}$  bushels Pease making [page 148] as follows

$12\frac{1}{2}$	bushels of Nesqually Pease
$7\frac{1}{2}$	" of Langley do.

—

20

Total

besides  $1\frac{1}{2}$  bushel, pease, we have 2 ditto of barley in the ground McDonald was busy at planing boards for lining my sitting room. The weather as yesterday.

15th Wednesday. The plougher has been at work with three others putting up a fence 2 Bushels of Barley sowed and the ground harrowed Ouvre still unwell. The weather fair at intervals.

16th Thursday. The last barley sowed making 6 kegs in the ground we have also a gallon of oats. Our duty of sowing is now

over and our ground seems to be in fine order. Traded a few beaver skins from Indians nigh us. Fair weather.

17th Friday. This being Good Friday I did not order the men to work excepting a little duty about the house. Sin ne tee aye has arrived with his family &c and as usual troublesome in the way of getting rum. The weather fair in the morning partial showers in the afternoon. The seed in the ground as follows

20	bushels	Pease
35	"	Potatoes
10	"	Fall wheat
5	"	red do.
$\frac{1}{2}$	"	Corn
6	"	Barley
$\frac{1}{8}$	"	Oats [page 149]

18 Saturday. The men employed as usual. Fair weather

19 Sunday. The day passed away in quietness—Fair weather

20 Monday. The men squaring wood for the Barn. The weather cloudy at intervals

21 Tuesday. The same duty going on. About  $\frac{1}{4}$  past six this evening the Cadboro, Captain Duncan Master, hove in sight below the Island. The weather cloudy.

22 Wednesday. Late last night the schooner anchored and to day all our property was put in store. The weather in the morning cloudy, and we got a fine shower. Fair towards three afternoon.

23 Thursday. Work getting on as usual. The schooner was getting in water and ballast. Indians coming on us from all quarters with furs. Fair weather.

24 Friday. This day one of our oxen died on getting on board every precaution was taken but of no use. Sent to Mr. Yale 2 Oxen, 4 Horses and a Colt. The vessel off. The duty of the place getting on—Fair weather.

25 Saturday. All safe and everything getting on. Indians troublesome for reducing the tariff. Fair weather.

## BOOK REVIEWS

---

THE OPERATION OF THE INITIATIVE, REFERENDUM, AND RECALL IN OREGON. By James D. Barnett, Ph. D., Professor of Political Science in the University of Oregon. (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1915. Pp. 295. \$2.00.)

This book, as its title indicates, is a practical rather than theoretical study. It has an appendix containing the bibliography of the "Oregon system," constitutional and statutory provisions relating to the initiative, referendum and recall, a list of all measures submitted to the people and the votes for and against, from 1904 to 1914, and also sample material from various sources illustrative of the method of conducting a campaign for or against a referendum measure.

"Beginning with 1892," Professor Barnett tells us, "a campaign for the adoption of the initiative and referendum was carried on with tireless effort, under the remarkable leadership of W. S. U'Ren, aided by the Joint Committee on Direct Legislation, later broadened into the Direct Legislation League (the forerunner of the People's Power League), with the result that after ten years the system was embodied in the constitution. Advocated by the granges, the labor unions, and the Populist party, it had finally been indorsed both by the Republican and Democratic parties."

The book is not argumentative. The author's purpose in writing it was to present and interpret the facts. Professor Barnett has brought together in this volume and made accessible much interesting and valuable information concerning the merits and defects of the "Oregon system."

Concerning the complaint so often made that initiative measures have been crudely drawn, he says that "although there has been at times good ground for such complaint, on the whole the measures submitted through the initiative compare well in form with the legislation enacted by the assembly."

The circulation of petitions has been a real problem. In a few instances petitions "have been circulated wholly by volunteers interested in the good of the cause involved." But in most cases even when measures were proposed and supported by strong organizations such as the People's Power League, the State Grange, or the State Federation of Labor, it was necessary to resort to paid circulators to secure

the required number of names. To the suggestion that giving or receiving money for circulating petitions should be made a criminal offense, the author replies that "it seems that the prohibition would result in hampering those acting in good faith without preventing the unscrupulous from acting in violation of the law. Great business interests, acting through their armies of employees, could probably easily evade the provision. . . . . There is a great deal of opinion to the effect that the provision would practically destroy the legitimate use of the initiative and referendum, especially in view of the fact that heretofore many measures, clearly favored by the people, could not have been placed on the ballot without the aid of paid circulators."

Professor Barnett seems to think, however, that the circulation of petitions is not a necessary feature of the initiative and referendum. It might be a better plan to have petitions signed only at registration offices. But this change would make it necessary to reduce the required percentage of signers. To prohibit the circulation of petitions without reducing the required percentage would in his opinion probably render the initiative and referendum inoperative.

The over-use of the initiative and referendum he attributed to a number of causes, such as the desire of the people to use a new tool, the failure of the legislature to enact needed legislation, the ease of securing signatures and the resubmission of defeated measures.

The large number of measures appearing on the ballot makes it extremely difficult to cast an intelligent vote. "It is no reflection upon the intelligence of the voters to say that it is absolutely impossible for them adequately to consider such masses of legislative proposals." Nevertheless, the educational effect of the system, Professor Barnett thinks, is of great value.

There is some check on the over-use of the referendum in the disposition of many voters to vote against measures which they do not understand. The experience of Oregon shows that as the number of measures on the ballot increases, the proportion defeated is also likely to increase. Measures of a technical nature and consequently difficult for the public to understand, local measures which do not interest the state at large, and those backed by narrow selfish interests are likely to be rejected at the polls.

"In spite of the difficulties in the situation," the author says, "the results of the several elections are, in general, competent evidence as to the intelligence of the vote cast. That the voters have done remarkably well under the circumstances is generally conceded, even by the opponents of direct legislation.



The abuse of the emergency clause by the legislature has to some extent threatened the effectiveness of the referendum. "Five candidates for the office of governor in 1914 promised in case of election to use the veto power to prevent the abuse of the emergency clause." And yet nearly one-fifth of the acts passed in 1915 were emergency laws.

In the opinion of Professor Barnett, the effect of direct legislation upon the legislature has been, generally speaking, beneficial. It has lessened the amount of corruption in that body; has increased rather than diminished the legislator's sense of responsibility, and has furnished protection against the ever present danger that the legislature will mistake the clamor of special interests for public opinion.

Professor Barnett's account of the "Oregon system" in operation is a valuable addition to the literature of this subject.

J. ALLEN SMITH.

---

HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN IOWA, VOLUME III. By Clarence Ray Aurner. (Iowa City, State Historical Society of Iowa, 1915. Pp. xii+464. \$2.)

This book—the third volume in a proposed six-volume work—deals with the development of secondary education in the state of Iowa, the first two volumes having treated the beginnings of elementary education. The student of the history of education will find the sections on the Academy particularly interesting. The history of the rise, growth and decline of the Academy in Iowa, is especially suggestive as typical of this interesting phase of the development of secondary education in the United States. The establishment of private normal schools and institutions for training for business pursuits is very properly treated in this connection, representing as they do an early movement toward vocational training as distinguished from the college preparatory function of the academy. The public high school movement is carefully traced from the beginnings in the middle of the past century to the present day, a most difficult task in view of the lack of legislative direction. In the printing and binding, as well as in content, the book maintains the uniformly high standard of the publications of the State Historical Society of Iowa.

The students of education in Iowa are fortunate in having an account of education in the state as comprehensive and reliable as this work promises to be when completed. Furthermore, this history of education will no doubt serve as an example and stimulus for histo-

rians in other states. It is to be hoped that Washington will be among the first to follow in making a reliable record of the beginnings and development of this most important feature in our civilization. Here is a great opportunity for a student of history and education in the state of Washington.

PAUL J. KRUSE.

---

SPENCER FULLERTON BAIRD: A BIOGRAPHY. By William Healey Dall. (Philadelphia, Lippincott, 1915. Pp. 462. \$3.50.)

"The two men who have exerted the strongest influence upon natural history studies in this country are Louis Agassiz and Professor Baird." This judgment of the late Dr. J. S. Billings indicates the importance of the present and first adequate biography of Spencer Fullerton Baird.

The subject of this notable biography was for thirty-seven years in the scientific service of the United States Government. During his entire career he was directly or indirectly concerned in the organization and administration of the scientific work of the numerous surveys and explorations sent out by the Government. He was in Washington City as a youth of nineteen when the collections from the now famous Wilkes Exploring Expedition were being received by the Museum of the Patent Office. So interested did he become in the scientific material which he there saw that he at once applied for a position as curator. He failed to secure the position but in 1850 became Assistant Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution and later Secretary of this Organization which position he held through life. Under his direction, the natural history reports of many of the surveys of the West were prepared and he personally wrote the two volumes of the Pacific Railroad Survey devoted to mammals and birds.

The volume contains many selections from Professor Baird's correspondence with Audubon, Agassiz, Dana and other scientists of note and is so full of human interest that anyone, regardless of profession, will find it a delightful book to read. The author, Dr. W. H. Dall, has written many books and monographs on Alaska and the Northwest and has been a curator of the United States National Museum since 1880.

---

COLLECTIONS OF THE KANSAS STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. VOLUME 13, 1913-1914. Edited by William E. Connelley. (Topeka, State Printer, 1915. Pp. 602.)

This volume will prove of value in the Pacific Northwest by rea-

son of an able and suggestive paper by W. E. Connelley upon "National Aspects of the Old Oregon Trail." Painstaking care is evidenced in the preparation and editing of the entire volume. Much of fact and incident is here collected for the use of present and future students. A fifty-seven page, double-column index is furnished.

---

CALIFORNIA, 1849-1913; Or, THE RAMBLING SKETCHES AND EXPERIENCES OF SIXTY-FOUR YEARS' RESIDENCE IN THAT STATE. (Oakland, DeWitt and Snelling, 1913. Pp. 48. \$.50.)

Here is the unpretentious story of a '49-er from Vermont. The narrative begins with the trip over the Oregon Trail from Independence, Missouri. Many incidents are related bearing upon early mining days in the Golden State.

---

TEXAS IN THE MIDDLE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY. By Herbert Eugene Bolton. (Berkeley, University of California Press, 1915. Pp. 501. \$3.25 paper, \$3.50 cloth.)

The sub-title is Studies in Spanish Colonial History and Administration. It is Volume III in the University of California Publications in History. Professor Bolton has made himself an authority on the history of the Southwest. This large work, based on the original sources, may well be accepted as final on its definite time and place. The book is illustrated with maps and diagrams. In dignity and scholarship it reflects credit on the great institution from which it is issued.

---

MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COLLECTIONS. (Lansing, Michigan Historical Commission, 1915. Pp. 601.)

This is Volume XXXIX of the Collections. It is packed with valuable materials pertaining to the history of Michigan. It is a fine example of what an enterprising state can do toward preserving the record of men and events important in the annals of the commonwealth.

---

THE MILITARY OBLIGATION OF CITIZENSHIP. By Leonard Wood. (Princeton, Princeton University Press, 1916. Pp. 76. 75 cents net.)

The distinguished Major General, United States Army, gave an address at Princeton on April 15, 1915, on "The Policy of the United

States in Raising and Maintaining Armies." To this has been added two other addresses: "The Military Obligation of Citizenship" and "The Civil Obligation of the Army," both delivered in 1915. The three addresses comprise the contents with an introduction by John Grier Hibben, President of Princeton University.

Though the book has no particular bearing on the Pacific Northwest, it is of interest at this time to citizens of all parts of America.

---

MISCELLANEOUS WRITINGS OF F. B. HAWES. Edited by Ed. M. Hawes. (Everett, Wash., Hawes Press, 1915. Pp. 53.)

In the foreword the son gives this brief biography of his father: "Ferdinand B. Hawes was born at Fox Lake, Wisconsin, on October 11, 1858. After his father's death in the Union army, he was educated in the Soldiers' Children's School in Wisconsin, and there learned the shoemaker's trade. Later he attended the State Normal School and after graduating there took up school teaching which he followed continuously, with the exception of a brief experience in the publishing business, until 1900. Then with the belief, as he expressed it, that 'the world has but little use for superannuated school teachers,' he left the Superintendency of the Olympia Schools to enter business in Everett, where he continued until his accidental death on October 26th, 1908."

The little pamphlet reveals the thought of F. B. Hawes. He hated and combatted sham. He had a lively humor and a tender sentiment. These qualities show in the essays, speeches, letters and poems. Only one hundred and twenty copies of the book were printed by the family for relatives and friends.

---

INDIAN LEGENDS. By Marion Foster Washburne. (Chicago, Rand McNally & Company, 1915. Pp. 144.)

This little book is for children. The legends have been selected from various tribes only a few of which are mentioned for purposes of identification. Aids are given, such as a brief bibliography, for further readings about Indians.

---

THE MASTERING OF MEXICO. By Kate Stephens. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 335.)

This is an effort to tell once more the thrilling story of the conquest of Mexico by Cortez and his handful of Spaniards. The story



is based largely upon such source materials as the writings of Bernal Diaz del Castillo. It will probably have an especial appeal at the present time.

---

#### Other Books Received

AMERICAN SCENIC AND HISTORIC PRESERVATION SOCIETY. Twentieth Annual Report, 1915. (Albany, State Printer, 1915. Pp. 887.)

GIFFORD, EDWARD WINSLOW. Composition of California Shellmounds. (Berkeley, University of California Press, 1916. Pp. 29.)

HAMILTON, J. G. DE R. Party Politics in North Carolina, 1835-1860. (Durham, North Carolina Historical Commission, 1916. Pp. 212.)

HUGUENOT SOCIETY OF SOUTH CAROLINA. Transactions, No. 21, 1915. (Charleston, The Society, 1916. Pp. 72.)

JOSEPH BRADFORD PEAKS, 1839-1911. (Dover, Maine, Piscataquis County Historical Society, 1915. Pp. 41.)

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS. Classification: Class C, Auxiliary Sciences of History. (Washington, Government, 1915. Pp. 176.)

MICHELL M. The Co-operative Store in Canada. (Kingston, Canada, Queen's University, 1916. Pp. 22.)

NORTH CAROLINA STATE LITERARY AND HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION. Proceedings of the Sixteenth Annual Session. (Raleigh, State Printer, 1916. Pp. 120.)

OWEN, THOMAS M. Alabama Newspapers and Periodicals. (Montgomery, State Printer, 1915. Pp. 39.)

OWEN, THOMAS M. Alabama: State Name, Boundaries, Capitol, Executive Mansion, Seal, Flag, Holidays, Song and Flower. (Montgomery, State Printer, 1915. Pp. 11.)

SIFTON, SIR CLIFTON. Some historical reflections relating to the War. (Ottawa, Women's Canadian Historical Society, 1915. Pp. 20.)

SWEM, EARL G. Bibliography of Virginia, Part 1. (Richmond, Virginia State Library, 1916. Pp. 767.)

WAGSTAFF, H. M. *The Harris Letters.* (Durham, North Carolina Historical Commission, 1916. Pp. 61.)

WASHINGTON EDUCATIONAL ASSOCIATION. *Addresses and Proceedings of the Twenty-ninth Annual Session.* (Seattle, C. G. Bras, 1915. Pp. 248.)

WEAVER, CHARLES E. *Tertiary Faunal Horizons of Western Washington.* (Seattle, University of Washington, 1916. Pp. 67. \$.75.)

WEBSTER, LAURA JOSEPHINE. *The Operation of the Freedmen's Bureau in South Carolina.* (Northampton, Mass. Smith College, 1916. Pp. 67-118.)

## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### An Old Shout for Preparedness

H. B. McElroy of Olympia is keenly interested in all matters relating to Northwestern history. He recently came upon an original circular issued at the Territorial Capital in the days of the Civil War. In sending it to the editor of this Quarterly he says: "The folks in this country in those days seemed to favor preparedness."

Most of the enrolling officers mentioned in the circular are now dead. In fact only one is known to the present writer as being among the living. That one is D. B. Ward for King county. He is at present a baliff under Judge R. B. Albertson in the Superior Court of King county.

The historic circular is here produced:

#### Proclamation

TO ARMS! TO ARMS!! TO ARMS!!!

*"Eternal Vigilance Is the Price of Liberty!!!"*

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,

Olympia, W. T., Jan. 15, 1862.

*Fellow-Citizens of the United States in Washington Territory:*

While our arms are being crowned with great success in the rebellious States, the late dispatches portend a War with England and France.

The storm is gathering! Let us then look well to it that it does not burst upon our heads while we are unprepared!! Let us not remain quietly at our firesides and permit the ruthless savage to be turned upon us. Well do we know it has ever been the policy of those nations to arouse the merciless Savage, whose inhumanity is too well known to require comment.

Let us then thoroughly organize the Militia, receive arms and equipments and be ready, at a moment's warning, to defend our homes like men.

He who prates of love of country and will not place himself in readiness, in time of danger, to defend it, is unworthy of that proud name we all bear, AMERICAN CITIZENS.

The following named gentlemen will act as enrolling officers to receive the names of those who are willing to aid in our defense, should occasion require.

They will please forward the roll of the companies, with the names of the officers chosen, to Gen. Frank Matthias at Seattle, W. T., or to myself at Olympia.

J. W. JOHNSON,

*Assistant Adjutant General.*

---

#### NAMES OF ENROLLING OFFICERS.

Thurston County—G. Hays.

Pierce County—W. H. Wood, Capt. Settle.

King County—D. B. Ward, H. A. Atkins.

Island County—S. D. Howe, Rev. G. F. Whitworth.

Jefferson County—Victor Smith, H. P. O'Bryant.

San Juan—E. D. Warbass.

Snohomish—Capt. Fowler.

Sawamish—F. C. Purdy, D. Shelton.

Lewis—Capt. Henry Miles.

Cowlitz—Dick Herrington, Alex. S. Abernethy.

Clarke—U. East Hicks, W. J. Langford.

Skamania—J. L. Ferguson.

Walla-walla—Ray R. Reese, A. B. Roberts.

---

#### Presidential Inaugurations

In March, 1916, two presidents were formally inaugurated as the chief executives of Washington's two highest institutions of education. On March 20-21 Henry Suzzallo was publicly greeted and felicitated on assuming full control of his high office in the University of Washington. On March 23-24 Ernest O. Holland was the center of similar ceremonies at the Washington State College. There were many prominent educators and distinguished citizens present as delegates and participants in the interesting programmes. Chief among these was Nicholas Murray Butler, publicist and President of the Columbia University. The appropriateness of his presence was manifest as both the new presidents hailed from the great institution of which he is the distinguished head.

Aside from the importance of the events themselves, lovers of history are interested since the two men thus honored have it within their power to materially advance and encourage the cause of historical research in this relatively new commonwealth.

---

#### A Correction

A line of type was accidentally omitted from the article by M. Orion Monroe on "A Critical Discussion of the Site of Camp Wash-



ington." On page 20 of this Quarterly for January, 1916, the second sentence of the fifth paragraph should have read: "It has been proved beyond reasonable doubt that the true site of Camp Washington was located at a point twelve and one-half miles southwest *from the ruins of the Spokane House and six miles south* of the winding ford on the Spokane river," etc. The italics indicate the line lost in the proof reading.

---

#### Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County

At the annual meeting of this organization at Olympia on March 2, 1916, General Hazard Stevens was re-elected president. Allen Weir, who had rendered years of faithful service as secretary, felt impelled by reason of failing strength to retire from that office. This decision was reluctantly accepted by the members who placed the duties upon F. W. Stocking, treasurer of the society. The other officers were all re-elected, including the venerable chaplain, P. D. Moore, hail and hearty in his ninety-first year.

The summer meeting of the society will be held in Tumwater Park, when the monument to the first American settlement on Puget Sound will be officially unveiled.

---

#### Living Pioneers of Washington

In this Quarterly for January, 1916, pages 87-89, there was published a list of biographical sketches of living pioneers of the Pacific Northwest and especially of Washington. This series of articles, written by the editor of this Quarterly, appeared on the editorial page of the Seattle Post-Intelligencer. For the benefit of future historians, the list of the articles as they appeared in that newspaper since December 31, 1915, is here published with the date of first publication, the year being 1916, and with the present address of the pioneers:

- January 1, Mr. and Mrs. Hiram H. Pease, Seattle.
- January 3, Cyrus Hamlin Walker, Albany, Or.
- January 4, Dr. A. W. Thornton, Ferndale, Wash.
- January 5, Prof. W. D. Lyman, Walla Walla, Wash.
- January 6, Mr. and Mrs. Nelson Chilberg, Seattle.
- January 7, Charles E. Ivy, Davenport, Wash.
- January 8, Marion Phillips, Seattle.
- January 10, Ira Robinson, Ferndale, Wash.
- January 11, Rev. Samuel Greene, Seattle.
- January 12, Thomas Sharpe, Rosario Beach, Wash.
- January 13, Oscar F. Canfield, Clarkston, Wash.

January 14, Mrs. Clara McCarty Wilt, Tacoma, Wash.  
January 15, Isaac Wilson Buzby, Ellensburg, Wash.  
January 17, Addison A. Lindsley, Portland, Or.  
January 18, J. T. Williamson, Bothell, Wash.  
January 19, Isaac Newton Bigelow, Seattle.  
January 20, Ephraim Calvert, Seattle.  
January 21, Dr. William F. Oliver, Arlington, Wash.  
January 22, Mr. and Mrs. Gardner Kellogg, Seattle.  
January 24, Robert McC. Becker, Seattle.  
January 25, Mrs. Abigail Boutwell Karr, North Yakima, Wash.  
January 26, Bishop Edward J. O'Dea, Seattle.  
January 27, Jacob Hauptley, Shelton, Wash.  
January 28, Jacob Harding, Bow, Skagit county, Wash.  
January 29, Mrs. Amy Elizabeth Leonard, Seattle.  
January 31, Mr. and Mrs. P. H. Roundtree, Klaber, Lewis

county.

February 1, Beriah Brown, Seattle.  
February 2, Judson W. Himes, Elma, Wash.  
February 3, Frank R. Spinning, Olympia, Wash.  
February 4, Mr. and Mrs. Frank Berzone, Seattle.  
February 5, Morgan J. Carkeek, Seattle.  
February 7, John N. Skidmore, South Bend, Wash.  
February 8, W. P. Winans, Walla Walla, Wash.  
February 9, Judson S. Siler, Vance, Wash.  
February 10, Mrs. Nancy M. Bogart, Tacoma, Wash.  
February 11, Mrs. Mary Isabell Scott, Startup, Wash.  
February 11, Captain and Mrs. James W. Tarte, Bellingham,

Wash.

February 14, Robert Frost, Olympia, Wash.  
February 15, William H. Peterson, Tacoma, Wash.  
February 16, Senator and Mrs. Levi Ankeny, Walla Walla,

Wash.

February 17, Mrs. Melissa L. Noyes (died March 16, 1916).  
February 18, John L. Jenkins, Bellingham, Wash.  
February 19, Benjamin F. Manring, Colfax, Wash.  
February 21, Jay Stillman, Puyallup, Wash.  
February 22, J. P. de Mattos, Bellingham, Wash.  
February 23, Grant Colfax Angle, Shelton, Wash.  
February 24, Joseph Marion Taylor, Newcastle, Wash.  
February 25, Mr. and Mrs. Edgar A. Sisson, Anacortes, Wash.  
February 26, Mrs. Mary J. Byles, Bellingham, Wash.

- February 28, John J. Donovan, Bellingham, Wash.  
February 29, William M. Urquhart, Chehalis, Wash.  
March 1, E. G. White, Enumelaw, Wash.  
March 2, James Contois, Toledo, Wash.  
March 3, Charles Layton, Toledo, Wash.  
March 4, Michael Caraher, Seattle.  
March 6, Henry Clay Temple, Morton, Wash.  
March 7, Mr. and Mrs. Jacob Hunsaker, Everett, Wash.  
March 8, J. A. Ulsh, Glenoma, Wash.  
March 9, Mr. and Mrs. Terrance O'Brien, Seattle.  
March 10, Mrs. Mary Low Sinclair, Snohomish, Wash.  
March 11, Mr. and Mrs. John W. Denny, Seattle.  
March 13, Rev. John B. Boulet, Ferndale, Wash.  
March 14, E. D. Phelps, Seattle.  
March 15, James A. Smith, Port Townsend, Wash.  
March 16, Mr. and Mrs. William M. Coffman, Seattle.  
March 17, Mrs. Matilda Jane Sager Delaney, Eugene, Or.  
March 18, Mr. and Mrs. C. G. Austin, Seattle.  
March 20, John Miller Murphy, Olympia, Wash.  
March 21, George R. Wilson, Bothell, Wash.  
March 22, Mr. and Mrs. David Longmire, Wenas, Wash.  
March 23, John L. Reid, Seattle.  
March 24, Mr. and Mrs. Frank T. Balch, Sequim, Wash.  
March 25, M. F. Jones, Seattle.  
March 27, Washington Pierce Frazier, Olympia, Wash.  
March 28, O. S. Jones, Seattle.  
March 29, Gen. and Mrs. George W. Tibbetts, Issaquah, Wash.  
March 30, Mrs. Clara White Dunbar, Olympia, Wash.  
March 31, Mr. and Mrs. John E. Longfellow, Seattle.

## NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS

---

[The aim of this department is to furnish outlines that will aid those who wish to study the subject systematically. It is expected that its greatest use will be as a guide for members of women's clubs, literary societies, and classes in colleges or high schools. It will be a form of university extension without the theses and examinations necessary for the earning of credits toward a degree.]

---

### XVIII. The Civil War Decade

1. The San Juan Case.
  - a. Americans settle on the islands.
  - b. Opposition by the Hudson's Bay Company.
  - c. Landing of American troops.
  - d. War with Great Britain threatened.
  - e. Arbitration.
2. Work for the Sanitary Commission.
  - a. Washington Territory's record.
  - b. Greatest in the Union per capita.
3. First Washington Territory Volunteer Infantry.
  - a. Mustered in by Col. Justus Steinberger.
  - b. By order of the U. S. War Department, Oct. 18, 1861.
  - c. Recruited in California and Washington.
  - d. Served on the Pacific Coast until 1866.
4. Washington's War Governor.
  - a. William Pickering.
  - b. Appointed by Abraham Lincoln.
  - c. Served from 1862 to 1866.
5. Union League of America.
  - a. United the settlers politically.
  - b. Supported the Union cause.
6. Turgid Eloquence of the Period.
  - a. Notable speech by Albert Pingree.
7. Government Townsites.
  - a. Act of Congress, March 3, 1863.
  - b. Work of Collector Victor Smith.
  - c. Port Angeles only townsite under that law.



8. The Mercer Girls Expeditions.
  - a. Agitation for women by Editor Charles Prosch.
  - b. Expeditions organized by Asa Mercer.
  - c. Arrival of the two companies.
9. Confederate Cruiser Shenandoah.
  - a. Operations in the Pacific Ocean.
  - b. Thirty-eight vessels and cargoes captured.
  - c. Cruelty of the commander.
  - d. Fear in Pacific Coast cities.
10. Purchase of Alaska.
  - a. Memorial of the Washington legislature, Jan. 13, 1866.
  - b. Activity of Secretary William H. Seward.
  - c. Treaty concluded on March 30, 1867.
  - d. Russian Minister Edouard de Stoeckl.
  - e. Price paid \$7,200,000.
  - f. Seward's visit to Alaska.

---

BIBLIOGRAPHY.—Government reports and newspapers would be most helpful in studies along this outline. Some of them are cited but a larger part of the references are to works more easily and more widely accessible.

BAGLEY, CLARENCE B.—“The Mercer Immigration:” Two Cargoes of Maidens for the Sound Country. The Quarterly of the Oregon Historical Society, Volume V, number 1, pages 1-24. This article published in March, 1904, is based upon documents and carries conviction as to its accuracy.

BANCROFT, HUBERT HOWE.—Works of, Volume XXXI (History of Washington, Idaho and Montana). Chapters VI to VIII deal with this period of the Territory's history.

BRADLEY, CAPTAIN THOMAS H.—O'Toole's Mallet. This pamphlet contains a history of the “Second National City,” meaning the Federal townsite of Port Angeles. The national capital city is the first national city. Captain W. D. O'Toole, as Register of the United States Land Office at Seattle, sold the old townsite at auction under orders of the Government in January 1894, which suggested the title of the pamphlet.

ENGLE, MRS. FLORA A. P.—The Story of the Mercer Expeditions. The Washington Historical Quarterly, Volume VI, pages 225 to 237. This article, published in October, 1915, is by one who was

herself a member of the second expedition. Her recollection was aided by a diary and other documents saved by her.

HANFORD, JUDGE CORNELIUS H.—Boundary Disputes with Our Northern Neighbors, Settled and Unsettled, and San Juan Dispute. The first is the title of an address delivered before the Washington Pioneers, June 7, 1899. The second is the title of an address he gave before the Washington State Teachers' Association on December 28, 1899. Each address were afterwards issued in pamphlet form. They should be in the more important public libraries. It is clear that they would be helpful in the study of the subject here outlined.

HOWE, M. A. DEWOLFE.—The Life and Letters of George Bancroft. Chapter VIII in Volume II deals with the time when Mr. Bancroft was United States Minister at Berlin. Unfortunately, however, there is little light thrown on the diplomat's important work during the San Juan arbitration in which he took part before Emperor William I.

MEANY, EDMOND S.—History of the State of Washington. Chapter XVIII deals with the San Juan dispute and Chapter XXIV with the influences of gold and war. Pages 152 to 154 will be found helpful on the question of the purchase of Alaska.

MEANY, EDMOND S.—Governors of Washington. This little volume, published by the Printing Department of the University of Washington, contains a series of biographies and portraits. The essentials in the life of Washington's war governor may there be found.

MOORE, JOHN BASSETT.—History and Digest of the International Arbitrations to Which the United States Has Been a Party. This important Government publication is in most of the larger libraries. Chapter VII, in Volume I, from pages 196 to 236, deals with the San Juan water boundary. It is one of the best sources on that subject.

OFFICIAL RECORDS OF THE UNION AND CONFEDERATE NAVIES. (Washington, Government Printing Office.. 1896.) Series I. Volume III, contains the full and official record of the Confederate Cruiser Shenandoah.

PICKETT, LASALLE CORBELL (Mrs. General George E.)—Pickett and His Men. A new edition of this work was published by the J. B. Lippincott Company, Philadelphia, 1913. Chapters II and III deal with San Juan. Pickett was in command of the American troops that landed there in 1859.

POST-INTELLIGENCER.—Seward Entitled to All Credit for the Purchase of Alaska. This Seattle newspaper published a long, fully illustrated, article under that title on Sunday, December 30, 1906.

SEWARD, FREDERICK W.—Seward at Washington. This work, edited by the son of the distinguished Secretary of State, contains valuable information about the purchase of Alaska.

STEVENS, GENERAL HAZARD.—The life of Isaac Ingalls Stevens. The San Juan case is here dealt with and citation is especially made to the threatened war with Great Britain, pages 290-295 of Volume II.

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Board of Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
J. N. BOWMAN, Seattle.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	OLIVER H. RICHARDSON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
E. O. S. SCHOLEFIELD, Victoria, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VII., NO. 3

JULY, 1916

ISSUED QUARTERLY

## Contents

JOHN V. CAMPBELL.....	The Sinclair Party—An Emigration Overland Along the Old Hudson Bay Company Route from Manitoba to the Spokane Country in 1854.....	187
C. L. ANDREWS .....	Alaska Under the Russians—Baranof the Builder.....	202
MILES CANNON .....	Fort Hall on the Saptin River....	217
F. A. GOLDER .....	Mining in Alaska Before 1867....	233
DOCUMENTS—Diary Kept by Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar .....		239
BOOK REVIEWS .....		247
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		257
NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS.....		262

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON



# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### THE SINCLAIR PARTY—AN EMIGRATION OVERLAND ALONG THE OLD HUDSON BAY COMPANY ROUTE FROM MANITOBA TO THE SPOKANE COUNTRY IN 1854<sup>1</sup>

Agreeably to your wishes to hear about our trip from Manitoba, I will try and give you as good an account as I can.

In the first place we started on the 5th day of May, 1854, from where Winnipeg now stands. Mr. James Sinclair<sup>2</sup> was the leader of the party and we were all intending to go to California, as we were told that mines were still good and plenty of gold was to be had, if we would dig for it, but not one of the party ever got there except a young man by the name of Wm. Gibson, and he did not remain there but came back to Oregon and settled there.

We were a long time on that trip. We had no wagons, but just two-wheeled carts, and as we did not have many horses to work and draw the carts, we employed oxen; one ox to each cart, and we could not load them very heavily as they were not built to stand hard usage on stony ground.

I do not suppose that we had any more than two thousand pounds as the heaviest load, and we kept on the Hudson's Bay Company's cart road from one trading post to another<sup>3</sup>—quite a round about way—and we had to do so to avoid hostile Indians. The first trading post reached was Fort Ellis on a stream called Beaver River. We

---

<sup>1</sup>This article was collated and prepared by Mr. William S. Lewis, from a series of letters written to him by Mr. John V. Campbell of Lilloett, British Columbia.

<sup>2</sup>James Sinclair was a son of William Sinclair, a chief factor for the H. B. Co. stationed at Edmonton for many years, and who married a daughter of McKay, the Astor party lost with the Tonquin. James Sinclair first came west of the Rocky Mountains in 1841 in charge of the company of settlers sent out to occupy the Cowlitz farms for the H. B. Co. Two of his daughters are yet living, one in Portland, and the other in Rosebury. (T. C. Elliott.)

<sup>3</sup>The route of the Sinclair party was substantially the same as that traveled by Governor Simpson of the H. B. Co. in 1841. See Vol. 1, Narrative of a Journey Around the World, Sir George Simpson.

traveled very slowly, perhaps twenty miles a day at most and more frequently less.

Our next stop was on a stream called Qupelle River, the post was named Qu Pelle; the banks on either side of the stream were very steep and stony; big round boulders. I remember that very well, for I hurt my back very bad; there was no way to fasten a brake on those carts, so we just had to tie a rope around the oxen's horns and hold him back to keep him from running down the hill. I recollect it had been raining, and the boulders were wet and slippery. I was walking along the side of a young steer I had on the cart, and was holding him back, when I slipped and fell and away went the steer down the rest of the way and the cart ran across my back and I had to crawl out of the road for there was another cart coming down and it just grazed my toes.

After everybody else had got to camp, some parties came back and carried me down. After this I was obliged to lie in a cart for a week or ten days before I could do anything. There was a good cart road all the way to the next trading post, Fort Carlton, on the bank of the South Branch of the Saskatchewan River. The fort was stockaded; all around there we saw half-breed buffalo herding with domestic cattle. I think we were about two weeks reaching Fort Carlton from the previous post.

From here we had to cross the river, and make rafts with the carts and to row them and tow as well with boats which were loaned us by the trader at the post. It took us about three days to get another start for the next stream, another branch of the Saskatchewan River that was a long stretch away. We were about three weeks or longer in making that stream, and there we had to cross back to the north bank of the river and to keep out of the way of hostile Indians. We were also obliged to stand guard nights from there on. This last stream was a hard stream to cross, the water was very high with a stiff current. We came very near losing our rafts of carts. Our canoes were very light and we could not tow the rafts across fast enough and were carried a long ways down the river. We happened to land on a long point on the river, and by snubbing the rafts to some trees on the bank, we managed to save the carts, but it was a close shave.

Our canoes were made by a frame of willows tied with ropes and oil cloth stretched over the frames. These could carry four or five persons. It took us all of a week to get a start from there. We had

a great deal of trouble to get our carts out from that high point. We had to make two rafts of our carts as we had quite a lot of them.

After getting started again we kept on the north side of the river all the way to the next trading post, called Fort Pitt. Here we were in the heart of the buffalo country. The company kept a great many train dogs; there must have been three hundred fifty or four hundred dogs there at that time; they had plenty to feed them, being in the big game country.

There was one of our party that was bringing three head of sheep along with his cattle, the dogs cleaned them out the first night there, so that Sutherland's flock was no more. At this place we were obliged to stop very near three weeks, as there was a child born to Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Brown, a son who is now living in the Colville Valley. I saw him in the spring of '55 as I had gone up to Colville to visit Mr. Thomas Brown before starting down to the Walla Walla country with Wm. Moar.

After leaving Fort Pitt we still kept on the same side of the river until we came to Fort Edmonton, this was the middle of July. Here one of our party remained, Thomas Hudson, and hired to the Hudson's Bay Company. After leaving Edmonton we traveled upon the north bank of Red River, and kept on for several days, when we forded the stream, which happened to be quite shallow, with a fine gravelly bottom. From here we could see the first sight of the Rocky Mountains. I had forgotten to say that we came on to a band of the Cree Indians; this party of the Crees traveled along with us until we came to Fort Edmonton. We hired the chief of this band of Crees, whose name was Mackipictoon, or broken arm, to act as guide. These Cree Indians were very friendly to our party. They used to accompany some of our party when they went out hunting the buffalo, and kept all the party supplied with fresh meat.

The most of our party were half-breeds, and we could all speak their language fluently. There must have been very near one hundred of these Crees, and they acted as an escort to our party, stood guard at night, and kept with us until we came to a camp of Stony Indians on the little Bow River. We traveled along this stream then until it came out on the open prairie, out of the mountains onto a low bottom and bench land up back of our camp, very open.

I came very near forgetting to tell about the buffalo being very plentiful in the country between Forts Pitt and Edmonton. We frequently went out hunting them and charged them on our fastest horses. Sometimes our horses were too fast and we would outrun the buffalo.



It was very dangerous to get ahead of them, as one could not see the many badger holes on account of the clouds of dust. Your horse was apt to step in one of those holes and fall down and get trampled on by the band of buffalo. One had to take big chances, but as it happened we were very fortunate and nobody ever got thrown down.

The last day that we saw the buffalo was on a Sunday. We were traveling along as usual and we could see a black mass moving towards us. These were the buffalo traveling towards the north and we had to stop and let them by. When they came up to us they separated, some going ahead of our carts and the others behind. We had to stop and let them by, and surround our loose cattle and our horses, as they wanted to follow the band of buffalo. We were obliged to stop and remain at that place over two hours to let them get by us. Just as far as the eye could see, it was nothing but a black mass of them and they were going on a small lope. One cannot think how they came to be gathered as it were into one band and started traveling north. The young men of our party were very eager to take a shot at them, but the old people would not allow that, as it would have been very dangerous to have shot them. They would have stampeded our whole outfit and killed all the women and children.

There was something that I missed telling of; when we were encamped at the Little Bow River we had three head of horses stolen by a hostile band of Blood Indians; they also shot some arrows into some of our cattle. The cattle came running to camp with the arrows still sticking in them; that was how we happened to find out about their being around. Some of our party started right out on some horses that were kept staked out in case something like this happened, but the renegades got away with the three horses. I suppose they could not catch any of the others, so that they only got those three.

At this camp on the little Bow River our party of Crees left us, but we kept the chief to act as guide through the mountains. We also hired two of the Stony Indians as guides over the mountains, as the route had not been traveled over and the trail was full of fallen timber. At this camp we remained another two weeks, as another youngster was born there to Mr. and Mrs. Robert Fleet, but the little one did not live but a few days. We also had to go to work to break up our carts and use the timbers to make pack saddles to pack our baggage on the horses and oxen. As we did not have horses enough to carry all the traps. We were fortunate in getting nails and other necessities at Fort Edmonton to put the saddles together with. We

had to make everything very strong as some of our young steers were very frisky. It was quite a sight to see the young steers with the first saddles on their backs. In using carts, we had collars and breeching and we used these to fasten the packs on to the steers. They were tied fore and aft and around the middle and would still sometimes break them off. It was a grand sight to see their capers and there was not but one or two in the whole outfit that knew anything about packing. We had to stay in camp longer so as to get the young stock broke in to their job, but we had the time of our lives when we started traveling through the timber. In the narrow trail a steer would bump his pack onto a tree and then he would do some bucking to get that pack off; then we would have a time catching him to put the pack onto him again. We had to go very slow to get the stock used to their work.

Some of the women had to ride on the back of the old oxen, as there were not horses enough for them, but these had to be led, as they did not guide very well with just the halter lines. Some days we did not make more than seven or eight miles, as some of the stock were getting footsore. We were the whole of September in getting through the mountains to where we came out on Canal Flats, between the Kootenay River and the head of the South Fork of the Columbia Lakes. About half of our route over across the mountains, one of my horses, the fastest of our buffalo horses, got tired out and we left him for a day, but as one of our guides threatened to go back and take the horse with him, I was requested to go back and shoot the horse, or we would lose our best guide. I had to go back and shoot the horse, but that was something that was hard to do, to kill my old friend. At length our party came out onto the Canal Flats.

The Canal Flats are bounded by the lake on the north side, on the south side by the Kootenay River, on the east by the Rocky Mountains, and on the west by the Selkirk Mountains. It is perhaps two miles across the flats from the base of the Rockies to the base of the Selkirks; from the lake to the Kootenay River the distance is three and a half to four miles. The flats have very open timber on them, and plenty of fine bunch grass. We stayed there two days and then our guides, the Cree chief and the two Stony Indians, left us to go back across the Rocky Mountains to their own country on the east side. There were some Kootenay Indians at Canal Flats and we hired a guide from these to continue on our route from there.

Turning south, we forded the Kootenay River and followed the

base of the Rockies all the way down to Elk River.<sup>4</sup> Forging that stream we kept on south to the Tobacco Plains, a rolling country. There we crossed over to the American side of the international boundary line, which had not been surveyed at that time. (The boundary line was not surveyed until 1858.) We laid over there for another three days, and found a Hudson's Bay trader for the Kootenais by the name of John Linklater, a Scotchman, who had come up on his yearly trip from Fort Colville in the Colville Valley along the Columbia River.

Mr. Linklater's trading post was on the west side of the Kootenay River, and we were traveling down the east side. Mr. Linklater was the first white person we saw after leaving Fort Edmonton on the Saskatchewan River.

He was very happy to see some white people there. At that time he was all alone in that country; there was not another white person nearer than three or four hundred miles to his station. He came across to our camp from the other side of the river by fording it. We had not all got done unpacking our animals when he came over. He was so glad to hear that there were some white people on the other side of the river that he did not take time to saddle his horse, but jumped on it and rode over bareback to see us. While he was in our camp and all were eager to see him there was very near an accident. Mr. Sinclair's mount took fright at something and started to run around among the other animals; the saddle got loose and under his body. There was a Colt's revolver in the holster, tied on the saddle, that somehow started to shoot, and it was fortunate that none was hit. All the party had not reached camp. We traveled very slowly as our animals were very tender footed and it took some of the party a long time to get into camp. There were a lot of Kootenay Indians standing around also and wondering what kind of a gun that was that could shoot so often, they having never seen one of these six shooters before that time. It was a sight to see them standing around open mouthed when they saw the pistol and Mr. Linkhalter showed them how it was handled.

At that time the only kind of guns that they used or ever saw were those flint lock guns.

After starting away from the Tobacco Plains we followed the Kootenay River on the east side; the river was running more towards

---

<sup>4</sup>The route of the Sinclair party down the Kootenai River and to the Spokane Country followed the general course of the canoe route traveled by David Thompson on his trips to the Columbia River country, 1809. This became the regular route between the fur trading posts at Spokane and Fort Colville and those on the Kootenai.

the west. We traveled south for a week until we came to the big bend of the Kootenay River, where it turned about due west towards Flat Bow Lake. When we struck the bend of the Kootenay, we crossed over the Kootenay again and traveled down on the west side to the Flat Bow country, about four days more. Then we crossed the Kootenay again and left it to go south to the Pend O'Reille Lake. We followed the north bank of the lake west to the Sandpoint, and down along the Pend O'Reille River about forty miles. There we crossed the river in canoes, swimming our horses and stock. We were fortunate in finding some Indians here to help us over.

We were obliged to leave camp on the south bank of the Pend O'Reille in a hurry, as there was not much feed there for our stock. From this camp we traveled south towards the Spokane country, which we made in four days.

Our cattle and horses were getting very tired and footsore by this time, and had to crawl along very slowly. It took us all of October and very near all of November to make out to the Spokane country. All of our party were getting tired also of the trip and were happy to find some white people there, Messrs Owens and Gibson, stockmen. After visiting a few days most all of the party continued on down towards Walla Walla. One family, Mr. Thomas Brown,<sup>5</sup> and his brother, Henry Brown, went up to Colville Valley and took what cattle and horses they wished with them to that country. Mr. John Moar and his family, with myself, remained at the Spokane. The rest of the party kept on the way down to Walla Walla. Mr. Wm. Moar and I stayed to winter the cattle in that country. There was one wagon brought by one of the party and a couple of truck wagons made. The wheels were made by sawing them off of a large pine tree, the wheels were about 7 or 8 inches thick. The axels were of fir and holes were bored and gouged out in the wheels. There was no iron about them at all except the few nails used in making the bed for the wagon. Just two horses were used to draw them and all the dunnage was piled on the wagons and a start made.

I was told that they arrived at Walula the day before Christmas (1854). Mr. Sinclair and his family remained there, so did Mr. Whitford and family; the rest of the party kept on down to Oregon and scattered around the country. There was a gentleman by the

---

<sup>5</sup>Thomas Brown became one of the first white settlers in Stevens County. By an abortive act of the Territorial Legislature, passed January 18th, 1859, he was named as the first Sheriff of the newly created Spokane County, then embracing all the country north of the Snake River and east of the Columbia and Okanogan.



name of Dominqu Pambrumm who had charge of the trading post at Walula at the time, but he resigned and Mr. James Sinclair was employed in his stead.

We did not go towards Colville at all, as that was a long way down on the Columbia and a long way west of our route; we were now about one hundred miles or more from Fort Colville, south. Mr. Angus McDonald was the trader at Fort Colville at that time.

We wintered about eight or nine miles up the Coeur d'Alene River from Antone Le Plant's place. There were also wintering there the same winter of 1854-1855 two Americans that were in the stock business, one was named Frank Owens<sup>6</sup> and the other was called Gibson, but I cannot recall his Christian name; this man had a white woman with him. They also had three other white men with them as hired help, one Arnold King, another James Hole, and the other James Barrit, and an Indian from Oregon named Louis. That winter Owens and Gibson must have had 400 to 500 head of cattle, with some 500 head of horses as well.

There was just one other party who lived on the Spokane with Antone Le Plant, a French Canadian by the name of Camile. I cannot recall his surname. He was married to a sister of Antone Le Plant's wife. There were no other whites or half-breeds resident in that country at that time that I know of.

Antone Le Plant told me of a missionary having been in that country previous to our arrival there, who was stationed at a place called Walker's prairie. I am not certain now, but I think that there were two of the missionaries, Walker and Eells. Walker's prairie is north of the present city of Spokane.

LePlant could not tell me what denomination those missionaries were, they were not Catholics, but I think I heard elsewhere in Oregon that they were Methodists.

I was not ever near the mouth of the Spokane River but once, and I cannot say that I saw any trace of any old buildings having been built there. Antone LePlant once told me that there was an old Hudson Bay trading post at one time near there, but that was after I had been there. Had I known before I went, I might have looked for some traces of the old post, and as near as I can recall the time, I did not suppose that there ever had been a trading post there, for the place was covered with an undergrowth of small bushes, quite

---

<sup>6</sup>Francis B. Owen. He had been driven out of the St. Maries Valley in Montana by the Blackfeet Indians, and was now engaged in cattle raising and trading with the Indians in the Spokane Valley, where he was met by Gov. Stevens' party the previous year (1853), Vol. 1, Pac. Ry. Reports, p. 257.

thick, and did not appear to me as if there ever had been anything like a house there.

But then again I heard that there had been an old trading post some distance up the Little Spokane, on a prairie north of Antone LePlant, where there was another oldtimer by the name of Baptiste Pion; there again I did not see any signs of any old buildings having been built there; this I was told by one Thomas Stanger, who used to live about northwest of where Chewelah now is situated.

Mr. Moar and I went to work cutting logs to build our house to winter in. Mr. Owens and Mr. Gibson let us have their hired men and some work cattle to draw the logs and also helped us to roll the logs up. We were in the house inside of two weeks. We were obliged to work pretty steady to get sheltered, as the weather was getting cold in the last of November. After getting our winter quarters all snug we had to look around for provisions, so we employed two Spokane Indians to accompany Mr. Antone LePlant to Fort Colville, as he was going up there to get some supplies himself, we could not get anything nearer than that place in the line of flour, sugar, tea and other articles we needed.

Mr. LePlant bought what we ordered by him and his own, and brought our two Indians back with him.

We were about 8 miles up along the Coeur d'Alene (Spokane) River, where we wintered. There was quite a camp of the Coeur d'Alene Indians near to us that wintered there, also the Spokane Indians were down about 10 miles, about 3 miles below Anton LePlant's place at the upper falls (Post Falls) of the same river.<sup>7</sup> About all the tribe were wintering there. I believe there were two chiefs there in that camp; Spokane Gary and Big Star. Spokane Gary I was told was taken to Manitoba by the H. B. Company when a young man and kept at school there for several years and was brought back by the H. B. Company again. I saw him a number of times and talked with him; he spoke very good English. The chief at the Coeur d'Alene camp was called Saltese. The rest of that tribe were at the Coeur d'Alene Mission, some 25 or 30 miles further up the country. The Indians were all very quiet and peaceful, we had no trouble with any of them.

The main trails were those used by the H. B. Company in going from one trading post to another; one to the Walla Walla and Col-

---

<sup>7</sup>This camping ground, near Saltese Lake, was the scene of the slaughter of 800 or 900 Indian horses by Col. Wright in Sept., 1853, and was afterwards known as "Horse Slaughter Camp."

ville posts; another to the posts among the Pend O'Reilles and Flat-head Indians in Montana; also to the Kootenai tribe in B. C.

On my first trip up to the Colville Valley from the Spokane Country I started from our winter camp about 8 miles above the little falls (Post Falls) and traveled over the Hudson Bay Company's trail. It took me about three days to reach the first settlers in the valley. These were some of the Finlays; there were three brothers, close neighbors, Patrick, Koostah and Nicholas Finlay. All of them had big families, and some of their descendants with their families were settled in their near neighborhood with the exception of James Finlay and his family who were settled further on up the valley. I think that there were thirteen in that family. The original Finlay, Jacques Finlay, was in charge of the old Spokane post in the early days; I never saw him, as he died before I came to that country. What other settlers there were in the Colville Valley, besides the Finlays, were some Scotchmen, Orkneymen and a few French Canadians that had been employes of the Hudson Bay Company. These were married to some of the descendants of Jacques Finlay and some to the native women of the country.

I think that there were just two settlers in the entire valley that had not been employees of the Hudson Bay Company; one Francois Morrigeaux who was a trapper from the East side of the Rocky Mountains and one Canadian by the name of La Bien. I do not think that there were more than twenty-five or thirty settlers in the entire Colville Valley when I first came to that country in the spring of 1855. When I arrived at the Fort Colville there was quite a stir as the trader, Mr. Angus McDonald, was starting a pack train of 50 or 60 horses down to Fort Hope on the Fraser River for an outfit of goods to supply the Company's store at Colville. The goods brought were mostly dry goods and some groceries and some ammunition,—that is gunpowder and lead for the kind of guns that they used at that time. These guns were mostly old flint lock, muzzle loaders. There was never any flour brought to Colville as the Company had a flour mill at what is called Meyers Falls now. The settlers used to take their wheat to the mill in carts that were made in the valley; there were no wagons in that country at that time. The wheat was ground at the mill for the farmers, but I do not know how much the toll was.

There was quite a trade in furs at that trading post. I did not see much money in the country. A farmer coming to the Fort for his groceries generally paid for them in wheat or flour or other produce. There was not any fruit raised in the country at that time.

On this first trip to Colville I did not make a long stay, but went back down to the Spokane Valley and started with Mr. Moar for the Walla Walla country.

After leaving our winter quarters in the spring of 1855, Mr. Moar with his family and I, with all of our stock traveled Southwest until we struck the old Hudson Bay route, and followed that down to the Snake River. There we crossed the river in canoes, and swam the stock over. We were fortunate in finding Indians there who ferried us over. These were the Palouse Indians. We were fortunate in never having had any trouble with the Indians at any places on the whole route.

After leaving the Snake River, we had to look out for the levellest country to travel in. The country was very hilly and steep and it was hard for our poor stock to pull up those hills with the truck carts. It took us about four days to make the Walla Walla valley. This was a fine place for our poor cattle to have reached it at the end of their journey.

I append a list giving the names of the members of the party; there were none of them old people with the exception of one that was over 60 years of age; the rest of the men were from 20 to 50; most of them in their prime. The women were also mostly young and healthy dames and lasses.

	Total
James Sinclair, age 50, with wife and 7 children	9
John Moar, aged 50, with wife and 4 children	6
Roderich Sutherland, age 40, with wife and 1 child	3
William Rowland, age 50, with wife and daughter	3
James Gibson, age about 65	1
William Gibson, age about 25	1
Miles Burston, age about 55, and wife	2
John Lyons, age about 50 wife and 2 children	4
Philip Bird, age about 50, with wife and 3 children	5
Arthur Bird, age about 40 years	1
Thomas Bird, age about 50 years	1
Charles Bird, age about 20 years	1
George Taylor, age about 35 or 40 years	1
Samuel Norn, age about 50 years	1
Thomas Brown, age about 50 years, with wife, three daughters and infant son born en route	6
Harry Brown, age about 24	1
John V. Campbell, age 22 years	1



Robert Flint, age about 35 years, and wife	2
James Whiteford, age about 55 years, with wife and 2 girls	4
Peter Whiteford, age about 30, with wife and 1 child	3
Frank Whitford, age about 25	1
Andrew Whitford, age about 18	1
Donald Whitford, age about 15	1
John Childe, age about 15	1
Thomas Hudson, age about 55 years	1
Old Daniel, age about 60 years	1
Margaret Campbell, a single woman, age about 25	1
Margaret Rowland, a maiden lady, age about 40	1
Total	65

After our arrival in the Walla Walla country, I remained with Mr. Sinclair working at the Hudson's Bay Company's post and looking after the cattle. Mr. Moar stayed some time in the valley before going down to Oregon. He did not go further down than the Dalles, Oregon. I stayed on tending the stock along with another of our party that came with us from Manitoba, George Taylor.

We stayed there until the Indians commenced to get troublesome in 1856 and 1857, when everybody had to leave for the lower country.

The white people all had to go to Oregon. There was one day that Taylor and I were driving a lot of cattle into the corral to brand them. We met a party of young bloods who got to shooting some of our cattle. We thought it was about time to quit, so we went and reported to Mr. Sinclair, who told us we had better leave the stock go. Taylor left in a few days for the Nez Perce Country, as those Indians were still friendly.

A few days later I gathered up what horses Mr. Sinclair had and what I owned and started for the Colville Valley with them—in all about twenty head. On my way up the country on the Nez Perce trail I came across some Indians; one of these sold me a mare that was not his own. This was at a creek called Tuccunon. Continuing on I came to the Red Wolf's crossing on the Snake River. Here I came on another Indian who claimed the horse I had bought at the last camp on the Tuccunon. There was a pretty hostile camp of Palouses here. They claimed that I had stolen the animal, but it so happened that I had some half breeds with me that were also on their way to Colville, and who told the chief of this camp that I

---

<sup>s</sup>So called from the Nez Perce Chief, Red Wolf, whose camping ground was in the vicinity.

was a brother-in-law to Mr. Sinclair, the trader at Walla Walla. The chief then let me keep the horse and gave me a guide to take me as far as Spokane, so I was safe once more.

There had been a fight before this in the Yakima country and the Indian Agent, Bolon,<sup>9</sup> had been killed. There was one Indian in this camp who had a brother killed at that fight, and there was a pretty hostile lot of Indians in this camp of Palouses.

Arriving at the Colville Valley, I remained there until the fall of 1858, when I was hired by Mr. Angus McDonald to go up to the Tobacco Plains to be assistant trader to Mr. John Linklater. The following March (1859) I went back to Colville, thence down to Walla Walla, and from there to Oregon. A nephew of Mr. Sinclair, one William Sinclair, took the horses that I brought up and sold them after Mr. James Sinclair was killed at the Cascades at the time of the war.<sup>10</sup>

The Hudson Bay Company had quite a number of employees at Fort Colville; there were two clerks, William Sinclair, previously mentioned, and one Henry Shuttleworth, with Mr. Angus McDonald, the Chief Trader. There must have been about twenty men employed about the post in addition to the two clerks.

I was with the Kootenais, just north across the International Boundary line. We had some twenty-five or thirty pack animals loaded with blankets and some dry goods and a few guns and ammunition. There had to be some flints taken up for the guns, as they were all flint locks. There were no percussion locks in the country in those days. When a man used up his flint on his gun when out hunting, he could take a piece of white quartz and break it to fit his gun and go on shooting, provided his hammer and steel were so he could raise fire enough to ignite the powder. Those flint lock guns cost the Indians ten full grown beaver skins taken in their prime; that would be those caught in the late fall or winter and early spring. A skin was rated at about two and a half dollars, so that the guns cost the Indians about twenty-five or thirty dollars. Everything went by skins. A full grown beaver was a skin, or a large dark marten or a large fisher was two skins. Blankets that had three points or bars were three skins. Thirty charges of powder, thirty bullets and a

---

<sup>9</sup>A. J. Bolon, special agent for the Yakimas. He left the Dalles and went to the Yakima camp to investigate the Indian murders of the summer of 1855, and returning was shot by the Indians from behind, dragged from his horse, scalped and his body partly burned. See Bancroft's *History of Washington, Idaho and Montana*, p. 109, p. 119.

<sup>10</sup>In the attack on the Dalles by the Yakima or Klickitat Indians on March 26th, 1858, the settlers took refuge in Bradford's store; a chance shot through the open door killed James Sinclair, who was then at the Dalles. See Bancroft's *History of Washington, Idaho and Montana*, p. 146.

flint were one skin. All the lead came in the shape of bullets; it took 25 to make a pound. Three pounds of sugar was counted a skin.

After leaving Oregon, I again went to Colville and hired to the Hudson Bay Company and remained there for several years.

I was born at Fort Dumorgan, in the Peace River Country. My father was a Scotchman from Perth, Scotland; my mother a half breed, half French and half Indian, her maiden name was Elizabeth McGilvray of Peace River, Canada. I was raised on the Peace River about two miles below Upper Fort Garry of the Hudson Bay company, Manitoba, Canada, and lived there until I started for the West in 1854.

In 1856 when I went to Colville, a family by the name of Whiteford accompanied me; when I passed by the old Whitman station everything was in ashes, a party of hostiles having looted and burned the place. During the summer of 1857 I worked for some of the settlers in the Colville Valley. When I went back to the Dalles, in 1857, I carried down some mail for Mr. John Owens, who was then Indian Agent for the Flatheads Agency in Montana, and who had come to Colville and who could not get down to Oregon, as the Indians were still hostile in the Walla Walla valley. He hired a half breed by the name of George Martins, who accompanied me down to the Dalles.

In 1859 when I left Colville I continued down to Oregon City and visited my sister there, Mrs. James Sinclair. In the fall of 1859 when I returned to Colville I went to work on the Boundary line survey in the Kootenay Country; we worked summers and wintered at Colville. In the spring of 1860 I bought a small place and went to farming. I took a half breed woman for a wife named Louisa Burland. I remained on this farm for two years, when I was again hired by the Hudson Bay Company to go among the Kootenai Indians in the Tobacco Plains. I had two boys by my wife, but they are both dead.

I accompanied Major Logenbeet's (?) command from Walla Walla when the U. S. Government started to build the Fort at Colville. I think that there were two companies of soldiers that went up there at that time. The Indians did not like to see them coming into the Colville Valley, but they cooled down when the Major told them that he meant to stay and that he meant to see that they kept straight. At that time the town was started building on the opposite side of the creek from where the garrison were building the fort; I think that the little town was named Pinckney City. There were

three stores and one hotel, there was also a brewery owned by two partners, one named Shaw and the other named Hostitor, and several saloons. There was a saw mill further up the valley built and owned by one Douglas. The mill had been built the year previous to the erection of the post and the town, and lumber for both were procured there. Mr. Douglas about that time built a flour mill near his saw mill and this mill was the second grist mill in the country; the Hudson Bay Company had built the first mill at what is now called Meyer's Falls, South of their trading post, about 5 or 6 miles.

I did not attend the Catholic Church myself, but the English or Episcopal Church; but there was not any other church but the Catholic Church in that country at that time.

I never saw but one of the Herons, George Heron, a descendant of one of the old pioneer fur traders. I did not ever remain long in one place. I was pretty much like a rolling stone, and was very fond of hunting and fishing and trapping.

It is a hard matter to recall all the happenings and I have no doubt I will recall some other things after this reaches you. My sight is getting very dim now and I cannot keep to the lines. Getting old, you know. I am 88 years of age now and do not use glasses.

JOHN V. CAMPBELL.



## ALASKA UNDER THE RUSSIANS—BARANOF THE BUILDER

When Baranof, the Builder of Russian America, laid down the management of the Russian American Company in 1818 the dominion of the Czar in North America was at its greatest breadth. Its outposts were from St. Michael to Ross in California; from Sitka to Attu Island. For nearly 30 years he had been extending the limits of the possessions of his Imperial Master; enduring shipwrecks; fighting the wild tribes and reducing them to subjection; planting new posts; suppressing the sedition of the priests and the insubordination of his naval officers; his had been a busy life.

The popular picture of Baranof has been that of an iron handed tyrant; a drinking despot who plied his subordinates with rum and then punished their familiarities with the knout. The real man as shown in his letters and the writings of those who knew him best is a very different character.

We find him at Unalaska, shipwrecked at the beginning of the winter of 1791 and on an island; where the government expeditions

---

\*In the preparation of this article I have drawn chiefly from the following sources:

Khlebnikof, K., in *Zhizneopisanie Aleksandra Andreevicha Baranova*, [Biography of Alexander Andreevich Baranof.] St. Petersburg, 1835. There is a copy in the Governor's office at Sitka, and one in the Bancroft Library at the University of California. Khlebnikof was the chief of the countinghouse at Sitka under the Chief Managers following Baranof, remaining until about 1832. On the "Blarney Stone" at Sitka, are his initials, "K. KH. 1832."

Tikhmenef, P., *Istoricheskoe Obozrenie Obrazovanie Rossiisko Amerikanskoe Kompanii* [Historical Review of the Organization of the Russian American Company.] St. Petersburg, 2 vols. Vol. I, 1861; vol. II, 1863. In Governor's office and in Bancroft Library.

**Materiali dlya Isotrii Russkikh Zaselenii po beregam vostochnavo okeana.** [Materials for the History of the Russian Settlements on the Shores of the Eastern Ocean.] St. Petersburg, 1861. In 4 parts. The 1st part is by V. M. Golovnin; the 2d part by Captain-Lieutenant Golovin; the 3d part by K. Khlebnikof; the 4th part consists of extracts from the writings of Golovnin, Khlebnikof, Lutke, Lazaref and others. In Governor's office and in Bancroft Library. V. M. Golovnin was an officer of the Russian navy who came to Sitka in the sloop Diana, the first Russian ship of war to visit the colonies, in 1810. He returned in 1817 in the sloop Kamchatka. A copy of the voyage of 1815-'19 is in library of the University of Washington at Seattle. Captain Golovin, a naval officer, was sent in 1861 to make a report on the condition of the colonies. More complete description of the **Materiali** will be found in Bancroft, **History of Alaska**, pp. 515-16.

Davidof, Gavril A., **Dvuknoe putashestvie v' Ameriku Morskikh Ofitserov Khvostova i Davidova, pisannoe sim poslednim** [Two Voyages in America by Naval Officers Khvostof and Davidof, written by the latter.] St. Petersburg, 1810. In two parts. In Bancroft Library.

Markof, A., **Russkie na Vostochnom Okean Puteshestvie Al. Markova** [Russians on the Eastern Ocean Voyage of Al. Markof.] St. Petersburg, 1856. In Bancroft Library.

Veniaminof [Bishop John.] **Zapiski ob Ostrovakh Onalaskinskago Otdiela** [Letters Concerning the Islands of the Unalaska District.] St. Petersburg, 1840, 2 vols. In Bancroft Library. The same is found in another edition in the library of the University of Washington, at Seattle.

preceding him, with all the stores of their ship at command, suffered and died with the scurvy; living with his crew on the animals they killed, boiling salt from the sea for use, he passed the winter without the loss of a life. Building boats, from the skins of the sea lions they killed, he made his way to Three Saints on Kodiak, 500 miles by sea, to take up the management of the colony placed there by Shelikof.<sup>1</sup> Hardly had he received the goods of the post until he passed on in a skin bidar to the Prince William Sound, the Chugach Gulf of the Russians, thence to the Cook Inlet, called by them the Kenai Gulf, to see his outposts, then back to Kodiak Island<sup>2</sup>; there he at once arranged to transfer his main office to St. Paul's harbor.<sup>3</sup>

He was short of every kind of supplies, his ship was wrecked and a total loss; he had to leave men to salve the wreckage; his provisions were lost, his trading goods were expended. He chose a place on Voskressenski Harbor, near the present town of Seward, to build a ship to replace the one lost at Unalaska. The iron and anchors, the cordage and sails must be brought across Siberia,<sup>4</sup> twice as far as from New York to Seattle, then shipped 3,000 miles across the Pacific Ocean.

The sea otter grounds of the Aleutian Islands had been swept clean of the fur that was the life of his business. The bays of Kamishak and Kenai and the Chugach Gulf were failing fast under the competition, of the Lebedef-Lastochkin Company who fought with Baranof's men and robbed them, and of the trade of the English who had for five or more years been frequenting those waters. He sent Purtof down the coast to the eastward to find new hunting

<sup>1</sup>K. Khlebnikof, *Zhizneopisanie Alizandrova A. Baranova* [Life of Alexander A. Baranof], St. Petersburg, 1853, p. 8. Alexander Andreovich Baranof was born at Kargopol, Russia, in either 1746 or 1747. Bancroft, *History of Alaska*, p. 315, gives the year as 1747; Khlebnikof does not specify a date in his life of Baranof, but "72 lyetnii staretz" is said of him in 1818, indicating that he was 72 years old at that time. The encyclopedias give 1746 as the date of his birth.

<sup>2</sup>The first census taken of Alaska was by Baranof in the winter of 1795-96, which showed a native population of 6,206 on Kodiak Island.—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 33.

<sup>3</sup>Baranof to Shelikof, in Tikhmenef, *Istoricheskoe Obozranie Rossiiskoe Amerikanskoe Kompanii* [Historical Review of the Origin of the Russian American Company.] St. Petersburg, 1861-63, II, App., 42. "I myself departed in a bidar on the 7th of May, at Chiniak I made arrangements for the building of a harbor and gave orders that when the fort erected upon the harbor was completed it should be named Pavlovsky, in honor of the Prince Imperial."—*Ibid*, p. 35.

<sup>4</sup>Poortof, or Purtof, was sent during 1793 to search for new sea otter grounds to the eastward. With three Russians and 170 bidarkas of Aleuts he went to Yakutat. Baranof says: "I am very much obliged to Purtof, that he discovered this new hunting ground near Cape St. Elias."—Baranof to Shelikof, July 24, 1793, in Tikhmenef, 11, App., 40.

grounds<sup>5</sup> and set himself to the task of assembling the material for a ship.

A builder, the Englishman Shields, came on a ship from Okhotsk, with a meagre supply of materials. He was put to work and the keel was laid for the new vessel. Baranof gathered the iron from the wrecks, he searched for ore in the mountains, found it but could not smelt it; he made turpentine from the trees, and built a sawmill to cut the timber. He mixed his paints for the hull with whale oil, while he colored it with iron rust. He sent men out to search for the native copper of the Copper River, of which the Indians of that country brought pieces to him for trade. He burned bricks to build the Russian stoves in the houses and shipped others to Okhotsk.<sup>6</sup>

In August of 1794 the first ship, the Phoenix, was completed, the first to be built on the west coast of North America, north of Vancouver Island. He sent her to Okhotsk with furs, and set to work to build two small sloops on the little island near St. Paul's Harbor, called Elovai, or Spruce Island, where there is a growth of timber. They were completed and named the "Delphin" and the "Olga," and were but about 40 feet in length, small craft for that stormy ocean.<sup>7</sup>

A settlement was to be made at Yakutat Bay, for which 30 families of settlers had been sent by Shelikof, intended for agriculture. They were quarrelsome and undisciplined; felt they were going to the end of the earth, and were rebellious thereat. They were sent in a boat commanded by a Lieutenant of the Imperial Navy who had been assigned to serve in the colony.<sup>8</sup> The Lieutenant believed his dignity was lowered by taking orders from a mere trader so he sailed away to Nuchek and stayed there. A week later Baranof went to Yakutat in the "Olga" and found the settlers had not arrived. Weeks passed and no settlers, Baranof sailed to Sitka, passed in

---

<sup>5</sup>"I believe never has a ship been built under such difficulties as ours. To preserve the hull during the winter I had to contrive some kind of paint and finally made up a mixture of spruce tar, whale oil, and iron rust, which seemed to have considerable consistency, and with this the whole vessel was painted and impregnated.... Old pieces of iron from wrecks and broken up vessels had to be worked up into bolts and other articles necessary for the construction of the vessel and there were only two blacksmiths to do it. Though I did what I could to keep the laborers constantly employed, it could not always be done during the winter and then they would put their heads together for conspiracies, and come to me with complaints, crying for better provision. They were dissatisfied with the continual diet of youkali [dried salmon] of which they received 2 pounds per day each, whether working or idle."—Baranof to Shelikof, May 20, 1795, in Tikhmenev, II, App., 82.

<sup>6</sup>Ibid, p. 93.

<sup>7</sup>Zhizneopisanie, p. 25.

<sup>8</sup>Zhizneopisanie, p. 29.

through the strait at the north he named Olga Strait<sup>9</sup> after his boat, anchored in a bay where he placed a cross and called it *Krestof Zaliva*, or Cross Bay, that still bears his name, then he crossed the six hundred miles of the gulf of Alaska to the post at Nuchek to find that his missing ship had been there, ostensibly to get water, and had then sailed back to Kodiak Island.<sup>10</sup>

Arriving at St. Paul's Harbor, he found that the priests and the insubordinate lieutenants had been sowing sedition and making the hunters and natives dissatisfied with their food, their pay, their houses, and attempting to undermine his authority. The hunters were not going out for sea otter the next year, the priests were not going to live on the *Yukali*, or dried fish, the Lieutenant had been knouting the natives to show he was the man in command and that they must obey him. His letters say he quelled the incipient mutiny "perhaps at the risk of my life," he writes to Shelikof. He sent the most unruly to distant stations and kept the rest under control for the winter. The situation was so unpleasant that he writes to Shelikof in the same letter: "Old age is approaching, my constitution cannot bear up much longer, at night I must use a glass to read and write, and my cheerful spirit is on the wane. I feel it is beyond my power to fulfil and attend in person to all the important duties imposed on me. Besides this I hear that you take heed of every breath of calumny and slander that reaches you against me. \* \* I should not be judged by hearsay only. \* \* If long and faithful services have not gained me your confidence it is better that they should be at once severed."<sup>11</sup>

To the southeast coast he also sent a ship under Shields to reconnoitre the grounds for the sea otter, for that was the life of the colony. His own observations at Sitka told him that he must go to that region for a new station. Shields went to Bucarelli Bay and thence up the coast noting the bays and gathering skins to the number of 2,000.<sup>12</sup>

The next year, the summer of 1796, he placed the colony at Yakutat, building barracks and storehouses; left hunters and settlers with their children to number of 20 persons; and named the colony

---

<sup>9</sup>K. Khlebnikof, in *Materiali dlya Istoria Russkikh Zaseleni po beregam vostochnavo okeana* [Materials for the History of the Russian Settlements on the Shores of the Eastern Ocean.] St. Petersburg, 1861, part iv, p. 41.

<sup>10</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 25.

<sup>11</sup>Baranof to Shelikof, in Tikhmenef, II, App., 77.

<sup>12</sup>Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, etc., part iv, p. 42.



New Russia.<sup>13</sup> On the return voyage the ship "Three Saints" was wrecked at Kamishak Bay.<sup>14</sup>

Three years later with two vessels and 550 bidarkas of Aleut hunters he made his way to Sitka and buying of Chief Skay-cut-let a site for his settlement he built storehouses, barracks, and other houses, surrounding the whole with a stockade, protected by block-houses on the angles. The lieutenant commanding one of his vessels not liking the work of building forts, sailed away with all the furs gathered during the summer, went to Yakutat and took on board the agent of that settlement, went to Nuchek and loaded the finest furs that Kuskof had gathered, then lost his ship on Sukli (Montague) Island as he went to sea. Polomoshnoi, the Yakutat agent, and five men were drowned. Doubtless Baranof would have been gratified if the lieutenant, Talin, had also been drowned; his letters do not so mention; but he mourns the loss of 22,000 rubles of his finest furs.<sup>15</sup>

The winter was a trying one, for the provisions were poor and scanty. Sea lion and seal meat was the fare for most of the time. Of these they killed 45 sea lions and 250 seals. It was a stormy season and rain fell almost incessantly. Scurvy attacked the men and some died, but with spring and the herring run the rest grew better and no more deaths occurred.<sup>16</sup>

With the coming of summer he sailed in the *Olga* to Kodiak, where he first learned of the loss of the "Orel" under command of Talin, and of the loss of the furs. He left Medvednikof in charge at Sitka, at the station which he speaks of as "we intended to call the new fort Novo Arkangelsk, but on the request of the men it was placed under the special protection of the Archistrategos St. Michael."<sup>17</sup>

At Kodiak he heard that the coast was strewn with the wreckage of a ship. Various articles were cast up by the sea and finally a capstan was found that was identified as that belonging to the "Phoenix" and then they knew that their long expected supply ship was lost, and with all on board.<sup>18</sup> There would be nothing with

<sup>13</sup>Tikhmenef, I, p. 54; *Zhizneopisanie*, p. 42.

<sup>14</sup>During the winter of 1797-98 he fell from a ladder and injured his leg so that he was confined to his bed for three months. Just as he was able to be up, the girl who was keeping his house came in the room with a samovar of hot water, stumbled, and spilled the water on his sore limb, scalding it so badly that he was again bedridden for a month.—Baranof to Larinof, agent at Unalaska, in Tikhmenef, II, App., 119.

<sup>15</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 49.

<sup>16</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 51; Tikhmenef, II, 130-132.

<sup>17</sup>Baranof to Rodionof, agent at Nuchek, May 14, 1800, in Tikhmenef, II, App., 130. "The fort was consecrated under the name of St. Archangel Michael."—Tikhmenef, I, 83.

<sup>18</sup>Baranof to Larionof, in Tikhmenef, II, App., 156.

which to pay his hunters for another year. But furs must be had. He sent out men to hunt sea birds with bright plumage and had the Aleut women to make gay parkas and other articles and when the summer came he paid his hunters in those articles, with the addition of what few stores he had remaining from the old stock. The next year there came to St. Paul's the American ship *Enterprise*, with a cargo of trading goods, and, with furs, they were purchased,<sup>19</sup> and this carried them through another winter.

In May Councillor Banner arrived in a bidarka from Unalaska, having come 500 miles to bring the messages that a charter had been granted by the Russian government to the Russian American Company, that Baranof had been made a stockholder, had been raised to the rank of a nobleman and would be permitted to wear the gold medal of the order of St. Vladimir. Baranof was so rejoiced over the good tidings that he at once donated the sum of 1,000 rubles for the establishment of a school for the children of the Russians and the islanders.

By this message he also learned of the war in Europe and at once secreted his furs, fearing a raid from some vessel of the enemy. On the 21st of June the *Ekaterina* was despatched to Yakutat and Sitka with reenforcements and supplies,<sup>20</sup> but it was too late in sailing, for Sitka had already fallen before the attack of the Kolosh (Thlingit) warriors.<sup>21</sup>

On the 24th of June came from Sitka the English ship "Unicorn," commanded by Captain Barber, who had on board the survivors of the massacre of the post of Archistrategos St. Michael. He brought 3 Russians, 2 Aleuts, and 18 Kadyak women, rescued from the garrison left at Old Sitka. He claimed that he had bought the captives at a great expense of goods and time and asked the sum of 50,000 rubles as a ransom.

Baranof was at Afognak when Barber arrived but returned as soon as the news reached him. He found from the stories of the survivors that not only was nothing paid for the release, but that Barber secured most of the sea-otter at the post of which there were over 2,000 in the fur warehouses.<sup>22</sup> He finally paid 10,000

---

<sup>19</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 62.

<sup>20</sup>*Ibid*, p. 66.

<sup>21</sup>"The Kolosh call themselves *Thlinkit*, adding to it *An-ton-kou-an*, i. e., people from everywhere, or people from all villages. But from where they receive the name of *Kolosh*, or *Kollozhel*, is not known."—Veniaminof. *Zapiski*, etc., part iii, p. 28.

<sup>22</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 69; *Tikhmenef*, part i, p. 86.

rubles for the freedom of his people, and in addition bought guns and goods to the amount of 27,000 rubles.

This was a hard blow, the loss in men and munitions, in hunters and furs, could not be estimated, and the colony was not in position to endure losses. The situation was most unpromising, but with the magnitude of the difficulties his courage rose to meet them. The post must be reestablished in order to keep the prestige of the company and of the Russian people.

Fortune was now changing for Baranof. Banner had been sent to Unalaska in the sloop "Olga" to secure some supplies and returned safely. From Okhotsk came the brig "Alexander," the first supply ship for five long years, arriving the 13th of September, and on November 1st the brig "Elizabeth" dropped anchor in the harbor under command of Khvostof, a skillful lieutenant of the Royal navy. On these last two boats were more than 120 men, hunters and craftsmen, and supplies of all kinds for the stores. Orders came from the head office of the Company appointing Baranof as Chief Manager of the American Colonies. "*Glavnavo Pravtielya kolonii v' Ameriky.*"<sup>23</sup>

With the coming of Spring in 1803 all was bustle and stir at the harbor of St. Paul; Banner was despatched to Unalaska with orders to send a ship to the Seal Islands to take seals, for these islands and the Unalaska station were now under the control of Baranof for the first time; Khvostoff was ordered to Okhotsk with a cargo of fur valued at more than a million rubles; Baranof went to Yakutat in the "Olga" and thence to Sitka to inspect the ruined post.<sup>24</sup> Plans were made for the reinstatement of the Russian rule on the islands in the coming year. Kuskof was instructed to build two small boats at Yakutat to use on the expedition, and Baranof returned to Kodiak to complete his arrangements, and assemble his forces.<sup>25</sup>

At Kodiak was Captain O'Keen, of the American ship "Boston," who asked for a fleet of bidarkas and the Aleuts to man them, for a sea otter hunting voyage along the coast of California, offering

---

<sup>23</sup>By this boat he also received the duplicate bills of lading for the ship Phoenix lost in 1799, and learned that on board the ship was Archimandrite Joassaf, who had gone to Moscow to be ordained a bishop and was returning to the colony. The boat was under command of the ship-builder Shields, who was lost with the rest of the passengers and crew.

<sup>24</sup>The only passage that I have found in the Russian histories of Alaska that would justify considering the Thlingit people as being head-hunters is that which says: "There they found the mutilated bodies of their companions without heads; they wept over their remains, and hid them in the bosom of the earth."—Khlebnikov, *Materiali*, part iv, page 49.

<sup>25</sup>*Zhizhenopisanie*, pp. 74.75.

half of the proceeds for the share of the Company. Baranof accepted and gave him 20 bidarkas and the men under charge of a trusted employe named Shoetzof. The ship left October 26th, sailed to San Diego Bay, California, then to San Quentin in Lower California, secured 1,100 sea otter skins and returned in March.<sup>26</sup>

In April of 1804 Baranof gathered his forces, despatched 300 bidarkas with over 800 Aleuts under command of Demianenkof, while he sailed with the "Ekaterina" and the "Alexander" for Yakutat on the 4th of the month. At Yakutat Kuskof had ready the two boats ordered the previous year and they were named the "Ermak" and the "Rostislaf." The boats sailed down the coast toward Sitka, Baranof going in at Ledianof (Cross) Sound and hunting with the Aleuts in the passages among the islands, as far as Lynn Canal and then passing down Chatham Strait and through Peril Strait, called *Pogibshie*<sup>27</sup> by the Russians, securing 1,500 sea otter.

In the harbor at Sitka was the ship "Neva" under command of Lieutenant Lisianski, the first Russian vessel to circumnavigate the world.<sup>28</sup> She had come from Kronstad with a cargo of anchors, cables, guns, provisions, etc., for the use of the colony. Upon reaching Kodiak Captain Lisianski received a message from Baranof asking his assistance in the recapture of the post and he at once proceeded to the harbor.

On the Kekoar, or Katlean's Rock, as the Baranof Hill was called by the Russians, were the homes of the chiefs of the Sitka Kwan, Ska-yout-lelt, Ska-at-a-gech, and Ko-yough-kan, and on the top was a redoubt. Around the hill was the village. The inhabitants abandoned this position and went to the fort at the mouth of Indian River, *Kolosh Reka*, of the Russians,<sup>29</sup> situated in what is now the park where the totems are placed.

The Russian ships were brought into the bay facing the Indian fort and after a siege of several days the defenders abandoned their position and retreated to Hoots-na-hoo where there was another stronghold. In an attack upon the fort Baranof was wounded in the arm and several sailors and Aleuts were killed and wounded.<sup>30</sup> About

<sup>26</sup>From 1803 to 1812 nine boats took 16,071 sea otter along the coast of California and on the way between there and Sitka.—*Zhizneopisanie*, pp. 76-77.

<sup>27</sup>*Pogibshie*, or Destruction Strait, was so named by the Russians on account of the death of over a hundred Aleut hunters during 1799 from eating poisonous mussels while on a hunting trip.—Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iv, page 43; *Zhizneopisanie*, pp. 78-81.

<sup>28</sup>Tikhmenef, part i, p. 94; Lisianski, *Voyage Round the World*.

<sup>29</sup>Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iv, p. 42.

<sup>30</sup>There were 10 killed and 24 wounded.—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 87.



30 Indians were found dead in the enclosure after the retreat.

They began the building of the new fort and the settlement was called Novo Arkangelsk,<sup>31</sup> or New Archangel. A thousand timbers were squared in the forest by the axes, a storehouse for the supplies was first built, then barracks for the men, and a house for the Manager,<sup>32</sup> all surrounded by a stockade of logs. The Neva sailed away to Kodiak for the winter, the Russians cleared away the forest and made the ground into gardens.

On the 10th of June, 1805, the Neva set sail for Kronstad, via Canton, and on board was a cargo of fur, 3,000 sea otter, 150,000 sealskins, and other fur to the value of 450,000 rubles.<sup>33</sup>

On the 26th of August into the port came the brig "Maria" and on board was the Chamberlain of the Czar, N. P. Resanof, delegated by the Company to make a tour of the colonies, and invested with special powers. He shared the hardships and the responsibilities of the situation with Baranof during the winter of 1805-6.

Provisions became short and the Am. Ship "Juno" coming into the port was purchased for 68,000 Spanish piastres. She was then sent to Kodiak for dried salmon, sea lion meat, etc., and she made the voyage and returned on the 13th of November, with provisions and bad tidings. The brig "Elizabeth" was wrecked and most of her cargo lost; six bidars loaded with furs sank and the men and furs went to the bottom of the sea; the fort at Yakutat had been destroyed by the Kolosh; a bidarka fleet under Demianenkof, numbering nearly 200 men, had perished in a storm on the ice bound coast off Mt. St. Elias.<sup>34</sup>

The winter was a miserable one as told in Resanof's letters and reports.<sup>35</sup> "The site of the fort was selected on a large rock, or ke-koor, which forms a peninsula in the bay. \* \* On top of the rock a temporary building has been erected, five fathoms long and three in width, with two rooms and alcoves. In one of the rooms I live and in the other both our ship's captains. \* \* We all live poorly, but worse than all lives the founder of this place, in a mis-

---

<sup>31</sup>"Baranof went ashore and ascended a high rock which was sufficiently level on top for the erection of a building, and there hoisted a flag, thus taking possession of the soil in the name of the Russian Government, and named the place the fort of **Novo Arkangelsk**."—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 83.

<sup>32</sup>The first Baranof Castle.—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 88.

<sup>33</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 89.

<sup>34</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, pp. 99-100.

<sup>35</sup>—Resanof to Directors of the Russian American Company, November 6, 1805, in *Tikhmenev*, II, App., 194 et seq.

erable hut, so damp that the floor is always wet, and during the constant heavy rains the places leaks like a sieve."

On shore every one was busy, a wharf and landing was constructed, ways for the building of ships were laid and the keels were laid for an armed brig and a tender. Resanof continues, "Our cannon are always loaded and not only are sentries with loaded guns posted everywhere, but arms of all kinds constitute the principal furniture of our rooms." "The people employed as hunters are quarrelsome, drunkards, and so vicious that any community must call itself fortunate to have got rid of them." "I can tell you that more than once I have found Mr. Baranof in hot tears because the Bostonian Captain who is wintering here, and my Doctor, found only a drunken republic here when the Emperor, as they know, wished to establish his government here and sent me as a plenipotentiary." "The deeply rooted contempt of the upper classes (Naval Officers) for the commercial classes makes all of them play master here." "It is true the Chief Agent holds rank in the civil service, which he has earned by his distinguished services, but the fact that he formerly was a trader is never lost sight of, and to our country's misfortune that means that he is not far removed from a rogue, and thus to obey him appears a humiliation to them." "His brother sent him from Okhotsk, 9 vedras of French brandy and 3 vedras of table wine, they were drunk up. Mr. Kock sent him upon repeated request in the course of three years, two English watches, they were appropriated by officers and publicly worn, saying they were their own, and that they paid for them, and Mr. Baranof, glad to receive the gold watch sent to him by you, did not care to investigate the matter any farther."<sup>36</sup>

On board the ships under command of the Naval Officers was pandemonium during part of the winter. The best one of the lieutenants in the service, Khvostof, "gets drunk and stays so for 3 months—drinks 9½ vedras of French brandy and 2½ vedras of strong spirits, and get his officers drunk. \* \* their insults and threats are incredible, they shoot off their cannon at night, all labor on the wharf is delayed on account of the drunkenness of the masters and mates." Midshipman Davidof asked to come ashore, "he could better live on the open beach than on the ship." Orders were given to shut off the liquors from the ships and Khvostof laid a plan to capture Baranof and Resanof,<sup>37</sup> but they heard of it and surrounded

---

<sup>36</sup>Ibid, pp. 208-220.

<sup>37</sup>Resanof to Directors, February 15, 1806, in Ibid., pp. 242-250.

the conspirators and disarmed them. When sobered Khvostof came and apologised.<sup>38</sup>

The continuous insults caused Baranof and his chief assistant, Kuskof, to present their resignations to Resanof, but he refused to accept them and ordered them to return to their duties.

In February, 1805, the supply of provisions became low and Resanof went on the "Juno" to California to purchase breadstuffs. On his way he attempted to enter the mouth of the Columbia, with the view of establishing a settlement at that place. This was the year that Lewis and Clarke reached that point.<sup>39</sup>

The tender "Avoss" and the brig "Sitka" were turned off the ways at the shipyard. The main countinghouse was transferred from Kodiak to Sitka. The American ships that were coming along the coasts to trade with the Indians were persuaded that it was to their interest to sell their cargoes at the post for furs rather than to attempt to deal with the natives direct. The insubordinate officers were gradually eliminated from the service.

Sea otter were hunted through the sounds by the brigades of Aleuts under convoy of armed sailing vessels. The summer of 1805 a party under Buikadorof went to Khoontzofsky (Chatham) Strait, and to Kinovsky Bay (Pr. Frederick Sound), securing 1645 skins, but they were continually threatened by the Kolosh, who were still hostile and revengeful. One year a party would go to Cape Ommaney, another year to the Bay of Islands or to the sounds. In 1810 Kuskof took a party to Dundas Island but met so much opposition from the Tsimpisien Indians and an American trader who threatened to join the natives against the Ruissians, that he was forced to return after losing 8 Aleut hunters.<sup>40</sup> He secured 1,400 skins but after this no parties were sent to hunt on the sounds.

Baranof kept looking toward extending his settlements. In 1808 he fitted out the schooner "Nikolai" and the ship "Kadiak" for a hunting trip along the southern coast. Kuskof, with a party of Aleut hunters, was sent with them. The Nikolai was to trade on the Columbia and then return to meet the Kadiak at Gray's Harbor. Somewhere on the harbor she met shipwreck, and the Kadiak after

---

<sup>38</sup>When Lieutenant Khvostof became sober he went to Baranof and apologized. Three Aleuts who had heard Khvostof make threats against the Chief Manager thought that he was going there for the purpose of injuring him, so armed with knives they followed and secreted themselves near to protect him in case of need. After the interview was over they were found where they had laid in wait. Ibid, p. 250.

<sup>39</sup>Resanof to the Minister of Finance, June 17, 1805, in Ibid, p. 254.

<sup>40</sup>Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iii, p. 7.

waiting for her was not able to enter the harbor and sailed to Trinidad, California, then to Bodega Bay, where he spent the winter with his hunters, securing 1,900 sea otter, and returned to Sitka October 4, 1809.<sup>41</sup>

Kuskof's report was so favorable that Baranof at once made preparations for placing a settlement on Bodega Bay which was done by Kuskof in 1812,<sup>42</sup> at the place known thereafter as Ross, near the bay which they renamed Rumiantzof Bay.

The numerous dissensions among the hunters at the port and their unruly conduct ended during 1809 in a conspiracy headed by a man named Naplavkof. This was promptly suppressed by Baranof and the ringleaders sent to Siberia for trial.<sup>43</sup>

Baranof still asked to be relieved and to be allowed to return to see about his family and property in Siberia. In 1811 Collegiate Assessor Koch was appointed as an assistant and to take the management in due course of time. He reached Petropaulovsk, on his way to Sitka, and died at that place.<sup>44</sup> In 1813 on board the "Neva" came round the world Collegiate Councillor Bornovolokof,<sup>45</sup> and at the very entrance of the harbor of Sitka on a stormy February day the ship was wrecked on Cape Edgecomb and the expected successor was among the lost.

Astor sent ships to trade at Sitka and Baranof bought the cargoes and traded him furs in return. He even sent cargoes of fur to Canton on these vessels to be sold on commission.

The Chief Manager was old and tired but as long as he held the reins of power he could not cease planning for new ventures. He bought both vessels and cargoes that came to Sitka. Some of them received their pay in sealskins for which they went to the Seal Islands. They then went to Canton, sold the fur, bought silks, teas, nankins, etc., and went on around the world to Boston.<sup>46</sup>

Far down to the southward is a group of islands at the cross roads of the Pacific that were in those days known as the Sandwich Islands. Toward these Baranof began to look, and in 1815 he sent Dr. Sheffer, a German, as his agent to look over the ground in order to get a foothold if possible. Sheffer acquired plantations on Attuva and built houses, but owing to Americans and English objecting and

---

<sup>41</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 126.

<sup>42</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, pp. 145-46.

<sup>43</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 129.

<sup>44</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 145.

<sup>45</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 149.

<sup>46</sup>Baranof also tried to open trade with Manila, but his efforts were not successful.—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 155.



fomenting trouble it was as Khlebnikof says "begun auspiciously, but ended in a very unhappy manner," and Baranof was compelled to withdraw with a loss of over 200,000 rubles on the part of the Russian American Company.<sup>47</sup>

In July of 1817 the ship "Suvarof" arrived from Russia with supplies for the colonies. Baranof at once began making arrangements for her return trip. November 20th the ship "Kutusof" arrived, having on board a rich cargo of stores, under command of Lieutenant Hagemeister of the Imperial navy. The arrangements for the sailing of the Suvarof were completed, the furs were loaded, and she was ready to clear. Then Hagemeister announced to Baranof that he was commissioned to relieve him as chief manager of the Company, and held the "Suvarof" for three days, until January 14th, to prepare his despatches to the office in St. Petersburg.<sup>48</sup>

The officers of the Russian navy had at last succeeded in supplanting the man who had built the Russian dominion in America. They despised his profession, and him as a merchant, but they were willing to accept his position for a consideration, whether they were able to conduct the business or would fail.

Baranof, with all his losses of ships and cargoes of furs, caused largely by the mismanagement of the naval officers under his command, had always paid a dividend for the Company. At the time of his withdrawal from the management the physical valuation of the goods and furs turned over to his successor at Sitka was 2,500,000 rubles, exclusive of those sent out on the Suvarof.<sup>49</sup> In that year the amount of fur in Russia in the hands of the Company was 900,000 rubles, and for that year and the next, out of the proceeds of Baranof's management, they paid 7½% dividends. To quote the words of the Auditor Golovin, writing in 1861, "At this time the Company began to decline on account of the want of system in the shipment of furs, and the shipment of provisions in the Company's vessels burdened it with a heavy expense, as the maintenance of the ships cost much and they sailed very slowly. The slow returns did not pay expenses, though the quantity of furs began to increase again, and the goods sent out by the Company were twice as dear as those traded from foreigners in the port. In 1820-21 the earnings were only 4% for each year and in 1822-3 a loss of 286,000 rubles was sustained."<sup>50</sup>

Baranof was in his 72nd year, a strenuous life with its attend-

<sup>47</sup>Zhizneopisanie, pp. 165-67.

<sup>48</sup>Zhizneopisanie, p. 172.

<sup>49</sup>Zhizneopisanie, p. 173.

<sup>50</sup>Golovin's Report, in Materiali, part ii, p. 112.

ant hardships had severely taxed a frame naturally strong and wiry but not large; the sudden shock of the relief coming so unexpectedly was severe, but he rose to the occasion and at once began the transfer of the property which was completed in September, 1818. The change from the great responsibility, together with being separated so long from his family in Russia and the severing of all ties connecting him with that country, left him in doubt as to how building a house at the Ozerskoe Redoubt, by the shore of Globokoe Lake, in which to live, when Golovnin persuaded him that he should go to St. Petersburg where he would be a valuable counsellor for the Company and they would care for him in his old age.<sup>51</sup>

His wife had died in Kargopol more than 20 years before and his daughter there was married. His son Antipater, born in the colony at Kodiak, had been taken to St. Petersburg by the naval officer, Golovnin, and there died. His daughter at Sitka, a Creole, had married Lieutenant Yanovski, of the ship "Suvarof."

The representations of Golovnin prevailed and Baranof sailed in the Kutusof November 27th, 1818, he was detained at Batavia for 36 days, leaving that place April 12th, 1819. His stay in that tropical climate was fatal, for he was taken on board the ship, ill with a fever, and on the 16th of the month he died and was buried at sea in the Indian Ocean on the next day.<sup>52</sup>

For nearly twenty-eight years he had been the moving and directing spirit over Russian America. When he came to the colony he found a post at Three Saints Bay, built of alder and plastered with clay and the substations extended only to the island of Kodiak and to Cook Inlet. He left an empire in extent whose outposts were at Ross in California, on the Pribylof Islands and the Kurile Islands. For the Shelikof Company he gathered furs from 1790 to 1799, to the amount of 1,123,600 rubles, and for the Russian American Company between 1799 and 1818 he collected nearly the whole of the amount of 35,000,000 rubles in value.<sup>53</sup> The capital of the Company in 1799 was 724,000 rubles. New shares were issued for 515,738.78 rubles and he added profits of 3,190,687 rubles 57 kopeks, besides paying dividends of 3,060,000 rubles, over and above all

---

<sup>51</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, pp. 174-75; Tikhmenef, part 1, p. 244.

<sup>52</sup>*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 177.

<sup>53</sup>V. N. Berg, *Furs, Historical Review of the Fur Trade*, St. Petersburg, 1823, p. 168.

losses and expenses. He built churches<sup>54</sup> and established schools. Ten vessels were constructed under his management in the territory of Alaska and four others in Ross. He introduced cattle at Kodiak, Unalaska, Unga, Sitka and Ross. There were 500 head of cattle at Kodiak during his time.<sup>55</sup> He extended his trade to California, to China and the Sandwich Islands. He gave to the church, the schools, and to his assistants. The Russian Possessions in the New World attained their widest extent under the direction of Alexander Andreevich Baranof.

C. L. ANDREWS.

---

<sup>54</sup>The first church in Alaska. "In Kadyak [Kodiak] meantime, a church was being built. Baranof was indefatigable in his efforts to push the undertaking and aid the Archimandrite Joassaf. In a letter he said: 'From my own resources I managed to give 500 rubles, and from various employes collected 500 rubles more.'—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 33. On March 18, 1795, Joassaf, the archimandrite, wrote to Shelikof, complaining bitterly of Baranof for not building a church.—*Tikhmenev*, II, App., 101. "To Unalaska I have forwarded timber and planks for a chapel and they were taken by Ismailof. There is enough to finish it though some more will be required for the residence of a priest in course of time."—Baranof to Shelikof, May 20, 1795, in *Tikhmenev*, II, App., 93. "In Sitka arrive a priest in 1816 and commenced to perform church service. The building of a church was at once commenced and soon the first building of the kind on the northwest shore of America was completed."—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 170.

<sup>55</sup>Cattle on Kodiak Island.—*Zhizneopisanie*, p. 205.

## FORT HALL ON THE SAPTIN RIVER\*

Embraced in the component parts of modern civilization there are three potent factors:—civil government, commerce and religion. These elements are frequently symbolized by the flag, the dollar mark and the Cross respectively. Their advent into the territory that now constitutes the state of Idaho occurred when the limits of Old Oregon extended from the Pacific ocean, along the 42nd parallel to a point 18 miles northeast of Rawlins, Wyo., thence along the continental divide to the Arctic ocean. Their coming was hand in hand, the first and last under the protection of the second, a relative position, some contend, that they occupy even to this day. They made their first stand on the east bank of the Saptin, afterwards known as the Lewis, and now by the name of Snake river,<sup>1</sup> at a point six miles above the mouth of the Portneuf, 20 miles above American Falls, and 1,288 miles out of Independence, Mo., on the Oregon Trail.

Strictly speaking, both the flag and sign of commerce had been seen before in Idaho, but here was the first manifestation of the Christian faith in all the vast territory of old Oregon. The first American flag to enter the state of Idaho was a small one borne by George Drewyer (Drouillard), the interpreter of the Lewis and Clark expedition, who, together with Captain Meriwether Lewis, and John Shields, entered what is now the state of Idaho, about 4 o'clock in the afternoon of Monday, Aug. 12, 1805. Not only was this the first flag, but it was the first foot print to be made by a white man in the state, and the place of this interesting event appears to have been at a point about 12 miles east of Sunfield, Lemhi county. This expedition raised a flag at Fort Clatsop during that winter, but the following spring it was made over into five gowns with which food was purchased from the Indians to sustain the company during a period of famine. The second flag was raised at Fort Astor in 1811,

---

\*This article appeared first in the Capital News of Boise, Idaho, February 20, 1916. T. C. Elliott of Walla Walla secured a revised copy for this Quarterly.

<sup>1</sup>This magnificent river has no right to be known as the Snake River. Early usages appear to have attached to it the name of Saptin (Sahaptin) after the tribe of Nez Perces Indians which inhabited the lower section of the river and which was the principal tribe of the Shahaptain family. The Shoshonean family, which included the Shoshones, Bannocks, Utahs, Paiutes, and Comanches, originally inhabited all tributary country from the mouth of Salmon River to Wyoming. The name Shoshone River would have been more appropriate, but the proper name is Lewis River, and by that name it should be known at this time, in honor of Meriwether Lewis, the first white man to look upon its waters.



only to be lowered again on Oct. 16, 1813, upon the failure of Mr. Astor's enterprise. According to the terms of peace following the war of 1812, the British government permitted Mr. J. B. Prevost, Oct. 6, 1818, to again unfurl the American flag over Fort Astoria, but he had been gone hardly an hour before the British flag was again run up to remain the symbol of authority until 1846. The next episode in the career of the flag of the Union in the northwest brings us back to Fort Hall, the subject of this narrative.

It was a motley company that composed the cavalcade which emerged from the pass at the head of Ross Fork, on the afternoon of Sunday, July 12, 1834, and, following down that stream nine miles, encamped near where Fort Hall station is now located on the Oregon Short Line north of Pocatello. The company was in command of Nathaniel J. Weyth, a trader from Cambridge, Mass., and under whose protection there traveled, in addition to his company of 50 men and 130 horses, Captain William Stewart, a veteran under Lord Wellington at Waterloo, who was traveling for pleasure; Thomas Nuttall, a botanist; J. K. Townsend, an ornithologist, and a Methodist missionary party consisting of Revs. Jason Lee and Daniel Lee, Cyrus Shepard and P. L. Edwards.

The following day, Monday, they traveled only six miles to a bend in the Snake river to the northwest, where the company again encamped, and from a small slough near the river, spent the day taking trout of the finest quality and weighing about two pounds each. The following morning Mr. Wyeth rode down the river three miles to a point where a small water way led off from the main stream, and which was fringed with willow brush that concealed his presence. When he emerged from the growth he noticed a large buffalo bull near by, which he shot, and as he stood by the carcass and observed the wide river which makes a sharp bend to the south, and the slough forming a protection to the east, with a suitable point of land sufficient for the purpose, he then and there located the historic Fort Hall, destined to become one of the most important stations on the famous Oregon Trail, and, until the building of Fort Bridger, nine years later, the second building west of the Missouri river. It was here that the first flag raising in Idaho was celebrated, which was the fourth event of the kind west of the Rocky mountains, and it was here that the first sermon was preached in that vast territory, the distinction belonging to the Methodist society. It was at Fort Hall where Mrs. Whitman and Mrs. Spaulding, the first American women to cross the continent, were entertained two years later, and

it was here that more than 300,000 American pioneers replenished their scanty stores to enable them to reach the Pacific coast. Before its fall in 1855, the fame of this post had reached the civilized countries of the world, but today the historic spot is deserted and forgotten and the only sound that disturbs the death-like quietude is the moanful dirge of the desert winds that play in the tree tops of the grove hard by, the same grove in which Jason Lee, 81 years ago, introduced the Christian faith to the wilds of the Pacific Northwest.

The story of Fort Hall, replete with intrigue, pathos, courage, hope and failure of those who were present when it was founded, is one of unmeasured interest to students of history and a brief narrative of its most salient features may be not amiss. The fort was located at the northern extremity of a natural meadow consisting of several thousand acres of rich bottom land, formed by the confluence of the Snake and Portneuf rivers. A number of bright sparkling streams, fed by pure cold springs, traverse the valley of about three miles, all of which teemed with trout and beaver. It had been a favorite feeding ground during the winter seasons for deer, elk and buffalo. The country properly belonged to the Shoshones or Snake Indians, but the dreaded Blackfeet were wont to swoop down upon these bountiful game fields and the ubiquitous wandering of this powerful tribe is evidenced by their name being given to one of the principal streams of the locality.

A great Indian trail from the south which crossed the divide near Malad city and followed down Bannock creek and up the Snake river on its way to the headwaters of the Missouri, intersected another of even greater importance near where the fort was located. It was the last mentioned trail that Mr. Wyeth and his party had followed for some 1,200 miles and which afterwards became known as the Oregon trail. From a commercial standpoint the country had been exploited by the Northwest Company and the Hudson's Bay Company, first under the command of Alexander Ross, then Peter Skene Ogden, Donald McKenzie and others. Their trading expeditions were fitted out at Spokane House, located nine miles northwest of the present city of Spokane, Wash., thence by way of Flathead Post and the Bitter Root valley, but McKenzie established headquarters at old Fort Walla Walla and reached the territory by way of the trail that afterwards constituted the Columbia river section of the Overland route, and still later followed by the O. S. L. and O. R. & N. railways.

After the coalition of the two British companies the Hudson's

Bay Company continued to occupy the country and practically was in possession of all the territory west of Green River at the time of Mr. Wyeth's arrival.

Wyeth had been west as far as Fort Vancouver two years before and had attempted to establish himself "in such branches of business as may be expedient," but the loss of his vessel, the *Sultana*, at the Society islands, which he had engaged to bring out his goods by way of Cape Horn, caused the expedition to end in disaster. Accepting the hospitality of the Hudson's Bay Company, he set out for the east by way of the Spokane House, Flathead, Bitter Root and the Portneuf, thence by way of the Yellowstone and Missouri rivers. While engaged in making a bull boat on the Bighorn river, near where the "Burlington" now crosses that stream north of Sheridan, Wyo., he contracted with Milton Sublette, on the part of the Rocky Mountain Fur Company to bring out for that company the following year \$3,000 worth of merchandise. After passing Fort Union at the mouth of the Yellowstone he made the remaining part of the journey to Independence in the company of only two Indian lads, one a Nez Perce and the other, Baptiste, a boy of 13, son of Francis Payette and his Flathead wife. At that time, 1833, this may be considered to have been a journey hazardous in the extreme, the entire route being through a country infested with hostile tribes.

Undaunted by a complete failure we find Mr. Wyeth, after his arrival at Cambridge, actively engaged in the formation of what he termed "The Columbia River Fishing & Trading Company," organized for the purpose of establishing a salmon fishery at the mouth of the Willamette, which was to be operated in connection with a general fur business through the interior. His voluminous correspondence while at Cambridge, published by the University of Oregon in "Sources of the History of Oregon," volume 1, parts 3 to 6 (1899), affords an interesting study of the man who brought the American flag and the Protestant religion to the state of Idaho. His pack train on this occasion carried about 13,000 pounds of merchandise, some of which was purchased in the eastern markets shipped down the Ohio, the balance being purchased at St. Louis and sent by boat to Independence, Mo., from which place the expedition started. His pack animals were purchased across the river at Liberty, and the expedition set out on its long journey on the morning of April 28th, 1834.

In addition to the land caravan, Mr. Wyeth chartered another ship, the *May Dacre*, to go round by sea and meet him at the mouth of

the Willamette with a cargo of goods and material for the salmon fishery. The adventurous spirit of this enterprising Yankee seems to have been thoroughly sustained by the alluring prospects of a great success beyond the mountains. He made great haste in order to reach the Green river rendezvous ahead of William L. Sublette, a veteran of the fur trade, but in this he failed, a fact which caused some disquietude in the mind of Mr. Wyeth, for fear that worthy competitor might disturb his profitable contract with the Rocky Mountain Fur Company.

The following letter appertains to the engagement to furnish safe conduct to the Methodist missionaries:

"New York, Feb. 15, 1834.

"Rev. Jason Lee (Baltimore).

"Dear Sir: I have received your favor of the 11th inst., in answer to which say that I leave this city tomorrow morning and proceed directly west and remain but five or six days at St. Louis. You will hear from me in St. Louis by calling on Messrs. VonPhull & McGill.

"I think I received and answered a line from some one in western Mass., but I am not certain.

"&c. &c. N. J. W."

Relative to his pack train cargo, the following letter will throw some light:

"Louisville, March 4.

Capt. Thing (Louisville).

"Dear Sir: You will find at Mess. Allison's & Anderson's 3 bbls Alcohol and 11 packages Tobacco, provided they do not ship the same before you arrive at this place in which case you will proceed direct to St. Louis.

"I am &c. N. J. WYETH."

At St. Louis, on March 31st he notes the arrival of Nuttall, Townsend, and the missionaries. At Independence, on April 17th, he notes among other things that "There are none of the Dignitaries with me as yet and if they 'preach' much longer in the States they will lose their passage for I will not wait a minute for them."

The following notation in the journal of Mr. Wyeth, under date of June 1st, gives us the first building of the famous Fort Laramie, the first supply station on the Oregon Trail.

"At the crossing (Laramie river) we found 15 of Sublette's men camped for the purpose of building a fort, he having gone ahead



with his best animals and the residue of his goods he left about 14 loads."

The caravan arrived at the Green river rendezvous, 12 miles above the mouth of Big Sandy on the 19th of June, where the first bitter disappointment awaited him. In his journal he noted the following:

"\* \* \* found rendezvous 12 miles up and much to my astonishment the goods which I had contracted to bring up to the Rocky Mountain Fur Co. was refused by those honorable gentlemen."

Mr. Wyeth appears to have been in a bad humor as a result of the treatment accorded him by the Rocky Mountain Fur Co., which was then competing with the Hudson's Bay Fur Company in the trade between the Rocky mountains and the Snake river valley. It is reported by some writers that he made this significant remark at the time: "I will roll a stone in your garden that you will have trouble in getting out." He broke camp the next morning and moved over to Ham's Fork, at a point where the town of Granger now stands, a distance of 28 miles, where he encamped for seven days. Here he wrote twelve letters, all of great interest, but we will forbear noting them except a few references pertaining to Fort Hall.

To Mr. Ermatinger, of the Hudson's Bay Company, he wrote:

"\* \* \* \* I am now on my way to meet a vessel that I sent from Boston to the mouth of the Columbia and hope to be there by the first of September. You have also enclosed a letter from Mr. Payette, whose son is now with me. I came up with goods and about 50 men, 180 horses. The goods I will have to leave for sale somewhere hereabouts with part of the men. I have got no Beaver and have sold but little and that for Drafts which I hope are good.

"I have a great desire to see you and repay in part for all the you not to come with a small party to the American Rendezvous. There are here a great collection of Scoundrels.

"I have a great desire to see you and repay in part for all the kindness which I received from you last year. \* \* \*

"ya. obt. Servt. and Friend

"NATH. J. WYETH."

It may be stated that it was through the courtesy of the Hudson's Bay Company, whose Snake river expedition Mr. Wyeth accompanied from Vancouver to Green river the year before, was in command of Mr. Ermatinger. This being the same trader who, in company with Joe Meek, Robert Newell and Caleb Wilkins, drove the first wagons from Fort Hall to the Columbia river. This oc-

curred in the fall of 1840, and the wagons, three in number, had been abandoned or left at Fort Hall that year, and the little company was outfitted by Mr. Ermatinger, from 1838 to 1841, in command of Fort Hall for the Hudson's Bay Company. This journey was made to establish the feasibility of taking wagons through to the Columbia, a task considered by many as being impossible at the time, and the route these men traveled was followed by the American emigrants until the Oregon trail fell into disuse more than 30 years afterwards.

In one of his letters from Ham's Fork, Mr. Wyeth expressed his bitter disappointment at being unable to deliver his goods at Green river, and that he needed the money to pay his company and other expenses of the journey. He advised his friends to keep away from the American rendezvous as it was composed of murderers and thieves and that crime of every nature was rampant. His men were willing to take goods, however, at a profit of 500 per cent over original cost and he settled with them with no difficulty. As to his future he said:

"I shall proceed about 150 miles west of this and establish a fort in order to make sale of the goods which remain on my hands. I have sent out messengers to the Pawnacks, Shoshones, Snakes, Nez Perces and Flatheads to make robes and come and trade them at this post. \* \* \*"

He wrote cordial letters to Francis Payette, Captain Bonneville, who was then in the Bear river country and whose acquaintance he had made the previous year, and sent his kindly regards to Dr. McLoughlin, at Fort Vancouver. Though in competition with that great corporation, he appears to have been on terms of friendly intimacy with all its officers. On June 27 he broke camp again and moved up the trail in the direction of Bear river. July 4 found the caravan encamped at the forks of the Muddy, at a point where the town of Nuggett now stands, and the following entry in his journal indicates that they celebrated the day, but doubtless in a manner much to the disgust of the missionaries.

"I gave the men too much alcohol and took a pretty hearty spree myself. At the camp we found Mr. Cerry and Mr. Walker, who were returning to St. Louis with the furs collected by Mr. Bonneville's company, about 10 packs and men going down, to whom there is due \$10,000."

The mountain value of a pack of beaver, about 90 pounds to the pack, was \$500. July 6 the caravan camped on the ground now

occupied by the city of Montpelier, on July 8 at Soda Springs, and on the 10th they overtook the Bonneville party on the upper waters of the Blackfoot. Actuated by a feeling of selfishness, a spirit that amounts almost to a trait with the American people, the doughty captain was putting forth his utmost energy to escape his Yankee compeer, and doubtless would have succeeded had it not been for a social call that the nestor of the fur trade, Mr. Thomas McKay, saw fit to make his encampment on the Blackfoot.

The captain, with about 23 men, was encamped for the purpose of taking a supply of buffalo, when a scout announced that Wyeth was approaching from the Bear river. Their load of meat being too heavy to admit of rapid travel, the captain determined to cache his baggage so he might be able to elude the unwelcome countrymen until he could have an opportunity to either kill or drive all the buffalo out of their favorite feeding grounds on the upper Blackfoot, such being his solicitude for a fellow traveler in the wilderness. While thus engaged a pack train was seen filing over the divide from the direction of the headquarters of the Portneuf. It proved to be a trading expedition of the Hudson's Bay Company under the command of Thomas McKay, who encamped at no great distance. Now the captain was on his way to the Columbia, a country under the domination of that company, so he immediately forgot the object of his wiles and conjured in his mind a scheme to cultivate the friendship of the swarthy brigade commander, one of the most famous men of his day. Here followed the celebrated debauch, on a beverage brewed from honey and alcohol as delineated by Washington Irving in his "*Bonneville Adventures*."

Before the feast was fairly opened, Mr. Wyeth, far in advance of his company, rode up and the captain met him in a friendly and courteous manner. He acquainted his unwelcome guest with the news of the mountains and obtained from Mr. Wyeth an account of events in the east, after which they parted. The following day the captain, in his search for the buffalo, was unable to reach his own camp and was compelled, therefore, to accept the hospitality of Mr. Wyeth. The following day a fearful havoc was wrought in the buffalo herds of the Blackfoot, in which all hands of both expeditions took part. Captain Bonneville then hastened on his journey, leaving Wyeth to gather up what he could care for and pursue his journey in a more leisurely manner and in company with the sorrowful trader, McKay, now suffering from the effects of the captain's compound of honey and alcohol.

McKay was in no mood for rapid travel, however, and fell behind, so it was the caravan of Mr. Wyeth that halted on the bank of the Snake on Monday, July the 13th, and fished in the crystal waters of Portneuf bottoms, as noted in the beginning of this narrative. On the evening of the 14th, the cavalcade moved down to the site of the fort and again encamped where they remained for 23 days, during which time the fort was constructed. It was made of drift logs taken from the river, and cottonwood timber from the grove near by, and when completed, it presented a very formidable appearance, 60x60 feet on the ground, with a stockade about 12 feet high which formed the outer walls of the quarters, and two bastions on top so arranged that the guns would sweep either side in case of an attack.<sup>2</sup>

While the work was in progress the scientists and missionaries availed themselves of the opportunity to rest and enjoy the novelty of the situation. McKay had, in the meantime, fully recovered from the effects of "a swarm of bees in his head" and encamped with the party of Mr. Wyeth, in order, doubtless, to observe operations and be in position to report to his superior officers at Fort Vancouver. With his party there were now at Fort Hall nearly one hundred persons and more than two hundred and fifty jaded horses regaled themselves on the succulent grass of the bottom lands. On Sunday afternoon, July 26th, 1834, Mr. Wyeth invited Rev. Jason Lee to conduct religious services.

Without the least premonition of the fact that this was to be the first sermon in a future state, or of three states for that matter, and apparently without any thought of the historic significance of the event, preparations were made to hold the services in the grove of cottonwood trees, which grew within a few feet of the west wall of the fort. By 3 o'clock in the afternoon all was in readiness. The French and half-breeds of the Hudson's Bay Company party spoke English, as did all the Wyeth party, so the

---

<sup>2</sup>Gray, in his *History of Oregon*, describes Fort Hall as it was in 1836, before it was rebuilt by the Hudson's Bay Company, as follows: "Fort Hall, in 1836, was a stockade, made of cotton-wood logs, about twelve feet long, set some two feet in the ground, with a piece of timber pinned near the top, running entirely around the stockade, which was about sixty feet square. The stores and quarters for the men were built inside with poles, brush, grass, and dirt for covering, stamped down so as to partially shed rain, and permit the guards to be upon the tops of the quarters and see over the top of the stockade."

In 1838, after its acquisition by the Hudson's Bay Co., the fort was enlarged and adobe walls substituted for the cotton-wood logs, and these walls were kept well whitewashed. This fact doubtless prompted Farnham to say (1839), "'\* \* \* and before us rose the white battlements of Fort Hall!'"



services were conducted for the whites only. The entire company had assembled before the appearance of the missionaries.

Mr. Lee was a tall man but rather spare and inclined to stoop. He wore a full beard of light brown color and over a high forehead he reached high a heavy growth of rather darker shade of hair. He possessed large, blue eyes, and his kindly expression denoted deep and earnest thought. His lungs were tubercular to a degree which, to some extent at least, affected his voice, giving it a strong yet rather a grating sound. He wore the regulation ministerial garb and was assisted in the services by the three other members of his party. Standing under the shade of the trees, his congregation reclining in every conceivable attitude before him, the breaking waves of a great river at his back, and in the midst of a trackless desert, he delivered a message from Calvary—nineteen centuries in its coming. The bacchanalian orgies over buffalo hump and "honeydrips" which he had recently witnessed doubtless inspired the text from 1 Cor.: x, 31:

"Whether, therefore, ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God."

Let us indulge the hope that some day a marble shaft will mark the spot where the message arrived, and the words themselves, chiseled deep into its granite base, be a fitting tribute to the man of God who bore it.

After services the assemblage repaired to the race track to witness a horse race by two of McKay's men. One of the riders, a Frenchman by the name of Kanseau, was thrown from his horse and killed. Of this Mr. Lee wrote:

"The next day, Monday, Mr. McKay asked me to conduct a funeral service. I attended at 12 o'clock, read the 90th Psalm, prayed, and then went to the grave, where I read a part of the fifteenth chapter of First Corinthians, and also read the burial service as found in our Discipline."

Mr. Wyeth noted the event as follows:

"On the 26th a Frenchman named Kanseau was killed horse racing and on the 27th was buried near the fort. He belonged to Mr. McKay's party and his comrades erected a decent tomb for him. Services for him was performed by the Canadians in the Catholic form, by Mr. Lee in the Protestant form and by the Indians in their form as he had an Indian family. He at least was well buried."

On Thursday following Mr. McKay resumed his journey towards Fort Walla Walla, then the base of operations in the Snake

country, the missionaries joining his expedition. Mr. McKay presented Mr. Lee with two fine saddle horses, much to the delight of the latter and satisfaction to the former. Thomas McKay, when our people shall have awakened to the unmeasured interest in pioneer history, will occupy a unique position. As the agent for the Hudson's Bay Company, he had the distinction of escorting to their destinations the first Methodist, the first Presbyterians, and the first American women, and assisting the first Catholics to establish in old Oregon. As a French half-breed and a Catholic, he supported the Americans in the occupation of the country, fought with them in the Indian wars and was a friend and supporter of all religious sects.

August 6, Mr. Wyeth made the following entry in his journal:

"Having done so much as was requisite for safety to the fort and drank a bale of liquor and named it Fort Hall in honor of the oldest member of our concern (Henry Hall of Boston), we left it and with it Mr. Evans in charge of 11 men and 14 horses and mules and three cows."

Writing to his uncle on Oct. 6 from the Columbia river he gives us a better account in the following:

"Since mine of June 21 from Ham's Fork I have, as I then proposed, built a fort on Snake or Lewis river, which I named Fort Hall, from the oldest gentleman in the concern. We manufactured a magnificent flag from some unbleached sheeting, a little red flannel and a few blue patches, saluted it with damaged powder and wet it in villainous alcohol, and after all, I do assure you, it makes a very respectable appearance amid the dry and desolate regions of central America. Its bastions stand a terror to the skulking Indians and a beacon of safety to the fugitive hunter. It is manned by 12 men and has constantly loaded in the bastions 100 guns and rifles. These bastions command both inside and outside of the fort." \* \* \*

The second disappointment awaited Mr. Wyeth at Fort Vancouver, which place he reached on Sept. 14. Here he met Dr. John McLoughlin, Chief Factor, of whom he speaks in these words:

"He has here power and uses it as a man should to make those about him and those who come in contact with him comfortable and happy."

The following morning he proceeded down the river in a canoe and met his brig, the *May Dacre*. She had been struck by lightning and delayed so long making repairs that salmon operations for that

year had to be suspended. In fact the entire project was one disappointment after another, and finally all had to be abandoned. Writing to his brother Charles, under date of Sept. 28, 1835, he said:

"I am too busy and too unwell to write much even to you. It some times appears to me that the nearer a person is to whom I write the less competent is the mood to the ideas I would wish to express. However this may be one thing I know. That to my best friends I always write the shortest letters, in fact I had nearly written you as short an epistle as Cæsar's to the senate, viz, 'I am sick dead and buried' and yet I am not 'the Scipper' but the last principle of human life is not extinct. Hope still maintains her throne and throws the mists of futurity over the deformities and misfortunes that she cannot hide.

"Our salmon fishing has not succeeded. Half a cargo only obtained. Our people are sick and dying off like rotten sheep of bilious disorder. I shall be off by the first of next month to the mountains and winter at Fort Hall."

In other letters he told of the loss of more than half of his company, about 19 by sickness, others by drowning and others at the hands of the Indians. His indomitable energy could not save the business, though it won for him the admiration, not only of the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company, but that of every traveler and writer of the period. Through his long series of misfortunes, there was none to impeach either his integrity or judgment. Many of his letters were pathetic in the extreme and portrayed a character well intended to appeal to human affection. He left his post at the mouth of the Willamette in charge of Mr. C. M. Walker and sold Fort Hall to the Hudson's Bay Company. "The business I am in must be closed," he wrote, "not that it might not be made a good one, but that those who are now engaged in it are not the men to make it so. The smallest loss make them 'fly the handle' and such men can rarely succeed in a new business." He returned to his old home in the fall of 1836, where he re-engaged in the ice business with great success and retained until his death the confidence and respect of all who knew him. Such was the man who first unfurled the flag of freedom in the state of Idaho, and under whose protection came the first teacher of the Christian faith.

While business competition was never allowed to interfere with the life long attachment formed with the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company, they could not, of course, aid him in his plans to take

away their well established business, therefore another sequel is to be recorded. When Mr. Wyeth left Fort Hall, after the flag episode heretofore related, he crossed the Snake at the Indian ford four miles below the fort and followed the trail through the Soldier country, and the Boise river to its mouth where he recrossed. He arrived at Fort Walla Walla on Sept. 2, two days behind the party with whom the missionaries had traveled from Fort Hall. In his journal of that date he noted, "Mr. McKay for some reason remained in the mountains."

This reason is better explained when we trace the doings of that wary denizen of the forest, who, with a suitable crew at his command, halted on Boise river, at a point about three miles southwest of the present town of Notus, and about 10 miles from the mouth of the river, where he commenced the erection of an establishment that afterwards became known as Fort Boise, the fourth station on the Oregon Trail. That the movements of Mr. McKay were not made known to the Americans is evidenced by the fact that they were not mentioned by any one at the time save the above quotation. However, when Mrs. Whitman, the first American woman to look upon the waters of the Columbia, arrived there on August 19, 1836, she noted in her journal the following:

"Arrived at Snake Fort about noon. It is situated on Bigwood river, so called because the timber is larger than any to be seen this side of the mountains. It consists chiefly of cottonwood and is small compared with timber in the states. Snake Fort is owned and was built by Mr. Thomas McKay, one of our company, whom we expect to leave here. He, with Mr. McLeod, gave us a hearty welcome; dined with them." \* \* \*

(Boise river was first known as Reed's River, after the name of a member of the Hunt party who was killed on the South Fork in 1812. Wood river appears to correspond with the word Boise in the French, and the river took that name after the establishment of the fort.)

When Mr. Farnham, of the "Peoria Party" came through the country in 1839, he found the fort had been moved to the bank of the Snake, and Mr. Payette engaged in building the adobe walls which were then about completed. The point where it was located appears to have been about two miles below where the Boise at that time joined the Snake river. In the 60's the channel of the Boise changed and flowed into the larger stream at a point about 200 feet south of the fort. In 1853, according to the journal of Mr.



Theodore Winthrop, the buildings were destroyed by high water, but immediately rebuilt. The walls were standing yet in the 60's during the early mining excitement, but at the present time the site is in the middle of the Snake river, the channel having encroached upon the land to that extent.

That Mr. McKay established a fort on the Boise to protect their trade, as far as possible, against the encroachment of the Americans on the east, there can be no doubt, and after Mr. Wyeth delivered to the Hudson's Bay Company, Fort Hall, the supremacy of that organization was well nigh complete. He had "rolled a stone in the garden of the Rocky Mountain Fur Company that they had some difficulty in getting out." Both Fort Hall and Fort Boise were famous landmarks on the Oregon trail and volumes could be written of each. After Hudson's Bay Company took over the former, adobe walls were substituted for the timbers used by Mr. Wyeth, and they were kept whitewashed as were those of Fort Boise. Their white battlements could be seen for many miles in either direction, and the number of pioneers, who preserved in memory the most kindly feelings for these establishments, and the most hospitable treatment accorded them by the men in charge, would number, perhaps, not less than 200,000.

Had Fort Hall not been built, it is altogether likely that Fort Boise would not have existed. What effect that would have had on American occupation of old Oregon is difficult to fathom. Without the building of Fort Hall it is hard to conceive how the emigrants could have reached the Columbia in time to hold the national boundary as far north as the forty-ninth parallel. Other means might have been adopted, but of this we cannot even speculate. It is enough to know that their building, and the willingness of their officers to assist American pioneers to the extent of their ability, was of inestimable value to our government in the acquisition of a disputed territory. It will be, in time to come, a matter of great regret that sectarian controversies, growing out of the Whitman massacre at Walla Walla, have been allowed to impair our feeling of appreciation for the uniform kindness accorded our countrymen by the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company, who were, measured by any standard desired, the peer of the best of us.

From 1836, the year that the Oregon Trail began to attract public attention, and for 24 years thereafter, during which time it was, in many respects, the greatest highway in all the world, Fort Hall was the second outfitting station west of the Missouri river.

Fort Bridger was established in 1843, but it was located out of the line of travel to the Columbia and in latter years the pioneers depended on Forts Hall and Boise. The distance from Independence, Mo., to Fort Laramie was 667 miles; to Fort Hall, 1,288 miles; to Fort Boise, 1,585 miles; to Fort Walla Walla, 1,835 miles and to Fort Vancouver, 2,020 miles. Over the last four the British flag, with the letters, H. B. C. woven in the folds (said by American trappers to mean, "Here Before Christ") was suspended as the symbol of authority until 1855. The boundary was fixed in 1846 but the possessory right of the Hudson's Bay Company was not settled for until the late 60's, when they were awarded \$650,000 for their holdings.

When the Indian wars of 1855-6 broke out, Fort Walla Walla fell in October of that year, at the hands of that noted chief, Peupéu-mox-mox. Messengers were sent to Fort Boise and Fort Hall to warn them that their base of supplies had fallen into the hands of the Indians and to abandon the country. During that winter the stores of both forts were moved to the Flathead post, north of Missoula, Mont., which continued to do business until 1872. United States troops occupied Fort Hall for a time but during the Civil war they were moved over to Lincoln creek and its glory was at an end. When the stage line was established between Salt Lake and the mining districts of Montana, a station was located three miles south of the fort and many of the sun dried brick of its walls were taken there and used in those buildings. In 1852, a pioneer noted in his journal that more than 100 army wagons stood around the fort rotting down.

Not long since the writer made a pilgrimage to the site of the old fort. At the crossing of the stream where the stage station once stood, he found a monument lying in the grass, having fallen from its base. There was no inscription to indicate for what purpose the same had been placed there, or by whom. The country on the east side of the river is included in the Fort Hall Indian reservation and, there being not a house in the valley, the landscape may be presumed to be the same as it was on the day that Jason Lee preached his sermon. The grove is still there and it seemed an easy matter to locate the place where he stood, though of course this was a matter of interesting conjecture.

The outlines of the fort are as plain as when the structure stood. Even the well on the inside, near the southwest corner of the inclosure, is still about eight feet deep, and the position of

the bastions, the gates and the quarters are plainly discernible. They were hidden, however, by a growth of tall grass reaching to one's shoulders. The old trail marks and camping places are easily located, but our two Indian guides were unable to give us any information as to the location of the burial grounds where sleep so many of our pioneers. The solitude of the place could have been no more impressive the day that Mr. Wyeth shot the buffalo, when the nearest settlement was Fort Bellevue on the Missouri river, than it was on that July day last summer when the writer visited the historic spot.

To the south the railroad trains could be seen bearing the burdens of a mighty commerce and, likewise, garnering for their owners a revenue sufficient, we trust, for the services rendered; cities have sprung up as by magic, and a busy and prosperous people are now reaping the harvest sown by those who have gone before. But the historic ground where Wyeth unfurled the flag in Idaho, and where Jason Lee delivered the message, and where stood the post that succored the tired and halting pioneers who won and left us our heritage, and made it possible for railroads to build, and cities to grow and fortunes to accumulate, is forgotten and seen no more. It seems a heartless fate, yet but another illustration of the "survival of the fittest," a shadow that follows us all.

MILES CANNON.

## MINING IN ALASKA BEFORE 1867

It has generally been assumed that the Russians in Alaska were either indifferent or ignorant of the mineral resources of that territory. That they were not indifferent may be proved from the fact that the desire to find precious metals was one of the reasons why Peter the Great sent out voyages of discovery. The men who followed Bering to America made careful inquiries of the natives as to the existence of metals and minerals on their islands. When the Russian American Company was organized in 1799 it demanded the exclusive right to all the underground riches of Alaska. One may with equal ease refute the charge of ignorance. At the time of the transfer of the territory to the United States gold had been discovered, native copper found, and coal mines opened. Graphite was known to exist on Atka Island, red ochre on Krenitzin, black obsidian and porphyry on Umnak, naphtha and amber on the Alaska Peninsula. Copper had been located on Unalaska, Copper Island, Cook Inlet, and the Copper River. Each year the natives came down that stream and sold quantities of that metal to the Russians, but would not show them the place it came from. In the same manner the natives of Cook Inlet offered mica to the traders but refused to disclose the source of the supply. The knowledge of the mineral resources was not wholly derived from the natives. Reliable information was obtained from the writings of Father Veinaminov, from the accounts of the more intelligent of the naval officers, from the bulletins of the agents of the Imperial Academy of Sciences, especially that of Vosnosenski, who stayed five years (1840-1845) in the Northwest making a natural history collection, and from the special reports of the scientists and mining engineers, such as H. J. Holmberg, who made a mineral survey of Kodiak., Peter Doroshin who spent five years in prospecting for gold and coal, and Ialmar Furuholm who came out to Alaska in 1850 or 1851 and remained ten years in the employ of the company prospecting and superintending the mine on Kenai. The question one naturally asks: if the company knew so much about the mining possibilities of Alaska why was so little done in developing the industry? The answer is that it was too much occupied with the fur trade.

The gradual extermination of the sea-otter and the discovery of gold in California were two factors that greatly influenced the company to give serious attention to mining. In 1848 (1849) it sent out to Alaska Peter Doroshin, a mining engineer, or geognost as he



was then called. He reached Cook Inlet late that year but not too late to wash out a few pans of sand and find a few colors. He took up the work in 1850 and commenced prospecting in earnest on the Kenai Peninsula, near the mouth of the Kaknu River. He had, all told, twelve men to assist him, and the number of working days for that season were not more than forty-nine; so that under the circumstances he could not have been expected to accomplish a great deal. He reported that everywhere he dug he found colors. He returned in 1851 with the intention of going up the Kaknu and two other streams for the purpose of tracing the deposits to their source. Although he put in sixty-six days, in his investigations he could not reach the mountains where he hoped to locate the mineral veins. In his report he states that the farther up he went the larger were the grains of gold but nowhere was it in paying quantities. He should have liked to continue his researches for another year or two had the company been willing.

The following year, 1852, Doroshin was set to work to look for coal. During that summer he explored a large part of the territory and located many of the mines known today. He shipped the specimens which he dug out to the Mining Department of St. Petersburg where they were analyzed. The first coal vein examined was at Port Graham, Kenai. It was an eight foot vein and the samples analyzed:

Volatile matter	45.87
Fixed Carbon	42.91
Ash	12.22
Coke	45.13
Heat units <sup>1</sup>	4,294.

On the way from Port Graham to Kachemak he inspected several beds of lignite and passed them by as of little value. But on the northwestern part of Kachemak Bay he found coal which seemed promising. It analyzed:

Volatile matter	48.53
Fixed Carbon	38.91
Ash	12.55
Coke	51.47
Heat Units	4,131.

From Kachemak he sailed north along the eastern shore of the Inlet to its head, crossing the mouths of the streams but not entering them, thence down the western shore as far as Kamishak Bay.

---

<sup>1</sup>Probably calories.

Here he left the boat and struck out over the mountains to Lake Iliamina, making notes on the geologic formation of the country as he went along. On the lake there was a boat to take him down the Kvichak River and some distance into the bay of that name and from there up the Naknek River and lakes and the Mishket<sup>2</sup> River to the rapids. At this point he left his boatmen and crossed over the mountains and came to Katmai. In taking the route he did Doroshin was prevented from examining the coal in Kanikagluk<sup>2</sup> Bay (Kukak?), east of Katmai. He, therefore, sent men thither for samples which, when analyzed, gave this result:

Volatile matter	34.45
Fixed carbon	52.44
Ash	13.11
Coke	65.55
Heat Units	5,774.

He was quite enthusiastic about this coal which he regarded as the best in the territory.

Continuing his investigations along the peninsula, Doroshin observed many veins of coal and lignite of minor importance. In one place, probably in the region of Chignak, he discovered naphtha and, what he believed to be natural gas, but he was not certain. He spent some little time at Unga inspecting the coal deposits on that island and concluded that they were not worthy of development because of the poor quality, the high cost of mining, and danger in transportation owing to the large amount of pyrites in the coal. He had planned to go to Port Moller but was prevented because of lack of time. He did the next best thing and sent for specimens. Doroshin himself sailed down to Pavlof Bay and from there returned to Unga. Here he took ship going for Sitka and landed at this place about the middle of October, 1852. The samples from Port Moller, taken from two different veins, analyzed as follows:

Volatile matter	61.57
Fixed carbon	37.18
Ash	1.25
Heat Units	4,472
and	
Volatile matter	50.73
Fixed carbon	39.74
Ash	9.53
Heat Units	4,443.

<sup>2</sup>The names of places have changed considerably since Doroshin's day and it is rather difficult to identify them.

On making inquiries he was told that there was coal on Tigalda Island and on Norton Sound but he was unable to obtain samples from either of these places. From one of the ships in search of Franklin he secured a few chunks of coal which were taken from a vein in the neighborhood of Cape Lisburne. He also had sent to him specimens from Korovin Bay, Atka, which showed on analysis that it contained:

Volatile matter	52.41
Fixed carbon	45.28
Ash	2.53
Heat units	4,893.

In the region of Sitka Doroshin also made investigations and located several small veins of coal. He had analyzed the coal from Kotznahoo Inlet, Chatham Strait, and got encouraging results.

Volatile matter	38.08
Fixed carbon	50.73
Ash	11.19
Heat units	4,800.

He was of the opinion that a better grade and thicker veins of coal were to be found in southeastern Alaska, judging by the Canadian product. He made a special trip to inspect the mine in Winterhausen Bay (Winter Harbor?), Vancouver and the samples which he brought back analyzed:

Volatile matter	38.67
Fixed carbon	44.00
Ash	17.03
Heat units	5,009.

Doroshin returned to Russia towards the end of 1854 or early in 1853.<sup>3</sup> He at once submitted his report to the company and urged upon it to develop the coal beds at Port Graham. On the strength of this recommendation, coupled with the demand for coal in San Francisco, the company decided to venture into the coal mining industry. Work was begun in 1855, a pump was put in in 1857, the buildings were completed in 1858, and by 1859 there was a tunnel seventy feet long. In 1860 a fire wiped out the whole plant and ruined the machinery.

After five years of trial the company found that it had lost money. There were many reasons for the failure. The company was

---

<sup>3</sup>Doroshin laid his specimens before Professor Heppert of Breslau, who said that the coal from Cook Inlet belonged to the miocene formation of the tertiary period.

working with the view of obtaining immediate returns and not of developing a mining property. By 1860 it had not yet touched the principal vein of coal. Then again the company did not employ skilled miners nor make use of the best machinery. The men who worked in the mines were Siberian soldiers on garrison duty in Alaska. They were independent, worked or idled as they pleased. They knew nothing about mining when they came to Alaska and by the time they had learned something their term of military service, five or seven years, had expired and they departed. They were paid by the day and not by the ton and as a consequence they wasted much time. It was figured out that at one time the mine had on its pay roll 131 men and the daily output was from 30 to 35 tons. When the coal had been mined it was not sorted but all dumped together in the open.

The officers of the company on the spot were in doubt as to the real value of the coal. Some thought it was worthless and others, like the engineer, Fraser, on the steamer *Alexander II.*, were of the opinion that for steaming purposes 10 tons of Kenai was equal to 7 tons of English coal; and if the Alaska coal were sorted 10 tons would equal 8 tons of English. The only markets available at that time were San Francisco and Hong Kong. Five hundred tons were shipped to California and were there sold for six kopeks the prood, or about \$1.75 a ton. At this selling price the company was losing heavily, for it cost much more than that just to mine the coal. During the years 1857-1860, the annual output of the mine was about 920 tons, at an actual cost in wages, not counting the outlay on the investment, buildings, ships, office expenses, etc., of 38,480 rubles, or a little more than 41 rubles (assignats) per ton, equivalent to about \$15 (?) of American money. At that time, 1860-63, at Hong Kong Japanese coal was selling for \$5, Sidney coal for \$8 and English coal for \$15 the ton. Kenai coal could not compete on such terms.

After the buildings had burned down the company was in doubt as to how to proceed in the future. Ialmar Furuhelm came out from Alaska in 1862 to report on the situation. After several conferences with the directors of the company Furuhelm offered to lease the mine, provided he were allowed a free hand in every way. An agreement was soon reached, according to which Furuhelm was given exclusive control for seven years, from the day of signing the contract, over all the underground resources of Alaska, the right to sell his metals and to buy his machinery and goods where he pleased without paying duty of any kind, to cut whatever timber he needed, to make use of the streams, to carry the flag of the company on his ships, to hire his



workmen wherever he liked. In short neither the company nor the government could interfere with him in any way. In return he bound himself to pay the company, beginning with the second year, five per cent of the exported product, and this sum to be increased each year by one per cent. At the end of seven years the mines and all underground improvements were to revert to the company without compensation, and the buildings, machinery, ships etc., if Furuhelm should decide to sell them, the company promised to buy at a price to be mutually agreed. This arrangement was concluded early in 1863 but it was not put into force because at that time it was uncertain whether the company would have its charter renewed.

The discovery of gold in Oregon and British Columbia raised the question whether this metal might not also be found in Alaska. In 1863 the Russian minister in Washington called his government's attention to that fact. That same year there was a rumor that gold had been found on the Stikine River, and the company's officers became excited and, fearing a stampede of American miners, appealed to the government for a man-of-war. In 1865 the Russian minister wrote again to St. Petersburg reporting a conversation with Professor Whitney, geologist of California, who assured him that there must certainly be gold in Alaska because the geologic coast formation of that territory is the same as that of other parts of the Northwest where gold had been discovered. Whitney was willing to go to Alaska to investigate and the minister urged that he be commissioned to do so. The following year, 1866, it was reported in the Russian papers that some men in Sitka while digging a hole for a telegraph post accidentally found gold. The Russian government, however, had decided long before this to get rid of Alaska, partly because it had become an economic burden and partly for fear should gold be discovered in large quantities the American miners would rush in faster than they could be kept out and this situation might bring about bad feeling between the United States and Russia. These were some of the reasons why Alaska was sold and why all the mining propositions died an untimely death.

If the plans of Furuhelm had been allowed to work out and if Whitney had been sent to investigate, perhaps the mineral resources of Alaska would have been heard of long before they actually were.

F. A. GOLDER.

## DOCUMENTS

---

### Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey

#### INTRODUCTION

Whidby Island has always figured in the history of the Puget Sound country. It was known to the Spanish explorers prior to 1792, who set it down on their maps as a part of the mainland. It was named by Captain George Vancouver of the British navy, June 10, 1792, in honor of Joseph Whidbey, master of the *Discovery*, who in a small boat discovered Deception Pass and proved the existence there of a large island. Port Townsend, New Dungeness, Port Orchard, Point Wilson, Deception Passage, Bellingham Bay, Port Gardner, Possession Sound, Vashon Island, Mounts Rainier and Baker, and many other names, were introduced at this time. Between the years 1792 and 1824 very little historical activity took place in these waters. In the latter year the Hudson's Bay Company sent out an expedition from Fort Vancouver to seek a likely site for a new post, with the result that Fort Langley on the Fraser river was erected in 1827. Fort Nisqually, a post midway between Forts Langley and Vancouver, was erected in 1833. These forts were intended solely as fur-trading posts, but as fur-bearing animals in this region proved not numerous, the Company decided to embark upon an agricultural form of enterprise as a side line, which the growing markets of Russian America and Hawaii made profitable. Whidbey island is possessed of some 6,000 acres of rich prairie land adjacent to what is now the town of Coupeville, and upon this land the Company as early as 1834 had their eyes, as a probable site for an extensive farm. One event after another delayed them and the project was abandoned. The forties witnessed the coming of many immigrants, and one of them, Thomas Glasgow, in 1848, selected a claim on this prairie, built a cabin, planted potatoes, and is said to have gone so far as to locate a mill site, probably at the head of Penn Cove, at Coveland where a natural pocket reservoir makes possible the storage of tidewater. About this time Patkanim, chief of the Snoqualmie Indians, was making preparations to drive out the whites and Glasgow was forced to give up his intended home and return to Tumwater. There is a tradition that the Hudson's Bay Company played some part in Glasgow's ejection, but this is not definitely known. No further attempt at settlement was made until the arrival of Isaac N. Ebey, in 1850.

Isaac Neff Ebey was born in Franklin county, Ohio, January 21, 1818, son of Jacob and Sarah (Blue) Ebey. The father, Jacob Ebey, was born in Pennsylvania, October 22, 1793. He served in the war of 1812 under General William Henry Harrison and later commanded a company in the Black Hawk war in the same battalion with Abraham Lincoln. He had already migrated to Illinois (1832), and later went to Adair (now Schuyler) county, Missouri. There were at least five children: Isaac Neff, Winfield Scott, Mary, Ruth, and Jacob, Jr., who became a missionary and died in some bleak country from privations about 1848.

Isaac Neff Ebey appears to have been educated for the law—a profession easier to qualify for in his day than in ours—but it is doubtful if he practiced much. The wife of his choice was Rebecca Whitby Davis, born in Washington county, Virginia, December 28, 1822, daughter of James and Harriet (?) Davis, whom he married October 3, 1843. In Missouri two sons were born to them: Eason Benton, July 22, 1844, and Jacob Ellison, October 17, 1846.

In a letter to Winfield he says that his marriage was the means of his settling down, but just how much "settling down" he did before his removal to Whidbey island is not known, but it could not have been much, for in less than four years after his marriage we find him in an emigrant train bound across the plains for Oregon where he hoped to carve out a home for the Ebey and the Davises. By the time he had reached Oregon gold was being discovered in California, and thither he directed his steps, being lured on by the prospect of gaining a competence by a sudden turn of fortune. He is said to have been moderately successful there, but not sufficiently so to warrant a long stay. In the fall of 1849 he made his way to San Francisco, and there, in company with B. F. Shaw, Edmund Sylvester, S. Jackson and a man named Moore, he purchased the brig *Orbit* as a means of transporting himself and party to the Sound country, of which he had heard so much. The vessel arrived at Tumwater or New Market, in January, 1850, and was sold to Michael T. Simmons. A new settlement was in the process of formation on Budd inlet and Mr. Ebey is said to have been the one who suggested its name—Olympia. He acquired some property there, probably more as an investment than for a permanent home. During the following spring and summer he made a tour of exploration about the Sound for the purpose of securing an ideal farm site. He made extensive examination of the Duwamish, White and Puyallup river valleys. He introduced the name Duwamish river, spelled by him

"Dwams," and paddled for several hours on Lake Washington, which he christened "Lake Geneva." He appears to have been favorably impressed with the country where Seattle and Tacoma were later established, but decided that the land on Whidbey island offered the greatest immediate returns, and, accordingly, took up a claim under the Oregon Donation Land Law on the same land which the Hudson's Bay Company had once coveted and from which Glasgow had been ejected, filing on the same, October 15, 1850. Here he built a cabin, "batched it," put in some crops without the aid of horses or cattle, and made preparations to bring his wife, children, and the Davis and Ebey families to the new home. His letters, addressed to his brother Winfield, under whose special care his family were, indicate him to be a man of much sentiment and tenderness. In one letter bearing the date of April 25, 1851, he writes: "I scarcely know how I shall write or what I shall write. When I think of home, of father, and mother, sisters and brother, wife, children, and friends, my heart sinks within me; I can scarce find words to clothe my ideas, it seems so like writing to the dead, like addressing language to those who have passed the pale of mortality and gone to that 'bourne from whence no traveler returns.'"

Mrs. Ebey, with Eason and Ellison, in company with the Crockett family, had joined an emigrant train of 1851, and arrived in Olympia during the winter of 1851-52. Possibly Thomas Davis, a brother of Mrs. Ebey, came with them. At any rate, he is on the island with them in June, 1852. In March, 1852, the new arrivals were transported in a scow to the island where we find them at the time the diary commences. Between the settlement by Mr. Ebey and the arrival of his family there were already several other families securely settled. On February 10, 1851, Dr. Richard H. Lansdale took his first claim at Oak Harbor, and during that following summer assisted William Wallace to bring his family to a claim on Crescent Harbor, a name bestowed by Dr. Lansdale because of its shape. It is likely that Dr. Lansdale introduced the name Oak Harbor as well, because of the oak groves in the vicinity. Dr. Lansdale was joined during this year, 1851, by Martin Taftson, Clement W. Sumner and Ulric Friend.

From the time of his arrival on Puget Sound until his death Mr. Ebey was engaged in some form of public service, in which capacity he had the confidence of both those he represented and his superiors. He served as representative from Lewis (which then included Island) county, and drafted the memorial petitioning Congress to create a



new territory north of the Columbia river; became deputy collector of customs and later collector for the Puget Sound district; participated in the libelling of the Hudson's Bay Company's ships Beaver and Mary Dare for evading the customs laws; took an active part in the San Juan dispute; raised a company of volunteers for service in the Indian war which he commanded, in recognition of which service he was brevetted colonel. All this is a matter of public record, though only casual mention of these services can be made here.

The happy reunion of the families was hardly effected when a cruel fate commenced dissolution. Mrs. Harriet Davis, mother of Mrs. Rebecca Ebey, died on the plains during the migration of 1852-53. Mrs. Rebecca Ebey gave birth to a daughter, Sarah Harriet, May 26, 1853, and her health, never robust, gave way after this event, and she died, September 29, 1853. The young child was taken into the home of Mrs. Doyle, and died on February 21, 1861. Mr. Ebey married as his second wife a Mrs. Sconce, with one child. Thomas Davis, brother of Mrs. Rebecca Ebey, took up a claim, but never married. James was demented. George W. Ebey, a cousin of Isaac N. Ebey, and other cousins named Royal, came out in 1853. In 1854 seven Ebey's came to the island, including Isaac N. Ebey's father, Jacob, who died in February, 1862; his mother, Sarah Blue Ebey, who died in 1859; his brother, Winfield Scott Ebey, a refined but delicate man, who took up a claim and became a farmer; he kept an extensive diary until his death (of consumption) on February 21, 1865, at Petaluma, Cal., the remains being brought for burial in the cemetery near Coupeville. His sister, Ruth Ebey, who was deaf and dumb, and who met death by accident, falling from a bluff near San de Fuca, whither she had gone to gather berries; his sister, Mary Ebey, who had married a Mr. Wright, and her two children, Polk and Almira. Polk grew to manhood on the island and left for California. Almira married (1) George Beam, who came out with their party and who died on May 5, 1866; (2) a Mr. Enos. She came into possession of the extensive Ebey manuscripts. At her death the manuscripts and several cabinets filled with historical relics passed into the possession of her daughter, Mrs. John Allan Park, Hayward, California. Mrs. Wright had married as her second husband Urban E. Bozarth, who died on February 4, 1870. Mrs. Bozarth died on June 2, 1879.

Colonel Isaac N. Ebey was killed by northern Indians on one of their incursions into the Sound region to avenge the death of a chief who the year before was shot by the whites at Port Gamble.

According to their religion, a white chief must propitiate for the death of their chief. Colonel Ebey answered very nicely their conception of a white chief and became a marked man. On the day previous to his death the colonel, in company with Major Corliss, was out hunting and had stopped to take supper at the home of Mrs. Kineth near Sneightlem or Watsak point. At the time of the tragedy Major and Mrs. Corliss were guests at the Ebey home. During the day the Indians were encamped upon the beach at Ebey's Landing and made several visits to the house, ostensibly to borrow articles, but probably to acquaint themselves with the lay of the ground, plan of the house, etc. On one of these visits they inquired of Thomas Pier Hastie, who was working in the harvest field, for Mr. Ebey, if the colonel were a "tyee" or chief, and upon being answered in the affirmative, retired to the beach, well satisfied. Mrs. Corliss suspected evil intentions on the part of the Indians, and confided her views to the colonel, but he paid little attention to her, and said that all Indians were alike to him. The inmates retired rather late that evening. During the night a sharp pounding upon the door was commenced and the colonel arose, stepped out, and inquired what was wanted. Receiving no answer, he ventured further, when a shot was fired, which struck him in the head, leaving him in a dazed condition, so that he was unable to regain the entrance. In this dazed condition he wandered around the house. His wife heard him fall heavily against a window, which she unfastened, and shouted for him to climb in, but he was evidently too severely wounded to understand. The Indians pounced upon him and severed the head from the body in a manner indicating the expert work of head-hunters. The adult inmates of the house made for the Hill home, but the children in the excitement separated from them, ran to the woods nearby, where they were found with difficulty. Mrs. Corliss was severely hurt in climbing a fence during her flight. Mrs. Ebey's little girl suffered much from fright, and some say she never fully recovered. After the colonel's death Mrs. Ebey left the island.

Eason Benton Ebey attended the Territorial University of Washington. He married Annie Louise Judson, daughter of Holden A. and Phoebe (Newton) Judson, February 19, 1867, and took his wife to the Ebey farm and there lived until his death. Their children are: Effie Bell, now Mrs. Victor A. Roeder of Bellingham; Henrietta M., now Mrs. J. K. Robinson of Bellingham; Allan Ellison of San Francisco; and Roy L. of San Francisco. Jacob Ellison Ebey, never very robust, spent most of his adult years as a clerk in Major

Haller's store at Coupeville. He married a widow, Mrs. Mary Farker Van Wermer; their one child, Harold Ebey, lives in Oakland, California.

Allan Ellison Ebey loaned the original manuscript of his grandparents' diary long enough to have it copied and from that copy the document is here reproduced. In editing the diary, original sources have been used such as manuscripts by and personal interviews with Mrs. Phoebe N. Judson, Mrs. Jane Kineth, Thomas Pier Hastie, Samuel D. Crockett, Charles T. Terry, Mrs. Flora A. P. Engle and others. Those mentioned are pioneers familiar with early Whidby Island history. The manuscripts mentioned are in the Meany Collection, University of Washington Library, Seattle.

VICTOR J. FARRAR.

Towanacos June 1st 1852.

Morning very pleasant and calm, a Schooner seen this morning coming down on the tide. Suposed to be the H. B. C.<sup>1</sup> vessel from Nesqually— Sawing and Spliting board and paleing timber. Capt Hathaway<sup>2</sup> called to day on his way to Capt Bells.<sup>3</sup> Vessel still in sight this evening— very calm and a little cloudy—

---

<sup>1</sup>The Hudson's Bay Company.

<sup>2</sup>Captain Eli Hathaway was a widower from New England. He had two twin daughters, Josephine and Imogen, but they did not settle on the island. Josephine married a man named Brown of Olympia, and Imogen a man named Simonson of Seattle. Both are now dead, and neither left any heirs. Captain Hathaway took up a claim near Oak Harbor, where he lived with an Indian woman and by her had one son, George, who now resides on the island. The Captain became well known as sheriff and assessor. He was buried on his own claim.

<sup>3</sup>Captain George Bell was a romantic sea captain without family or connections and remained only a short time on the island. He built a cabin near the head of the cove, but took no claim, and spent most of his time in the employ of the Ebey family. He left shortly for the sea. See *post*, note 32.

<sup>4</sup>In the fall of 1851 the mate of the sloop *Georginia* exhibited gold nuggets procured by him from Queen Charlotte's island, and due to the excitement which followed the *Georginia* was chartered to take a Puget Sound party thither. Before reaching her destination she was wrecked and her party taken captive and held for ransom by Haidah Indians. To expedite the payment of the ransom the Indians permitted a small party to proceed to Port Simpson, but small relief was there afforded, for Captain McNeill, in charge, looked askance on a party of Americans who had the temerity to invade Hudson's Bay Company's territory. Fortunately for the gold-seekers, Captain Lafayette Balch, of the *Demaris* Cove, had boarded the *Georginia* while on her voyage north, and had promised to follow as soon as he could meet the collector of customs, Simpson P. Moses, who was on the *George Emory*, nearby. This done, Balch sailed to Queen Charlotte island, but hearing from other Indians of the fate of the *Georginia*, hastened to notify Collector Moses of that fact. Moses failed to get the required aid at Nisqually, another Hudson's Bay Company's post, and as the lives of the captives were in danger, he decided to perform a daring act. He chartered the *Demaris* Cove in the name of the government, fitted her out as a relief ship with soldiers from Fort Steilacoom, and issued a letter of credit on Victoria and Fort Simpson for the purpose of the necessary ransom presents. The expedition was successful, although the government failed to sanction the act and congress had to be memorialized to secure an appropriation for the expense. Two persons mentioned in the diary—Daniel Show and Samuel D. Howe—were among the captured.

June 2

Morneing cloudy, calm and warm a vessel in sight this morneing off the Straits Received intelligence this morning, of the arrival of the Schooner Damescore<sup>4</sup> at Port Townsend last evening in carage of Capt. Hathaway. Evening clear and pleasant The vessel which we saw in the Straits this morning has passed on up the Sound to day. All hands very tired; Work at board timber & other employments.—Hired some Indians to day to day to weed our onions the second time which are very foul. Afternoon light wind west.

3

Morning very pleasant and clear light wind west— examined a road to my cedar timber and weeding onions a brig in the Straits comeing on up with a fare wind, droped anchor at Port Townsend She provved to be the Sch "Mary Taylor,"<sup>5</sup> Mr Dray<sup>6</sup> comes over this Evening on his way to Port Townsend Mr Howe<sup>7</sup> and Holbrooks<sup>8</sup> called in

4th

Morneing very foggy Mr Crockett<sup>9</sup> raised his house to day day

<sup>5</sup>The schooner Mary Taylor was the first pilot boat on the Columbia river, but had been sold to Hastings, January 16, 1852, and placed on the run between Puget Sound and Portland.

<sup>6</sup>Identity not ascertained. He left for San Francisco soon after his arrival on the island. All portions of the Sound were being visited by hundreds of persons who were looking for homes. Some were content, but the majority left for other parts of the country. Whidbey island, despite its rich prairie land, failed to attract some persons because they did not care to locate on an island.

<sup>7</sup>Samuel D. Howe was one of the survivors of the ill-fated Georginia (see *ante*, note 4) and had just come to the island, where he took a claim. He held offices as county commissioner and territorial legislator, and in the Indian war became captain of Company I of the Northern Battalion. At its conclusion he with others made a treaty with several bands of Nez Perce Indians. He married a daughter of Captain Henry Swift.

<sup>8</sup>Richard Blackmer Holbrook was born at Plymouth, Mass., August 7, 1821, son of Richard and Nancy (?) Holbrook. He came to California during the gold rush of 1849, but remained only a short time, when he made for Puget Sound, where he took a donation land claim. While in the east he had made the acquaintance of Harriet P. Low, of Deer Island, Maine, born June 12, 1839, daughter of Nathan and Harriet (Tyler) Low. She came across the isthums of Panama to Puget Sound to become his bride. Five children were born to them: Nathan, Josephine, Horace, Mary Frances, and Richard B. Mr. Holbrook served two terms in the territorial legislature in the early sixties. He died in 1893. Mrs. Holbrook is still living at Coupeville.

<sup>9</sup>Colonel Walter Crockett, the progenitor of the family, was born at Shawsville, Va., January 29, 1786, son of Colonel Hugh Crockett, who fought in the Revolutionary war, and Rebecca Larton, of Holland descent, born in Jersey City. Colonel Walter C. fought in the war of 1812 under Captain and afterwards Governor Floyd of Virginia, and earned the distinction which made possible his election to the Virginia legislature for three terms. He married Mrs. Mary Black Ross, daughter of John Black, founder of Blacksburg, Virginia. Despite his personal successes in Virginia, he decided that his family would have a better chance in a new country, and accordingly moved west in 1838. He made two attempts at settlement in Missouri—in Boone and Putnam counties—but was not satisfied, and decided to try Oregon. His family prior to the exodus to Oregon consisted of Samuel B., born February 14, 1820; Charles, born June 14, 1821; Susanna H., born December 27, 1823; John, born August 27, 1826 (who had married Ann Crockett, a distant relative and namesake, born near Monticello, Kentucky, April 3, 1831, and had a son, Samuel D., born at



pleasant Mr Dray returned this Evening from Port Townsend Maj. Show<sup>10</sup> this Evening.

#### Saturday 5

Morneing Clear and pleasant working at my board timber day verry hot with a light west breeze, I think the is a vessel in sight this evening in the Straits— Dr Lansdale<sup>11</sup> over to see me this Evening—

#### Sunday 6

Morneing very pleasant— continued at home all day wrote seevral letters. Square rigged Brig came up this evening— day very pleasant.

#### Monday 7"

Weeding onions in the forenoon afternoon went over to Dr Lansdale to the Election a vessel seen going on up to day— Mr White and two other gentlemen came over to day from Port Townsend

#### Tuesday 8th

Day to windy to raft timber, working in the gardin all day— Wind this evening blowing quite hard and cool—

---

Centerville, Iowa, June 23, 1850); Hugh, born September 21, 1829; and Walter, Jr., born September 26, 1833. Samuel had started across the plains in 1844 to find out what inducements the new country offered, and arrived just in time to join the first migration led to the Puget Sound country, and with Michael T. Simmons and others settled near Tumwater in October, 1845. He wrote to his fatner in glowing terms of the new country, and the colonel with the remainder of family, in a party with Mrs. Ebey, Eason and Ellison, and possibly Thomas Davis, crossed the plains and arrived at Olympia during the winter of 1851-52. They came to the island in March, 1852. Here the colonel, John, Sam, Hugh and Charles took claims. Colonel Crockett died November 25, 1864. Samuel B. Crockett married Matilda Loyd. He died at Kent, Washington, November 27, 1903. He had no children. Charles never married. He died December 12, 1893. Susana marrid Samuel Hancock. She died January 8, 1901. She had no children but adopted a child. John had ten children: Samuel, who came across the plains; William, Sarah Frances, Susan Mary, Georgia Ann, Emma, Elizabeth Ellen, Jane de Vane, John Harvey, and Margaret. Hugh married Mrs. R. J. Bond, formerly Rachael Gook, but had no children. Walter, Jr., did not marry. He died August 19, 1903.

<sup>10</sup>Daniel Show had been one of the gold seekers on the ill-fated Georgia and was now satisfied to take up a claim and lead a peaceful life. He was not a major, that soubriquet having been bestowed upon him because of his affections and "big talk." He gave advice on all subjects and pretended to practice medicine, but with all his shortcomings he was keen as a money getter, and the best horse trader on the Sound. He took up a claim which overlapped the claim of the Powers family and considerable litigation followed. He won the suit, but soon afterwards disposed of his interest to the Powers' and left for California, where he died. In the meantime he had married a lady from Steilacoom, sister of J. Harvick. He had a son by the name of George.

<sup>11</sup>Richard Hyatt Lansdale was born in Maryland in 1812 and was educated for medicine. He was an enterprising man and made several migrations before he arrived on Whidbey island, going to Ohio, Illinois and Missouri. He went to California in 1849, then to Vancouver and finally to Whidbey island. In none of these migratory moves was he successful. He founded and named Oak Harbor, Crescent Harbor, Coveland; held many offices in the county and territory; and with others was an ardent advocate and promoter of roads. He left the island after the Indian war.

(Continued in the next issue.)

## BOOK REVIEWS

---

THE LIFE OF FATHER DE SMET, S. J., 1801-1873. By E. Laveille. Authorized translation by Marian Lindsay. Introduction by Charles Coppens, S. J. (New York, Kenedy, 1915. Pp. 400, \$2.75.)

The writer of this review first became interested in the career of Father De Smet as a result of his researches in preparation for his *American Fur Trade of the Far West*. He ran across the famous Jesuit's trail in so many and such interesting relations that he conceived a desire to assemble in compact form his manifold writings published and unpublished. When opportunity offered he undertook the work, associating with himself in it Mr. A. T. Richardson, whose wide reading and linguistic attainments particularly qualified him for the task. In due course the work was accomplished, resulting in four large volumes under the title *Life and Letters of Father De Smet*. As a popular biography it was precluded from general use by the high price of the work. This defect has recently been remedied by the publication of the work here under review, a compact volume of 400 pages, entitled *The Life of Father De Smet*, issued by P. J. Kenedy and Sons of New York.

As the title implies, this work is strictly a biography. In the form before us it is an English translation by Marian Lindsay from the original French by E. Laveille, S. J., published in Belgium, date not given but apparently shortly before the outbreak of the European War. The translation has an interesting introduction by Father Coppens referring to the origin of the work and giving a brief summary of Father De Smet's career. The book contains six illustrations, two of which, with the map showing the missionary's travels, first appeared in the Chittenden-Richardson work. The book contains a satisfactory index and a brief list of authorities.

As to the work itself, it is comprehensive and accurate and written in a pleasing and sympathetic style. It deals more with the religious side of Father De Smet's career than does the larger work already referred to, which was designed particularly to develop the historical value of De Smet's activities. On the whole it must be pronounced a creditable and useful production.

To the author as well as to the translator the appeal in Father De Smet's life was naturally that of his missionary work. To the

present writer the appeal was mainly his wonderful influence with the Indians. His missionary work was indeed successful wherever it had any chance to be, but it pertained to an element of population which has been completely submerged in the flood of colonization. Therefore, while the individual missions took deep root and still flourish, their relative importance is nothing to what their devoted founder at one time confidently expected of them. But their failure to realize his expectations was not in any sense his fault nor that of his system. It resulted from a tremendous movement over which he was able to exercise not the slightest control.

The greatest charm in Father De Smet's work, and, in the writer's opinion, the greatest utility, lay in his power over the Indians during the painful transition from the original tribal life to final subjection to the American government. Some of Father De Smet's exploits at this time must rank with the noblest deeds of heroism in American history. This is particularly true of his visit to the hostile Sioux in 1868. It is no exaggeration to say that no other white man could have performed that feat and lived. It is a beautiful tribute to the uprightness and unselfishness of the great missionary's character that he should have commanded, in a degree so far above that of any of his contemporaries, the affection and confidence of the tribes. And it is a proof which the historian, partial to the white race, will find it difficult to get over that the Indian Question might have been divested of much of its cruelty and savagery if the Indian had been dealt with upon principles of simple justice.

HIRAM M. CHITTENDEN.

---

THE VIGILANTES OF MONTANA. By Thomas J. Dimsdale. (Butte, Montana, W. F. Bartlett, 1915. Pp. 276. \$.75.)

THE VIGILANTES OF MONTANA. By Thomas J. Dimsdale. (Dillon, Montana, Al. J. Noyes, 1915. Pp. 290. \$2.50.)

The Vigilantes of Montana has served for many years as a source of inspiration to writers of stories of Western life. It contains a wealth of incident and local color. Charles Dickens is reputed to have said that it was the most interesting book that he had ever read. The work was first printed serially in 1865-66 in the Montana Post, the first Montana newspaper, of which the author was editor, and appeared in book form in 1866.

The Vigilantes were a secret organization of citizens whose purpose was to rid the mining camps about Bannack and Virginia City of desperadoes. Their activities extended from a time a few months

after the Montana gold rush of 1862 through the year 1865. This account of them was therefore written upon the scene and was practically contemporaneous.

Wilder and bloodier tales have never been told of any frontier mining camp in America. The narrator was a little, mild-mannered, English schoolmaster who could not even handle a gun; as different a type as possible from the rugged men who figured in his account, many of whom were his personal friends. He was able, however, to hold his own in a pioneer community and to describe its events as an actor in them could not have done. His literary equipment combined to an unusual degree the journalist's sense of human interest and the historian's fidelity to fact. His account of the establishment of law and order in pioneer days in Montana is justly prized for its historic value.

The first edition was published in 1866; a second in 1882. These have for some time been out of print and the demand for the book has now been met by the simultaneous appearance of two new editions. The "third printing" by W. F. Bartlett is a *fac simile* reproduction in paper covers of the first edition. Aside from the brief introduction by Librarian John F. Davies of the Butte Public Library, it has no notes nor other added material. The publisher is one of the oldest pioneers in Montana who was a resident of Virginia City in the days of the Vigilantes.

The cloth bound "third edition" is a more pretentious work containing many illustrations, footnotes and a ninety-page "History of Southern Montana" compiled by A. J. Noyes. This so-called history is made up of miscellaneous and detached bits of information relating to events from 1862 to 1865. In addition to reminiscences, many short documents are incorporated, such as letters, notes from court records, deeds, records of miners' meetings, the oath of the Vigilantes, mining laws, and a list of road agents compiled by Professor Garver. Careful proof reading and an index to the supplementary material would have added to the value of the book.

CHRISTINA DENNY SMITH.

---

HISTORY OF SEATTLE, FROM THE EARLIEST SETTLEMENT TO THE PRESENT TIME. By Clarence B. Bagley. (Chicago, The S. J. Clarke Publishing Company, 1916. Three volumes, pp. 885+1155. \$25.00.)

Mr. Bagley's life gave him unusual equipment for this task. He came to the Northwest while still a boy. He became a printer and newspaper man and as such he enjoyed the acquaintance of



many of the most prominent men and women among the pioneers. He has been an industrious collector of newspapers, pamphlets, books and manuscripts. Out of the abundance of his own memories and the collected writings of others he has drawn for the making of these books. He says that at first it was planned for him simply to supervise and edit the writings of others but at the last he had to do much of the writing himself.

The history part comprises 699 pages, embracing all of Volume I and the first half of Volume II. The author has divided this into thirty-eight chapters. A few of the chapter headings will give an idea of the swing of the books. They begin: "In the Beginning," "The Pioneer Period," "The Indian War Period," "The Indian Tribes and Chief Seattle," "Seattle's Mosquito Fleet," "Coal Mines and Coal Mining," "Washington State University."

After treating of various city interests, he harks back again and again to the beginnings. Chapter XXII deals with the "Mercer Expeditions" and Chapter XXXII is devoted to "Early and More Important City Plats." In almost every case the individual chapters contain exhaustive information that will prove of value to all future writers on these subjects.

Each of the volumes has an index and all three of them are abundantly illustrated. The frontispiece in Volume I is a portrait of the author. That in Volume II is a portrait of Rev. Daniel Bagley, father of the author; that in Volume III is a portrait of Horace C. Henry, well known Seattle capitalist and philanthropist; the first portrait and biography in the biographical section is that of Thomas Mercer, father of Mrs. Clarence B. Bagley.

Many of the illustrations are rare views of the city in its older periods and, of course, pictures of buildings of the present are included. All of them will have an increasing value and interest.

The author makes the following acknowledgment: "Messrs. Welford Beaton, Floyd C. Kaylor and Victor J. Farrar have done much work in its preparation and the writer's thanks are also here extended to Judge Roger S. Greene, Dr. H. Eugene Allen and Messrs. Harry W. Bringham and A. A. Braymer for notable aid and kindly counsel during the progress of the work."

Volumes I and II have Mr. Bagley's name on the back and on the title page. The copyright notice is also in his name. Volume III does not have his name on the back or on the title-page. He has no copyright notice in this volume. Without his having said so in words, these omissions seem to be evidence that Mr. Bagley is not

the author of the large collection of portraits and biographies paid for by the individuals or their families. Every time a fresh scheme of this kind is perpetrated the cry goes up: "When will our people's vanity cease to be exploited?" Friends of Mr. Bagley might well wish that his name were even more completely divorced from the paid write-ups.

Mr. Bagley's elaborate and extensive history of Seattle calls renewed attention to the need of a brief and inexpensive history of the city. His researches will probably facilitate the preparation of such a book.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

---

HAMMOND, JOHN MARTIN. *Quaint and Historic Forts of North America.* (Philadelphia, J. B. Lippincott Company, 1915. Pp. 309. \$5.00 net.)

This volume is an interesting example of the wide range of the bookmaker's field. No one who has ever visited one of the old historic forts but has wondered how the others resembled it or differed. The present volume answers in part that query. It is a journey, so to speak, to all the historic forts in North America. Each is introduced by a brief historical sketch setting forth the importance of the fort, the date and circumstances of its building, and for those interested in its technical phases, a description is added that will appeal to military engineers as a basis of comparison. Most of the descriptions are accompanied by handsome illustrations that add greatly to the value of the book. In the case of some of the western forts, and Fort Vancouver is among them, no illustrations accompany the sketch. The book typographically is an excellent specimen of the printer's art.

EDWARD McMAHON.

---

WAILATPU, ITS RISE AND FALL, 1836-1847. By Miles Cannon. (Boise, Idaho, Capital News Job Rooms, 1915. Pp. 171. 75 cents.)

With fine letter-press and twenty-four good half-tones Mr. Cannon has told the tragic story of the famous Whitman massacre. He is sympathetic in his treatment of the theme. He also fortifies his conclusions with abundant documents. The story is again told of the journey to the west and of the interesting developments down to the awful massacre which is given with unusual minutia. The book ends with the execution of five Indians convicted of crime.

Mr. Cannon's book will be received as a valuable and interesting addition to the growing literature about Whitman and his as-

sociates. The author was especially impressed by the character of Mrs. Whitman, of whom he writes: "In searching through the darkened corridors of the past, it has been a source of much gratification to the author to find in Narcissa Prentiss Whitman a character well intended to exemplify the higher and nobler qualities of our race. It was her great privilege to be the first American woman to cross the continent and look upon the waters of the Columbia river, and that fact alone would entitle her to distinction. But when, moreover, the records of the past reveal in her the beautiful personality we so much admire, and the womanly qualities we would perpetuate, it would be strange indeed if her followers, actuated by her untimely death and the serene and courageous manner in which she faced it, failed to confer upon her, in love and memory, the mystic crown of martyrdom."

---

TERTIARY FAUNAL HORIZONS OF WESTERN WASHINGTON. By Charles E. Weaver. (Seattle, University of Washington, 1916. Pp. 67.)

Eocene of the Lower Cowlitz River Valley, Washington; The Post Eocene Formations of Western Washington; The Oligocene of Kitsap County, Washington. By Charles E. Weaver. (San Francisco, California Academy of Sciences, 1916. Pp. 52.)

Here are four studies by Charles E. Weaver, Assistant Professor of Geology, University of Washington. The first study carries five plates of illustrations and the second group of three studies is accompanied by maps. The work appeals more directly to geologists but historians of the Northwest will also rejoice over the light thus thrown on prehistoric conditions.

---

ANDERSON, DICE ROBINS, PH. D. William Branch Giles: A Study in the Politics of Virginia and the Nation from 1790 to 1830. (Menasha, Wis., George Banta Publishing Company, 1914. Pp. 271.)

Professor Anderson of Richmond College, Virginia, presents an interesting account of one of the most vigorous of Jefferson's many lieutenants in furthering the work of the Republican-Democratic party. Because of his vigorous and cutting tongue, Giles has been dealt with rather severely by the New England and Federalist historians and in a measure Professor Anderson comes to his rescue. Taking into full account the facts in the case, he gives as favorable a view of Giles as is possible, but after all is said and done it is hard

to conceive of Giles as a statesman. He belongs rather to the ranks of those extremely active, vindictive, unrelenting party zealots, rather above the average in ability. The volume throws a good deal of light on the internal workings of Virginia politics and is intelligently and carefully done.

---

SCROGGS, WILLIAM O., PH D. *Filibusters and Financiers. The Story of William Walker and His Associates.* (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 408.)

Those who are interested in the past relations of the United States with the countries to the south of us will find the story of William Walker and his associates interesting, and perhaps more interesting still is that part of the story that deals with the financiers who were the important characters behind the scenes. William Walker has heretofore been a somewhat vague personality, moving along the shadowy edges of our history. Professor Scroggs brings him to the center of the stage where we all can see him and the loose jointed international morality of his age.

---

THE NEW REGIME, 1765-1767. Edited by Clarence Walworth Alvord and Clarence Edwin Carter. (Springfield, Illinois State Historical Library, 1916. Pp. 700.)

Besides the value of the scholarly work and the historical content of this volume, it is an inspiration and a hope that other states may in time secure facilities for publishing their annals in an equally sensible and serviceable style. The work is devoted to the Illinois region.

---

A NEW LEWIS AND CLARK MAP. By Annie Heloise Abel. (New York, American Geographical Society, 1916. Pp. 329-345, reprinted from the *Geographical Review* for May, 1916.)

Doctor Abel, formerly of Goucher College, is now Associate Professor of History at Smith College. She has made a number of scholarly studies of historical materials in the United States Indian Office and now gives the world another in this discussion of a manuscript map recently found in that same repository. She does not reach a positive conclusion, but closes her study as follows: "All these things bear witness to the great historical value of the Indian Office map, for, even if it should not be the original map sent by Jefferson to Lewis, it is the most detailed primary source for geo-



graphical knowledge of the Missouri River country that has yet been forthcoming. There is a bare possibility that it was made by or under the direction of Lewis and Clark themselves before they started up the Missouri, being to them a composite itinerary map."

---

SANDFORD FLEMING, EMPIRE BUILDER. By Lawrence J. Burpee. (London, Humphrey Milford, 1915. Pp. 288. \$3.40 net.)

Sandford Fleming was a fine type of the constructive pioneers of Canada. He came from Scotland while a young man in 1845. In his old age he gave over to Mr. Burpee the necessary information and documents for the making of this book. It was completed but not published before the pioneer's death.

Westerners will find the book interesting, for there are such chapters as "The Canadian Pacific Railway," "Ocean to Ocean in 1872," "Over the Mountains by the Kicking Horse," "The Pacific Cable" and "A Diplomatic Mission to Honolulu."

The book is well printed and there are a number of fine half-tone illustrations of historic significance.

---

WRITINGS OF JOHN QUINCY ADAMS. Edited by Worthington C. Ford. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 573. \$3.50.)

Volume VI completes the first half of this most important series. The years covered in this volume are 1816-1819. John Quincy Adams spent fifty years of his eventful life in the public service. He was a consistent and persistent friend of the Northwest.

---

CLUB STORIES. By Washington State Federation of Women's Clubs. (Seattle, Lowman & Hanford, 1915. Pp. 94. \$1.00.)

This little volume contains twenty-two short stories written by Washington club women in a state literature contest. The plot of each story is laid in the state of Washington. As a result, the stories are full of local color and have a value quite apart from their literary worth.

---

INDIAN MYTHS OF THE NORTHWEST. By William D. Lyman. (Worcester, Massachusetts, American Antiquarian Society, Proceedings, Volume 25, Part 2, October 20, 1915. Pp. 375-395.)

Professor Lyman of Whitman College opens this paper as follows: "Since the publication of the book on the Columbia River

by the writer, so many inquiries have come in asking for the original sources of Indian Myths that I am offering this attempt to answer in part these inquiries." His paper is therefore very largely a bibliographical study, though he also discusses briefly the value and meaning of Indian myths. He also calls attention to a number of aboriginal geographical names.

---

ANNUAL MAGAZINE SUBJECT INDEX, 1915.—Edited by Frederick Winthrop Faxon. (Boston, The Boston Book Company, 1916. Pp. 269.)

The Northwest is interested in this publication since the magazines indexed include the Oregon Historical Society Quarterly and the Washington Historical Quarterly.

---

#### Other Books Received

BUFFINGTON, ARTHUR HOWLAND. New England and the Western Fur Trade, 1629-1675. (Cambridge, John Wilson and Son, 1916. Reprinted from the Proceedings of The Colonial Society of Massachusetts, Volume XVIII. Pp. 160-192.)

CALIFORNIA SOCIETY, SONS OF THE REVOLUTION. The Spirit of Patriotism as evidenced by the Revolutionary and ancestral records of the Society. (Los Angeles, The Society, 1915. Pp. 512. \$7.50.)

CANADIAN DEPARTMENT OF MINES. Summary Report of the Geological Survey for the Calendar Year 1915. (Ottawa, Government Printer, 1916. Pp. 307.)

CHICAGO HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Annual report, 1915. (Chicago, The Society, 1915. Pp. 120.)

CONFERENCE OF WESTERN GOVERNORS. Proceedings, 1915. (Olympia, Frank M. Lamborn, Public Printer, 1915. Pp. 97.)

ELIOT, SAMUEL A. Report upon the conditions and needs of the Indians of the Northwest Coast. (Washington, D. C., 1915. Pp. 28.)

ESAREY, LOGAN. Indiana local history, a guide to its study with some bibliographical notes. (Bulletin of Extension Division, Indiana University, March, 1916. Pp. 19.)

FERREE, BARR. A kalendar for Pennsylvania, 1915. (New York, Pennsylvania Society, 1916. Pp. 23.)

HISTORIC LANDMARKS ASSOCIATION OF CANADA. Annual report, 1915. (Ottawa, George H. Popham, Printer, 1915. Pp. 20.)

KETCHAM, WILLIAM H. Conditions on the Flathead and Fort Peck Indian Reservations. (Washington, D. C., Board of Indian Commissioners, 1915. Pp. 93.)

LOUISIANA HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Publications, Volume 8, 1914-15. (New Orleans, The Society, 1916. Pp. 124.)

MYRES, JOHN LINTON. The Influence of Anthropology on the Course of Political Science. (Berkeley, University of California Publications in History, 1916. Pp. 81. \$.75.)

ONONDAGA HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION. Annual volume, 1914. (Syracuse, Dehler Press, 1914. Pp. 214.)

PACIFIC COAST ASSOCIATION OF FIRE CHIEFS. Proceedings of the twenty-third annual convention. (Seattle, H. W. Bringham, Secretary, 1916. Pp. 68.)

ROGERS, LINDSAY. The Postal Power of Congress. (Baltimore, Johns Hopkins Press, 1916. Pp. 189.)

ROSE, J. HOLLAND. Nationality in Modern History. (New York, 1916. The Macmillan Company. Pp. 202. \$1.25.)

SOCIETY OF PENNSYLVANIA WOMEN IN NEW YORK. Manual, 1916. (New York, The Society, 1916. Pp. 12.)

UNITED HISTORICAL AND PATRIOTIC SOCIETIES AND ASSOCIATIONS OF NEW YORK. The Need of a History of New York. (New York, Harper, 1915. Pp. 55.)

WISCONSIN HISTORICAL SOCIETY. The Keyes and the Civil War Manuscript Collections in the Wisconsin Historical Library. Bulletin of Information, No. 81. (Madison, Wis. The Society, 1916. Pp. 20.)

WESTERN RESERVE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Annual Report for 1914-1915, Containing Letters from the Samuel Huntington Correspondence, 1800-1812. (Cleveland, The Society, 1915. Pp. 172.)

WOMEN'S CANADIAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF TORONTO. Annual report, 1914-1915. (Toronto, Univ. of Toronto Press, 1915. Pp. 26.)

WRIGHT, PHILIP QUINCY. The Enforcement of International Law through Municipal Law in the United States. (Urbana, University of Illinois Studies in the Social Sciences, March, 1916. Pp. 264. \$1.25.)

## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### Important Recruit to Northwestern Historians

Thomas Maitland Marshall, Ph. D., has been added to the faculty of the University of Idaho as an assistant to Professor Edward M. Hulme of the department of history. Doctor Marshall is a University of California man and through the press of that institution he issued a work in 1914 which brought forth much favorable comment. The work is entitled "A History of the Western Boundary of the Louisiana Purchase, 1819-1841." It was reviewed in this Quarterly, Volume VI, Number 2 (April, 1915), pages 126-127. He has come to a rich field in which to gather more fruits of scholarship.

---

### Professor David Remains in the Northwest

Charles Wendell David, of Wisconsin, Oxford and Harvard, substituted during the year 1915-1916 for Ralph H. Lutz on the faculty of the University of Washington while Doctor Lutz served Stanford University. Mr. David's work was so satisfactory that a permanent place was offered to him in the University of Washington. He has accepted, although in doing so he had to decline positions offered him in other institutions. Doctor Lutz will also resume his work in the University of Washington at the opening of the next academic year.

---

### A Japanese Graduate in History

Among the students who received their Master of Arts degree at the University of Washington in 1916 was a Japanese named Nuinosuke Kobayashi, whose thesis was written on the subject: "Abraham Lincoln and Slavery." His graduate work was done under the direction of Professor Edward McMahon.

---

### First Victoria Directory

The Library of the University of Washington has been enriched by a copy of the first Victoria Directory, published in March, 1860. It was presented by Mrs. Sarah Phillips, whose husband was the son of Alexander Phillips, one of the early settlers of Victoria. The author of the book was Edward Mallandaine, whose preface begins: "It has been thought by the author of the following work that the



present being an age of advancement, the period has fully arrived when our fair town of Victoria is of sufficient importance to deserve that index of commercial progress, a Directory." The little book has a great interest for all old Puget Sounders. The outside covers have advertisements for Josiah L. Lecount, importer of books, San Francisco; Royal Hotel, Wharf Street, Victoria, V. I., James Wilcox, Proprietor; Curtis & Moore, Druggists, Yates Street, Victoria, V. I. The "V. I." shows the unit of government as Vancouver Island before the province of British Columbia was organized.

---

#### **Lectures on Latin-America**

Professor Percy Alvin Martin of Stanford University is giving two courses in the University of Washington during the summer session. One course deals with the History of South America and the other with Latin-American Institutions. Doctor Martin was a lecturer on Latin-American History at Harvard University in 1915. He is now devoting his whole time to that field of historical work.

---

#### **Pioneers Hold Annual Meeting**

Judge Thomas Burke was the principal speaker at the annual meeting of the Pioneer Association of the State of Washington on June 7. At the business meeting held on the previous day, officers were elected as follows: President, Edmond S. Meany; Vice-President, George H. Foster; Secretary, Major W. V. Rinerhart; Treasurer, William M. Calhoun; Trustees: M. R. Maddocks, Leander Miller, Frank H. Winslow, James McComb and W. H. Pumphrey.

---

#### **Spokane Historical Society**

The society recently organized with the above name has its headquarters in the Spokane Public Library. The officers are as follows: President, N. W. Durham; First Vice-President, W. D. Vincent; Second Vice-President, Mrs. E. F. Rue; Corresponding Secretary, William S. Lewis; Recording Secretary, George W. Fuller; Treasurer, B. L. Gordon; Trustees: Rev. Jonathan Edwards, N. W. Durham, B. L. Gordon, W. D. Vincent, Rev. J. Neilson Barry, Mrs. E. F. Rue, Harl J. Cook, E. I. Seehorn, William S. Lewis, Major R. D. Gwydir and Garrett B. Hunt.

---

#### **Historical Meeting in Spokane**

The Northwestern Association of History, Government and Economic Teachers held its spring meeting in Spokane on the 19th and

20th of April. The first session was a joint meeting with the Washington State Historical Society. The Hon. George Turner of Spokane presided and the program was as follows:

Some Source Material for Northwestern History—Mr. T. C. Elliott, Walla Walla.

Old Spokane House and the Fur-Traders—Mr. N. W. Durham, Spokane.

Flotsom and Jetsom on the Sands of Time—Rev. J. Neilson Barry, Spokane.

Work of the State Historical Society—Secretary W. P. Bonney, Tacoma.

The meeting on the 20th was presided over by Professor C. S. Kingston, President of the Association, and the following program was given:

The Open Door Policy—Professor F. A. Golder, State College of Washington.

The Use of the War News in Schools—Professor J. H. Underwood, University of Montana.

Round Table: How to Bring the Claims of History Instruction before the Educational Authorities—Led by Prof. Leroy F. Jackson, State College of Washington.

At the business session that followed the program Professor Jackson was appointed to head a committee of his choosing to formulate the aims of history teaching and bring them to the attention of educators and the public. The following officers were elected: President, Miss Adella Parker, Seattle; Vice-President, Professor H. L. Talkington, Lewiston, Idaho; Secretary-Treasurer, Professor Leroy F. Jackson, State College of Washington.

---

#### **Professor Golder Goes East**

Professor Frank A. Golder of the State College of Washington is teaching history during the summer session at the University of Boston. That invitation is a deserved recognition of his fine ability.

---

#### **Living Pioneers of Washington**

In this Quarterly for January, 1916, pages 87-89, and for April, 1916, pages 178-180, there were published lists of biographical sketches of living pioneers of the Pacific Northwest and especially of Washington. The series of articles, written by the editor of this Quarterly, appeared on the editorial page of the Seattle Post-Intelligencer. From October 28, 1915, to June 3, 1916, the articles pub-

lished numbered one hundred and eighty-nine. After June 3, the articles were discontinued on account of the Post-Intelligencer's need of space during the present political campaign. The list of the articles published from April 1 to June 3, 1916, is here given with the present address of the pioneers:

- April 1, Cyrus A. D'Arcy, Anacortes, Wash.
- April 3, Mrs. Ann Elizabeth White Bigelow, Olympia, Wash.
- April 4, Mr. and Mrs. John Alexander, Olympia, Wash.
- April 5, Samuel B. Best, Anacortes, Wash.
- April 6, Alexander Spithill, Marysville, Wash.
- April 7, Mr. and Mrs. Austin Mires, Ellensburg, Wash.
- April 8, L. A. Treen, Stanwood, Wash.
- April 10, Mrs. Mary Perry Frost, Hillhurst, Wash.
- April 11, Mrs. India Ann Hicks, Lacey, Wash.
- April 12, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph T. Chilcoat, Randle, Wash.
- April 13, Mr. and Mrs. John M. Lyon, Seattle.
- April 14, L. W. D. Shelton, Baker City, Oregon.
- April 15, Mr. and Mrs. J. O. Rudene, LaConner, Wash.
- April 17, Mr. and Mrs. Benjamin F. Dean, Blyn, Wash.
- April 18, W. H. Davis, Kirkland, Wash.
- April 19, Frederick Roberts, Port Angeles, Wash.
- April 20, George H. Himes, Portland, Oregon.
- April 21, Merrill D. Whittier, Riverton, Wash.
- April 22, R. J. Gwydir, Spokane, Wash.
- April 24, Mr. and Mrs. J. F. Dwelley, LaConner, Wash.
- April 25, George W. Runnells, Tonasket, Wash.
- April 26, Mrs. Mary Ann St. Germain, Tacoma, Wash.
- April 27, Gwin Hicks, Lacey, Wash.
- April 28, Mrs. Annie Frost Macleay, Olympia, Wash.
- April 29, William Goldmyer, Gate, Wash.
- May 1, Mrs. Calista A. Lovejoy Leach, Coupeville, Wash.
- May 2, Charles McKay, Friday Harbor, Wash.
- May 3, Mrs. Mary Throssell, Roy, Wash.
- May 4, Alonzo Low, Snohomish, Wash.
- May 5, Mr. and Mrs. David Layson Matheny, Tacoma, Wash.
- May 6, Mr. and Mrs. P. Halloran, Edison, Wash.
- May 8, Newton J. Ward, Chelan, Wash.
- May 9, P. B. Van Trump, R. F. D. 4, Binghamton, N. Y.
- May 10, Mrs. Eunice Winsor, Shelton, Wash.
- May 11, Samuel D. Crockett, Seattle.
- May 12, Mrs. Margaret H. Gilbreath, Dayton, Wash.

- May 13, Mrs. J. Patton Anderson, Palatka, Fla.  
May 15, Henry Jackson, Hoodspout, Wash.  
May 16, Michael T. Simmons, Jr., Ellensburg, Wash.  
May 17, Mrs. L. D. Williams, Ilwaco, Wash.  
May 18, Mrs. Lucinda Sargent, Rochester, Wash.  
May 19, William Whitfield, Snohomish, Wash.  
May 20, Gustave Rosenthal, Olympia, Wash.  
May 22, Mr. and Mrs. Thomas H. Stephens, Acme, Wash.  
May 23, Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Wiles, Seattle.  
May 24, David S. Troy, Chimacum, Wash.  
May 25, Mrs. John G. Parker, Olympia, Wash.  
May 26, Mrs. Mary Jane Hayden, Seattle.  
May 27, Mr. and Mrs. Daniel Shaner, Mossyrock, Wash.  
May 29, Alfred Eugene Thurlow, Seattle.  
May 30, Samuel K. Taylor, Kamilche, Wash.  
May 31, John V. Campbell, Lilloet, B. C.  
June 1, Mrs. Susan Mary Stringer, Walla Walla, Wash.  
June 2, Mr. and Mrs. Michael D. Morrison, Seattle.  
June 3, Mrs. George H. Foster, Colby, Wash.



## NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS

---

[The aim of this department is to furnish outlines that will aid those who wish to study the subject systematically. It is expected that its greatest use will be as a guide for members of women's clubs, literary societies, and classes in colleges or high schools. It will be a form of university extension without the theses and examinations necessary for the earning of credits toward a degree.]

---

### XIX. The Turbulent Decade

1. Agitation for Statehood.
  - a. Constitution of 1878.
    - i. Convention at Walla Walla June 11 to July 27.
    - ii. Delegates present from "Panhandle" of Idaho.
    - iii. Prohibition submitted as supplemental article.
    - iv. Woman suffrage submitted as supplemental article.
    - v. Constitution approved by the people.
    - vi. Prohibition and woman suffrage defeated by the people.
  - b. Admission to statehood refused by Congress.
2. Woman Suffrage.
  - a. Agitation continued.
  - b. Granted by Territorial law, Nov. 28, 1883.
  - c. Women voted in elections of 1884 and 1886.
  - d. Law declared null by Territorial Supreme Court.
    - i. Decision dated January 3, 1887.
3. Prohibition.
  - a. Agitation continued.
  - b. Independent political action by Prohibitionists.
4. Railroad Excitement.
  - a. Efforts to secure railroads.
  - b. Last Spike celebrations, September, 1883.
  - c. Agitation for forfeiture of unearned land grants.
    - i. "Under a Black Cloud," campaign, 1884.
    - ii. C. S. Voorhees, Democrat, elected to Congress.
5. Anti-Chinese Riots.
  - a. Agitation against Chinese labor, 1885.
  - b. All Chinese driven from Tacoma, Nov. 3, 1885.
  - c. Riot quelled in Seattle, February 8, 1886.
  - d. Disturbances elsewhere.

6. Year of Fires, 1889.
    - a. At Seattle, June 6.
    - b. At Ellensburg, July 4.
    - c. At Spokane, August 4.
    - d. At Vancouver, same year.
      - i. Business section of each city destroyed.
  7. Statehood Achieved.
    - a. Continuous agitation.
    - b. Congress passed Enabling Act, February 22, 1889.
    - c. Governor's proclamation to elect delegates, April 15, 1889.
    - d. Constitutional convention at Olympia.
      - i. Assembled July 4, 1889.
      - ii. Work completed, August 22.
    - e. Woman suffrage and prohibition again submitted as supplemental articles.
    - f. Election, October 1, 1889.
      - i. Constitution approved by 40,152 for and 11,879 against.
      - ii. Prohibition and woman suffrage defeated.
    - g. State admitted, November 11, 1889.
- 

BIBLIOGRAPHY.—Most libraries will have some of the books or newspapers necessary for a study of this period. The following citations may prove helpful:

BANCROFT, HUBERT HOWE.—Works of, Volume XXXI (History of Washington, Idaho and Montana). Chapter IX, pages 301-392, entitled "Progress and Statehood," deals with the latter portion of this syllabus.

CONSTITUTION OF 1878.—A pamphlet edition of this constitution was issued at the time. It is now rare, but when found it will prove interesting as a comparison with what was finally adopted as the constitution in 1889.

KINNEAR, GEORGE.—Anti-Chinese Riots. On the twenty-fifth anniversary of the Seattle riots (February 8, 1911) Mr. Kinnear published a little book of seventeen pages giving a record of the event. He commanded the Home Guards during the riot. Wherever the book is available it will be found helpful in this study.

MEANY, EDMOND S.—Governors of Washington. The biographies of Governors Ferry, Newell, Squire, Semple and Moore should be read.

MEANY, EDMOND S.—History of the State of Washington.—Chapters XXV and XXVI deal with the "Turbulent Decade" and the movement toward statehood.

NEWSPAPERS.—In some of the larger libraries and in some of the newspaper offices files of the papers may be consulted. These would give about the only extended accounts of the great fires of 1889 and, of course, they would prove of great use whenever files covering the other events can be found.

STATE DOCUMENTS.—A few of the larger libraries have the laws, court reports and other documents bearing upon this field, especially on the portion pertaining to woman suffrage.

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Board of Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
J. N. BOWMAN, Seattle.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	OLIVER H. RICHARDSON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
E. O. S. SCHOLEFIELD, Victoria, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VII. NO. 4.

OCTOBER, 1916

*ISSUED QUARTERLY*

## Contents

JOHN E. SMITH .....	A Pioneer of the Spokane Country	267
C. L. ANDREWS .....	Alaska Under the Russians—Industry, Trade and Social Life	278
JOHNSON WILLIAMS .....	Black Tamanous, the Secret Society of the Clallam Indians..	296
HENRY L. TALKINGTON .....	Mullan Road .....	301
DOCUMENTS—Diary Kept by Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar .....		307
BOOK REVIEWS .....		322
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		320
NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS .....		332
INDEX, VOLUME VII .....		336

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

Entered at the postoffice at Seattle as second-class mail matter.



# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### A PIONEER OF THE SPOKANE COUNTRY\*

I was born at Newark, New Jersey, on June 8th, 1835. My parents were both Scotch; my mother was Margaret Easton; my father, John Smith. As a small boy I was often on the boats about Newark and Passaic, New Jersey. In 1849, when I was a lad of fourteen years, I sailed from New York for California as cabin boy on the *Mary and Adeline*, a government transport that brought out some troops to California. If I recall correctly, these were two companies of the 2nd Infantry. We went around the Horn. This was my first experience at sea,

In California I shipped on the steamboat *McKinnon*, carrying freight and passengers from San Francisco to Sacramento. Later I went from Sacramento to the North Fork of American River, where I placer mined. From there I went to Colma, on the South Fork, where Sutter had his saw mill, and in the mill race of which the first gold had been discovered.

In 1852, I went by boat from Humboldt Bay, California, to a mining town called Trinidad; then from there to Salmon River; from there to Scott's River; from there to Yreka, California; and from there overland to Jacksonville, Jackson County, Oregon. At Jacksonville, I freighted from Crescent City, on the coast near the California line, to Jacksonville. In 1854, I joined a company made up at Jacksonville and organized by Captain Jackson—the 2nd Oregon Militia—if I remember correctly. The company was used as an escort to go out on the plains and meet settlers coming to Oregon by the Southern route. In 1853, or 1856, the Rogue River war broke out

---

\* This relation was made by John E. Smith of Reardon, Washington, to William S. Lewis, Corresponding Secretary of the Spokane Historical Society. The text is given in the words of Mr. Smith and signed with his name. The footnotes are by Mr. Lewis, to whom the Quarterly is indebted for the article.—Editor.

and many settlers were killed by the Indians. I joined the Oregon Volunteer Militia and worked in the Quartermaster's Department and had charge of the freight outfit under Captain Jesse Walker. We did everything then with pack animals. I have my discharge papers yet. I had served in the Rogue River Indian War of 1853-55.

In 1857, I was working on the Silets Reservation, in Oregon. I went from there on horseback to Vancouver, Wash., where I was hired by the government to help drive some cattle to Fort Walla Walla—I have forgotten the name of the Lieutenant in charge.

Arriving at Fort Walla Walla, I worked around the post for a year, looking after cattle and horses and packing, in the capacity of an assistant pack or wagon master. When Col. Wright left Fort Walla Walla in 1858, I accompanied his force. If I remember correctly, there were 404 men under his command at that time; four companies of dragoons; two or three companies of artillery; and two or three companies of infantry.<sup>1</sup> I worked under Ben Drew as assistant pack master of one of the pack trains. There were about 100 mules in our train, and probably 200 or more mules in all the pack trains.<sup>2</sup> Each company had a pack train to carry the company baggage, rations and supplies.

In marching, our formation was a couple of companies of dragoons ahead; then the artillery, all the artillery men being afoot and equipped as infantry; then the pack trains composed of 200 or more animals; and a rear guard of a couple of companies of dragoons. In marching, we were strung out over the country for probably a mile. Leaving Fort Walla Walla, we went down Two Canyon<sup>3</sup> where we crossed the Snake River. From the Snake River we struck north to the Palouse River, then across to Cow Creek. From Cow Creek our next camp was at Lagoon Springs; then we moved on to a lake; I think this lake is now known as Fish Trap Lake; this was our next camp. Here we had a brush with the Indians, the first we had seen

<sup>1</sup> The expedition consisted of companies C, E, H and I, First Dragoons; companies A, B, G, K and M, Third Artillery; companies B and E, Ninth Infantry; and thirty Nez Perce Indians and three chiefs to act as guides. The latter were under the command of Lieutenant Mullan. The dragoons numbered 190, the artillery 400 and the infantry 90—a total of 680 soldiers. Besides these, there were 200 attaches, distributed as packers, wagon masters, herders, etc. Joe Craig, a son of Colonel William Craig; Donald McKay, son of the Astor partner of that name; and Cut Mouth John, a Umatilla Indian, were also taken along as interpreters. See Lawrence Kip, *Army Life on the Pacific*, (N. Y., Redfield, 1859), pp. 31, 44, 45, and 143.

<sup>2</sup> The pack trains numbered about 400 animals consisting of C. P. Higgins' train of 90 mules, Dan Rathborn's 90 mules, Tom Buell's 90 mules, and those of Ben Drew.

<sup>3</sup> The Tucannon. Colonel Wright established a camp at the Snake River crossing at the mouth of the Tucannon river which he called Camp Taylor. Here he left a guard consisting of Company D, Third Artillery.

since leaving the Snake River.<sup>4</sup> The country thereabouts is rocky and scabby, and some of the Indians got on the high rocks and shot into camp several times; a company of dragoons was sent after them, but as far as I know, no one was hurt on either side. Our camp at the lake was then called Poison Camp.<sup>5</sup> One of the soldiers gathered a mess of wild parsnips, and ate them; they killed him. He was buried there, hence the name. From this camp we moved on to the Four Lakes Country; we camped at the southwest end of the East Lake, which, I believe, is known as Clear Lake.<sup>6</sup> From Poison Camp we saw Indians in bunches of two or three on the hills all day until we reached Clear Lake.

At Clear Lake there is quite a hill on the East which sloped towards our camp. We camped there four or five days, nearly a week. While there the Indians would collect on this hill during the day in bunches of 50 or 60; occasionally some would make a feint of riding down towards our camp. At last Colonel Wright started four companies of dragoons out after them. They lit out. It was reported that the dragoons killed about 20 indians.<sup>7</sup> This was the battle of Four Lakes.

From Clear Lake we came east across white bluff plains to what was later known as Head's ranch. Coming from Clear Lake we had another brush with the Indians.<sup>8</sup> The Indians set fire to the prairie grass ahead of the soldiers. The fight was about where Head's place is. I saw one dead Indian. It was reported that several were killed.<sup>9</sup> I was, of course, with the pack trains, and was not doing any of the fighting. If I remember aright, we struck and crossed Hangman's Creek, near Greenwood Cemetery, at its mouth. We proceeded on east, across the rocky ground between Liberty Park and the Spokane River, and camped on the prairie, at the bend of the river, near the ford, which was located at the head of the bend, near the present Spokane & Inland Bridge.

Colonel Wright camped here a couple of days. Several Indians crossed the ford and came into camp; among these was Spokane Garry.

---

<sup>4</sup> "Aug. 30. Today we first saw the Indians in any force. Shots were exchanged between the enemy and our advanced pickets."—Kip, *Army Life*, p. 52.

<sup>5</sup> Kip, *Army Life*, p. 52, states that the camp was called "Camp Pedri-gal," and that two of the artillery men died from eating poisonous roots.

<sup>6</sup> Mr. Smith is mistaken; the lake is Silver Lake.

<sup>7</sup> For an account of the battle, official reports, and the statement that 17 Indians were killed and between 40 and 50 wounded, see Kip, *Army Life*, pp. 53-60, 133, 142.

<sup>8</sup> This was the battle of Spokane Plains. See Kip, *Army Life*, pp. 63-68.

<sup>9</sup> The reports state that two chiefs, two brothers of Chief Garry, and many Indians of lesser note were either killed or wounded. Kip, *Army Life*, pp. 138, 143.



Garry was dressed in whiteman's clothes. It was reported among the men that he hadn't taken any part in the fighting against the soldiers. He always had free access to the camp whenever he came to it. One of the Indians that came into our camp here was seized and held under guard.

At this time there was a large Indian camp about 16 miles up the river. Colonel Wright held some consultations with the Indians. The men in the command understood that Colonel Wright gave it out that he was going up to Colville, and that he hired some Indian guides to take him there. After being in camp a couple of days, he broke camp and sent part of his pack train across the river by the ford; then he started two companies of dragoons up the river. He left the rest of his command in the camp for several hours; then he recalled the pack train from the north side of the river and we all set out up the river. We followed the river most of the way, and camped just north of what now is Seaton Station, on the Spokane & Inland Electric road. About a mile and a half before coming to camp we passed the large Indian camp on the South bank of the Spokane River. The Indians had deserted it leaving many of their lodges and considerable of their property. Near here Captain Ord with some 12 men saw some Indians on the opposite side of the river and shot at them and killed some of their horses. I don't think that any of the Indians were hurt.<sup>10</sup> Ord, I believe, afterwards became a general in the Civil War. A short distance about our camp ground there was a ford across the river.

At this camp we hung the Indian we had brought along with us from our last camp. We hung him from one of the poplar trees growing along the river bank near our camp. They used my lasso rope to hang him. Tom Buell,<sup>11</sup> who now lives near Lewiston, Idaho, and who had been in Colonel Steptoe's command, acted as hangman. Lieutenant Mullan, of Mullan Road fame, had joined our party, and he had a light wagon—the only wagon in the outfit—in which he carried his surveying tools and instruments.<sup>12</sup> Some of the soldiers got in this, stood the Indian up on a box, and held him while the noose was put about his neck, then drove the wagon out from under him.

<sup>10</sup> Neither the official report nor any other statement of the expedition mentions a ruse of this kind on the part of Colonel Wright. On September 7th "Hearing that the enemy was in force above on the Spokane, we broke camp and moved up the river about seven miles."—Kip, *Army Life*. This was the camp Mr. Smith refers to.

<sup>11</sup> Tom Buell, now living at Lewiston, Idaho, was in charge of one of the pack trains; he states that he was selected as hangman because he could tie a "Hangman's noose."

<sup>12</sup> Kip, *Army Life*, p. 44, mentions the fact that Lieutenant Mullan took along a light vehicle for his surveying instruments.

While at this camp the dragoons drove into camp a big lot of Indian horses which they had captured at Saltese Lake. The Indians from the big camp had tried to drive them off out of the country.<sup>13</sup> The Indians abandoned their camp and tried to run the horses off through the hills by the trails leading south by Saltese Lake, but Colonel Wright fooled them. If I remember aright, there was 804 horses.<sup>14</sup> They were rounded up in a little bend of the river, about a mile below where the rocky point juts out towards the river from the south, a short distance above where we were camped. There was a sort of a bar there, overgrown with quaking asp and bushes. The horses were crowded together here. The old horses were shot, the colts were clubbed in the head. Many of the civilians smuggled out horses for themselves.

When we broke camp, to go to the Coeur d'Alene Mission, many of these Indian horses were in our outfit, being led by the men. When we got near the Little Falls—Post Falls—I noticed a bunch of horses being collected beside the line of march ahead of me. One of the men had given me one of the Indian ponies to lead. I was riding a mule, so I got off the mule and mounted the pony. When I got up to the bunch of horses I found that the quartermaster was stopping everyone who was leading an extra horse. The officers thought these horses would take up too much time, require too much attention, so they gathered them all, and killed them there. They let me by, riding the pony and leading the mule.

Between Post Falls and Coeur d'Alene Lake, near where the town of Coeur d'Alene is, I noticed some small enclosed fields cultivated by the Indians, the first, I believe, I had seen on the expedition.

Our next camp was at the north end of Coeur d'Alene Lake, about where the present town site is. From there we made a short camp at Wolf Lodge. Our next camp was the Mission. We stayed there two or three days. There were only a few of the Indians about.

From the Mission we went down the Coeur d'Alene River five or six miles, and camped; then crossed the river. It took us a day to cross. Colonel Wright had canvas boats with him. We, also, had some Indian boats to hold us. We camped one night on the other side, then proceeded to the mouth of the St. Joe, camped there two nights, one camp on each side of the river. From the mouth of the St. Joe, I think that our next camp was on Latah or Hangman Creek,

---

<sup>13</sup> For an account of the capture of these horses, see Kip, *Army Life*, pp. 69-70.

<sup>14</sup> The number is given as 900; for an account of their destruction see Kip, *Army Life*, pp. 70-71.

though my recollection is not quite clear whether we made this in one march or not.

Our camp on the creek was at a place where there is quite a prairie on the creek bottom—15 or 20 acres—at a point where there is not much of a canyon, and not much water in the creek—a point near where the old "Kentuck" trail afterwards crossed the creek; if I recall, this is about 18 or 20 miles south from the present city of Spokane.<sup>15</sup> Here a council was held by Colonel Wright with some of the Indians. While we were here Qualchien, the Yakima chief, came riding into camp one morning on a gray horse. His squaw and another Indian were with him. He had a paper which he gave to Colonel Wright. I heard that on this paper was written in English: "Here is your man, catch him." It was the talk among the soldiers that either Chief Garry or the priests at the Coeur d'Alene Mission had written the note and given it to Qualchien and sent him into Wright's camp with it. I think that it was Chief Garry who gave Qualchien away with the paper.<sup>16</sup>

There was a big pine tree on the hillside near Colonel Wright's tent which was pitched near the mouth of a gulch. Behind Wright's tent, the tree leaned out over the hill. They wouldn't allow civilians about headquarters, but several of the men and myself, got in back of Wright's tent and saw what was going on. They put a rope around a limb of the tree, and pulled Qualchien up. He seemed a much surprised Indian. Tom Buell acted as hangman. It was reported about camp that he got \$20 for each hanging. When we moved from this camp<sup>17</sup> we took along an old Indian chief, Owyi, Qualchien's father. On our way back at Two Canyon creek, he was shot while trying to escape.

On my return to Fort Walla Walla with Colonel Wright's command, in the fall of 1858, I hired out to Messrs. Greanleaf & Allen, of San Francisco, who ran sutlers' stores at the various western army posts, and at Walla Walla. I worked at this mill until 1861. In 1859, I went out to the Boundary Survey with two companies of infantry soldiers who came from The Dalles; we met Captain McClellan at Okanogan Lake. I stayed there several weeks, until September or October, and wintered at Walla Walla. In my work for the sutler

---

<sup>15</sup> There is a bridge across the stream at this point at the present time. The place is known as Smith's ford.

<sup>16</sup> The incident of the note is not mentioned in any other account of Qualchien's capture and execution.

<sup>17</sup> Before leaving this camp a detail was sent out to the Steptoe battlefield to bring in the remains of the officers and men killed there, and some government property buried and abandoned in the retreat.

department, I was frequently in and out of Fort Colville while they were building the post. A road was made from Walla Walla, following the old traveled Indian trails. There was a camp on this road on Cow Creek, three or four miles below the lower end of Sprague Lake, named after Major Pickney Lougenbeel and called the Lougenbeel Camp, or Lougenbeel Springs.

Fort Colville was the supply point for the boundry survey, and I was back and forth frequently taking supplies to the Okanogan Country. They were just starting to build the army post then. The town of Pinckney City<sup>18</sup>—now Colville—was not yet started when I was first there. At the crossing of the Spokane River, Bill Nix had established a ferry, Nix had come up from The Dalles with Lougenbeel's command for the purpose of establishing the ferry; the troops helped him put it in. I first met Jim Monaghan at this ferry, I think in 1859; he afterwards bought out the ferry this was afterwards known as LaPray bridge. This was known in early days as the "winding ford." At the Hudson Bay trading post on Marcus Flats and about Fort Colville, in 1859, I frequently met old Angus McDonald, who was in charge of the trading post.

I recall one family in the Colville Valley in the fifties named Pelliseers; they were Canadian-French. I also knew some of the Finlays. I don't recall the names of many of the whites and half-breeds then settled in the Colville Valley. Most everybody was called by their first name in those days—Bill, John, or by a nickname, as Slim. I don't remember many of the surnames. I think that there was a half-breed or Frenchman living in the Valley by the name of John Brown.<sup>19</sup>

In 1861, I went over to the Flathead Reservation in Montana and worked for John Owens, the Indian Agent. In the fifties there were no settlers in the Spokane Country except LePlant and Peone. In fact, I don't remember any other settlers north of the Snake River in 1858, except about Colville. Antone LePlant in 1862 and 1863 was on the north side of the Spokane River, near what is now Trent, a little ways back from the river. In 1861 I was at Peone's place—stopped there one or two nights, when on my way back and forth from the Flathead Indian Agency. The headquarters for the Indian department of the Territory of Washington were then at Salem, Ore—

<sup>18</sup> Northeast from the present town of Colville.

<sup>19</sup> This John Brown has not been identified. Governor I. I. Stevens mentioned a Louis Brown, and John V. Campbell, to Spokane in 1854, in Washington Historical Quarterly, July, 1916, notes a Henry Brown. The latter had a son named John Brown, since deceased, who would appear to have been too young to be the person referred to by Mr. Smith.



gon. I remember once John Owens, the Flathead Agent, sent a lot of buffalo tongues by me to the agent at Salem. A dog got in the tent and ate them all up, on my way to Oregon. I think a nam named Nesbit was the Indian Agent at Salem in those days.

In 1863, I went back to Walla Walla and started to freight by pack mules from Walla Walla to Florence, Idaho. In the fall of that year, I went to the gold rush on the Caribou, on the headwaters of the Fraser River, in British Columbia. In 1864, I returned to Walla Walla and resumed freighting by pack mules. I freighted into Boise, Idaho; into Wild Horse Creek, in the Kootenai Country, in B. C. My route was north from Walla Walla, across the Snake River; I crossed the Spokane River at Cowley's bridge, crossed the Pend Oreille at Sinacquetene Ferry,<sup>20</sup> crossed the Kootenai at Bonners Ferry,<sup>21</sup> and thence on to the Wild Horse. I continued in the freighting business until I married, in 1868.

At Walla Walla, on February 8, 1868, I married Mandy Warren, a sister of Joe Warren. We had 12 children: Frank, Hugh, Fred, James, Eugene, Genevieve, Nettie, Flesha, Maud, Laura, Minnie and Madge. After my marriage I settled down to farming on the Touchet River for two years. In 1870 or 1871 we moved to Cow Creek at a point about 14 miles from the Snake River, and about eight miles from the falls of the Palouse. In the winter of '78 or '79 I saw these falls entirely frozen.

On Cow Creek my trading place was Walla Walla, 72 miles away. My nearest neighbors were George Lucus, two miles north on Cow Creek; Tom Turner, eight miles east; Al. Hooper, seven miles, and his brother, Ernest, southeast 10 miles, and a man named Korst, about 12 miles north. Cow Creek is the outlet of Sprague Lake. The Colville Road went up Cow Creek, north of my place. There was a camping place on the road south and east of Sprague Lake; another at Willow Springs; another west of Deep Creek on Coulee Creek, just below the forks; from there the road went to LaPray's bridge.

In the spring of 1879, I came to Spokane County and settled on a homestead in Coulee Precinct—about 18 miles west of the City of Spokane, Sec. 4, Twn. 26 N., R. 40, E. W. M. I lived there continuously for 36 years, until I sold out to Mr. S. S. Clark.

I helped organize the school district in that section—what is now known as the East Crescent School, District 81. Wm. Cit, a neighbor

---

<sup>20</sup> Then operated by Guy Haines.

<sup>21</sup> Established and operated by Ed. Bonner.

of mine on Coluee Creek, had also been with Colonel Wright's command in the Spokane Country in 1858.

In 1879, Deep Creek, the site of the present town, was the principal town and trading place in the county. Mr. Eades kept the store; there was also a settlement at Medical Lake; there was a Frenchman there, La Fave, whom I had known in California; Pete LeBree was a nephew. Spokane was then a small place; I do not recall who kept the store at Spokane in 1879 and 1880.

I met and personally knew old Dr. John McLoughlin at Salem, Oregon, in the fifties. When I was sick down there he doctored me. I met his son, David McLoughlin, at Walla Walla in 1858 or 1859 when he was raising a company of men to go to the Caribou gold diggings on Fraser River. This David McLoughlin left a family at Port Hill, Idaho. A grandson, John McLoughlin, was named after the Doctor. I met the two Eells boys in Walla Walla in 1859 or 1860. My wife's sister married Henry Spaulding, who was born at the Lapwai Mission. I knew old man Pambrum, chief factor for the Hudson's Bay Company at Walla Walla and his family.

In 1863 and 1864, when freighting to Wild Horse, I used to go over the old "Kentuck" trail. A cut-off on the Mullan road from near Rock Creek—north of Sprague—to what is now known as Spokane Bridge on the Spokane River, close to the Idaho state line. This went over Moran Prairie, and down on the west side of the Saltese Lake. I used to camp at the head of the lake. Old Saltese used to live there then; I knew him. The trail got its name "Kentuc Trail" and "Kentuck Cut-off," I think from a road house or eating house built on the trail, east of Hangman Creek.

The old Mullan road and the Colville road were the only roads in the Spokane Country in early days. There was a road house or stopping place on Cow Creek in the sixties, kept by a Frenchman. The Mullan road branched off from the Colville road near the crossing of Cow Creek; it crossed Hangman's Creek five or six miles south of where old man Jackson lived—Jackson was a Canadian-Frenchman and he had a grown half-breed son; in 1860 and 1861 they lived at what was then called French Prairie or Jackson's Prairie. From there the Mullan road came down across Moran Prairie and out on to the gravel prairie of the Spokane River, near what is now "Union Park" in the City of Spokane.

I first met Dan Drumheller in 1868 or 1869. He used to be around Touchet Creek when I lived there. I first met David M.

Coonce in 1871 or 1872. He was a caution. He used to freight with oxen from White Bluffs. The Indians stood in awe of him.

I knew Guy Haines of Walker's Prairie.<sup>22</sup> He settled there in 1853 or 1854, and lived there until he died. His son, Charlie Haines, still lives there. His postoffice address is Springdale, or Ford, Washington. Guy Haines had been a member of Governor I. I. Steven's party; he was with McClellan at Kettle Falls, and was at Camp Washington. I met Haines on the Boundary Line Survey and made the trip to the Caribou country with him in 1863. About June 1, 1908, Professor Gilstrap, O. B. Gilstrap and another man came to my farm and asked me if I knew anything about the old ruins of old Spokane House. I told them, no, and referred them to my neighbor, Wolleweber, and to my old friend, Guy Haines, of Walker's Prairie, telling them that the latter came through the country with Captain McClellan and Governor Stevens' parties in 1853.

On October 28th, I attended the ceremonies at the erection of the monument for Camp Washington, on Four Mound Prairie. In speaking, Mr. O. B. Gilstrap asserted that my old friend Francis Wolf<sup>23</sup> had been on that site with Stevens, and was the only living witness. In the presence of Professor McCormick, Wolleweber, myself and some others, Wolf emphatically stated that he had not been there with Stevens.

Guy Haines had previously told me that the site of Camp Washington was at the forks of Coulee Creek; the next day after the unveiling of the monument I went to visit my old friend Haines. He said that the Gilstraps had been to see him, but had not mentioned to him anything about the site of Camp Washington, or of their intention to erect a monument at the site. He said that all they had ever asked him about was concerning the ruins of old Spokane House, concerning which he could give them no information. Guy Haines told me that he told the Gilstraps concerning the movements of the Stevens party, substantially as follows:

"We left camp at Chamokane Mission, keeping the great Colville-Walla Walla trail over the hill and sand flats, down to the Spokane River; crossing at the winding ford (Island); up the other bluff

---

<sup>22</sup> Haines settled on part of the old Walker-Eells' mission site and probably bought out the squatter's right of Solomon Pelitier mentioned by Governor Stevens as living on the mission site in 1853.

<sup>23</sup> Francis Wolfe had an adventurous life. Enlisting in the regular army in 1849, he came to the coast in 1852. In 1853, he was one of the command sent out to meet Governor Stevens at Fort Benton. For some time he was with Lieutenant Mullan east of the Rockies. He later became a noted pioneer settler of Stevens County, settling in the Colville Valley, where he died on June 24, 1909, after 50 years' residence in that section of the state.

on the south side and straight on to the forks of Coulee Creek, where they stopped and waited for the westbound Donaldson party, and celebrated."

Further, Haines stated that "We never came near Four Mound Prairie."

Guy Haines died a short time after my visit to him. He had told me, years before, that the old camping ground of the Stevens party was on the flat just east of the forks of Coluee Creek. This is about five and a half miles west of where the monument was placed. The old Colville road to Walla Walla crossed Coulee Creek at this point. The old Indian trail crossed Coulee Creek about half a mile east of this point, which was selected as a wagon road crossing on account of the better grade in and out of Coluee Canyon at the forks of the creek.

JOHN E. SMITH.



## ALASKA UNDER THE RUSSIANS—INDUSTRY, TRADE AND SOCIAL LIFE\*

When the management of the Russian American Company passed into the hands of Hagemeister the first charter was about to expire.<sup>1</sup> Captain Vasili N. Golovnin was sent on the *Kamchatka* to Sitka in 1817, to audit the accounts and make a statement of the condition of the affairs. His report was very unfavorable to Baranof, both personally and in regard to his business methods,<sup>2</sup> although he seems personally to have pretended friendship for him.

The trade carried on by the American ship captains among the Indians of the Alexander Archipelago, the Sounds as the Russians termed it, had long troubled the Company. Baranof had turned it to account by buying the cargoes and thus removing the competition.

\*This is the second of two articles by Mr. Andrews entitled, *Alaska Under the Russians*. The first article was published in this Quarterly for July, 1916, under the sub-title of *Baranof the Builder*.—Editor.

<sup>1</sup>In the preparation of this article I have drawn chiefly from the following sources:

Khlebnikof, K., in *Zhizneopisanie Aleksandra Andreevicha Baranova*, [Biography of Alexander Andreevich Baranof.] St. Petersburg, 1853. There is a copy in the Governor's office at Sitka, and one in the Bancroft Library at the University of California. Khlebnikof was the chief of the countinghouse at Sitka under the Chief Managers following Baranof, remaining until about 1832. On the "Blarney Stone" at Sitka, are his initials, "K. KH. 1832."

Tikhmenef, P., *Istoricheskoe Obozrenie Obrazovanie Rossiiskii Amerikanskoe Kompanii* [Historical Review of the Organization of the Russian American Company.] St. Petersburg, 2 vols. Vol. I, 1861; vol. II, 1863. In Governor's office and in Bancroft Library.

*Materiali dlya Isotrii Russkikh Zaselanii po berzegam vostochnaavo okeana*. [Materials for the History of the Russian Settlements on the Shores of the Eastern Ocean.] St. Petersburg, 1861. In 4 parts. The 1st part is by V. M. Golovnin; the 2nd part by Captain-Lieutenant Golovnin; the 3d part by K. Khlebnikof; the 4th part consists of extracts from the writings of Golovnin, Khlebnikof, Lutke, Lazaref and others. In Governor's office and in Bancroft Library. V. M. Golovnin was an officer of the Russian navy who came to Sitka in the sloop *Diana*, the first Russian ship of war to visit the colonies, in 1810. He returned in 1817 in the sloop *Kamchatka*. A copy of the voyage of 1815-'19 is in library of the University of Washington at Seattle. Captain Golovnin, a naval officer, was sent in 1861 to make a report on the condition of the colonies. More complete description of the *Materiali* will be found in Bancroft, *History of Alaska*, pp. 515-16.

Davidof, Gavriila I., *Dvuknoe putashestvie v' Ameriku Morskik Ofitserof Khvostova i Davidova, pisannoe sim poslednim* [Two Voyages in America by Naval Officers Khvostof and Davidof, written by the latter.] St. Petersburg, 1819. In two parts. Translated by Ivan Peterof. In Bancroft Library.

Markof, A., *Russkie na Vostochnom Okean Puteshestvie Al Markova* [Russians on the Eastern Ocean Voyage of Al. Markof.] St. Petersburg, 1856. In Bancroft Library.

Veniaminof [Bishop John.] *Zapiski ob Ostrovakh Onalaskinskago Otdiela* [Letters Concerning the Islands of the Unalaska District.] St. Petersburg, 1840, 2 vols. In Bancroft Library. The same is found in another edition in the library of the University of Washington, at Seattle.

*Morski Sbornik* [Marine Miscellany.] St. Petersburg, 1848, et seq. Translation in Bancroft Library.

<sup>2</sup>"In 1790, the merchant Baranof, who for 27 years after governed the country, was created Collegiate Councillor, and received the Cross of St. Anne, 2nd Class, and became famous on account of his long residence among the savages, and still more so because he, while enlightening, grew wild himself, and sank to a degree below the savage."—Golovnin, in *Materiali*, (Petrof trans.), part i, p. 53; Tikhmenef, part i, p. 244.

The naval officers who were now at the head of affairs, in order to discredit Baranof's methods and also to remove this opposition, prevailed on the Russian government in 1821 to issue an ukase forbidding foreign vessels coming within 100 miles of the shore under penalty of forfeiture.<sup>3</sup>

In 1821, a new charter was granted to the Company, with much the same terms as the previous one, but under it the Chief Manager must be selected from staff officers of the Russian navy. A clause provided that they might trade at sea with neighboring nations.<sup>4</sup> The trade with China by sea afterwards being opened threw into their hands practically a monopoly of the tea trade, which had previously been conducted by caravans overland to Russia by the way of Kiachta.

The result of the prohibition of the American trade was a loss to the Company, for the foreign boats delivered goods at Sitka for less than they could be brought from Russia by the Company. Freight from Russia across Siberia was from 540 to 630 silver rubles per ton, and by the Company's ships from Kronstad was from 193 to 254 silver rubles per ton. The Hudson's Bay Company's boats carried goods from England to the colony for 50 to 78 rubles.<sup>5</sup>

The United States, though its ambassador, protested against the order, and in 1824 a treaty<sup>6</sup> was made by which American boats were entitled to the right to trade on the coast, but after 1832 they were not able to maintain themselves against the Russian American Company and the Hudson's Bay Company, and they withdrew.<sup>7</sup>

The Russian American Company had now become settled firmly in the country. The fur trade was in regular channels, as established and organized in past years, ships passed between the Russian ports and Sitka, mechanics and artisans plied their trade, the officers and employes brought their families, and the trading post became a community where every one had a part in the life and moved in well ordered channels.

The administration of the colonies consisted of the Chief Manager, the Board of Directors, and the Accounting Department.

The Chief Manager was appointed by his Imperial Majesty from candidates presented by the Company, who must be selected from staff

---

<sup>3</sup> Tikhmenef, I, App., 27; *Alaska Boundary Tribunal*, Case of the United States, App., p. 25.

<sup>4</sup> Second Charter of the Russian American Company, 1821.

<sup>5</sup> Tikhmenef, part I, pp. 371-72.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of April 17, 1824.

<sup>7</sup> Boundary Case of the United States, p. 266. Report of Chief Manager Wrangell, April 28, 1834. Lazaref, Voyage, 1822-24, in *Material*.

officers of the naval service. Their term of office was five years and they were to reside in New Archangel.

The head office of the Company was in St. Petersburg and there the Board of Directors held their meetings. The chief of the Accounting Department had his office in Sitka, in the building at present occupied by the United States postoffice.

There were no courts of law in the colonies, but the chief manager had the power to decide minor offences according to police regulations, or to refer them to a special commission whose decision was final, and send a report of the penalty imposed to the general administration of the Company.

In criminal cases he might refer the cases to the Colonial Administration Council, or to a special commission appointed by him, which, in case of inability to agree, might transfer the proceedings to the nearest court of justice in Russia. This proceeding held good in military cases where the crimes did not come within the common military law.

He had the power to appoint and remove, and to regulate the salaries of the commanders of vessels, chiefs of the colonial affairs selected by him, clerks, etc. He was required to prevent any trading in furs, walrus tusks, or other product to which the Company had the exclusive right. He was also to see to the education and training of the children at the Company's expense. His yearly accounts were to contain full information of the condition of the colony, the natives, Creoles, hospitals, educational establishments, fur-trade, agricultural and domestic enterprises, and also the requirements of goods, materials, and provisions, of the work accomplished and the buildings constructed.

The produce of the settlers was to be purchased at their own prices, but furs according to an established price list. Special care was enjoined that in assigning land to colonial citizens that the rights of the settled natives were not to be encroached upon, and that the citizens support themselves without oppressing the natives.<sup>8</sup>

The population of Sitka in 1818 was 190 Russians and 72 Creoles.<sup>9</sup> There were also 173 Aleuts at the port. In 1863, on January 1st, there were 978 Russians and Creoles.<sup>10</sup> Of these there were 150

---

<sup>8</sup> Regulations of the Russian American Company. See *Tikhemenef*, part II, App., p. 37, *et seq.*

<sup>9</sup> Of these there were 110 Russian and Creole women. See *Khlebnikov*, in *Material*, part III, p. 20.

<sup>10</sup> Of the Russians 418 were men and 50 were women. See *Tikhemenef*, II, 244.

Creoles who were considered as Russian subjects, and as having the rights of the class of tradesmen, unless granted the privileges of some other class for special merit. Those who distinguished themselves by industry and capability might be granted the same privileges enjoyed by other Russian subjects in the Company's service. They were legally defined as being the offspring of Europeans or Siberians and American (native) women, or of Americans and Europeans and Siberian women, and their children remained in the same class.<sup>11</sup>

Those who were educated in the colonies by the Company were required to serve in the Company's pay for not less than 15 years, counting from their 17th year. Those taken to Europe and educated at the expense of the Company in the higher schools, and who received appointments as pharmacists, military or civil officers, etc., could not leave the service of the Company for 10 years, but received a salary and subsistence during that time. Those trained as mechanics in Russia were required to give 10 years' service.

In the service of the Company were many Creoles who occupied responsible positions as masters and officers of vessels, in clerkships and other situations. The illegitimate Creole children were brought up at the expense of the Company.

The native tribes were divided into two classes, the settled natives, comprising the inhabitants of the islands of Kodiak, the Aleutian group, those of the American coast as the Kenaitze, Chugach and others; and the unsettled, or wild tribes.

The settled natives were considered as Russian subjects and formed a separate class, subject to the Russian laws and entitled to government protection, but not required to pay taxes or tribute. They were required to sell their furs to the Company and must render service to them as hunters, etc., on certain terms. The hunters worked under a Russian *peredovchik* or foreman, were furnished with bidarkas, and other implements; the furs they secured were shared with the Company, and were sold to them at a price fixed by the management. They were paid entirely in trade at the Company's stores. When they came in from the hunt they delivered the equipment to the *bidarschik*, or officer who took charge of them, stretched and dried their skins and delivered them to the magazines, and took their credit to trade at the store. There they bought cotton prints, calico, gray and blue, blue Chinese cloth, frieze blankets, snuff-boxes, tobacco, tea, sugar, etc., or anything that might suit a savage taste. They always gave some-

---

<sup>11</sup> Tikhmenef, II, App. 55.



thing to the church, generally furs, which the priest sold to the Company's stores at a special price given to them.<sup>12</sup>

They were governed by their *toyons*,<sup>13</sup> or chiefs, under the surveillance of elders appointed by the colonial government from the trusted employes of the Company.

Over the wild natives, as the Kolosh and the tribes of the interior of Alaska, they exercised but little control. Their intercourse with these, outside of the Sitka kwan,<sup>14</sup> being chiefly limited to securing their trade on the best possible terms. In 1821 the Sitkas reestablished their village near the old site; by the time of Etolin's administration, in 1840, they became more friendly, and he promoted the friendship by various means. He held a fair at Sitka, something after the custom of Russia at Nizhne Novgorod, where they might bring their furs; and he employed the young men as sailors and laborers.<sup>15</sup> The lease of the right to the fur trade on the mainland to the Hudson's Bay Company, lost to the Russians the trade of that region, and in later years, through the Hudson's Bay Company selling liquors to them, and the mismanagement of Chief Manager Rudakof, many of the other kwans among the islands became estranged and went to the British posts.

The garrison at Sitka was 180 men of the Siberian battallion and about the same number of man-of-war sailors. The soldiers were employed at various occupations, some in attendance on the officers, others cared for the cattle, or followed trades, as joining, coopering, blacksmithing, etc.; they worked on the fortifications and cut timber in the forests. The last was preferred to any other as the life in the woods appealed to the most of them. Many did work for which they received extra pay and thus added to their meager income, which was 440 rubles per year, in scrip worth about 20c per ruble, including all allowances.

Their uniforms consisted of pants, cloak, and necktie, which were furnished by the military commander of Siberia, and paid for by the Company. For other clothing they paid cash. The lower classes of soldiers did not wear uniform, and their allowance for same and other

---

<sup>12</sup> Regulations of the Russian American Company. See Tikhmenef, II, App., pp. 56, *et seq.*

<sup>13</sup> *Toyon*, a Yakut word, brought from Siberia by the Russians. See Davidof, II, 113.

<sup>14</sup> "Besides the general appellation of Thlinkit, the Kolosh have other local names, for instance, the Sitka call themselves *Sitkakwan*."—Veniaminof, *Zapiski*, etc., part iii, p. 28.

<sup>15</sup> Khlebnikof, *Materiali*, part iv, p. 102.

equipment, amounting to 27 rubles 44 kopeks per annum was credited to them.

They were given one meal per day at the public kitchen, consisting of a stew of salt or fresh fish, or of beef boiled with vegetables. They were allowed to take food to the barracks and warm it on the stoves for other meals, and about their quarters at any time of day might be seen kettles, pots, and pans, simmering over the fires.

With all the meagerness of pay and allowances but few soldiers were indebted to the Company, in fact nearly all had something to their credit. On July 1, 1860, their credits were 57,030 rubles, scrip, or about \$11,400, and an additional amount of 22,592 rubles on uniform account. Many had from 700 to 1,000 rubles, and two had nearly 2,000 rubles, or \$400 each.

They kept watch and ward eternally against the Kolosh. Six posts of two men each as sentries guarded the town day and night, and two were stationed on each ship in the harbor. In spring and summer reveille was beaten at four in the morning, and tattoo at nine at night. From tattoo, throughout the night, signals were called at every half hour, and a patrol inspected all posts and visited all the ships in the harbor.

Notwithstanding these precautions, at times, Indian spies entered the town and even climbed into the old ship *Amethyst*, lying dismantled on the beach near the Indian town, and stole material and carried it away.<sup>16</sup>

There were about 60 guns in the batteries and fortifications and 87 stored in the arsenal and other places about the harbor, from 80 pound mortars to falconets.<sup>17</sup>

When Hagemeister assumed the management of the Company in 1818, he found many of the buildings were decaying, and he made extensive improvements and built some buildings, including a blockhouse. His successor, Yanovski, built a blockhouse, a wharf with a dock, and a windmill.

Mouravief from 1821-26 built a new house for the manager on the *kekoor*, or Baranof Hill, a blockhouse in the upper fort, a battery of eight guns on the water front, and other buildings.

Before 1833 there were built at the Ozerskoe Redoubt, ten miles southwest of Sitka, a blockhouse with eight guns, a stockade, barracks, flouring mill, granary, tannery, fishery, etc.<sup>18</sup>

---

<sup>16</sup> Golovnin, in *Materials*, part II, pp. 61, et seq.

<sup>17</sup> Tikhmenef, part II, p. 328.

<sup>18</sup> Khlebnikof, in *Materials*, part III, p. 96.

Most of the buildings transferred to the United States were constructed between 1835 and 1850:<sup>19</sup> the Baranof Castle about 1836,<sup>20</sup> the Clubhouse by Etolin in 1840, and the Cathedral of St. Michael was dedicated in 1848.<sup>21</sup>

Sawmills were constructed at an early date. Baranof had one at Voskressenski Bay in 1793<sup>22</sup> to saw the lumber from the *Phoenix*. Resanof ordered one from Russia when he was at Sitka in 1806.<sup>23</sup> In 1860, there were two mills at Sitka, one in the town and one on Serebrennikof Bay, on the Kirenski River (Sawmill Creek), four miles up the bay to the east. The mill in the town used both water and steam power, and had in connection with the plant a planing machine, machinery for sash and cornices, and for shingle-making. The saws were from eighteen to forty-eight inches in diameter. The steam plank saw has 25 saws and was of 30 horse power. The mill at Sawmill Creek used water power, had 20 saws, and was constructed under the administration of Manager Tebenkof.

Two flouring mills ground the breadstuffs brought from California and Chile. One of these was in the town of Sitka and the other at the Ozerskoe Redoubt. The one in the town was run by water power, and had stones of the finest French burr. The stones for the other mill were of granite, quarried and cut on the shores of Globokoe Lake.<sup>24</sup>

A storehouse held the *lavtaks* or seal and seal lion skins, used for making bidarkas, and a tannery prepared the hides of various kinds. Hides of cattle from California were tanned in Sitka for sole leather, and among the shipments of Hutchinson Kohl & Co., from there to San Francisco in 1867-8 were large quantities of leather of all kinds.<sup>25</sup>

A shop for repair of nautical instruments, a smithy, joiner shop, cooper shop, and a bakery, provided for the needs of the community on those lines, while a ropewalk and sail loft made necessary articles for the vessels.

<sup>19</sup> United States Record of Public Buildings.

<sup>20</sup> "The present very substantial house erecting for the Governor and his establishment, is about 140 feet in length, by 70 feet wide, of two good stories, with lofts, capped by a lighthouse in the center of the roof."—Sir Edward Belcher, *Narrative of a Voyage Round the World, 1836-42*, (London, 1843), p. 96.

<sup>21</sup> Church Records of Sitka.

<sup>22</sup> "Dwellings were first put up and a rude sawmill erected over a small stream with considerable waterpower."—Tikhmenef (translation in Bancroft Library), II, App., 86.

<sup>23</sup> Resanof in a letter dated February 15, 1806, at Sitka, in Tikhmenef, II, App., 240.

<sup>24</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, pp. 72-73.

<sup>25</sup> Customs Records of Alaska for 1868.

A well equipped brass and iron foundry, with a machine shop in connection, occupied a place to the east of the church, and there were constructed and repaired the engines for the steam vessels, of which several were built between 1839 and 1867. The machinery for the tug "Muir," of seven horse power, as well as the hull, and two pleasure boats of two horse power each, were the product of the local workmen before 1841.<sup>26</sup> The workmen were Russians and Creoles, and every master had a number of Creole boys for apprentices. Many of these made good workmen as they had a quick perception and a natural inclination for mechanical pursuits.<sup>27</sup>

Many articles for export were made in the shops and foundry. The first bell was cast in Kodiak in 1793, under the direction of Baranof, and it was of a weight of 208 pounds.<sup>28</sup> Plowshares and spades were made and shipped to the California market,<sup>29</sup> and among the exports from Sitka, in 1868, were two shipments of bells, one of eight in number, aggregating 2,500 pounds, and the other of five.<sup>30</sup>

Out of the tallow brought from the colony of Ross candles were made, more than 120 poods (4,320 lbs.) being used for the purpose each year. These were furnished to the officials for their use, each receiving 30 per month from September to May, and half that number during the rest of the year.

Bricks were made in the colonies, mostly in Kodiak or in Nicolofsky. The clay at Sitka was not in sufficient quantities for use for the purpose.<sup>31</sup> The first that were made in Alaska were by Baranof at Kodiak, about 1795, and out of these 1,500 were shipped to Shelikof at Okhotsk.<sup>32</sup>

Charcoal was prepared in large quantities, and kilns were kept burning continuously, each occupying about 15 days' time to complete, and yielding from 70 to 150 baskets of the coals.<sup>33</sup> A great deal was used to smoke the rats out of the ships before sending them to sea with cargoes.

The charter gave the Company the right to the minerals in the earth, although little use was made of the privilege of mining. Baranof found deposits of iron ore, and endeavored for years to reach

<sup>26</sup> Sir George Simpson, *Narrative of a Journey Round the World, During the Years 1841 and 1842*, (London, 1847, 2 vols.), II, 189.

<sup>27</sup> Tikhmenef, part ii, p. 330; Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 73.

<sup>28</sup> Baranof to Shelikof, May 20, 1795, in Tikhmenef, II, 94.

<sup>29</sup> *Materiali*, part iii, pp. 96-97.

<sup>30</sup> Customs Record of Alaska, 1868.

<sup>31</sup> Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iii, p. 99.

<sup>32</sup> Baranof to Shelikof, May 20, 1795, in Tikhmenef, II, App., 95.

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 100.



the native copper deposits of the Copper River, which he understood to be on the headwaters.<sup>34</sup>

In 1848, the Company sent out the mining engineer Doroshin, who made investigations along the coast from Baranof Island to Cook Inlet. He found limestone on Sitka (Baranof) Island; coal; "a kind of earth indicating diamonds"<sup>35</sup> at Kootznahoo; coal and graphite on Kodiak Island; and coal and some gold on Cook Inlet. The coal was developed at what was known as English Bay (Port Graham); drifts of 1687 feet in depth were made in 1857 and ensuing years; machinery was installed; and 500 tons were sent to California for a commercial experiment. From 1857 to 1860, 2,700 tons of coal were produced, most of which was used on the Company's steamers, as the California venture had proved unprofitable. During 1860 a fire destroyed the buildings and retarded the work which was not very vigorously prosecuted thereafter.

In 1863, a contract was projected with Halmar Furuhelm, a mining engineer, by which they were to turn over to him the mining resources, but as the Company did not secure a new charter, the contract was not made.<sup>36</sup>

Shipbuilding was carried on in the colonies from 1793 until the close of the Russian occupation. The shipyard at Voskressenski (Resurrection) Bay was in use but a short time. There does not seem to be any record of any building being done there after the construction of the *Phoenix* in 1794, as the *Delphin* and the *Olga* were built at Elovoi (Spruce) Island in 1795, near St. Paul's Harbor<sup>37</sup>; the *Yermak* and the *Rostislaf* at Yakutat, and after the establishment of Novo Arkangelsk the shipyard was at that place. An American named Lincoln built the first vessel on the ways, the brig *Sitka*, and received as his pay the sum of 2,000 rubles. He rebuilt the old ship *Alexander*; in June, 1807, he laid the keel of the *Otkrietie*, which was launched July 16, 1808; the same year he began the construction of the *Chirikof*, and repaired the *Juno*, an American ship bought by Resanof in 1805.

---

<sup>34</sup> "It has long been my intention to collect some of the American copper on Copper River, but until now the Lebedef troubles have prevented it, and I don't know how soon it will be possible."—Baranof to Shelikof, May 20, 1795, in *Tikhmenef*, II, 94. "The exploration of Copper River, or the locality where native copper is found, was the constant object of Baranof's life." Davidof, part II, p. 139. One of his men went 300 versts up the river, going up the east fork where the rich deposits have since been found but secured nothing. On a second trip he was killed by the natives "for appropriating a copper colored maiden."—*Ibid*.

<sup>35</sup> *Tikhmenef*, II, 249; Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part II, p. 108.

<sup>36</sup> *Doklad Komiteta* [Report of the Committee], (St. Petersburg, 1861), p. 583.

<sup>37</sup> *Zhizneopisanie*, p. 25.

When Lincoln left the employ of the Company, in 1809, the construction of new vessels ceased for a term of years.<sup>38</sup>

In 1807, the *Myrtle* was purchased of Captain Barber and renamed the *Kadiak*; and in 1808, the Russian Government ship *Neva* was transferred to the Company; in 1813 the *Lady* and the *Atahualpa* were bought of Americans and were afterward known as the *Ilmen* and the *Bering*. The ship *Amethyst* was also secured.

A number of ships were built at Okhotsk for the Company, among them the *Maria*, the *Aktzia*, *Polyfem*, *Sitka*, etc., and in later years others were constructed at Abo, Finland.

At Ross Colony, Grudinin, who had worked with Lincoln at Sitka, built from the California live oak, the galotte *Rumiantzof* in 1816-18; the brig *Buldakof* in 1819-20; the brig *Volga* in 1821-22; and the *Kiachta* in 1823-24.<sup>39</sup> The *Brutus* and the *Lapwing* were purchased in 1818, and the brig *Arab* in 1824. In 1825, they owned 10 vessels, of which there were three of American build, one Mexican, and one from Okhotsk, three built in Ross, one in Sitka, and the remaining one was from Finland.<sup>40</sup>

In the year 1827 construction was resumed at the Sitka ways and the *Unalaska*, *Bobr*, *Sivutch*, *Karluk* and *Aleut*, small coasting boats, were launched. In 1829, the *Ourup* of 300 tons was commenced, the *Lady Wrangel*, a retimbered American boat, was put in service, and from 1839 to 1841, the brig *Promissel*, the steamer *Nikolai I*, the steam tug *Muir*, and two pleasure boats propelled by steam were built. The steam tug *Muir* would seem to be the first steam vessel to be entirely constructed on the northwest coast of America, and thus to the Russians belongs the honor of building the first sailing ship and also the first steam vessel in the Alaskan waters.<sup>41</sup>

Shipbuilding continued at Sitka until the close of the Russian regime and the *Politofsky*, so well known on the western coast, was one of the last to be constructed there.

Agriculture was one of the minor industries of the colonies, for fur gathering was the great and all-absorbing pursuit, but gardens were raised at all the main stations. At Sitka about 1,000 barrels of potatoes were produced, on the best crops; they were used for home consumption and to provision vessels coming to the harbor.<sup>42</sup> American trading ships and Russian men-of-war purchased as much as 100 bar-

---

<sup>38</sup> *Materiali*, part iii, p. 12.

<sup>39</sup> *Id.*, p. 145.

<sup>40</sup> *Id.*, p. 101.

<sup>41</sup> Tikhmenev, II, 330.

<sup>42</sup> Khlebbhikof, in *Materiali*, part iii, p. 127.

rels at a time from the inhabitants. The work in the gardens for the Company was done by the Aleuts, who were paid at the rate of a ruble a day for the service, and potatoes, turnips, lettuce, and cabbage, with cucumbers, etc., in hotbeds, were the principal products. Potatoes were also produced by the Kolosh and by them sold to the Russians and to the trading vessels along the sounds between the islands.<sup>43</sup>

About 10 cows were usually kept at Sitka for milking; the hay for their food was cut in the natural meadows at the head of the inlets about Katleanski Bay, and was brought to town in small boats. Chickens and pigs were kept at Sitka.<sup>44</sup> Ducks were brought to Unalaska in 1833, and multiplied rapidly. Goats were imported in 1825, but they annoyed the Aleuts by pasturing on the dirt roofs of their barabaras, so they were killed.<sup>45</sup>

The efforts to ripen grain were fruitless, and the breadstuffs were brought from California, from Chile, or were purchased from the Hudson's Bay Company in later year. In 1841, there were 30,000 poods (18,000 bushels) of wheat at Sitka, after supplying the other districts and sending 2,000 poods to Okhotsk.<sup>46</sup>

Of fish there was an abundance in the waters of the whole district. At Sitka the supply of salmon was largely procured from the Ozerskoe Redoubt, where a fishery was maintained, from which, in addition to the fish they consumed fresh, and preserved for use at the post, they salted from 300 to 500 barrels for sale each year. In 1858, there were 1,070 barrels salted. A thousand poods of salt were used each year in preparing the supply. For the ten years between 1850 and 1860 they took 70,000 fish per year there.<sup>47</sup>

On Kodiak Island most of the fish were taken at Karluk and a fishery was maintained there from the first year of the settlement at Three Saints. Here up to 1860 there was no use made of the salmon beyond drying it for *youkali*, of which product there was about 380,000 pounds prepared each year.<sup>48</sup>

Of halibut they took as much as 8,000 pounds in a month from the bay.

Game was brought to the Kolosh market, as the place constructed for traffic with the Thlinkits was called, by the natives and sold for

---

<sup>43</sup> Markof, p. 79.

<sup>44</sup> Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iii, p. 135.

<sup>45</sup> Veniaminof, *Zapiski*, part iii, p. 74.

<sup>46</sup> Tikhemenef, part i, p. 346.

<sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*, part ii, p. 237.

<sup>48</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 105.

Russian goods; "a deer for five yards of calico," says Markof;<sup>49</sup> according to a list of prices fixed by the Chief Manager. Many deer and mountain goats were sold there, and during the winter of 1861-62, which was an exceptionally severe season, there were 2,774 animals brought there.<sup>50</sup>

An American ship, the *Bacchus*, came from San Francisco in 1852, to get a cargo of ice,<sup>51</sup> that used in California up to that time having been brought from Boston around Cape Horn. He loaded 250 tons, for which he paid \$18,750.00, or \$75.00 per ton. A company was then formed in San Francisco, called the American Russian Company, that entered into a contract with the Russian American Company to take 1,000 tons of ice yearly at the price of \$35.00 per ton. This contract continued until 1855, and after that 3,000 tons were taken per year at \$7.00 until 1860. Ice houses were built at Sitka, but ice not forming thickly enough at that place to produce the required amount, other houses were built at Wood Island, near Kodiak, with a capacity of 6,000 tons. The ice was broken and sawed by a special saw, worked by horsepower, and was handled by Kolosh laborers at Sitka, who received one ruble per day. The Russians and Aleuts did the work at Wood Island.<sup>52</sup> The American Company continued, for many years after the transfer to the United States to conduct a trading business on the western islands.

But little use of the timber was made by the Russians except in the construction of ships and buildings and for charcoal. Their exports were light, a cargo being taken to Chile in 1826 by Etolin, which was exchanged for breadstuffs.<sup>53</sup> Between 1852 and 1860, 8,416 logs were cut at Sitka.<sup>54</sup>

During the earlier years of the Company's business their trade was almost entirely with the natives, and was conducted with goods brought across Siberia from Russia, then shipped by sea from Okhotsk. The furs gathered were returned over the same route and a large part of them were sold to China through Kiakhta. In later years came the trade with English and American boats, exchanging furs for the goods they brought. In 1803-06, the first Russian boats came round the world and from thenceforward more or less merchandise was brought from Russia by sea. In 1806, Resanof took Russian goods to San

---

<sup>49</sup> Markof, p. 72.

<sup>50</sup> Tikhmenef, II, 238.

<sup>51</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 189.

<sup>52</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 107; 124.

<sup>53</sup> Tikhmenef, I, 346.

<sup>54</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 189.



Francisco, which he exchanged for breadstuffs and other food for the settlement at New Archangel. In 1817, Hagenmeister visited San Francisco to trade and to secure the release of Aleuts who had been captured from sea otter hunting vessels cruising along the coast by the Spanish. From this time forward this trade was continued, more for the purpose of procuring the necessary supplies than for trade purposes. In 1825, the brig *Kiakhta* traded goods of the value of 29,060 rubles and purchased provisions of the value of 29,803 rubles, which shows the general balance of the transactions.

With the Kolosh there was some traffic in furs, reaching its maximum between 1830 and 1840. During these years a trading vessel was sent each year through the channels from Lynn Canal to Portland Channel, to trade for peltry. In earlier years Chief Manager Mouravief had said: "The Company derives no profit from this trade, but it must be maintained in order to gain the friendship of the Kolosh and accustom them to intercourse with the Russians."<sup>55</sup>

After the lease to the Hudson's Bay Company, in 1840, of the right to the fur trade of the mainland from Portland Canal to Cape Spencer, the Russian trade with the natives of the islands decreased until it practically ceased. The causes were summed up by the historian of the Company as being: that rumors were spread by the rival company that the Russians had turned this trade over to them; that the British paid higher prices for furs and carried goods that were not to be had at Sitka; and that they sold liquors and firearms and ammunition in violation of the agreement of 1841<sup>56</sup>

The superior quality of the goods very probably had much to do with it, for the Hudson's Bay blanket was the standard all along the coast in the Indian trade, and to this day is preferred to any other.

In 1860, the Russian steamer *Nikolai I* was sent to trade in the straits between the islands, but secured upon the trip only 40 skins of poor quality, of various kinds, notwithstanding the prices offered were far higher than that paid at any post in the Company's dominion to other fur gatherers.

The trade in the north was also demoralized by the whalers, who sold to the Eskimos and the Chuckchees all kinds of goods, but principally firearms and intoxicating liquors, and secured much of the fur of that region. The managers of the Company asked to be permitted to use the same methods in dealing with the natives, and the auditor

---

<sup>55</sup> Khlebnikof, in **Materiali**, part ii, p. 88.

<sup>56</sup> Tikhmenef, II, 350.

for the Company, Golovnin, in his report in 1861, favored it being permitted.<sup>57</sup>

The early fur hunters, or *Promishileniki*, were a drinking set of men and, whenever the opportunity presented itself, would drink up everything they possessed. Some of them would barter their clothing for drink and then be carried to the ship naked to begin their voyage. As the organization of the Company became more complete; when authority was better recognized; when a different class of men were employed, drinking decreased. In 1841, the Company's Regulations forbade the sale except in small quantities, and under certain restrictions, and an agreement was made with the Hudson's Bay Company by which sales to the Indians were forbidden.

The Americans frequented the coast and sold intoxicants, and to this the Russians objected. In 1829, the American bark *Volunteer*, under Captain Charles Taylor, sailed to Kyganie, traded with the Indians, they became drunken, a quarrel arose in which an Indian was killed and the mate of the vessel badly wounded. They sailed for Sitka to get medical attention from the Russian surgeon, which was freely given, but the General Manager said: "If American gentlemen will sell arms, ammunition and liquors to the Indians, they must suffer the consequences."<sup>58</sup>

Rum was generally substituted for whiskey, and was issued to the employes at the rate of eight gills per year, at the Company's expense, on certain church holidays. In addition to this, the Chief Manager had a right to issue it after fatiguing labor and under urgent conditions, so the laboring classes received from one to two gills per week. To other inhabitants it was sold in limited quantities at established prices, but the lower employes only obtained it upon the written application of their immediate superior. The regulations for sale were frequently violated, for many would give exorbitant prices for small quantities. For an example, a shoemaker would ask 30 or 35 rubles for a pair of boots, but would exchange them for a bottle of rum, worth to the Company's store the sum of three and a half rubles.<sup>59</sup> On the voyages made during the early years of the colony when all liquors were brought across Siberia by caravan, a liquor was brewed from different herbs, called *quass* by them and used as a preventive of scurvy.<sup>60</sup>

<sup>57</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 113.

<sup>58</sup> Jonathan S. Green, *Journal of a Tour on the Northwest Coast in 1829*, (New York, 1915.)

<sup>59</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 59.

<sup>60</sup> "The hunters bought at Kamchatka sweet grass, cleaned nettles, and lambsquarter. The nettles were used as yarns for fishing nets, while the other two served to make a drink similar to quass, a good preventive against scurvy."—Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part i, p. 51, note.

Over the counter in the Company's store in New Archangel was a price list showing all the principal commodities kept for sale and the sales price to the people of the town. The prices were in the assignats or scrip of the colony, and were established by the Chief Manager.<sup>61</sup>

The money that was in use in the different posts was the scrip or credit checks of the Company, at first issued on walrus hide, afterward on slips of paper. The denominations were 10, 25, and 50 kopeks, and 1, 5, 10, and 25 rubles. In 1817, there were 17,000 rubles in circulation; as they became worn in traffic they were taken up, and in 1822, 30,000 rubles were issued, of which 6,000 were placed at Kodiak, and 3,000 at each of the posts of Ross and Unalaska.<sup>62</sup>

For the purpose of purchasing foodstuffs in California, and for other matters requiring coin, the Company kept a certain amount of the money of other countries, principally Spanish piastres, that were received from trading vessels and men-of-war that entered the port. For January, 1825, there is shown in the accounts the sum of 7,591 piastres, but these were not allowed to go out in circulation among the people.<sup>63</sup>

Among the Kolosh, tanned deer skins were used as currency. There were also among them much of the *hiaqua*, or small sea shell (*Dentalium*) used on Puget Sound as money by the Indians, and which they called *Tzukli*. This was bought by the Russians at about 30 rubles per 100 in 1825.<sup>64</sup>

Under the second and third charter the Company had a practical monopoly of the tea trade, and they transacted an immense business which yielded large profits. From 1821 to 1841 the amount of this commodity transported from China to Russia was 72,814 chests, valued at 9,316,342 rubles. Between 1835 and 1840 the profits were from 40 to 80 rubles, silver, per box, but in 1845 it had fallen to six rubles four kopeks, silver.<sup>65</sup>

At Sitka and at Kodiak hospitals were maintained, and of the one at Sitka, Sir George Simpson, the Governor of the Hudson's Bay Company, said: "In its wards, and, in short, in all the requisite appointments, the institution in question would be no disgrace to England."<sup>66</sup> January 1, 1862, there were in the Company's service in the colonies, three doctors (one at Ayan), 11 apothecaries and sur-

<sup>61</sup> Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iii, p. 92.

<sup>62</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 120; Khlebnikof, in *Id.*, part iii, p. 107; Dall, W. H., *Alaska and Its Resources*, p. 350.

<sup>63</sup> Lutke, in *Materiali*, part iv, p. 148; Khlebnikof, in *Id.*, part iii, p. 107.

<sup>64</sup> Khlebnikof, in *Materiali*, part iii, p. 90; Lutke, in *Id.*, part iv, p. 146.

<sup>65</sup> Tikhmenev, I, p. 375; Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 121.

<sup>66</sup> Simpson, *Journey, etc.*, II, 190.

geon's assistants, surgeon's and apothecaries' apprentices five, and two midwives and two assistants.<sup>67</sup>

During the first years of the settlement at Sitka scurvy was common during the winter, as conditions improved and food supplies became better it was eradicated, until 1853, when an epidemic of this complaint visited the town and of 64 persons attacked there were nine who died. Typhoid fever also came in the same year and 13 died. The measles caused the death of over 300 persons in the Company's dominion during 1848.

A terrible visitation of smallpox came in 1837-39, which killed thousands of the natives before they would permit vaccination. This scourge visited the country again in 1862, but owing to the efficient regulations enforced by the Company, only a few died and it did not go farther than to Sitka, coming from the southeast. During Etolin's administration 1,200 were vaccinated at Sitka, and during Furuhelm's management he sent to California for vaccine and distributed it at every station.<sup>68</sup>

Venereal disease was very prevalent for many years and caused the management much trouble. After the disease had been stamped out in the colonies it would be communicated to the inhabitants at Sitka by the Kolosh, who became infected from the crews of sailors who came trading along the shores. It was finally completely eradicated from all the westward posts and at Sitka was practically suppressed before the close of the Russian regime.<sup>69</sup>

The citizens of Sitka lived a busy and uneventful life. The occasions that disturbed the usual serenity of the quiet, beautiful village on the northern island were the arrival of ships from far-off Russia, their departure for the return voyage, or some great church festival.

Of church holidays there were many, and the chimes of the Cathedral of St. Michael rang out long and frequently on the spruce clad shores.

Ships with news from home and friends were few and far between. From 1849 to 1852 there were 14, an unusual number, for those were busy years and brought more than the quota of ordinary years, but in the preceding 45 years there were only 41 vessels that made the voyage.<sup>70</sup>

The Chief Manager lived in the mansion on the kekoor, in what was known as the Baranof Castle to Americans in later years, and at

<sup>67</sup> Tikhmenef, II, 245.

<sup>68</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 89; Tikhmenef, II, 243.

<sup>69</sup> Golovnin, in *Materiali*, part ii, p. 86; Tikhmenef, II, 245; Surgeon's report, cruise of the Corwin, 1881, p. 17.

<sup>70</sup> *Morski Sbornik*, November, 1852, p. 416.



his table sat the Captain of the port, the secretaries, and others of the higher class in the colony, who constantly dined with him by general invitation. The next lower class, for the Russians are exacting as to their grades of society both in law and in custom, were the civilian masters of vessels, the accountants, clerks, engineers, etc., who lived at the club that was organized by Etolin in 1840.<sup>71</sup>

The amusements were few and simple; boating on the waters of the beautiful harbor; quiet rambles along the road known as the Governor's Walk to the deep woods of the *Kolosh Reka*, or Indian River; perhaps a climb up the wooded slopes of Mt. Verstovia, among the masses of maidenhair fern, and the rest must be the social meetings among the people of the town.

Dinners were given in the mansion of the Chief Manager, at which there would be present the bishop and priests, the naval officers, the secretaries, the accountants, the clerks, masters of the vessels, etc., often to the number of 60 or 70 persons.<sup>72</sup> Every one dressed in his best and most were in uniform, for the employes were entitled to wear the uniform of the Department of Finance.

There were grand balls given at the mansion on the kekoor at which the dancing continued all the night until four in the morning. "Quadrilles and waltzing were kept up with great spirit, and I was not a little surprised to learn from our good friend and host, that many of the ladies then moving before us with easy and graceful air, had not an idea of dancing twelve months before," says one visitor.<sup>73</sup>

The first mistress of the mansion who came from Russia to Sitka was Lady Wrangell, and the wife of Chief Manager Kupreanof is said to have crossed Siberia to join him in the northern post among the islands.

Russian hospitality is world famous and the people of Sitka upheld the traditions of the race. Dinners, balls, and festivities of all kinds were frequent and the weddings were elaborate affairs, with a ceremony an hour and one-half in length.

The festival of Easter was one of the greatest of the many church holidays. All dressed in their finest apparel, attended the services in the church; where they stood throughout the entire ceremony; then they went about the town, carrying gilded eggs to present to their friends, and greeting them with the salutation, "Christ is risen."

The shipping in the harbor presented a busy scene with from ten to fifteen vessels at anchor or loading and discharging cargo at the

<sup>71</sup> Tikhmenef, II, 244.

<sup>72</sup> Simpson, *Journey, etc.*, II, 185.

<sup>73</sup> Belcher, *Voyage, etc.*, I., 105.

wharf.<sup>74</sup> Ships were preparing for exploring voyages or loading furs for Okhotsk or Kronstad.

Before sailing the Chief Manager went on board for an inspection, the men and officers dressed in their finest uniforms, and every appointment was seen to be in perfect order. On the deck was a monk and two assistants to bless the ship before she sailed on her voyage; he sprinkled the flag with holy water, the company partook of a collation, and the tug took the ship slowly out through the Eastern passage between the spruce clad islands. There was a parting salute from the guns of the batteries; then the sails were spread to the winds that blow off the slopes of Edgecumb.

Then the people of New Archangel went back to their accustomed occupations, the sorting of furs, the work of the mills, the many homely tasks about the village, while the sentries walked their beats along the stockade.

C. L. ANDREWS.

---

<sup>74</sup> Simpson, *Journey, etc.*, II, 198, gives a list of 13, in 1842.

## BLACK TAMANOUS, THE SECRET SOCIETY OF THE CLALLAM INDIANS\*

In the secret society known among the Clallam Indians as "Black Tamanous" is embodied one phase of Indian life which has been withheld from those who have persistently sought for knowledge of the customs of this primitive tribe. The secrecy which surrounded the doings of the Black Tamanous society forestalled any possibility of the public press giving to the world any information regarding it. Very few young men of this generation were admitted into the society; consequently, the number of those who have knowledge of the order and a disposition to disclose the secrets, as I am doing now, is small.

If you will pardon the allusion to myself in this connection, I wish to say that in all probability I am the youngest member living. At the age of seventeen I was initiated into the secrets of this order at a potlatch at Port Angeles. This was in 1893, just before the suspension of their meetings; but many years prior to this, while I was only a boy, I was made an honorary member by the Makah Indians at Neah Bay.

That I may not be accused of breaking faith with the society, some explanation is necessary at this juncture. As a race the Indian is passing away. The representatives yet remaining are fast becoming amalgamated with other races. As a whole, they have absorbed more of these vices than of the virtues of the conqueror; and the effects of these vices are evidenced by a general decrease of vitality, so general that the final outcome must be extinction. The trend of everything is away from the primitive; the time is not far distant when all that will remain of early Indian life will be found in the museum, the song, the story, or the historical records of the exterminators. For this reason I feel that I am not breaking my obligation in stating these facts concerning a society that has lost its existence, that I am justified in giving to the white race a description of the Black Tamanous with whatever of interest may attach thereto.

The summer was largely given to providing subsistence for the camp. After the provisions were laid by for winter, feasting and

---

\*This paper was read before the Employees' Club of the Cushman Indian School. Mr. Williams, a Clallam Indian, is a member of the faculty of that school.—O. B. Sperlin.

dancing were indulged in with much zest. Whenever a person had accumulated a quantity of property, he invited all the near-by tribes to a potlatch. At these gatherings various games and entertainments were provided for the amusement of those in attendance. Whether or not the potlatch was especially advocated by the Black Tamanous society as one of its teachings would be impossible to state; but I do know that it was always a member of this society who financed the potlatch, and that during its extent secret sessions of the Black Tamanous were held, at which sons of illustrious and honorable men were initiated. One of those initiated was sure to be the son or relative of the man conducting the potlatch.

With all the objections brought against the potlatch as we see it from our viewpoint today, it had, nevertheless, some redeeming features. It prevented too much avarice, and the members of the tribe were taught to render respect and honor to him who had thus deprived himself of his goods to bestow them upon his friends, while he started life again with naught but their good will.

To return to the Black Tamanous: those to be initiated were selected by the leaders, but never from applications. No one in whose veins coursed tainted blood, that is, whose ancestors were slaves, was ever taken in. At the proper time, those selected for initiation were surprised by a crowd of men with blackened faces, and taken to a place where they were kept secluded from all but members. They were taught what to do and how to act during the performance before the assembly. Their faces were blackened also. This drilling continued for several days. The outsiders were led to believe that these young men were dead.

Many stories are told of how they killed those who were unable to follow instructions. The same fate was shared by those who dared to show antagonism to the order. Since the candidates had no choice in the matter, it is said the members sometimes selected their enemies to silence opposition. In that case the candidate was lifeless before being brought into the assembly. Those in charge of the demonstration raised him several times, and then announced that he failed to respond to the treatment to bring him to life again. This was one way of keeping outsiders in fear, and preventing them from talking against the society.

The severest test given to one who was grown up before being taken in or one they had some doubt of being a good candidate was to take him to the beach at low tide and to leave him there, supposedly dead. Woe to him if he made any movement which would give away



to the profane that he was alive! The waves might beat upon him, but he must remain rigid. It meant death if he failed. When the members were satisfied that the candidate lived up to instructions given, he was taken back to the preparation room for the final work.

On the day set for the final tests candidates were brought before the assembly devoid of clothing and apparently lifeless. The doctors or leaders of the society were supposed to be vested with power to restore life. Each candidate was raised several times and at the appointed moment aroused, supposedly returned to life by the mysterious authority of the doctors. According to previous instructions, the candidates now began to act strangely and usually ran out of the house. As they did so spears were placed in their hands to frighten the uninitiated whom they might meet. They continued to run until they reached the outskirts of the village, where they bathed and immediately returned to the assembly hall. Here all engaged in the dance, followed by a great feast; these two lasted alternately for a week or more.

At the close of this merry-making the master of ceremonies produced the articles to be disposed of, and the potlatch proper was inaugurated. The property was given away in honor of those recently initiated as members in good standing of the Black Tamanous. Then a new name was given each—possibly that of a grandfather or great grandfather—and the ceremony was complete.

During the dances many plans were devised to strike terror to the onlookers. Sometimes a dog was dismembered and the doctors pretended to eat the carcass. Other dancers horrified the audience by spitting out streams of blood. This, I learned afterwards, was accomplished by cutting a gash in the end of the tongue, from which the blood flowed profusely. One story is told which illustrates how carefully they guarded this power as a secret. It is said that on the day following a frenzied dance, one of the leaders was lying on his back, while about him were his wife and children. One of the little girls playfully climbed upon her father's body and while talking to him noticed that his tongue was lanced; whereupon she cried, "Oh, father, your tongue is cut!" He quickly took his knife and killed the entire family by cutting them across the abdomen. To him it was better that they were dead than that he should keep his family and leave any possibility of their disclosing one of the horrible secrets of the Black Tamanous. It was a well known fact that anyone who revealed one of their secrets disappeared and no one dared express an

opinion, even if it were suspected that members of the society might be responsible for the disappearance.

The last part of the ceremony of initiation consisted of explaining the origin of the society. Guards having been stationed about the house to prevent eavesdroppers from listening, the doctors or masters gave the following information to the initiates, as nearly as I can translate the account into English:

"At one time, having returned from a duck hunt, a certain man invited his friends to feast on the game he had killed the night before. While eating and engaging in pleasant conversation, one of the men accidentally tore his tongue with the breast bone of the duck. The blood gashed forth; all eyes were centered on the man in his distress; consternation ensued among the guests, but none could offer relief. This accident had changed a joyous, harmonious group from pleasure and happiness to sadness and distress. It was considered a disgrace that such an event should happen on such an occasion, and they sought for some means of removing the stigma that attached thereto.

"They searched for a word, a thought, or a symbol for this calamity. Many sounds were suggested, but none seemed to be applicable to the thought that would fit the occasion. When they were about wearied of their search and failure was staring them in the face, one of the men who had not spoken, said more as an afterthought, 'Why not try this sound?' and he imitated the growl of an animal. The right chord was struck—the symbol of the desired idea was found and a new society was born. They called it 'Hun-hun-ne-te,' meaning *to growl*, or the sound of growling. These men then made a compact, took their obligation to keep this secret, and agreed that if anyone should reveal what had taken place there, the death penalty should be inflicted."

Thus they had succeeded in restoring harmony by turning this suffering and disgrace into a great movement, the beginning of one of the most feared societies among the Clallam Indians. Whatever of spiritual meaning there is in the society, I am still in the dark concerning it. I sometimes imagine that the spiritual meaning was left to the initiate to solve for himself, and that he could not understand unless he was fully prepared and his life fit to possess this knowledge; furthermore, that one must seek earnestly to find it as the originators had done before finding the sound or word that they searched diligently for. Does it mean that after all there are no mysteries in

life when we come to understand by the light of knowledge and understanding? Or is it the story of the Lost Word?

I have no doubt that in the primitive days to be initiated and to be a member were character builders. These urged the individual to live a life of usefulness, strength, and power, and gave him realization that he possessed something outsiders did not have. This was a stimulus for him to build his manhood strong and noble until he attained that greatest of virtues, Self-Control, and became a real Master—Master of his own forces.

JOHNSON WILLIAMS.

## MULLAN ROAD

For fifty years after the exploration of Lewis and Clark, the Oregon Trail was the usual route to the Northwest. It is true that at first the trappers and later the traders ascended the Missouri to Fort Benton and that the Indians of Eastern Washington and Northern Idaho went across the mountains to hunt buffalo in Montana, but the trails used by the Indian were not known to the white man and he himself had no roads or routes.

But in the fifties there came a demand for a northern route to the Pacific Coast. There was need of a transcontinental railroad westward from St. Paul. The Indian wars of 1855-6, on the upper Columbia, caused the settlers in Oregon and Washington to ask protection of the National Government and roads were needed if soldiers were to come quickly. Immigrants to the Northwest from St. Louis could come to Fort Benton by water, about two-thirds of the distance. The Walla Walla country, after the Indian wars, was settled very rapidly and there was soon a surplus of grain, livestock, etc., for which a market was sought.

In response to these demands, the National Government decided to build a military road. Lieutenant John Mullan was commissioned to build the road. One day during the presidency of Polk, a boy was admitted to his presence, for in those days a president did not have so much to do and was not so difficult to see as today. The boy was below the average in height, but well built and had a keen eye. He asked the President for admittance to West Point. "What is your name?" asked the President. "John Mullan, sir," replied the boy. "Well, don't you think you are rather small to want to be a soldier?" asked Polk. "I may be somewhat small, sir, but can't a small man be a soldier as well as a large one?" The President thought so and Mullan was appointed and in due time graduated from West Point at the head of his class and became a lieutenant of artillery.

When the government organized the expedition under Stevens, to find routes for railroads and roads from the upper Mississippi to the Pacific Northwest, Mullan was a member of his party. He spent the next three or four years in this work, exploring the Rocky and Bitter Root mountains of Montana, Idaho and those of Washington, seeking suitable routes for the purposes mentioned. Stevens finished his work, became Governor of Washington Territory and later its



delegate in Congress, but Mullan was still interested in the road to the Northwest.

On one of his trips to Washington, D. C., he called on Jefferson Davis, then Secretary of War, and gave him such a glowing description of the possibilities and practicability of this road that the Secretary immediately assigned him the task of building it.

Briefly, the road beginning at Wallula extends eastward to Fort Walla Walla. The route is then North, crossing the Snake river where the Palouse empties into it, continuing northward almost to the present city of Spokane. Here the road turns east and two locations were made, both leading to the old Coeur d'Alene Mission at St. Mary's, one going around the Southern part of Lake Coeur d'Alene and the other around the Northern. The latter became the permanent route. From the Mission, the road follows the Coeur d'Alene river to its source, crossing the Bitter Root mountains at Sohn's Pass to the river St. Regis Borgia, which is a branch of the Bitter Root. This river, together with the Hellgate and Little Blackfoot, furnish the route to Mullan's Pass, where the road crosses the Rocky Mountains. From this point the road is parallel to, but some distance north of, the Missouri river until it approaches Fort Benton, when it reaches the river. From Wallula eastward, Mullan describes the country as follows: "First one hundred and eighty miles open trail or rolling prairie; next one hundred and twenty miles densely timbered mountain bottoms; next two hundred and twenty-four miles open timbered plateaus with long stretches of prairie; and next one hundred miles level or rolling prairie."

The construction of the road involved one hundred and twenty miles of difficult timber cutting, twenty-five feet broad; thirty miles of excavation fifteen or twenty feet wide; the building of miles of corduroy road, of many bridges varying in length from a few to hundreds of feet; the provision for ferries when bridges were not practical, the most notable one being that kept by a half-breed Indian, Antoine Plant, across the Spokane. The river at that point was three hundred feet wide and eighty feet deep. The ferry was operated by a strong cable and a boat forty feet long.

The terminals of this road were Forts Walla Walla (Wallula) and Benton. The former was located near the junction of the Snake and the Columbia and was built by the Hudson's Bay Company in 1830, and next to Vancouver the most important fort in the Oregon country. Here were kept the supplies for many of the forts on the upper Columbia and Snake rivers and here were collected the furs

from these forts. Here resided Peter Skeen Ogden and here were brought the survivors of the Whitman Massacre when ransomed by him.

Fort Benton was built in 1846 and was to the upper Missouri what Walla Walla was to the upper Columbia and in the early days it became the head of navigation when steamboats came up from St. Louis.

On July 1st, 1859, Mullan began actual work on the road, starting from the Western Terminal. He had about one hundred men, together with wagons, pack horses, axes, picks, shovels, whip saws and other tools necessary for the work. The men were divided into parties, each party being in charge of a foreman. The topographers and engineers first made permanent locations, selecting lines of least resistance, choosing suitable places for fords or ferries across the streams; avoiding so far as possible canyons, hills or mountains that would require much rock work, swamps and bogs that would require corduroy or bridge work, or thickly timbered sections that would require much chopping. Of course, there were places where these obstacles could not be avoided.

The location having been made, the laborers followed. Little was required till the Coeur d'Alene region was reached. Here the heavy work began. Over one hundred miles through "standing timber that was dense, and fallen timber that had accumulated for ages formed an intricate jungle well calculated to impress one with the character of impenetrability." Twenty bridges varying in length from a few feet to a hundred or more were built across the Coeur d'Alene river in going a comparatively short distance. At another place six miles of heavy rock work had to be done which required the labor of one hundred and fifty men for six weeks.

Depots for supplies were established at regular intervals along the route. In summer a place would be selected where there was plenty of wood and water for the men and pasture for the stock, consisting of work animals and beef cattle, while in the winter the stock was taken to the lower and milder altitudes. The men, however, built log houses and remained near their work. Deer and bear were abundant. These, together with the beef cattle, could be killed, the meat hung in the trees where it froze and could be used as needed. Flour, sugar, coffee, etc., must be brought from one end or the other of the road, while fresh vegetables could be obtained at certain seasons from the Catholic missions or fur trading stations. The most noted of these missions were the St. Mary's, located on Coeur d'Alene Lake, and

another on Lake Pend d'Oreille. Aside from furnishing a certain amount of provisions, they secured from the Indians for Mullan much valuable information of the country as regards trails, passes, etc.

The Indians rendered Mullan great assistance as guides, mail carriers, packers, etc. During the winter of 1859, Garry, Chief of the Spokanes, brought the mail regularly by way of Clark's Fork. In the Spring of 1860, Mullan was at work in the Bitter Root valley and in great need of supplies from Benton. He says: "for my men and stock my necessity was so great that I laid my wants before the 'Flat Heads.' I told them I needed one hundred and seventeen horses, with pack saddles, and from fifteen to twenty of their men to accompany Mr. Sohn across the mountains. They promised me a reply next day, when they would send me as many sticks as they had men and horses to furnish.

"The next morning their Chief Ambrose came to Fort Owen, where I was a guest, with a bundle of one hundred and thirty-seven sticks, each representing a horse or a man. Such nobleness of character as is found among some of the Flat Heads is seldom seen among Indians. I here record to their credit that I never had a want, but which when made known to them, they supplied and that they always treated myself and my parties with a frank generosity and a continuous friendship.

"They were paid for the use of their animals and the services of their men, and made the trip in the month of March safely across the Rocky Mountains, bringing me back eleven thousand rations."

August 1st, 1862, Mullan and his road builders reached Fort Benton, where he met Major Blake and three hundred recruits awaiting his arrival. Captain Reynolds, a topographical engineer, and party who had been surveying a route from Fort Laramie to the headwaters of the Missouri and Yellowstone rivers were also there. Mullan turned over some of his men and equipment to Major Blake, who was to come over the new road to Wallula, secured a number of pack horses from Captain Reynolds and within four days started on his return trip over the road. His purpose was to make all needed changes and repairs that the road might be thoroughly tested by Major Blake, who had many wagons and a considerable party.

Shortly after his departure four steamers arrived at Fort Benton from St. Louis, bringing three hundred and sixty-four emigrants for Walla Walla and other points. They had saw- and grist-mills. There were also many miners among them who intended prospecting enroute.

Captain Mullan found little to demand his services on his return, arriving at Wallula late in August. Here he disposed of his property at public auction and departed for Washington, D. C., to make his final report. He had been seven years in the field, four of which were in the actual building of the road, which was now complete. It had cost \$230,000, or less than \$400 per mile.

This road enabled the government to move its troops rapidly to the Northwest; furnished a way for the miner, the pack train that came soon after its completion; induced thousands of immigrants to come to the new country; supplied the transcontinental railroad in the North with the information necessary for the proper location of their lines; and showed to the whole United States the richness of the natural resources of the "Oregon Country" and provided a safe means of transit to it and safety for those who would settle it.

In 1866 the Legislature of Washington Territory in a memorial to Congress for an appropriation to repair this road, four years after its completion, sets forth its advantages as follows:

"The opening of this road is of the greatest, most vital importance to the people of Washington, Idaho and that portion of Montana lying West of the Rocky Mountains. There is a constant stream of population flowing into the region of country lying along and adjacent to this so-called Mullan road. The immigrant who is seeking farming land comes on down to the Walla Walla and other rich valleys lying along the Western terminus of the road and thence on to Puget Sound. There is at the present time a population of over 100,000 inhabitants in the territories of Washington, Idaho and Western Montana. Rich deposits of gold, silver, copper, lead and iron are constantly being discovered and rapidly developed. Mining towns are springing into existence in all parts of the newly settled region. Branch roads leading from this main trunk (Mullan road) to the different mining camps are being made by individual enterprises. The vital importance of an early opening of a free road through this rich and fertile region of public domain, whereby the producers of the valleys may be enabled to reach the mining regions with their produce, and supply the miners with the necessities of life at prices which will enable them to remain in and develop the mines.

"We submit the following statistics carefully compiled and drawn from reliable sources relative to the productions and ruling prices for the same of Walla Walla valley alone, together with the number of tons of freight landed by teams at Wallula, and the amount passing over the Mullan road by pack trains to Western Montana.



"The Walla Walla valley, including that portion which lies in the State of Oregon, has produced this season (1866) 500,000 bushels of wheat, 250,000 bushels of oats, 200,000 bushels of barley, 150,000 bushels of corn, 170,000 pounds of beans, 4,500 head of hogs, 1,800 head of horses, 2,500 head of cattle.

"From January 1 to November 15, 1866, 1,500 head of horses have been purchased by individual miners at Walla Walla horse markets, 2,000 miners have outfitted at Walla Walla, 5,000 head of cattle were driven from Walla Walla to Montana, 6,000 mules have left Walla Walla and the Columbia river loaded with freight for Montana; fifty-two light wagons with families have left Walla Walla for Montana, thirty-one wagons with immigrants have come through from the States via the Mullan road, a portion of whom settled in Walla Walla valley and the remainder crossed the Columbia river at Wallula and settled on the Yakima river or passed on to Puget Sound; not less than 20,000 persons have passed over the Mullan road to and from Montana during the past season; \$1,000,000 in treasure has passed through Walla Walla and Wallula during the same period.

The Walla Walla valley contains six flouring mills, six saw-mills, two planing mills, two distilleries, one foundry and fifty-two threshing, heading and reaping machines."

HENRY L. TALKINGTON.

## DOCUMENTS

---

Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey

Editor by VICTOR J. FARRAR

(Continued from Quarterly for July, 1916, page 246.)

---

Wednesday 9 [June, 1852.]

Wind still continued to blow, quite cool. Evening very windy and cool. Mr. White and another gentleman stayed all night at our house this evening.

Thursday 10

Morning very calm and pleasant very light breeze west. A vessel seen at a distance coming up. Mr. W. & his partner left this morning for Port Townsend Mr Dray came this morning bound for Townsend. Two vessels in sight this morning in the Straits I suppose outward bound. Evening cloudy with some rain falling which will be very good for vegetation as the ground is very dry.

Friday 11th

Morning cloudy, we had a fine shower of rain last night and this morning we finished setting out cabbage plants. A vessel still in sight in the Straits. Come up and anchored in Port Townsend supposed to be the Schooner Damerisuvo. [Demaris Cove. See note on page 244.]

Saturday 12

Morning very pleasant attempted to raft our board timber and failed could not get raft afloat Day verry warm— Schooner Damerasuvo left Port Townsend this morning with a light wind south, outward bound. Col Moses,<sup>12</sup> H Wilson,<sup>13</sup> Wilton<sup>14</sup> came

---

<sup>12</sup> By an act approved February 14, 1851, the collection district of Puget Sound was created and Simpson P. Moses of Ohio was appointed collector. He arrived at Port Townsend on November 10, and shortly afterward appointed Isaac N. Ebey and Henry C. Wilson inspectors. Moses gained prominence in his efforts to rescue the goldseekers who had been captured on Queen Charlotte island by Haidah Indians, and by his libel of the Hudson's Bay Company's vessels Beaver and Mary Dare. He was not a success politically and was removed, his successor being Ebey.

<sup>13</sup> Henry C. Wilson. He was at this time inspector of customs for Port Townsend. Previously he had been a clerk for Lafayette Balch. He filed on a claim at Port Townsend in August, 1850, but failed to patent it. He was successful with his second claim, filed at that same port on April 19, 1852.

<sup>14</sup> William Wilton. He came to the Sound from San Francisco in December, 1850, and engaged in the business of cutting piles on the shores north of Stellacoom, but the enterprise resulted in failure.

over to day from Port Townsend with two Sailers and two Indians, remained all night.

#### Sunday 13

Morning cool I think there was frost last night as I see some of fern wilted as with frost Visited Col Crocketts accompayned by Col Moses and others who remained until after dinner when Maj Show came over and they accompaynid him to Coveland.<sup>15</sup> Day verry pleasant Schooner "Chatborough"<sup>16</sup> came up this evening—

#### Monday 14th

Morning pleasant, a little cool, employed hauling board timber Schooner Chatborough passed down about 12 oclock M & continued beating about in the Inlet all afternoon and finally anchored under Point Wilson. Fresh wind from west all evening.

#### Tuesday 15

Col Moses & Mr Wilson came in last night after we had all gone to bed. the Col wished to get to the Chatborough but the wind blue too hard. Morning pleasant the Schooner got under way this morneing about sunrise and made her way out on the ebb tide. Col Moses and Wilson started this morning after breakfast & start for Olympia— A Schooner this morneing is trying to make her way up the Inlet with a fare breeze and the tide is trying to keep her back I think the tide is successful as I see She is gradually dropping back. Mr. Ebey started to Olympia to day and I am very lonely all day as the boys are hauling timber a great ways off.

#### Wednesday 16

The above named vessel was seen early this morning making her way up the Straits and succeeded in passing on up the Sound to day She was supposed to be the George Emory.<sup>17</sup> This is a beautiful clear day. in the evening the wind raised strongly from the west and was very cold for the season of the year.

#### Thursday 17th

Morning very foggy wind west after the fog went off the day has been very pleasant— Mrs. Crockett visited me to day and

<sup>15</sup> Coveland was a townsite venture of Dr. R. C. Lansdale, who laid out the place on March 31, 1852. Coveland was not advantageously situated for a town and never amounted to much, although several enterprising persons attempted to make it boom.

<sup>16</sup> The schooner **Cadboro** was a Hudson's Bay Company boat and had been on this station since 1827.

<sup>17</sup> The **George Emory** was brought to these waters from San Francisco by her captain, Lafayette Balch.

I spent my time very agreeably Thomas<sup>18</sup> & William<sup>19</sup> went to Mr. Digges<sup>20</sup> to grind their axes—

Friday 18th

Morning very pleasant. The boys have commenced the pailings to day. All well.

Saturday 19th

Today clear and uncomfortably warm. Maj. Show came this evening to get his watch and clothes to go to Mr— Crockett's. To-day Mr. Crockett brought us over a good chance of venison which was very kind. We have a mild Sea breeze to day the water is very calm. A great deal of smoke is to be seen on the other side which I suppose is caused by the indians burning the woods.

Sunday 20

Day very warm and clear flies are very bad about the cattle; we had seen none of account until yesterday and today. Old Slack and his indians have just arrived from Victoria I suppose they have come to work his potatoes.<sup>21</sup> How pleasant it would be to have preaching to go to these beautiful long Sabbath days and Sabbath school for our children to go to I live in hopes of having such advantages in a year or two.

Monday 21st

Morning very cloudy, and looks very much like rain; a strong cool breeze from the west Evening more pleasant and clear— A vessel came down the Sound to day and anchored at Port Townsend About 4 o'clock in the afternoon a vessel was seen in the Straits coming up; The wind being very favorable she soon sailed passed and out of sight. We took her to be the *Exact*.

Tuesday 22nd

Morning clear and warm two brigs and a Schooner passed this day Mrs. Alexander<sup>22</sup> arrived here to day from off the Schooner

---

<sup>18</sup> Thomas Davis.

<sup>19</sup> William Alexander. See, *post*, note 22.

<sup>20</sup> W. H. Diggs. He left the island shortly after and entered the employ of Lafayette Balch.

<sup>21</sup> The Indians had acquired their knowledge of agriculture from the Hudson's Bay Company, who since 1833 had employed many of them as laborers on their various farms. The potatoes mentioned are described as small, of rough skin, but delicious in taste, and far superior to present commercial varieties.

<sup>22</sup> John Alexander was born on October 8, 1805, and was married to Frances Sharp (born June 6, 1818) on January 1, 1832. At the time of his migration he had two children: William, born on January 3, 1834, and John S., born on July 23, 1836. The family crossed the plains to Portland and on November 5, 1851, took passage for Puget Sound, where they selected their claim on August 1, 1852. Shortly afterwards, on November 13, Abraham Lansdale Alexander was born, his being the third birth among the settlers on the island. William Alexander married in Peoria, Illinois, and



Mary Taylor; her husband with his cattle and other property and Mr Smith<sup>23</sup> and Mr Bonsel<sup>24</sup> are coming down in scows. We are looking also for Mrs. Bonsel and Smith and Mr. & Mrs. Boysover<sup>25</sup> from Port Townsend who also came down from Olympia on the Mary Taylor.

#### Wednesday 23

Day clear and moderately warm. Dr. Lansdale, Mr. Howe & Capt. Fay,<sup>26</sup> came over and brought us two letters from the States one from W. Ebey dated March the 5th the other from Mary<sup>27</sup> dated March 29th They gave me a great deal of satisfaction as they stated Mother & sister, brothers & aunt are all coming to this country this year. We are very rejoiced to hear it. and sorry to hear the balance of our relatives cannot come until next season. We must prepare to meet those who are coming. Thomas & William Alaxander have almost completed the yard and have quit working at it to finish Thomas' house for Mr. A. to move into until they get theirs built.

#### Thursday 24th

This morning Maj Show came over to cover Mr. Bonseles house for his family to go into but finding it was quite open he gave it out until Mr. B. comes. About 10 o'clock to day Mrs. Bonsel and Mrs. Smith arrived here off the Schooner from Port Townsend with their families They will stay here until their husbands arrive I find them to be very fine ladies and good company. This morning was very foggy but towards 12 o'clock the fog disappeared and it was very pleasant until towards evening when the wind raised and was very cold.

---

had four children. John S. married Anna Lanning of Port Townsend on December 28, 1870, and had nine children. John Alexander, the father, died on September 9, 1858, and his widow married Captain R. C. Fay. She died on March 10, 1902.

<sup>23</sup> Jacob Smith. He filed a claim on October 10, 1852, and he should not be confused with Joseph Smith who came a year later and for whom Smith's prairie was named. Jacob Smith and his family left the island and went to Thurston county. Cordelia Smith married Nathaniel Crosby.

<sup>24</sup> H. H. Bancroft, *History of Washington*, p. 30, spells the name "Bonswell." The family left the island, as related in the diary, and probably left the Sound.

<sup>25</sup> Identity not ascertained.

<sup>26</sup> Captain Robert C. Fay. He was born in Vermont in 1820, and in September, 1851, in company with John N. Low, Lee Terry and David T. Denny, came to Alki Point, now part of the city of Seattle. His companions remained and are numbered with the founders of that city. Fay, however, preferred the island and, although he did not take a claim, made it his residence for the remainder of his life. He was never identified with marine affairs on these waters, but became quite prominent in the Indian service. In 1863, he married the widow of John Alexander. His death occurred on February 25, 1872.

<sup>27</sup> Mary Ebey Wright. See the introduction to this diary in the July number of the Quarterly.

## Friday 25th

Morning foggy and pleasant day clear and comfortably warm Thomas and William have completed riving boards and hewing puncheons and have gone to cover the house all well

## Saturday 26th

Morning cold and very thick heavy fog we could not see the bay for the fog there seemed to be a thick black cloud all over the water. Mrs. S. to day went over to Port Townsend to day to get her things off the vessel. Evening very cool. the boys have covered Thomas' house and laid the floor so Mr. Alaxander can live in it

## Sunday 27

Morning very pleasant and day warm A good breeze west. Mrs. Smith arrived from Port T. this morning by breakfast A vessel seen last evening going up. We have plenty of company four families of us here 12 children in one house almost enough for a school Samuel Crockett came over in the forenoon and staid a while. He said his father was intending to move to morrow to his own claim. Two vessels passing at present one supposed to be the John Davis<sup>28</sup> going up the other is a Schooner going down the Sound. The ground is very dry and needs rains.

## Monday 28th

Morning very foggy. Towards noon the wind raised from the west and blew all evening very hard. The water was covered with large white caps and looked very dangerous for one to be out in. We could distinguish a schooner through the thick mist upon the water going up towards P. T.<sup>29</sup> Today I succeeded in hiring six indians to work our potatoes after trying every one I saw for two weeks.

## Tuesday 29th

Morning very pleasant but cloudy Mr. Crockett was here a few minutes this morning and wished us to send over after some fresh venison I supposed the reason of his tarrying such a short time was the sight of so many ladies in one house which is a very singular scene in Whidby's Island After dinner Mrs. Alexander, Mrs. Bonsel, Cordelia Smith, all concluded to go out strawberry hunting and have Mrs. Smith to keep house and take care of the children. We walked over half a mile over to Mr. Bonsel's place

---

<sup>28</sup> The brig **John Davis**, Captain Plummer, of Port Townsend.

<sup>29</sup> Port Townsend.

and found a great many but we had not been there long before it commenced raining and drove us home through the wet weeds quite a wet disappointd set.

#### Wednesday 30th

Morning cloudy and a little rain but not enough to wet the ground through. Mr. Alaxander his son John with another gentleman arrived here this morning early they left the Scow yesterday evening ten miles above the landing and came in a canoe to the landing and stoped all night on the beach all well and safe. Evening pleasant and still cloudy Mr. Bonsel Mr. Alaxander and Mr. Smith, came this evening they had arrived in the Cove. To day I received two letters from Mr. Ebey and one from Winfield by Capt Bell from the Schooner Eagle I was much gratified to hear from all. The Eagle passed this evening C. Bell aboard.

#### Thursday, July the 1st.

Still cloudy and a little rain in the night. Wind south West. Old Mr. Crockett was here to day. Dr. Lansdale here a few minutes. Mrs. Alaxander moved to day. to Thomas' house.

#### Friday 2nd

Morning Cloudy with a few sprinkles of rain Mrs. Bonsel moved to her own house to day. Mrs. Smith and family left here for Capt. Bell's house We are very lonesome today after having so much company. Thomas gone to help William Alaxander dig a well Henry Wilson & Capt. Hachinson<sup>30</sup> of Schooner M. Taylor came over this evening and passed on to take a deer hunt. Evening nearly clear and very pleasant.

#### Saturday 3rd

Morning cloudy and very pleasant a little rain fell last night. Evening clear and moderately warm A great desire to see Mr. Ebey come from Oly. as we are very lonely since our female friends left Sold 3 pounds of butter to day. all in good health

#### Sunday 4th

Still cloudy and great appearance of rain; a little mist falling wind rather south but very light A large Sailing vessel passing slowly down the Sound. The appearance of the water is most beautiful this morning The surface is calm not a ripple or wave

---

<sup>30</sup> Captain Loren B. Hastings. He had filed a claim on Port Townsend on April 24, 1852, and with Charles C. Bachelder, A. A. Plummer and F. W. Pettygrove, became the founder of the city of that name. About that time he purchased the Columbia river pilot boat, **Mary Taylor**, which he placed on the run between the Sound and Portland.

to be seen except the serf which is slowly gliding towards the shore as regular as the pendulum of a clock ticks—but very gentle to what it is when the wind is high. This is a great day in some places We hear cannon firing from some Port or vessel up the Sound I think such things should be postponed until Monday as it is a great violation of the Sabbath. There are none here to day but Thomas myself, and the children it is a still & quiet Sabbath day.

#### Monday 5th

Day pleasant part of the day cloudy the ballance clear strong breeze south. Hired John Bartlet<sup>31</sup> to commence hoeing out our late potatoes to day. Thomas is engaged digging a well upon his claim.

#### Tuesday 6th

Morning pleasant and a little cloudy towards noon the sun shone very brightly but towards evening the clouds became very thick and appeared very much like rain The ground is very dry and a little rain would be a great help.

#### Wednesday 7th

Morning rainy and quite cool. Wind wavering we had a good shower of rain yesterday evening Thomas J. Bartlet, and an indian, hoeing our potatoes to day Mr. J. Crocket here this morning after some tools.

#### Thursday 8th

Day pleasant Mr. Smith went to Port Townsend today for his things and brought from there this evening a letter from Mr. Ebey and some papers.

#### Friday 9th

Day fair and quite warm This evening at bed time Mr. Ebey arrived from Olympia accompanied by Mr. Bailey<sup>32</sup> They were almost exhausted after having walked a great distance leaving their canoe and indians on account of high winds in the evening I was glad to see Mr. Ebey return but he is obliged to hurry off to Salem in a few days

#### Saturday 10th

Morning pleasant and warm nothing of importance occurred to day.

---

<sup>31</sup> John and Thomas Bartlett. These two, who were brothers, grew tired of farming, and shortly afterwards left for San Francisco.

<sup>32</sup> R. S. Bailey. He filed a claim on September 1, 1852.



## Sunday 11th

This morning we all Mr. Ebey myself and children went with J. Crocket and his lady to Col. Crocket's for the first time since they moved to their own claim we had a very pleasant visit, and saw a good deal of pretty country.

## Monday 12th

Day pleasant. Mr. Crocket and Samuel were here to day Mr. Baily the assessor went to Port T. today but did not return this evening as the wind is very high and blustery.

## Tuesday 13th

Morning cloudy; wind west but very light Mr. Ebey started this morning for Olympia and is going from there to Salem to a called term of the legislature Will be gone nearly 2 months I was very sorry to see him start to be gone so long and he seemed very loth to go at this time in the season a very busy time for farmers.

## Wednesday 14th

Morning very cold and looks very much like rain a very strong breeze from the South until towards noon when it became clear and very warm and but little wind Every kind of vegetation is fresh and green yet. Sold 2 lb. butter today and some bread

## Thursday 15th

Morning cloudy but pleasant all day very lonesome no one not even an indian stirring except Mr. Wilson from Olympia who had camped on the shore with Mr. Hughes<sup>33</sup> and Mr. Brownfield<sup>34</sup> on their way to Dungeness they bought 50cts. worth of bread another man off a vessel at Port T. came over and bought 2½ pounds of butter and J. Bartlet one pound.

## Friday 16th

Morning very cool for the season of the year day pleasant three vessels passed down the Sound today. Myself and the children went on a visit to Mr. Bonsel's this evening had a very pleasant visit Thomas was busy all day halling poles to fence the garden.

<sup>33</sup> Probably James M. Hughes who, with his family, arrived at Olympia on the *Exact*, in November, 1857. He subsequently became identified with Steilacoom.

<sup>34</sup> Daniel Fauber Brownfield. He had been very prominent in political affairs prior to his arrival at New Dungeness, where he filed a claim and became the second settler at that place.

## Saturday 17th

The atmosphere is hazy and feels as if we would have rain soon all day cloudy and a strong south wind Thomas and Mr. Bonsel went to day to cut board timber Mr. B. concluded the task too hard and gave it out. Walter Crocket here this evening. all well.

## Sunday 18th

Morning pleasant but cloudy at 12 o'clock it commenced raining and showered a little all evening To day I am very unwell scarcely able to sit up.

## Monday 19th

Day pleasant and clear The children went to J. Crocket's this evening and Susan came home with them to stay all night. I am still scarcely able to do my work yet I have it to do.

## Tuesday 20th

Susan stayed until evening and the little boys took her home I had such a pain in my side after they started that I could neither lie nor stand strait I did not know for some time what to do but at length it gradually became better.

## Wednesday 21

I felt so unwell this morning that Thomas went after the Dr. who came and gave me some medicine which he thought would help me. he thought my condition quite a serious one He said I ought to quit labour and try to get well. Today pleasant some South wind.

## Thursday 22

This is a very pleasant day I have not been able to write for several days until today I feel some better today but very weak A Steamer passed this evening supposed to be the Hudson Bay steamer Beaver.<sup>35</sup> Eason is 8 years old today.

## Friday 23rd

I have lost a day in this week occasioned by my illness. It was this evening the Steamer passed here she proved to be the U. S. Surveying Steamer Active<sup>36</sup> surveying the coasts of Oregon and California. The weather at this time is quite cool for the time in the year.

---

<sup>35</sup> The Beaver was the first steam-propelled vessel on the Pacific coast.

<sup>36</sup> The work of the coast survey in this territory was commenced at Shoalwater Bay, now Willapa Harbor, and was in charge of two persons: Lieutenant James Alden (hydrography) and George Davidson (topography).

## Saturday 24th

We have south wind today which is good for those who are traveling down the Sound a boat full of men came over to the Island from the Steamer (which is anchored at P. Townsend) yesterday evening on a deer hunting expedition I have not been able to cook but very little for some time Mrs. Bonsel's little girl Rebecca stays with me all the time Mrs. B. herself came over this evening and baked me some bread and pies and got supper. just as we were ready to eat supper the Dr. on board of the steamer Active and the engineer came and they took supper The Doctor is a very intelligent looking man.

## Sunday 25th

Morning cool as usual day pleasant Mrs. Alaxander came over today and Mr. A. and Dr. Lansdale who left me a little medicine and thinks I am out of danger He wishes to start next week across the mountains if I am well enough for Thomas to leave. I cough some and have a very bad pain in my sides.

## Monday 26th

All day quite cool Thermometer 65 degrees The weather in the States is, at this season of the year oppressively hot but this is an uncommon cool season for this country. everything seems to grow very fast

## Thursday 29th

From Monday until this time I have not been able to write but today I feel a great deal better than I have done since I took sick Last night was almost as cool as any night we had last winter early this morning was uncomfortably cool but today is a beautiful pleasant day clear and but little wind stirring Cordelia Smith is with me now helping me to do my work until I get stout again Dr. Lansdale was over this morning to see when Thomas could start across the mountains But T. cannot leave until the scow comes we hear she is on her way down We must hear from Mr. Ebey first Thomas was digging at his well yesterday he has it 26 ft. and no water yet Today he is cutting poles to fix the garden fence to keep the cattle out which seems to be almost an impossibility.

## Friday 30th

This morning is very cold Thermometer about as low as 58 degrees above zero day clear and pleasant Capt. Porter<sup>37</sup> and Capt

---

<sup>37</sup> Dana H. Porter. He removed to Port Ludlow, where he was inspector of spars until he died in March, 1880.

Bachelor<sup>38</sup> landed here early this morning in a whaleboat and called for breakfast Cordelia and myself got their breakfast although I was scarcely able to do anything They went on over to the Cove and returned by noon and ate dinner and paid two dollars Capt P. is very sociable and his hair is as white as milk.

Saturday 31st

Morning cool and pleasant some wind south evening very windy and blustry as usual Dr. Lansdale and Thomas have set Monday to start across the mountains to meet the Immigrants Cordelia went home this evening I am getting well again perhaps only for a short period health and life is uncertain I never expect to enjoy good health and bodily strength as I have done. Although this is a healthy climate my constitution appears to be very much injured, but it is useless to repine. I have experienced the loss of relatives and now the loss of health; yet I might have still greater losses and troubles to bear with I must be resigned to the will of a Higher Power.

August. Sunday 1st

Last night appeared to be cold enough for frost This morning is the coldest we have had this Summer. day pleasant a good deal of west wind. This evening I received a letter from Mr. Ebey dated Portland July 21st he was well It was brought to Port Townsend by Mr. Pettigrove<sup>39</sup> and from there by Mr. Bonsel and Capt. Scott.<sup>40</sup> a little rain in the forenoon today.

Monday 2nd

Morning usually cool day pleasant light breeze west. Dr. Lansdale came over today to start this evening; but as we heard by Capt. Scott that the Scow is not far off on her way down they have concluded to wait its arrival as we expect it will bring satisfactory letters from the States.

Tuesday 3rd.

Weather still cool. we are not troubled but very little with musquetoos and flies The sea breeze is very pleasant in the mornings but in the evening it is very uncomfortable to persons who are not accustomed to it. Mr. Bonsel started to Victoria in company with Mr. Wilson They intend taking a job there of building a good house.

<sup>38</sup> Charles C. Bachelder. He filed a claim on Port Townsend in 1852 and with L. B. Hastings, A. A. Plummer and F. W. Pettygrove, became the founder of the city of that name.

<sup>39</sup> F. W. Pettygrove. He arrived at Port Townsend in November, 1851, where he took a claim on April 24, and, with C. C. Bachelder, A. A. Plummer and L. B. Hastings, became the founder of the city of that name.

<sup>40</sup> Identity not ascertained.



## Wednesday 4th

Day cool Thermometer 60 degrees light wind south this morning towards evening the wind turned in the west and was very blustery The water very rough. John Bartlet staid here last night and left his lambs at home and this morning an Indian found one of them at the Bay and could not find the other supposed the indian dogs had killed it

## Thursday 5th.

Morning very cool as usual. A good deal of west wind Vegetation is fresh and green yet growing as fast as ever; while reports say vegetation in every other portion of Oregon is dried up and dead The ground here continues moist through the dry season. Mr. Alexander has dug his well 60 ft. deep and has come to dry fine sand he has quit it. Thomas' well affords water enough for Mr. Smith's family to use we think after a while it will have plenty in it Thomas is halling house logs today no news of the Scow yet. A vessel passed this evening.

## Friday 6th

Day pleasant A good breeze south today. Maj. Goldsborough<sup>41</sup> and Capt. Howard came this morning on their way to Dargeon Ness. Mr. Starling and Louten. Dement took dinner here today They are on their way from Dongeon Ness<sup>42</sup> and have taken Mr. Maddison<sup>43</sup> up for selling liquor to the Indians They have him here on the shore guarded by souldiers. He was here this evening a few minutes He looks very much distressed.

## Saturday 7th

Morning not quite as cool as usual, and quite cloudy considerable west breeze today. Thomas and Dr. Lonsdale started to Olympia today and from thence they coming back to the Mouth of the Snhomish river and are going up it as far as they can in a canoe and then take land and view out a road across the mountains to the mouth of the Umatilla. Those men are still camped on the beach except Mr. Maddison who they have sent up to Stillacoom to await his trial. this evening I received a letter from Mr. Ebey and one from Winfield stating that mother and brother John and James had started for this

<sup>41</sup> Messrs. Goldsborough, Howard, Sterling and Dement were officers connected with the army or navy attached to Fort Steilacoom. Commander Louis M. Goldsborough, U. S. N., had come to the Sound in command of the *Massachusetts*, which brought troops and supplies for the founding of Fort Steilacoom. Lieutenant John Dement, U. S. A., First Artillery, had participated in the rescue of the ill-fated gold seekers captured by Haidah Indians on Queen Charlotte island, and had seized the Hudson's Bay Company's ship Cadboro for alleged infractions of the custom's laws.

<sup>42</sup> New Dungeness.

<sup>43</sup> B. J. Madison. He took a claim at New Dungeness in March, 1852, and became the founder of that place.

country and that Martha was married on the 22 of April just before mother started and is not coming I am very sorry she is not coming but she may come next year. I am very much rejoiced to hear positive news of mother starting and hope she will get here safe.

Sunday 8th

Very cool this morning but not as cold as common. Wind west, very cloudy all day I have been all alone all day with the exception of Eason and Ellison's company John Barlet stays here of nights Those men on the beach started up this morning. I looked for some of Mr. Crocket's people over today but they have not come they certainly do not think of me living here alone day after day or some of them would visit me I am not able to walk so far to visit them and they are provided with wagons and horses so they can ride at any time. The water is very rough this evening. This is another Sabbath evening my mind reflects back to the time when I was happy in reading and singing and conversing face to face with my friends. I do not mean, I am unhappy here but I always feel lonely when Mr Ebey is gone which makes my mind meditate upon former scenes in my life when I had doting loving relatives all around me, a kind mother aunts sisters brothers and cousins and other relatives who would spare no pains in making me happy. Today I wrote a letter to Martha She is my only sister living I have another dear Sister in Heaven.

Monday 9th

Very cloudy and smoky all day today we cannot see any distance on the bay or in the prairie The weather is not quite as cold today as usual No person here all day but Eason Ellison and myself since morning. The children are busily engaged studying their books feeding and watering their calves and divers other little jobs all day.

Tuesday 10th

Very cloudy today and some rain Toward noon the wind raised from the south and blew very hard all day which is very disagreeable to us.

Wednesday 11th

Morning cloudy and warmer than it has been for some time. Mr. Ebey arrived this morning before breakfast; I was very much rejoiced to see him it was quite unexpected for him to return at this time as I expected Legislature would continue in Session longer than it did; yet I was very agreeably disappointed. I do not feel so lonely now every thing assumes a different aspect to what they did yesterday and other days.

## Thursday 12th

Day unusually warm and somewhat smoky Samuel Crockett, Mr. Smith Mr. Howe and Mr. Holbrook were all here in the forenoon. All very anxious to hear the news from Mr. Ebey. Mr. Smith arrived at noon with his boat which is very much injured and will have to be mended.

## Friday 13th

Weather warm and clear with the exception of some smoke. last night was the warmest night we have had here for two months. Mr. Ebey & Mr. Chatman<sup>44</sup> surveyed some yesterday but today Mr. Smith is mending his boat and they cannot get hands. All well. Mr. Alexander here this evening.

## Sat. the 14th

Mr. Ebey is getting his claim surveyed today by Mr. Chatman. Capt. Bell, John Bartlet and John Alexander are helping. this day is very warm. Mr. Hughs ate dinner here today.

## Sunday 15th

Morneing clear and warm. Mr. Hughs & Smith Pettegrove Plumber<sup>45</sup> & Wilton all came here for breakfast— Pettigrove crazy after butter got some here went to Jno Crockett got some there returned Capt Bell, John and Jno Chapman bound for Port Townsend, all soon started— Day very pleasant Miss Smith and her little sister paid us a visit today, A Ship coming up this evening all sails set—

## Monday 16th

Morning cloudy with south wind; Dr. Tolmie,<sup>46</sup> his lady and two other ladies. His little boy and a little brotherinlaw were here today bound for Victoria. They only stopped for a few minutes. Mrs. T.

---

<sup>44</sup> John Butler Chapman. Besides being the co-founder with Lafayette Balch of Steilacoom and active politically, Chapman was noted for his ability as a surveyor. He was later engaged by William Fraser Tolmie to make surveys of all lands claimed by the Puget Sound Agricultural Company.

<sup>45</sup> A. A. Plummer. He took a claim on Port Townsend on April 24, 1851, and with C. C. Bacheider, L. B. Hastings and F. W. Pettygrove, became the founder of the city of that name.

<sup>46</sup> William Fraser Tolmie was born in Inverness, Scotland, and educated as a naturalist, which at that time included medicine. Botany was his favorite study. Through the patronage of Sir William Hooker, the famous naturalist, he secured, in 1832, an appointment with the Hudson's Bay Company, and, in company with another appointee, a Mr. Gairdner, also a naturalist, set sail from London, aboard the Ganymede, and arrived at Fort Vancouver on April 30, 1833. Here he received orders from Dr. McLoughlin to repair to Milbank Sound to assist in the founding of Fort McLoughlin. In 1834, he was surgeon with an expedition under Ogden to the Stikkeen river, served at Fort Simpson, and went to Milbank Sound, where he remained until February, 1836, when he took up his abode at Fort Vancouver. Here he remained until 1840, when he was granted a year's leave of absence. The year 1841 he seems to have spent in organizing agricultural

is half indian but she shows but very little of the indian features and appears to be quite intelligent. She was educated by the Hudson B. C. in Victoria. The Dr. was very kind in leaving us a fine large piece of fresh beef as a present. a brig passing up.

#### Tuesday 17th

Day pleasant and clear until towards evening, when it looked very much like rain Mrs. Bonsel gave a great alarm of fire this morning The Indians had set fire not far from the house and it was about to burn up the house. She moved her things out and sent all over the neighborhood for men but none could be found they were all off surveying and cutting timber & , towards night, the men came and I sent them up and they succeeded in getting the house out of danger.

#### Wednesday 18

Morning cloudy and considerable rain through the day Mr Chatman has surveyed all the claims of those who wish to survey at this time on the Island and has gone to Port Townsend in company with Capt. Bell and John Bartlet, to survey claims over there. A large brig passed up last evening just in the time of our trouble about the fire. We received another letter from Winfield and one from brother John. Himself mother, and James were as far as Kanerville on their way to Oregon the 21st of May, and the road was crowded with Immigrants.

#### Thursday 19

Rain more or less all night the ground this morneing quite moiste, showery all day— doing little or nothing today—pulled an Indians wool and kicked another ones bottom today for being impudent & saucy to R when I am absent— Day cloudy, drisselly & calm—

#### Friday 20

Day cloudy and warm vessel passed up today; not very well today.

---

establishments in the Willamette valley. In 1841, he sailed to England, where he remained until 1843, attending to the agricultural interests of the Company. During these years he had acquired a knowledge of Spanish, having in mind an appointment to the post at Yerba Buena, but upon his return to America was given the superintendency of the Puget Sound Agricultural Company, instead. In 1859, he removed to Victoria, but continued to manage the affairs of the Puget Sound Agricultural Company until that company's interests were purchased by the United States government in the later sixties. Dr. Tolmie married the daughter of John Work, a clerk in the employe of the Company. His death occurred at Victoria in 1888.

(Continued in the next issue.)



## BOOK REVIEWS

---

DAVID THOMPSON'S NARRATIVE OF HIS EXPLORATIONS IN WESTERN AMERICA, 1784-1812. Edited by J. B. Tyrrell. (Toronto, The Champlain Society, 1916. Pp. 582.)

This is volume XII in the important series being issued by the Champlain Society for members and subscribing libraries only. This particular narrative is of great importance to the State of Washington for many reasons, the two most important being the facts that the text refers frequently to this region and that part of the editing was done by a well known citizen of this State. The editor's preface says: "In compiling the notes on the country west of the mountains I have been especially fortunate in securing the assistance of Mr. T. C. Elliott, of Walla Walla, Washington, U. S. A., who is intimately acquainted with the early history of the north-western states and especially of the Columbia valley. He was kind enough to visit me in Toronto, where we had the pleasure of reading over Thompson's original note-books together. His notes throughout are signed with his initials, T. C. E." A number of the illustrations are from photographs by Mr. Elliott and by others, including Mr. Frank Palmer of Spokane.

There is a touch of literary romance in the editor's preface when he recites how his own work on the Geological Survey of Canada caused him to realize that some man at some time had done very accurate work in the western lands. He then heard of Thompson's maps and notes. He began to study them and when he learned that Thompson at seventy years of age had prepared an accurate narrative from his notes he sought that narrative, finally buying it from Mr. Charles Lindsley, who had secured it from Thompson's son. It is this narrative that is now published, the editor declaring: "the present volume, with its wealth of new information about Western America, is issued with the hope that it may assist in confirming David Thompson in his rightful place as one of the greatest geographers of the world."

This splendid volume fully justifies the use of those phrases "wealth of new information" and "one of the greatest geographers." Scholars will henceforth turn to its pages for accurate records of the beginnings of civilized history in large areas of the northwest.

After a number of years in the employ of the Hudson's Bay Company, Thompson became associated with the North-West Com-

pany and in 1807 he crossed the mountains to the headwaters of the Columbia river and began vigorous work for his company. Continuing this work, he descended the river to its mouth, arriving at the newly built American fort Astoria on July 15, 1811. There he found his old partner, Duncan McDougall, in charge for Astor's Pacific Fur Company. After a few days at Astoria, Thompson ascended the Columbia river and later in the year continued his surveys to the river's source. Editor Tyrrell says: "Portions of this river have never been resurveyed since that time, so that Thompson's surveys still appear on every map of the Columbia river that is published." Thompson returned to Montreal in the summer of 1812 and "never again did he visit the scenes of his western exploits." His great work in the northwest was thus accomplished in five years.

Mr. Elliott's initials "T. C. E." are signed to eighty-seven footnotes, some of them extensive ones. They reveal his familiarity with the ground covered and in each case the note helps the present-day reader to a better understanding of the text. His friends will rejoice to see him thus associated with this important addition to American historical literature.

Historians in Oregon who have frequently discussed the origin of the name of Willamette River will find this paragraph, from page 493, of interest:

"In the afternoon, when the River ran to the WSW a high Mountain, isolated, of a conical form, a mass of pure Snow without the appearance of rock, appeared, which I took to be Mount Hood, and which it was; from the lower part of the River this Mountain is in full view, and with a powerful achromatic Telescope I examined it; when clear, the Snow always appeared as fresh fallen, it stands south of the Columbia River, near the shores of the Pacific Ocean, and from six thousand feet and upwards [is] one immense mass of pure snow; what is below the limit of perpetual Snow, appears to be continually renewed by fresh falls of Snow, its many Streamlets form Rivers, one of which the Wilarmet, a noble River through a fine country falls into the Columbia River."

The date of that entry was July 9, 1811.

This valuable source book will not be very generally accessible in the Pacific Northwest. The Champlain Society's publications go only to members and to subscribing libraries. For a number of years there has been a waiting list of each. In the published list of those fortunate enough to receive the works there is but one member in the

State of Washington—George W. Soliday, of Seattle. Victoria has one member and Vancouver has thirteen members. Among the subscribing libraries, these only are found in the Northwest: Carnegie Library, Vancouver, B. C.; Legislative Library of British Columbia, Victoria, B. C.; Public Library, Spokane, Wash.; Public Library, and Library of the University of Washington, Seattle, Wash.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

---

EARLY DAYS IN OLD OREGON. By Katharine Berry Judson. (Chicago, A. C. McClurg & Co. 1916. Pp. 263. \$1.00.)

This is an attempt to give in the form of episodes a connected history of Old Oregon. The result has been the production of a very readable book, albeit somewhat fragmentary and out of balance. Such a result is scarcely avoidable where topical treatment is adopted. These disconnected chapters are not by any means of equal historical value, and, speaking generally, are taken from the usual and easily accessible authorities. The mysterious ship wrecked upon the Oregon coast in pre-historic days casts the glamour of romance upon the scene of action. The sketches of the work of the early explorers—Cook, Meares, Gray, Lewis & Clark—despite the author's claim of original research are bounded by the four corners of the common sources. The chapters upon the Indian Thief, the Exciting Horse Race, and the Adventures in the Yakima Valley are quite realistic, but are taken from Ross Cox and Alexander Ross, who would hardly recognize the events in their new garb. And why should space be found for these trivial matters when the work of Mackenzie, Fraser, Thompson and Vancouver are practically omitted.

The chapters on Fort Vancouver and John McLoughlin and The Oregon Trail are especially commendable for their combination of accuracy of general outline with a wondrously vivid reproduction of the life of those days. There is a tendency to the romantic and to errors in detail, but these chapters show Miss Judson at her best, and reflect her wide reading and fine appreciation of what may be termed "atmosphere."

The discussion of the Oregon Question, while not nearly as complete and full as could be desired, shows a correct understanding and a broad grasp of the situation. One remarks, however, the absence of reference to the Nootka Convention and only brief mention of the "Joint Occupancy" treaty of 1818, both of which bear most directly upon the subject. Some confusion seems to exist in the mind of the

author; on page 143 we are told that no one owned Oregon; on page 146 the statement is made that Oregon belonged to Great Britain; and on page 154 we find that the United States had the better claim to the Southern portion and Great Britain to the Northern. Miss Judson is quite right in concluding that the real reason of Great Britain's acceptance or offer of 49° was that it was thought the value of the territory did not justify war and all its resultant hatred. Though not citing her authority she doubtless has in mind, *inter alia*, Lord Ashburton's celebrated letter to Mr. Sturgis of April 2nd, 1845.

The real position and conduct of the Hudson's Bay Company in the trying days of the thirties and forties are placed before the reader sympathetically, yet with historical correctness. As the years go by and the mists of misrepresentation are dissipated by historical research the genuine assistance so freely given by that Company through its noble Chief Factor, Doctor McLoughlin, to the early pioneers is becoming more clearly appreciated and understood.

The greater part of the book is stated to be "especially intended for children," but it is questionable whether this can be pleaded as an excuse for the almost babyish language so frequently employed, or for the inelegances which so plentifully abound. Many errors occur, errors which with ordinary care could have been avoided. Captain Cook was not instructed to search for the "River of the West," (p. 7), his search was to begin only after reaching 65°; he did not name Cape Flattery because he was disappointed (p. 7), but because its appearance had flattered him with the hope of finding a harbor; he did not anchor in Friendly Cove (p. 14), but in Resolution Cove, Blight Island; the name of the strait is not San Juan de Fuca (p. 22)—whatever Fuca may have been he certainly was no saint; when Gray and Vancouver met near the entrance of the Strait of Fuca, Vancouver did not invite Gray to visit him, nor did "the Yankee go aboard the British vessel for a friendly chat" (p. 26), on the contrary, Vancouver sent two of his officers to visit the Columbia; there is no record in Grays' log of his taking possession of the Columbia region (p. 29); the City of Spokane is only nine miles, not forty, from old Spokane House (p. 185); the statements that Olympia was selected as the capital because of its central location and that settlers could get supplies from passing ships (p. 186) scarcely fit with the geographical facts; the City of Walla Walla is not six miles (p. 187), but over thirty miles from the Columbia river; and the slightest local inquiry would have led to the rejection of the story of the cow-hide rails on the railroad built from the Columbia river to Walla Walla.



These are but samples of errors which in some instances give the reader an entirely wrong idea of the actual facts or events.

The appendix contains a brief, well-written and accurate sketch of the history of Old Oregon in which are clearly set out the real situation involved in the sale of the Astor venture, the two sides of the Oregon dispute, and a summary of subsequent events. The principal errors, evidently due to haste, are found on page 238. Ingraham's vessel was the *Hope*, not the *Good Hope*. *Beach-le-mer* is, we suppose, intended for *bêche-de-mer*, the trepang; Hearn, Frazer and Tatooch Tesse, should be Hearne, Fraser, and Tacoutche Tesse; the mouth of the Fraser River was discovered by Simon Fraser in 1808, not in 1824; the statement of the terms of the Nootka Convention (p. 239) is quite inaccurate and misleading. The volume is well printed, free from typographical errors, and contains about twenty-seven illustrations. It also includes a good bibliography, which is something more instructive than the usual dry list of authorities.

F. W. HOWAY.

---

IN THE WAKE OF THE WAR CANOE. By the Venerable W. H. Collison, Archdeacon of Metlakahtla. Introduction by the Lord Bishop of Derby. (New York, E. P. Dutton & Company, 1916. Pp. 352. \$1.75 net.)

The book has twenty-four illustrations and a map. It is dedicated: "To the Glory of God in the Extension of His Kingdom Everywhere." The work is by, for, and of the missionaries, conveying in the recital much valuable historical information.

No one can mention Metlakahtla on the Pacific Coast without calling to mind William Duncan. On putting this new book to that test it is found that the author deals kindly but briefly with the well known character. On page 23 he tells how the young man was sent by the Church Missionary Society from England "as the messenger of the Gospel of Peace on board a vessel of war," arriving at Esquimalt June 13, 1857. On three other occasions he mentions Duncan's work but does not bring the record down to the more recent troubled days about which no adequate report has yet been given.

There are twenty-seven chapters in the book, giving information about missions up and down the Coast. He mentions two well known men as follows: "The Protestant Episcopal Church of the States, under the able and energetic leadership of Bishop Peter Rowe and Archdeacon Stuck, has been seeking and saving the lost sheep of the Alaskan tribes from Skagway to the Yukon." He rejoices over the

evangelisation of the Indian tribes of the north, concluding as follows:

"And from this commanding and central position where East and West unite, the influence of such a nation, stretching from ocean to ocean of Canada's great Dominion, shall roll in ceaseless waves and currents around the globe, to remind us of the King of Righteousness, whose subjects we are, and of His Kingdom, which shall never pass away nor be destroyed."

---

A HUNDRED AND SIXTY BOOKS BY WASHINGTON AUTHORS. By Susan Whitcomb Hassell. (Everett, Wash. The Author, 1916. Pp. 40. Paper, 35 cents; cloth, 50 cents.

This is the beginning of a work that needed to be done. Few people have been aware of the amount and variety of literature produced by writers in the State of Washington. This little book will go far toward awakening an interest in such matters that will prove alike helpful to the authors and to newly acquired readers.

The paragraphs have been arranged under these headings: History, Travel and Description, Scientific and Technical, Fiction, Juvenile, Poetry, Unclassified Prose, Other Writers. There follow eight pages of quotations under the title: "Lines Worth Knowing by Heart." There is an index.

The author will undoubtedly soon hear of so many important omissions that a new edition will be called for and that will give an opportunity for many needed improvements. In the first place there should be some order of arrangement, alphabetical, chronological, geographical, or some other scheme. The absence of order seems without defense. The value of the work would have been greatly increased if the names and addresses of the publishers of the books had been given as well as the number of pages in each volume. The bibliographical aids in any up-to-date library would have supplied the information. The absence of such data leaves the work unfinished.

The book has some errors. The very first item says that Emily Inez Denny is the daughter of Arthur A. Denny, which is not true. The most important single item of literature produced in the State of Washington is "The North American Indian," by Edward S. Curtis. It is here given as item Number 41 and seems to be complete in ten volumes. It has been announced so often that the work is to comprise twenty volumes and twenty portfolios that this erroneous statement seems unfortunate in such a list. The Curtis books sell for \$3,500.00 a set, which makes the further blunder: "J. Pierpont Mor-

gan subscribed \$3,000.00 as an advance guarantee," look ridiculous. Mr. Morgan's subscription was \$75,000.00.

These matters are not mentioned in the spirit of fault-finding. Mrs. Hassell will surely find an early opportunity of making use of these suggestions.

---

#### Other Books Received

AMERICAN JEWISH HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Publications, Number 24. New York, The Society, 1916. Pp. 169.)

BRYAN, WILHELMUS BOGART. A History of the National Capital, From Its Foundation Through the Period of Adoption of the Organic Act. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Vol. II, 1815-1878. Pp. 707. \$5.00.)

COLUMBIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Records, Volume 19. (Washington, The Society, 1916. Pp. 234.)

FIELD MUSEUM OF NATURAL HISTORY. Annual Report, 1915. (Chicago, Field Museum, 1916. Pp. 74.)

ILLINOIS STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Transactions for the year 1915. (Springfield, The Society, 1916. Pp. 211.)

KANSAS STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. A list of books indispensable to a knowledge of Kansas History and Literature. (Topeka, State Printer, 1916. Pp. 16.)

NEW HAMPSHIRE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Manual, 1916. (Concord, The Society, 1916. Pp. 61.)

RHODE ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Museum illustrating the history of the state. (Providence, The Society, 1916. Pp. 32.)

RHODE ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Necrology, 1913-14. (Providence, The Society, 1916. Pp. 12.)

TROWBRIDGE, MRS. ELFORD PARRY. Connecticut Houses: A list of manuscript histories of early Connecticut Homes. (Hartford, Connecticut State Library, 1916. Pp. 33.)

UNITED STATES CATHOLIC HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Historical Records and Studies. Volume IX, June, 1916. (New York, The Society, 1916. Pp. 258.)

WASHINGTON IRRIGATION INSTITUTE. Proceedings of the Third Annual Meeting. (North Yakima, L. L. Lynn, Secretary, 1916. Pp. 243. \$1.)

## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### Markers for the Oregon Trail

The Daughters of the American Revolution and the Sons of the American Revolution have undertaken to place ten markers on the Oregon Trail in Washington at the following places: Tumwater, Bush Prairie, Tenino, mouth of Skookum Chuck, Chehalis (formerly Saunders Bottom), Jackson Prairie, Toledo (formerly Cowlitz Landing), Olequa, Kelso and Crossing of Lewis River. The first three have been unveiled with appropriate ceremonies.

The first programme was at Tumwater on August 18, at 9:30 a. m. The meeting was called to order by General Hazard Stevens, Chairman of the Oregon Trail Committee of the Sons of the American Revolution. The exercises included the following: Invocation by Hon. P. D. Moore, Chaplain of the Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County; Song, "America;" Introduction, by Mrs. J. S. McKee, First Vice-President of the State Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution; Marking the National Old Trails, by Mrs. Henry McCleary, Chairman of the National Old Trails Committee of the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution; Presentation of the Marker to the State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution and the State President of the Sons of the American Revolution, by Mrs. Overton Gentry Ellis, Chairman of the Oregon Trail Committee of the Daughters of the American Revolution; Acceptance, by Mrs. Edmund Bowden, State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution; Acceptance, by Mr. Orison J. C. Dutton, State President of the Sons of the American Revolution; Unveiling, by Miss Anne Bayliss, Miss Elizabeth Jaynes, Master Charles Alden Artzel, Master James S. Stanford, Jr.; Address, by Mrs. William Cummings Story, President General of the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution; Presentation of the Marker to the State and to the City of Tumwater, by Mrs. Eliza Ferry Leary; Response for the State, by Governor Ernest Lister; Response for Tumwater, by Mayor O. S. Lee; Song, "Star Spangled Banner."

The second and third unveilings were combined with a celebration of La Fayette's Birthday on September 6. At Tenino, at 2 p. m., Mr. Orison J. C. Dutton, State President of the Sons of the American Revolution, was the presiding chairman. The programme included



the following: Invocation, by Rev. D. E. Ellis; Song, "America;" Presentation of the Marker to the State, by Mrs. Edmund Bowden, State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution; Unveiling, by Miss Jessie Louise Campbell; Response for the State, by Governor Ernest Lister; Response for Tenino, by Mr. J. F. Metzger; Tribute to La Fayette, by Mr. Ernest B. Hussey; Song, "Star Spangled Banner."

At 4 p. m. at Bush Prairie, the presiding chairman was Mrs. Edmund Bowden, State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution. The programme was as follows: Invocation, Hon. P. D. Moore, Chaplain of the Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County; Song, "America;" Address and Unveiling, by Miss Anne Gaston; Presentation of the Marker to the State, by Mr. George A. Virtue; Acceptance, by Governor Ernest Lister; Song, "Star Spangled Banner."

---

#### The Simmons Monument

In the April number of this Quarterly, pages 136-143 and 178, references were made to the work of the Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County in preparing a monument to the memory of Colonel Michael Troutman Simmons and the pioneers who founded at Tumwater in 1845 the first American settlement on Puget Sound. The heavy snows of winter had prevented a completion of the monument in time for the meeting on March 2, but an ample and successful programme was provided for the meeting on July 12, as follows: Song, "Star Spangled Banner;" Invocation, by Hon. P. D. Moore; Address of Welcome, by General Hazard Stevens, President of the Society; Response, by Judge Overton G. Ellis, of the Sons of the American Revolution; Response, by George H. Himes, Secretary of the Oregon Pioneer Society; Basket Dinner in the adjacent park; Address at the Monument, Governor Ernest Lister; First American Settlers, by Professor Edmond S. Meany, President of the Pioneer Association of the State of Washington; Address, by P. M. Troy, Chairman of the Monument Committee; Address, by W. P. Bonney, Secretary of the Washington State Historical Society (which gave the beautiful bronze tablet on the monument); Address, by Mayor C. S. Lee of Tumwater; Unveiling of the Monument, by Mrs. Bertha Simmons Fairson, Miss Mary Bush and Christopher C. Simmons.

The cost of the monument was defrayed by the heirs of the late Leopold F. Schmidt.

**To Honor an Indian**

Hon. Wesley L. Jones has introduced a bill in the United States Senate to aid in the erection of a monument to Indian Timothy at his grave near Alpowa, Asotin County, Washington. The bill proposes to appropriate \$25,000 to the Garfield County Pioneer Association to be expended under certain stipulations. The reasons are given as follows: "To commemorate the services rendered by Indian Timothy in the rescue of the United States troops under Colonel Steptoe in the year eighteen hundred and fifty-eight and his assistance at various times to the white settlers of the Northwest as well as his valuable services to the cause of civilization and Christianity."

## NORTHWESTERN HISTORY SYLLABUS

---

[The aim of this department is to furnish outlines that will aid those who wish to study the subject carefully. It is expected that its greatest use will be as a guide for members of women's clubs, literary societies, and classes in colleges or high schools. It will be a form of university extension without the theses and examinations necessary for the earning of credits toward a degree.]

---

### XX. Washington Since Statehood

1. Period of Extravagance.
  - a. Plunge after long wait for statehood, 1889.
    - i. New institutions established.
    - ii. Clamor of counties for favors.
    - iii. Large appropriations.
    - iv. Frequent deficiency appropriations.
  - b. Large participation in World's Columbian Exposition.
    - i. Valuable results.
    - ii. Heavy expenditures.
  - c. World-wide panic of 1893.
  - d. Governor McGraw's vigorous retrenchments.
  - e. Election of Fusion Party, 1896.
2. Effect of the Klondike.
  - a. Arrival of steamer *Portland* in Seattle, July 17, 1897.
  - b. Sixty miners brought \$800,000 in gold dust.
  - c. One of greatest stampedes in history resulted.
  - d. Hard times in Washington vanished in a day.
  - e. Increasing business with Alaska.
3. Spanish-American War.
  - a. Washington's participation.
  - b. Agitation to send more than one regiment.
  - c. Interest awakened in the Orient.
4. Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition.
  - a. Held in Seattle in 1909.
  - b. Wonderful progress of the Northwest revealed.
  - c. Permanent improvements saved by the State.

5. Economic Development.

- a. Lumber.
  - i. Extensive improvements in methods.
  - ii Effects of the tariff changes.
  - iii. Prospects of impetus from Panama Canal.
- b. Fish.
  - i. Salmon canneries.
  - ii. Cold storage shipments.
  - iii. Hatcheries.
  - iv. Protective laws.
- c. Mines.
  - i. Coal.
  - ii. Copper.
  - iii. Silver and gold.
  - iv. Building materials.
- d. Commerce.
  - i. With Alaska.
  - ii. Throughout Pacific countries.
  - iii. Great stimulus from the European war.
  - iv. Completion of Lake Washington canal.
- e. Shipbuilding.
  - i. Remarkable increase in late years.
- f. Manufactures.
- g. Irrigation.
- h. Agriculture.

6. Political Growth.

- a. Australian ballot.
- b. Direct primaries.
- c. Initiative and referendum.
- d. Recall.
- e. Woman suffrage.

7. Social Improvements.

- a. Increase of churches.
- b. Efficiency of schools.
  - i. Washington leads the nation.
- c. Small percentage of illiteracy.
- d. Fostering higher education.
- e. Art and literature.
  - i. Small beginnings.
  - ii. Rapid growth.



- f. Charities being organized.
  - g. Mothers' pensions.
  - h. Workingmen's insurance.
  - i. Prohibition.
8. Federal Activity in the State.
- a. Extent.
    - i. From postoffice to specialized bureaus.
    - ii. Enormous aggregate of men and money used.
  - b. New work added from year to year.
  - c. Embodies significant change in government.
- 

BIBLIOGRAPHY.—This last installment of the *Northwestern History Syllabus* is the most difficult one for which to suggest a working bibliography. The time is recent and the materials for study are scattered. There is one big advantage, however, in the element of recent time. Many witnesses of, and participants in, the events are still living. They may be interviewed. The studies thus made will be constructive as well as interesting.

GOVERNMENT REPORTS.—In most large libraries the Public Documents of the Federal Government are available. There are also many Government Reports and pamphlets not always included in the larger series. When these refer to postoffices, light houses, life-saving stations, national forests, assay offices, Indian reservations and the many other forms of Federal activity in the State, it is obvious that some help may be obtained from them in this study. It is slow picking, for in most cases the information is given by district or by project and rarely is it given by States.

HINES, REV. H. K.—*An Illustrated History of the State of Washington*, published by The Lewis Publishing Company, Chicago, 1893. In this large book, Chapter XXXIX, pages 279-283, will be found to apply on this particular subject. The chapter is entitled: "Washington at the World's Fair," meaning the World's Columbian Exposition.

LIVING PARTICIPANTS.—Every community has some men and women who have personal knowledge of the facts of recent State history. Every fact obtained from them and recorded in these studies will have a value for the future workers in the field of State history.

LUHN, ADJUTANT WILLIAM L.—Official History of the Operations of the First Washington Infantry, U. S. V., in the Campaign in the Philippine Islands. There are 117 pages in this record. It appears as an addendum to Karl Irving Faust's "Campaigning in the Philippines," published by The Hicks-Judd Company, San Francisco, 1899. The work is abundantly illustrated. Adjutant Luhn says that through the courtesy of Colonel John H. Wholley he was permitted to use the official records of the regiment in compiling the history.

MEANY, EDMOND S.—Governors of Washington, published by the Printing Department, University of Washington, Seattle, 1915. This little book contains brief biographical sketches of all the governors from the beginning of the Territory to the present time.

MEANY, EDMOND S.—History of the State of Washington. The last chapters of this book deal with the theme of this syllabus. There is probably no other place where there can be found a study of the Federal activity in the State of Washington.

NEWSPAPERS.—Files of newspapers published in this State are saved in most cases and when available for the time covered will be found most useful in such a study.

# INDEX TO VOLUME 7, 1916

Abel, Annie Heloise. New Lewis and Clarke Map. (Note).....	253-254
Aberdeen Pioneer Association.....	48
Agriculture in Alaska Under the Russians.....	287-288
Alaska. Mining in, Before 1867 (Golder).....	233-238
Alaska Route, Marine Disasters of.....	21-37
Alaska Under the Russians. By C. L. Andrews:	
Baranof the Builder.....	202-216
Industry, Trade and Social Life.....	278-295
Allen, Robert Perry. Death.....	58
Alvord, Clarence Walworth. The New Regime. (Note).....	253
American Historical Association. Meeting, December, 1915.....	86
Anderson, Dice Robins. William Branch Giles: A Study in the Politics of Virginia and the Nation. (Note).....	252-253
Andrews, Clarence L. Alaska Under the Russians:	
Baranof the Builder .....	202-216
Industry, Trade and Social Life.....	278-295
Andrews, Clarence L. Marine Disasters of the Alaska Route....	21-37
Aurner, Clarence Ray. History of Education in Iowa. Reviewed by Paul J. Kruse.....	170-171
Authors of Washington. Book by Susan W. Hassell.....	327-328
Ayer, John Edwin. George Bush, Voyageur.....	40-45
Bagley, Clarence B. History of Seattle. Reviewed by E. S. Meany.	249-251
Bagley, Clarence B., editor. Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House .....	59-75; 144-167
Baranof the Builder. Alaska Under the Russians (Andrews)....	202-216
Barnett, James D. Operation of the Initiative, Referendum, and Recall in Oregon. Reviewed by J. Allen Smith.....	168-170
Benton County, Wash., Old Settlers' Union.....	47
Bells Manufactured in Alaska by the Russians.....	285
Biographical Sketches of Washington Pioneers.....	51-58; 87-89; 178-180, 259-261
Black Tamanous, the Secret Society of the Clallam Indians. By Johnson Williams .....	296-300
Blockhouses in Russian Alaska .....	283
Bogue, Mrs. Gilbert. Death.....	55
Bolton, Herbert Eugene. Texas in the Middle Eighteenth Century. (Note) .....	172
Bourne, E. G., and the Whitman Question.....	99-122
Bricks First Made in Alaska About 1795.....	285
Bruce, James W. Death.....	56
Bucklin, Nathan. Death.....	56
Buffalo Near Edmonton, B. C., in 1854.....	189-190
Burpee, Lawrence J. Sanford Fleming, Empire Builder. (Note)	254
Bush, George. His "Terrible Gun".....	44-45
Bush, George, the Voyageur.....	40-45
Byrd, George W. Death.....	54
Camp Washington. Discussion of the Site of (Monroe).....	3-20
Camp Washington. Testimony of John E. Smith as to Site.....	276-277
Campbell, John V. The Sinclair Party.....	187-201
Cann, Judge Thomas Hart. Death.....	57
Cannon, Miles. Fort Hall on the Saptin River.....	217-232
Cannon, Miles. Waiilatpu, Its Rise and Fall. (Note).....	251-252
Cavitt, Mrs. Lydia. Death.....	54
Cedar Shingles Shipped From Puget Sound in 1845.....	140-141
Champlain Society publishes Narrative of David Thompson's Explorations in Western America.....	322-324

Chapman, John Butler.....	320
Chase, Mrs. Caroline. Death.....	51
Chittenden, Hiram M. Review of Laveille's Life of Father de Smet .....	247-248
Clallam Indians. Secret Society Called Black Tamanous.....	296-300
Climate of Puget Sound. Winter of 146-47.....	141
Club Stories. By Washington State Federation of Women's Clubs. (Note) .....	254
Collier, W. H. Death.....	55-56
Collison, W. H. In the Wake of the War Canoe. Review.....	326-327
(The) "Colonel Wright." By Lulu D. Crandall.....	126-132
Connelley, William E. Paper on the Oregon Trail. (Note).....	171-172
Constable, Mrs. Frances. Death.....	54
Cooper, Charles. Death.....	58
Cooper, Mrs. Isaac. Death.....	54
Crandall, Lulu Donnell. The "Colonel Wright".....	126-132
(A) Critical Discussion of the Site of Camp Washington. By M. Orion Monroe .....	3-20
Crockett, Colonel Walter. Biographical Note.....	245-246
Dall, William Healey. Spencer Fullerton Baird: A Biography. (Note) .....	171
David, Charles Wendell. News Item.....	257
David Thompson's Narrative of His Explorations in Western America (Tyrrell). Reviewed by Edmond S. Meany.....	322-324
Denny, Miss Margaret Lenora. Death.....	53
De Vore, Mrs. Evelyn Babb. Death.....	52-53
Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar .....	239-246; 307-321
Dimsdale, Thomas J. The Vigilantes of Montana. Two New Editions Reviewed by Christina D. Smith.....	248-249
Donnan, Elizabeth, editor. Papers of James A. Bayard. Reviewed by E. S. Meany .....	76-77
Downey, Robert M. Death.....	54
Early Days in Old Oregon (Judson). Reviewed by F. W. Howay.....	324-326
Ebey Diary. Edited by Victor J. Farrar.....	239-246; 307-321
Ebey, Eason Benton.....	243
Ebey, Isaac Neff. Biography .....	240-243
Elliott, T. C. Makes Important Contribution to the Champlain Society Edition of David Thompson's Narrative.....	323
Elliott, T. C. The Dalles-Celilo Portage. (Note).....	82
Eustace, Michael. Death.....	57
Experiences of a Pioneer. By Mary Perry Frost.....	123-125
Fanning Mills, First on Puget Sound.....	43
Farrar, Victor J. editor. Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey....	239-246
Farrar, Victor J. edits Nisqually Journal.....	144
Farrar, Victor J. Pioneer and Historical Societies of the State of Washington .....	46-50
Fay, Robert C. ....	310
First American Settlement on Puget Sound. By Edmond S. Meany .....	136-143
Fishing by the Russians in Alaska.....	288
Folsom, Col. Frederick W. Death.....	52
Forbes, Jared. Death.....	55
Ford, Worthington C., editor. Writings of John Quincy Adams. (Note) .....	254
Fort Hall on the Saptin River. By Miles Cannon.....	217-232
Frost, Mary Perry. Experiences of a Pioneer.....	123-125
Fur Trade Between the Russians and the Natives of Alaska....	289-290
Fur Trade With Indians, see Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House.	
Garry (Indian Chief). See Spokane Gary.	



George Bush, Voyageur. By John E. Ayer.....	40-45
Gillilan, James David. Trail Tales. (Note).....	81
Gilstrap, W. H. and the Location of the Site of Camp Washington	3-20
Golder, Frank A. Mining in Alaska Before 1867.....	233-238
Golder, Frank A. News Item.....	259
Governors of Washington, Territorial and State (Meany). Note..	80
Grays Harbor County, Wash. Pioneer Association.....	47
Griffin, John A. Washington Thirty Years Ago.....	133-135
Griffith, Mrs. Rebecca. Death.....	51
Grist Mill, First on Puget Sound.....	43
Hammond, John Martin. Quaint and Historic Forts of North America. Reviewed by Edward McMahon.....	249-251
Hassell, Susan Whitcomb. A Hundred and Sixty Books by Wash- ington Authors. Review.....	327-328
Hastings, Captain Loren B.....	312
Hathaway, Eli. Biographical Note.....	244
Hawes, Ed. M., editor. Miscellaneous Writings of F. B. Hawes. (Note) .....	173
Heisen, Mrs. Mary E. Death.....	57
Henry, Dudley L. B. Death.....	55
Herbermann, Charles George. Historical Records and Studies. (Note) .....	80-81
Hill, Capt. John S. Death.....	54
Historical Societies of Washington (Farrar).....	46-50
History of Education in Iowa (Aurner). Reviewed by Paul J. Kruse .....	170-171
History of Seattle, From the Earliest Settlement to the Present Time (Bagley). Reviewed by E. S. Meany.....	249-251
Holbrook, Richard Blackmer. Biographical Note.....	245
Holland, Ernest O. Inaugurated as President of Washington State College .....	177
Hospitals in Russian Alaska.....	292
Howay, F. W. Review of Judson's Early Days in Old Oregon....	324-326
Howe, Samuel D. Biographical Note.....	245
Hudson's Bay Company Route From Manitoba to Spokane (Camp- bell) .....	187-201
Ice Exported From Alaska Before and After 1867.....	289
Impett, William Robert. Death.....	57-58
In the Wake of the War Canoe. By W. H. Collison. Review....	326-327
"Indian Timothy," Bill Provides for a Monument to.....	331
Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House. Edited by C. B. Bag- ley .....	59-75; 144-67
Judson, Katharine Berry. Early Days in Old Oregon. Reviewed by F. W. Howay .....	324-326
Kelley, Hall J. On Board the Dryad.....	149
Kitsap County Pioneers' Association .....	48
Kobayashi, Nuinosuke. News Item.....	257
Kruse, Paul J. Review of Aurner's History of Education in Iowa, Volume 3 .....	170-171
Laman, Mrs. Agnes Woolery. Death.....	57
Landry, Rene. Death.....	54
Lansdale, Richard Hyatt. Biographical Note.....	246
Laveille, E. The Life of Father de Smet. Reviewed by H. M. Chittenden .....	247-248
Leonard, Mrs. Eva Hanselman. Death.....	52
Leschi, Chief .....	44
Lewis, William S. Collates and Prepares J. V. Campbell's Ac- count of the Sinclair Emigration.....	187
Lewis, William S. Secures the Narrative of John E. Smith, a Pioneer of the Spokane Country.....	267

Life of Father de Smet (Laveille). Reviewed by H. M. Chittenden .....	247-248
Lincoln and Adams County Pioneer and Historical Association...	48
Lindsley, Mrs. Abbie Denny. Death.....	56
Liquor Sold by Americans in Alaska Under Russian Protest...	290-291
Linklater, John, a Hudson's Bay Trader.....	192
Little, Paul, editor. The Pacific Northwest Pulpit. (Note)....	81-82
Living Pioneers of Washington.....	87-89; 178-180; 259-261
Lloyd, Mrs. Jane. Death.....	55
Longmire, Elcaine. Death .....	55
Lyman, W. D. Indian Myths of the Northwest. (Note).....	254-255
Lyman, W. D. Some Observations Upon the Negative Testimony and the General Spirit and Methods of Bourne and Marshall	99-122
McLoughlin, David. Son of Dr. John McLoughlin.....	275
McLoughlin, Dr. John.....	275
McLoughlin, Dr. John, and the Catholic Church.....	80-81
McMahon, Edward. Review of Hammond's Quaint and Historic Forts of North America.....	251
McMillan, Capt. Thomas D. Death.....	53
McWhorter, L. V. (Note).....	87
Manitoba to Spokane in 1854. The Sinclair Party (Campbell)...	187-201
Manville, Mrs. Adaline. Death.....	52
Marine Disasters of the Alaska Route. By C. L. Andrews.....	21-37
Marshall, Thomas Maitland. News Item.....	257
Marshall, W. I., and the Whitman Question.....	99-122
Martin, Percy Alvin. News Item.....	258
Masterson, Mrs. M. G. Death.....	55
Mattoon, Mrs. Elizabeth Trullinger. Death.....	51
Meany, Edmond S. Review of David Thompson's Narrative of His Explorations in Western America, 1784-1812.....	322-324
Meany, Edmond S. First American Settlement on Puget Sound.	136-143
Meany, Edmond S. Governors of Washington, Territorial and State. (Note) .....	80
Meany, Edmond S. Lives of One Hundred Eighty-nine Wash- ington Pioneers in Seattle Post-Intelligencer.	87-89; 178-180; 259-261
Meany, Edmond S. Review of Bagley's History of Seattle.....	249-251
Meany, Edmond S. Review of Donnan's Papers of James A. Bay- ard .....	76-77
Mining in Alaska Before 1867. By Frank A. Golder.....	233-238
Mining in Alaska Under the Russians (Andrews).....	285-286
Moneys Used by Russians in Alaska.....	290-291
Monroe, M. Orion. A Critical Discussion of the Site of Camp Washington .....	3-20
Moorehead, Warren K. The American Indian in the United States. (Note) .....	83
Morgan, James. In the Footsteps of Napoleon. (Note).....	83-84
Morse, Capt. George W. Death.....	58
(The) Mountaineer, Volume 8. (Note).....	79-80
Muir, John. Travels in Alaska. (Note).....	77-78
Mule Freighting in the Spokane Country in the 1860's.....	274
Mullan Road. By Henry L. Talkington.....	301-306
Murray, Mrs. Hester Clark. Death.....	57
Mussey, David Laville. Readings in American History. (Note)	82-83
Nation, Mrs. Matilda. Death.....	55
Native Daughters of Washington.....	47
Native Daughters of Washington Pioneers.....	47
Native Sons of Washington.....	47
Neely, David Franklin. Death.....	56
Negro Leads First Colony of Settlers to Puget Sound.....	40-45
Newmarket. Name of First American Settlement on Puget Sound	139

- Nisqually House, Journal of Occurrences. Edited by C. B. Bagley .....59-75; 144-67
- Northwestern History Syllabus. See Syllabus of Pacific Northwest History.
- Ogden, Peter Skeen, Commands Stikeen River Expedition..... 154
- Okanogan County Pioneer Association..... 48
- Olson, Gustav. Death..... 53-54
- Operation of the Initiative, Referendum and Recall in Oregon (Barnett). Reviewed by J. Allen Smith.....168-170
- Orbit, Brig. First American Vessel to Arrive at the Head of Puget Sound ..... 43
- Oregon Historical Society. Meeting at Portland, December, 1915 ..... 87
- Oregon Steam Navigation Company ..... 132
- Oregon Trail. Markers for.....329-330
- Oregon Trail. Paper by W. E. Connelley. (Note).....171-172
- Oxen Freighting in Spokane Country..... 276
- Oxen Used as a Substitute for Saddle Horses..... 191
- Pacific Coast Branch of the American Historical Association. Meeting at Stanford University, November, 1915..... 86-87
- Pacific Northwest Pulpit. Edited by Paul Little. (Note)..... 81-82
- Papers of James A. Bayard (Donnan). Reviewed by E. S. Meany 76-77
- Patton, John C. Death..... 57
- Phipps, William C. Death..... 52
- Pierce County Pioneers' Association..... 48
- Pioneer and Historical Societies of the State of Washington. By Victor J. Farrar.....46-50
- Pioneer Biographies in Seattle Post-Intelligencer.87-89; 178-180; 259-261
- Pioneer Dead of 1915. By Edith G. Prosch..... 51-58
- (A) Pioneer of the Spokane Country. By John E. Smith.....267-277
- Plant, Antoine. Ferryman on the Spokane River..... 302
- Post-Intelligencer (Seattle) Series of Pioneer Biographies..... 87-89, 178-180, 259-261
- Power, John M. Death..... 51
- Preparedness, an Old Shout. (Document).....176-177
- Prosch, Edith G. Pioneer Dead of 1915..... 51-58
- Prosch, Thomas W. Death..... 53
- Prosch, Mrs. Virginia McCarver. Death..... 53
- Puget Sound, First American Colony on..... 40-45
- Puget Sound, First American Settlement on (Meany).....136-143
- Quaint and Historic Forts of North America (Hammond). Reviewed by Edward McMahon.....249-251
- Qualchien, a Yakima Chief, Hanged..... 272
- Reed, Silas Amory. Death..... 58
- Religious Observances by Indians..... 158
- Rudio, Peter. Death..... 56
- Russians in Alaska Were Not Ignorant of Its Mineral Wealth... 233
- San Juan County Pioneer Association..... 49
- Saw Mills in Russian Alaska..... 284
- Scholl, Mrs. Elizabeth Fulton. Death..... 51
- Scroggs, William O. Filibusters and Financiers. (Note)..... 253
- Seattle Historical Society..... 48
- Seattle, History of (Bagley). Review.....249-251
- Secret Society of the Clallam Indians.....296-300
- Shipbuilding in Alaska by the Russians.....286-287
- Show, Daniel. Biographical Note..... 246
- Simmons, M. T. Makes First American Settlement on Puget Sound .....138-143
- (The) Simmons Monument Unveiled at Tumwater, July 12, 1916 330
- Sinclair, James ..... 187
- (The) Sinclair Party. By John V. Campbell.....187-201

Smith, Christina Denny. Review of Dimsdale's Vigilantes of Montana. New Editions.....	248-249
Smith, Dr. Henry A. Death.....	55
Smith, J. Allen. Review of Barnett's The Operation of the Initiative, Referendum and Recall in Oregon.....	168-170
Smith, John E. A Pioneer of the Spokane Country.....	267-277
Social Conditions in Russian Alaska.....	292-295
Some Observations Upon Bourne and Marshall. By W. D. Lyman	99-122
Spokane, Historical Meeting in.....	258-259
Spokane, Overland Emigration From Manitoba to (Campbell)....	187-201
Spokane County Pioneer Society.....	49
Spokane Historical Society. Organized.....	258
Spokane Garry .....	269, 272, 304
Steamboat Beginnings on the Columbia River.....	126-132
Stephens, Kate. The Mastering of Mexico. (Note).....	173-174
Steptoe-Wright Indian Campaign.....	269-272
Stevens County Pioneer Association.....	49
Stevens, Isaac I. and the Location of the Site of Camp Washington .....	3-20
Stevens, Isaac I. Marking the Spot Where He Fell in the Battle of Chantilly .....	86
Stikeen River Expedition.....	154
Stillaguamish Valley Association of Washington Pioneers.....	49
Strong, Gen. James Clark. Death.....	56
Strong, James C. Tribute by J. T. Turner.....	38-39
Suzzallo, Henry. Inaugurated as President of the University of Washington .....	177
Syllabus of Pacific Northwest History:	
Creation of Washington Counties.....	90-95
The Civil War Decade.....	181-184
The Turbulent Decade.....	262-264
Washington Since Statehood.....	332-335
Talkington, Henry. Mullan Road.....	301-306
Tea Imported to Alaska in Large Quantities by the Russians...	292
"Terrible Gun" Frightens Snoqualmie Indians.....	44-45
Thompson, David. Narrative of His Explorations in Western America (Tyrrell). Reviewed by E. S. Meany.....	322-324
Thurston County Pioneer and Historical Society.....	49, 178
Timothy, Indian. Monument Proposed.....	331
Tollner, Mrs. Eliza J. Death.....	51-52
Tolmie, William Fraser.....	320-321
Torrance, Mrs. Mary Jane. Death.....	52
Transportation by Steamboat on the Columbia River.....	126-132
Travels in Alaska (Muir). Note.....	77-78
Tribute to the Memory of James Clark Strong. By J. T. Turner	38-39
Tumwater Settlement .....	139-143
Turner, Junius Thomas. Tribute to the Memory of James C. Strong .....	38-39
Tyrrell, J. B., editor. David Thompson's Narrative of His Explorations in Western America, 1784-1812. Reviewed by Edmond S. Meany.....	322-324
Victoria, B. C., First Directory of. (Note) .....	257-258
(The) Vigilantes of Montana (Dimsdale). New Editions. Reviewed by Christina D. Smith.....	248-249
Wailatpu, Its Rise and Fall, 1836-1847. By Miles Cannon. (Note).	251-252
Wallace, Mrs. Esther Tallentire. Death.....	56-57
Washburne, Marion Foster. Indian Legends. (Note).....	173
Washington Authors. Book by Susan W. Hassell.....	327-328
Washington Pioneer Association.....	46
Washington Pioneer Association. Annual Meeting, 1916.....	258
Washington Pioneer Biographies.....	87-89, 178-180, 259-261



Washington State Historical Society.....	46
Washington State Historical Society Publications. (Note).....	78-79
Washington Thirty Years Ago. By John A. Griffin.....	133-135
Washington University State Historical Society.....	46-47
Weaver, Charles E. Four Studies Relating to Washington Geology. (Note) .....	252
Whatcom County, Old Settlers' Association of.....	49-50
Whidby Island History. See Ebey Diary.	
Whitman County Pioneers' Association.....	50
Whitman Question Discussed by W. D. Lyman.....	99-122
Williams, Johnson. Black Tamanous, the Secret Society of the Clallam Indians .....	276-300
Willis, Edwin A. Death.....	58
Wolfe, Francis. Biographical Note.....	276
Women's Pioneer Auxiliary of the State of Washington.....	47
Wood, Leonard. The Military Obligations of Citizenship. (Note).....	172-173
Wright-Steptoe Indian Campaign .....	269-272
Yakima Columbian Association .....	50
Yakima Pioneers' Association .....	50

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Contributing Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
WILLIAM S. LEWIS, Spokane.	HAZARD STEVENS, Olympia.
F. W. HOWAY, New Westminster, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VIII. NO. 1

JANUARY, 1917

ISSUED QUARTERLY

## Contents

EDMOND S. MEANY.....	The Pioneer Association of the State of Washington .....	3
VICTOR J. FARRAR.....	Pioneer and Historical Associations of the State of Washington .....	7
ELIZABETH ANN COONC.....	Reminiscences of a Pioneer Woman .....	14
DAVID LONGMIRE .....	First Immigrants to Cross the Cascades .....	22
GRACE RAYMOND HEBARD.....	The First White Women in Wyoming .....	29
EDITH G. PROSCH.....	The Pioneer Dead of 1916.....	32
DOCUMENTS—Diary Kept by Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar .....		40
BOOK REVIEWS .....		63
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		76

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

Entered at the postoffice at Seattle as second-class mail matter.

# Principal Articles in the Washington Historical Quarterly

## VOLUMES I. and II.

(See issue for October 1915)

## VOLUME III.

Contribution toward a bibliography of Marcus Whitman.....	Charles W. Smith
Dr. John McLoughlin and his guests.....	T. C. Elliott
Fort Colville, 1859-1869.....	W. P. Winans
The Pacific Ocean and the Northwest.....	J. N. Bowman
Suffrage in the Pacific Northwest.....	Stella E. Pearce
Eastward expansion of population from the Pacific Slope.....	
Reminiscences of a pioneer of the Territory of Washington.....	Guy Vernon Bennett
History of railroads in Washington.....	James C. Strong
Comparative study of constitutions for provisions not in our own.....	Sol H. Lewis
Walla Walla and Missoula.....	Ben Driftmier
From Missoula to Walla in 1897 on horseback.....	T. C. Elliott
The Whitman controversy.....	Frank H. Woody
The pioneer dead of 1911.....	James Clark Strong
	Thomas W. Prosch

## VOLUME IV.

Proposed amendments to the State Constitution of Washington....	Leo Jones
William Weir.....	Allen Weir
The pioneer dead of 1912.....	Thomas W. Prosch
A survey of Alaska, 1743-1799.....	Frank A. Golder
Washington Territory Fifty years ago.....	Thomas W. Prosch
Early Days at White Salmon and The Dalles.....	Camilla Thomson Donnell
Early relations of the Sandwich Islands to the Old Oregon Territory..	
Independence Day in the Far Northwest.....	Guy Vernon Bennett
The Story of Three Olympic Peaks.....	George W. Soliday
Stories and sketches from Pacific County.....	Edmond S. Meany
Origin of the Constitution of the State of Washington....	Isaac H. Whealdon
	Lebbeus J. Knapp

## VOLUME V.

George Wilkes.....	Clarence B. Bagley
The Indians of Puget Sound.....	Lewis H. St. John
Pioneer dead of 1913.....	Thomas W. Prosch
American and Indian Treatment of the Indians of the Pacific North- west .....	W. J. Trimble
The Columbia River under Hudson's Bay Company Rule....	C. O. Ermatinger
Three Diplomats Prominent in the Oregon Question....	Edmond S. Meany
History of the Liquor Laws of the State of Washington..	Anna Sloan Walker
Divorce in Washington.....	Ralph R. Knapp
The West and American Ideals.....	Frederick J. Turner
Eliza and the Nez Perce Indians.....	Edwin Eells

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

1917

VOLUME VIII.

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON





# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Contributing Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
WILLIAM S. LEWIS, Spokane.	HAZARD STEVENS, Olympia.
F. W. HOWAY, New Westminster, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VIII. NO. 1

JANUARY, 1917

## ISSUED QUARTERLY

## Contents

EDMOND S. MEANY.....	The Pioneer Association of the State of Washington .....	3
VICTOR J. FARRAR.....	Pioneer and Historical Associations of the State of Washington .....	7
ELIZABETH ANN COONC.....	Reminiscences of a Pioneer Woman .....	14
DAVID LONGMIRE .....	First Immigrants to Cross the Cascades .....	22
GRACE RAYMOND HEBARD.....	The First White Women in Wyoming .....	29
EDITH G. PROSCH.....	The Pioneer Dead of 1916.....	32
DOCUMENTS—Diary Kept by Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar .....		40
BOOK REVIEWS .....		63
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		76

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

Entered at the postoffice at Seattle as second-class mail matter.

# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### THE PIONEER ASSOCIATION OF THE STATE OF WASHINGTON

This issue of *The Washington Historical Quarterly*, being the first of the new year and the beginning of a new volume, is planned as a tribute to the pioneers of Washington. All the articles have been selected with that end in view. In the same spirit this article has been prepared about the State organization of pioneers.

Moved by a desire for fellowship and organization, a call was issued through the newspapers for a meeting of old settlers and, in response to that call, the meeting was held in Columbia Hall, Olympia, on October 10, 1883. John M. Swan was chosen chairman and Robert Frost, secretary.

It was decided to form a pioneer association and a committee, consisting of Dr. N. Ostrander, Benjamin F. Shaw and Captain S. W. Percival, was appointed to draft a constitution.

At that very first meeting there was debated the question as to who would be eligible for membership. The first suggestion limiting the membership to those who had come to the Territory prior to January 1, 1855, and who had resided therein continuously since 1858, was lost. It was then decided to admit all those who had come to the Territory prior to January 1, 1856. The chairman and secretary were then directed to issue a call for all qualified pioneers to meet at Olympia on October 23, 1883.

At that second meeting the constitution was adopted and the following officers were elected: President, A. S. Abernethy; first vice-president, C. C. Hewitt; second vice-president, Benjamin F. Shaw; secretary, John M. Swan; treasurer, G. A. Barnes; directors (with the president, first vice-president and secretary), N. Ostrander and James Longmire. The enrollment of members followed, forty-three being on the first list. A majority of those have since died but the first secretary, Robert Frost, who signed the call for the meetings, is still living at Olympia.



While those meetings are taken as the birth of the State organization, it will be shown later than they were not the first pioneer meetings.

Looking back at those days, it seems likely that the impulse for organization was quickened by the "Last Spike" celebrations of the Northern Pacific Railroad Company in September of that year, 1883. The old settlers correctly reasoned that when passengers could come to the "Oregon Country" in railroad coaches the days of real pioneers were ended. This idea of such an impulse has this interesting evidence: A call was issued for a special meeting at Olympia on April 9, 1884, to consider plans for a great pioneer excursion over the new railroad. At the meeting, Daniel Bagley, C. H. Hale and J. P. Stewart were appointed a committee to confer with the railway officials. John M. Swan, as secretary, then makes this record:

"The committee reported, as the lowest rates the railroad agents would grant, the following: For seventy-five or more persons, from Portland to St. Paul and return, \$100 each; to New York and return, \$140; to Chicago and return, \$114. An emigrant sleeping car was offered the excursionists. The rates were too high and there was no excursion."

While they were disappointed over the plan of retracing the way of their ox-teams and "prairie schooners" in a sleeping car, they had the satisfaction of knowing that their new organization was prospering. The list of forty-three members had expanded to one of two hundred and fifty-four members.

The first annual reunion was held at Olympia on July 3, 1884. The plan of that meeting has been followed more or less closely ever since. The constitution and by-laws were amended. The dues of members and the pay of the secretary were attended to and further meetings were arranged. Entertainment was provided and those who made addresses received a vote of thanks. Another effort was made for an excursion over the new railroad but the secretary records: "This conference resulted precisely as did the first, no lower rates being obtained."

The constitution, as amended and approved at that first annual meeting, called the organization "Washington Pioneer Association." The provision for membership was: "All persons residing in the Territory of Washington prior to January 1, 1860, and all members of or persons eligible to membership in the pioneer organizations of California, Oregon, Idaho and British Columbia, and none others, are eligible to membership in this Association."

The second annual reunion was held in Tacoma on June 16 and

17, 1885. The roll then showed a membership of three hundred and thirty-eight. This time they had a little railroad excursion as guests of the Northern Pacific Railroad Company to the Puyallup Valley. An adjourned meeting was provided for at Tacoma on August 10, 1885. The principal purposes of the meeting were to arrange for changes in the constitution and by-laws and to provide for incorporating the organization.

The third annual reunion was held in Seattle on June 1, 1886, and it was at this meeting that it was shown that the Olympia organization of 1883 was not the first pioneer society. Judge H. G. Struve called attention to the fact that as early as 1871 a pioneer association had been formed in Seattle. That organization had appointed a committee of which Judge Orange Jacobs was chairman and he asked that Judge Jacobs be heard. Judge Jacobs stated that the King County organization had expanded its scope so as to include all pioneers of the Territory. It had been incorporated and all that but the members believed that all pioneers should belong to one organization. The society he represented was ready to be merged into the Washington Pioneer Association if their own members were all received as charter members of the newer organization. The merging of the two societies was accomplished and a committee of three from each society was appointed to prepare the necessary changes in the constitution and by-laws.

The fourth reunion was held at Port Townsend on June 2, 1887; the fifth at Seattle on June 5, 1888; the sixth at Olympia on June 4, 1889. That completes the record down to statehood.

Of late years the meetings and reunions have all been held in Seattle. For this there are several reasons and among them are two of most importance. Judge John J. McGilvra, well known as a pioneer lawyer, died on December 19, 1903. He bequeathed to the Pioneer Association a lot on the shore of Lake Washington near the home in which he had lived for thirty-six years. The anchoring quality of that property was increased by another pioneer—Sarah Loretta Denny. She died on July 25, 1907, and when her will was probated it was found that, among other fine and helpful bequests, she had left for the Pioneer Association enough money to build a large two-story brick structure in which to hold the meetings and reunions. That property thus improved has done much toward stimulating the spirit of loyalty of the pioneers for their State organization.

On December 5, 1895, the society filed articles of incorporation under State laws. The name was changed to "The Pioneer Association of the State of Washington." The cost of membership is purposely

kept from being burdensome. The admission fee is one dollar and dues are one dollar a year for men. Women are free. After the many changes from year to year the present rules provide that persons are eligible who have resided in Washington, Territory and State, for forty years prior to the time of their application for membership.

In many counties of the State there have grown up pioneer organizations. As some of these counties passed through their frontier or pioneer experiences later than others, it is quite natural that such local societies should have membership requirements different from those of the State Association. There has developed, however, a desire for cooperation. On November 22, 1916, the Board of Trustees of the Pioneer Association of the State of Washington adopted a motion to invite each local pioneer society in the State to choose an official delegate to bring or send to the annual meetings in June messages of greeting. Through these delegates the State society can be kept informed about the work of all pioneer associations in the State. It is hoped that this plan will prove mutually helpful.

As in many other organizations, the secretary of the Washington Pioneer Association has been the most important officer. Among those who have served in that capacity are Robert Frost, John M. Swan, Francis Henry, Charles Prosch, Edgar Bryan, Thomas H. Cann and Major W. V. Rinehart. The last named is the present incumbent. His address is 416 Alaska Building, Seattle.

The present officers of the association are as follows: President, Edmond S. Meany; vice-president, George H. Foster; secretary, Major W. V. Rinehart; treasurer, William M. Calhoun; trustees, Frank H. Winslow, chairman; M. R. Maddocks, William H. Pumphrey, James McCombs and Leander Miller.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

## PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETIES OF THE STATE OF WASHINGTON

As announced in the January, 1915, number of the Quarterly, a survey of the pioneer and historical societies of the State of Washington will be given each year. Co-operation is desired with these organizations. Any news of historical work, of publications, the marking of historic sites, or the celebration of historical events, as well as changes in the officers of the societies listed will be welcomed by the Washington Historical Quarterly.

The societies which have come to the notice of the Quarterly are as follows:

**PIONEER ASSOCIATION OF THE STATE OF WASHINGTON.** The headquarters are at Pioneer Hall, Seattle. The officers for 1916 were: Edmond S. Meany, president, Seattle; George H. Foster, vice-president, Colby; W. V. Rinehart, Sr., secretary, Seattle; W. M. Calhoun, treasurer, Seattle; trustees: F. H. Winslow, M. R. Maddocks, James McCombs, W. H. Pumphrey, Leander Miller. This society was founded on October 23, 1883, at Olympia. The annual meeting is held during the first week in June at the Pioneer Hall building at Madison Park, Seattle. The original membership requirements were residence on the Pacific Coast prior to the year 1870; at present a person to become a member must have lived in the territory forty years prior to date of application for membership. The society has about 800 members, but the records, however, include as many more, as many of the older pioneers have neglected to keep up their dues. The society invites all local associations to send a delegate to the annual meeting.

**WASHINGTON STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.** The headquarters are at 401 North Cliff Avenue, Tacoma. The officers for 1916 were: Henry Hewitt, Jr., president, Tacoma; Hazard Stevens, vice-president, Olympia; W. P. Bonney, secretary, Tacoma; William H. Dickson, treasurer, Tacoma; curators: P. G. Hubbell, Tacoma; L. L. Benbow, Sumner; W. J. Bowman, Puyallup; John Arthur, Seattle; Walter S. Davis, Tacoma; Walter N. Granger, Zillah; Harry M. Painter, Seattle; Thomas Huggins, Tacoma; L. F. Jackson, Pullman; W. D. Lyman, Walla Walla; Sarah S. McMillan-Patton, Hoquiam. For two years the society published the "Washington Historical Magazine," now discontinued. It has published two volumes of its "Proceedings."



The society was founded on October 8, 1891, and any citizen of the state may become a member.

**WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.** The headquarters are at the University of Washington, Seattle. The officers for 1916 were: Clarence B. Bagley, president, Seattle; Edmond S. Meany, secretary and managing editor, Seattle; Roger S. Greene, treasurer, Seattle. Since October, 1906, the society has published the Washington Historical Quarterly. The society was founded at the University on January 1, 1903. Any person may become a member.

**NATIVE DAUGHTERS OF WASHINGTON.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1915 were: Nellie Russell, president; Julia N. Harris, vice-president. Any native daughter over sixteen years of age may become a member.

**NATIVE DAUGHTERS OF WASHINGTON PIONEERS.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1915 were: Mrs. Rena Bagley Griffith, president; Miss Hilda Gaches, secretary. Any daughter of a pioneer who resided on the coast prior to 1870 is eligible to membership.

**NATIVE SONS OF WASHINGTON.** This is a state organization with camps located in the larger cities. Alki Camp, No. 2, located at Seattle, had the following officers for 1915: T. C. Naylor, captain; Clare White, financial secretary and treasurer.

**WOMEN'S PIONEER AUXILIARY OF THE STATE OF WASHINGTON.** The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1916 were: Mrs. John P. Soule, president; Mrs. H. A. Hunt, vice-president; Mrs. Rosamond Densmore, secretary; Mrs. Eugene Thurlow, treasurer. This society was formed in August, 1911, to serve as an auxiliary to the Washington Pioneer Association. It meets four times each year. Membership is restricted to women who have resided in the state prior to 1889, the year of statehood.

**ADAMS COUNTY.** See Lincoln and Adams Counties.

**BENTON COUNTY.** Old Settlers' Union. The headquarters are at Prosser. The officers for 1916 were: G. W. Wilgus, president; A. G. McNeill, vice-president; M. Henry, secretary. The society has an annual meeting. Membership is restricted to those having a residence of twenty years in the county.

**CHEHALIS COUNTY.** See Grays Harbor County.

**GARFIELD COUNTY PIONEER ASSOCIATION.** The headquarters are at the postoffice address of the secretary. The officers for 1916 were:

W. L. Howell, president; G. B. Kuykendall, secretary; L. F. Koenig, treasurer and financial secretary. This society was founded on July 19, 1909. Membership is restricted to persons who have resided in Garfield or an adjoining county for twenty-five years.

GRAYS HARBOR COUNTY. Pioneer association of Grays Harbor County. The headquarters are at Montesano. The officers for 1916 were: George Scammon, president, Westport; Mrs. Edwin May, first vice-president, Porter; Mrs. Joe Redman, second vice-president, Melbourne; J. W. Himes, third vice-president, Elma; Mrs. J. E. Calder, secretary, Montesano; Mrs. E. Belle Marcy, treasurer, Montesano. The association collects and preserves local historical documents. Membership is restricted to those resident in the county prior to January 1, 1885.

ABERDEEN PIONEER ASSOCIATION. The headquarters are at Aberdeen. The officers for 1916 were: Mrs. J. G. Lewis, president; Lewis F. Kolts, vice-president; Mrs. William Irvine, secretary; Mrs. Charles Pinckney, treasurer; Mrs. A. D. Wood, historian; trustees: Mrs. Jean B. Stewart, J. B. Haynes, J. G. Lewis, E. C. Finch, J. G. Smith. The society has four meetings each year, the annual meeting occurring in January and the memorial meeting in memory of those who have died occurring on the first Sunday in March.

KING COUNTY. Seattle Historical Society. The headquarters are at Seattle. The officers for 1916 were: Mrs. Morgan J. Carkeek, president; Mrs. William P. Trimble, vice-president; Mrs. Redick H. McKee, secretary; Mrs. William F. Prosser, treasurer; Mrs. Frederick E. Swanstrom, historian. The society has been very active in collecting manuscripts.

KITSAP COUNTY. Kitsap County Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at Charleston. The officers for 1916 were: H. M. Williams, president, Tracyton; Lillie L. Crawford, secretary, Charleston; Paul Mehner, treasurer, Bremerton. This society was organized at the Kitsap County Fair on October 10, 1914. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in the county prior to the year 1893. The annual meeting for the election of officers is held on the third Wednesday in June at Bremerton.

LINCOLN AND ADAMS COUNTIES. Lincoln and Adams County Pioneer and Historical Association. The headquarters are at the office of the secretary and the annual meeting and outing is held at the society's grounds on Crab Creek. The officers for 1916 were: J. W. Sawyer, president, Davenport; F. R. Burroughs, vice-president, Ritz-

ville; C. F. Ivy, secretary-treasurer, Davenport; Matt Brislawn, historian, Sprague; directors: M. C. Lavender, Espanola; H. K. Rosenoff, Sr., Ritzville; C. A. Harris, Ritzville; Henry W. Thiel, Ritzville; George N. Lowe, Lamona.

**OKANOGAN COUNTY.** Okanogan County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Concoumully. The officers for 1916 were: P. H. Pinkston, president, Concoumully; George Hurley, vice-president, Loomis; David Gubser, secretary, Concoumully; William C. Brown, historian, Okanogan.

**PIERCE COUNTY.** Pierce County Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at the State Historical Building, 401 North Cliff Avenue, Tacoma. The officers for 1916 were: Mrs. Addie G. Hill, president; James Sales, vice-president; Mrs. Mary E. Bean, secretary; Mrs. Celia P. Grass, treasurer. Meetings are held in January, April, July and October. Local historical documents are deposited in the society's rooms in the State Historical Building. The society has erected monuments on historic spots. Membership is restricted to those who have resided on the Pacific Coast prior to the year 1870.

**SAN JUAN COUNTY.** San Juan County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Richardson. The officers for 1916 were: Charles McKay, president, Friday Harbor; Eryn Eaton, vice-president, Islanddale; E. J. Hummel, secretary-treasurer, Port Stanley; directors: C. A. Kent, Lopez; Stanley Kepler, West Sound; Bert Fowler, Shaw Island; William Reed, Decatur. The society was organized on October 31, 1913, at Bloor Grove, Richardson. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in the state for twenty-five years. The annual meeting is held in June.

**SKAGIT COUNTY.** Skagit County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Sedro-Woolley, where the society has extensive buildings, but the annual meeting and gathering is held at different places in the county as may be determined by the committee. The officers for 1916 were: Nick Boesner, president, Anacortes; Mrs. R. O. Welts, vice-president, Mount Vernon; Frank A. Hall, secretary, Mount Vernon; P. Halloran, treasurer, Edison. This association was organized at Sedro-Woolley on August 13, 1904. Two classes of members are admitted. Those who have resided in the county prior to January 1, 1886, are admitted as "Pioneers"; persons who have resided in the county for twenty years may be admitted as "Old Settlers."

**SKOONAMISH COUNTY.** Skillogannish Valley Association of Washington Pioneers. The headquarters are at Arlington. The officers for

1916 were: W. F. Oliver, president; Thomas Moran, vice-president; M. M. McCaulley, secretary; Charles H. Tracy, treasurer. The annual meeting occurs on the second Thursday in August. The society has three grades of membership. Persons resident in the state for twenty-five years are "Pioneers"; those resident for twenty years are "Early Settlers"; those resident for fifteen years are "Honorary Members." The society reports that Mr. M. Birckenmeier, who settled in the county over thirty-three years ago, has donated an eight-acre tract near Arlington for a park. The site was promptly christened "Birckenmeier Pioneer Park." The deed has been placed in escrow with the stipulation that it be recorded when the sum of \$1,500 has been expended in improvements.

**SPOKANE COUNTY.** Spokane County Pioneer Society. The headquarters are at Spokane. The officers for 1915 were: R. A. Hutchinson, president; S. A. Eslick, vice-president; Joseph S. Willson, secretary; W. W. Waltman, treasurer; the above, with John I. Daniels, make up the board of directors. There are four meetings a year, including the annual outing. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in Spokane County prior to November 29, 1884.

**SPOKANE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.** The headquarters are in the Spokane Public Library Building. The officers for 1916 were: N. W. Durham, president; W. D. Vincent, first vice-president; Mrs. E. F. Rue, second vice-president; William S. Lewis, corresponding secretary; George W. Fuller, recording secretary; B. L. Gordon, treasurer; trustees: Jonathan Edwards, B. L. Gordon, J. Neilson Barry, Harl J. Cook, William S. Lewis, N. W. Durham, W. D. Vincent, Mrs. E. F. Rue, E. I. Seehorn, R. D. Gwyder, Garrett B. Hunt. The society is actively engaged in collecting manuscripts.

**STEVENS COUNTY.** Stevens County Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Colville. The officers for 1915 were: C. R. McMillan, president, Orin; Frank Habein, vice-president, Colville; Mrs. Clara Shaver, secretary, Colville; John G. Kulzer, treasurer, Valley; John B. Slater, historian, Colville. The annual meeting is held on June 30 of each year. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in the state prior to June 30, 1895.

**THURSTON COUNTY.** Pioneer and Historical Society of Thurston County. The headquarters are at Olympia. The officers for 1916 were: Hazard Stevens, president; George N. Talcot, first vice-president; F. W. Stocking, secretary and treasurer; trustees: W. Scott Shaser, P. M. Troy, M. D. Abbott. There is an annual gathering at



Priest Point Park in summer and a meeting for the election of officers, etc., in March. Membership is restricted to those who have resided in the county prior to 1870.

**SOUTH-WEST WASHINGTON PIONEER DAY ASSOCIATION.** The headquarters are at Rochester. The officers for 1916 were: J. W. Lieullen, president, Rochester; J. B. Stanley, secretary-treasurer, Rochester; trustees: L. L. Hunter, Aberdeen; W. S. Shaser, Olympia; C. C. Seates, Oakville; F. G. Titus, Centralia.

**WALLA WALLA COUNTY.** Inland Empire Pioneer Association. The headquarters are at Walla Walla. The officers for 1915 were: Ben Burgunder, president, Colfax; Martin Evans, secretary, Walla Walla; Levi Ankeny, treasurer, Walla Walla; W. D. Lyman, historian, Walla Walla. The society has an annual meeting. Documents are collected and deposited in the Whitman College Library. Membership is restricted to persons who arrived in the Inland Empire or on the Pacific Coast prior to the year 1885.

**WHATCOM COUNTY.** Old Settlers' Association of Whatcom County. The headquarters of the society are at Pioneer Park, Ferndale. The officers for 1916 were: J. B. Wilson, president; T. B. Wynn, vice-president; Edith M. Thornton, secretary; W. E. Campbell, treasurer; trustees: Charles Tawes, John Slater, John Tarte, Godfrey Schneider, Porter Felmley, George Baer. The annual gathering, election of officers, etc., is held in August at Pioneer Park, Ferndale. The society has a graduated system of membership. Persons who have resided in the county for ten years are admitted and are known as "Chechacoos"; the older members in point of residence are known by other Chinook jargon titles; the oldest living member in point of residence is given a special honor badge which remains in his possession until his death, when it passes to the next oldest pioneer.

**WHITMAN COUNTY.** Whitman County Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at Garfield. The officers for 1916 were: William Duling, president, Garfield; P. W. Cox, vice-president, Colfax; S. A. Manring, secretary, Garfield; William Lippitt, treasurer, Colfax. The annual meeting is held in June. Membership is restricted to those who were residents of Washington prior to October, 1886.

**YAKIMA COUNTY.** Yakima Pioneers' Association. The headquarters are at North Yakima. The officers for 1917, elected on November 4, 1916, are: A. J. Splawn, president; David Longmire, first vice-president; James Beck, second vice-president; John H. Lynch, secre-

tary; Mrs. Zona H. Cameron, treasurer; Mrs. A. J. Splawn, historian; directors: Mrs. D. D. Reynolds, Elmer B. Marks, Fred Parker, E. A. Clemen. The annual meeting is held on the first Saturday in November. Regular membership in the association is restricted to citizens of white or Indian blood who were residents in the original County of Yakima prior to November 9, 1889, and their descendants. Persons not eligible to membership may become associate members. All documents are kept in the custody of the historian. The society has worked in conjunction with the Sons of the American Revolution and Daughters of the American Revolution to erect monuments on historic sites.

**YAKIMA COLUMBIAN ASSOCIATION.** This is a Catholic organization with headquarters at North Yakima. It has for its object the care and preservation of the old St. Joseph's Mission in the Ahtanum Valley. Since 1915 the association has employed a caretaker who resides on the premises. The present officers are: John Ditter, president; R. E. Allingham, vice-president; John H. Lynch, secretary; H. A. La Berge, treasurer; Pat Jordan, general manager.

VICTOR J. FARRAR.

## REMINISCENCES OF A PIONEER WOMAN\*

My father was John Fenn, an Englishman, the son of Thomas and Nancy Fenn. He was born at Alesworth, North Hampshire, England, on November 26, 1810 or 1812, and in his youth learned the trade of plasterer and brick mason. In 1828, with an older brother, William Fenn,<sup>1</sup> he came over on a sailing vessel. I have heard my father say that he was only sixteen years old when he left England. In Canada my father took up his trade of plasterer, and later, with his brother William moved to Pike County, Illinois, where both brothers married.

My mother was Mary Jory, an Englishwoman, the daughter of James Jory and Mary Stevens, who were married in St. Clear parish, England, in 1812. James Jory's father (also named James Jory) was a game keeper and gardener on an English estate, and the son learned the trade of carpenter and mechanic. My grandfather's family consisted of two daughters, Mary (my mother), Elizabeth, who later became my stepmother, and six sons, John, James,<sup>2</sup> Henry Thomas, William, and H. S. All, except H. S. Jory, were born in England. My grandfather, James Jory, with his family emigrated from England to St. John, New Brunswick, where he took up a farm and worked in the ship yards. Later he moved with his family to New York, then to New Orleans, and from there to St. Louis, Missouri. The slave-holding system then prevailing in Missouri was obnoxious to his liberty-loving English spirit, and my grandfather moved, with his family, to Pike County, Illinois, in the fall of 1837. Here he bought forty acres of government land on which he settled.

In Pike County, my father, John Fenn, first met my mother, Mary Jory, and they were married in 1839. Four children were born, Mary Jane, born on May 17, 1840; <sup>3</sup>Elizabeth Ann (the narrator, now living at Spring Valley, Washington; James William,<sup>4</sup> born October 11, 1843; and Thomas Henry,<sup>4</sup> born March 28, 1845. Mother died in Pike County, Illinois, in November, 1846, while the family was preparing to emigrate to Oregon. I remember distinctly the new linsey

---

\*This relation was made by Elizabeth Ann Coone of Spring Valley, Spokane County, to William S. Lewis, Corresponding Secretary of the Spokane Historical Society. The footnotes are by Mr. Lewis.—Editor.

<sup>1</sup>William Fenn, when last heard of was living at Kaski, Illinois.

<sup>2</sup>A sketch of the life of James Jory, Jr., by H. S. Lyman appears in the Oregon Historical Quarterly, Vol. 3, pages 271-286.

<sup>3</sup>Now Mrs. Nancy Jane MacPherson, East Fourteenth St., Portland, Ore.

<sup>4</sup>Now deceased.

dress mother made to wear to Oregon, and the tent stretched in the yard of the old home in Illinois under which we children played.

Mary Elizabeth Jory, my mother's sister, took mother's place in caring for the four little motherless children, and when all was ready father, auntie and us children, with a large party including many of mother's relatives, started out overland by ox teams along the old Oregon trail, reaching the Columbia River district in the late fall of 1847.

Dr. Whitman came out from the Blue Mountains, a distance of about 150 miles, to meet our party and to pilot them over the trail to his mission. A stop of three weeks was made at the Whitman Mission and Dr. Whitman tried to persuade the emigrants to remain over at the mission until the next year.<sup>5</sup>

Before reaching the mission a considerable amount of property was stolen from the emigrants' camp by the Indians. This was just after the first robbery and massacre of an emigrant train, where but a small part of the people had escaped. Upon our robbery being reported to Dr. Whitman, he called the Indians together; they gathered in a half-circle in front of the Doctor, wrapped in their blankets, many with their faces painted with war-paint, and the Doctor began to arraign them about the theft. I looked on, standing beside father and holding his hand. As the Doctor proceeded, and the guilty consciences of the Indians were awakened, from time to time a knife, fork or frying pan would be dropped by an Indian from beneath his blanket, and when Dr. Whitman had finished most of the stolen property was lying about on the ground at the feet of the Indians. One of the Indians threw down a skillet with considerable force, and, as I thought, threw it at the Doctor, but father said, "No, they are mad." This was only a short time before the massacre of Dr. Whitman by the Indians.

Among the property surrendered by the Indians was a large chest. No one knew to whom it belonged, so Dr. Whitman gave it to my father to carry on to Oregon, hoping that the owner might be found there. Father's team was, however, giving out and he was compelled to leave the chest by the roadside in the mountains. After we had reached Oregon I remember we were all gathered around the old fireplace one night when auntie said, "John, I have often wondered what was in the old chest you put out by the roadside. There might have been something in it which we could have used for the children."

---

<sup>5</sup>The Whitman massacre occurred on November 29, 1847, and the eagerness of the emigrants to reach old Oregon probably saved them from sharing the fate of Dr. Whitman. The emigration of 1847 did not pass by the Whitman mission, and it was not customary for Dr. Whitman to go out to meet and pilot emigrants. He went to the Umatilla River with some provisions to sell them, and was gone several weeks that fall at The Dalles where he purchased the Methodist Mission property. (T. C. E.) It is probable, however, that many of the emigrants made the "out of the way trip" to visit the mission, and rest for a few days.



And father answered her, saying: "No, Elizabeth, I never could have used anything that did not belong to me."

From the Whitman Mission we traveled down the Columbia in canoes, and at first settled at Clatsop Plains in Clatsop County, Oregon, where in 1847 father married my aunt, Elizabeth Jory, who had taken care of us children during the trip. My step-brother, John S. Fenn,<sup>6</sup> was born at Clatsop Plains.

After remaining at Clatsop Plains for about a year, in 1849, the family moved to Salem, where we remained two years. In 1852 father moved with the family to Linn County, Oregon, a place about six miles north of Albany. Here my step-brother, Joe Fenn,<sup>7</sup> was born in 1852, and my step-sister, Mary Fenn,<sup>8</sup> was born in 1854.

In the spring of 1854 my step-mother, Mary Elizabeth Fenn, took sick and died. We all had a very hard time while she was sick. Sister and I had to care for her and cook the meals and do all the house work, father and the boys being all hard at work on the farm. After my step-mother's death my oldest sister, Nancy Jane, then fourteen years old, and myself, kept house for the family until sister was married to William Angus MacPherson, a Scotchman, who afterwards became State Printer of Oregon, and who was later associated with the late Harvey Scott on the Oregonian.

Except for occasional visits to our grandparents, who lived about twenty miles away, the rest of us children stayed at home until we grew up. Times were very hard among the early pioneers of Oregon. Some of us children spent a great deal of the time with our grandparents, the Jory family. Several of the Jory family have died on their old donation claim in the Salem Hills, and some of their descendants still live there on land first taken up in 1850. In that part of Oregon the "Jory Settlement" is a section as well known as the "French Prairie Settlement," where the French Canadian employees of the Hudson Bay Company settled. There were a great many volunteers for the Indian wars of the fifties from the "Jory Settlement" and the vicinity.

In 1849, my father, John Fenn, with one of my uncles, joined the gold rush to California, sailing across the Columbia River Bar and down the coast of California in an open boat. My father was fairly successful in his mining operations and returned from California in 1850 by a sailing boat, which was compelled to lie off the Columbia River Bar three weeks before it was safe to cross and enter the Columbia.

---

<sup>6</sup>Col. J. S. Fenn, of Spokane and North Yakima: Col. Fenn in 1855-6 represented Spokane County in the Territorial Legislature.

<sup>7</sup>Mr. Joseph C. Fenn, of Spokane and Seattle.

<sup>8</sup>Mrs. Mary C. Adams, now residing near Lewiston, Idaho.

As a child I remember hearing of the killing of the Indian Pu-Pu-Mox-Mox<sup>9</sup> by the soldiers in 1856, and of hearing that some of the volunteer soldiers from our neighborhood had brought back razor strops made out of his hide. His ears were cut off and pickled and brought back as trophies by one of the neighbors.

As a young girl I remember meeting Dr. McLoughlin, with the Hudson Bay Company. With the money which he brought back from the gold mines in California my father bought some horses, and he was the only man in the neighborhood who had horses, most of the settlers having only cattle which they had driven across the plains. Father used to loan his team to the neighbors to haul their wheat to the Hudson Bay Company's mill at Oregon City. On one occasion the supplies of grain and flour became very short, and even the Hudson Bay Company had barely enough for its own use. Being an Englishman, the neighbors selected my father as their delegate to go to Dr. McLoughlin and try to get sufficient flour for their winter use. Dr. McLoughlin asked father how many women and children there were, and then told father that the settlers could have some flour, but that they would have to take shorts to mix with it.

In 1860, I, Elizabeth Ann Fenn, was married to David M. Coonc,<sup>9½</sup> at Scio, Linn County, Oregon, and in 1864 moved with my husband to The Dalles, Oregon. In 1864 we moved to White Bluffs on the Columbia River. White Bluffs was then on the east side of the Columbia at the crossing of the Mullan Road, and an attempt was made to start a town there in opposition to Wallula. A warehouse and a store were built there. There were two white men, bachelors, there, Nevison and Boothe. My husband, Mr. Coonc, had several teams of mules and teamed freight from White Bluffs.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>9</sup>Pu-Pu-Mox-Mox, with several other Indians, were held as hostages by the white settlers in the Walla Walla country during the Cayuse war and in December, 1855, the command going into sanguinary conflict with the hostile Indians at the Touchet River, the guards killed all the Indian prisoners and mutilated their remains. The usual plea was made that the Indians had tried to escape, but the act seems to have been an uncalled for and cold-blooded massacre equal in savagery to any similar acts committed by the Indians. For an account see the History of Klickitat and Yakima Counties, pages 71 to 73. See Statements of General John E. Wool, Serial No. 822, 34th Cong., 1st S. Ex. D. 66, pages 39 and 58.

<sup>9½</sup>David Madison Coonc was born at Keokuk, Iowa, in 1832, of German parentage. In 1849, as a boy of seventeen, he left home and came overland with a party of emigrants to California, where he worked a mining claim at Eureka, during the gold excitement. In 1859, he came overland to Oregon, settling in Lynn County, where he married Miss Fenn on October 25, 1860.

<sup>10</sup>In the early '60s when the old Oregon Steam Navigation Company extended its steamer traffic to White Bluffs to take care of the shipments to Montana and built a steamboat on Lake Pend d'Oreille they had a freighting road built across the country, following some old Indian trail. (T. C. E.) The White Bluff Road, as shown on Lieutenant Symonds' map of the Department of the Columbia, went north from White Bluffs northeast to Crab Creek, thence to Sheep Springs; thence northeast by Duck Lake road and thence northeast to Ivy Lake, thence six miles to Booth Springs, thence thirteen miles northeast to Cottonwood Springs (now Davenport), thence east to Mondovi, Deep Creek, and Spokane Falls; thence

There was then a big mining excitement near the head of Pend Oreille Lake, and the machinery and materials for the first steamboat were landed at White Bluffs to be hauled to the Lake. On the first trip, Abe Hines and his wife, who had been married in our house in Oregon, accompanied Mr. Coonc and located where Rathdrum, Idaho, now is and built a road-house—being a double cabin with a roofed porch between. The freight was landed at Cabinet Landing on Pend Oreille Lake. On the next trip with freight, I accompanied my husband, riding a mule while my husband managed his ten-mule team with a jerk line. We started in August and it took about three weeks to make the trip, most of the way being over an Indian trail. Our freight was the boiler for a steamboat. Mr. Coonc was a great hand to frighten the Indians. They crowded around the big boiler and asked him what it was; my husband opened up the firebox, showing them the numerous tubes, or flues of the boiler and told them it was “many guns,” and that he had a shot in every barrel and only had to fire it up to commence shooting. Thereafter the Indians were careful not to get in front of the boiler.

Approaching the present site of the city of Spokane, we came down an Indian trail by Garden Springs<sup>11</sup> and camped on the little stream west of Hangman Creek. There were no white people at Spokane at that time. Mr. Coonc unhitched the mules and took them off a little distance from the wagons to pasture them. While he was gone an Indian came up to me with a fish to sell; soon there were about a dozen Indians about me, all offering to sell me fish. They looked at my hands and dress, and hollered and joked and laughed among themselves; looked at my feet, put their hands on my head. I think that I was the first white woman they had seen. Getting scared, I got off the wagon and ran to my husband. There used to be an old roadhouse or stopping place near Garden Springs in the early days.

Crossing Hangman Creek, it took Mr. Coonc all day to get up the west bank of the creek where Eighth Avenue crosses under the Northern Pacific Railroad. A bad time was encountered also in getting over the rim rock, down into Union Park, as there were no roads. I did not visit the falls of the Spokane but could hear their roar from the camp. We crossed the Spokane River at a ferry near where Cow-

---

east to Rathdrum, Idaho; thence along a line parallel to the present Northern Pacific Railway line for about twelve miles; thence east to Steamboat Landing at the southern end of Pend d'Oreille Lake. On this map, Splains' place is shown at about six miles below Ringold Bar; Kuntz' (Coonc) place about six miles above the bar and Perkins' place about eight miles above the Kuntz place.

<sup>11</sup>Mrs. Coonc is mistaken; the Indian trail and road came down what is now known as “Brickyard Gulch” about a mile and a half south of the gulch occupied by Garden Springs creek.

ley's Bridge was erected. Part of the lumber for the first bridge was then on the ground.<sup>12</sup> Antone Plant had a ferry there. He lived on the north side of the river, on the river bank. He had married a squaw and had a lot of children. About the fattest cattle I ever saw were at Antone Plant's place. From there we went to Rathdrum, and I stopped with Mrs. Hines, while Mr. Coonc went on to Pend Oreille Lake with the freight.

We returned to White Bluffs and Mr. Coonc sold his mules for ox teams, six yoke. We wintered at White Bluffs. I then returned to Albany, Oregon, and Mr. Coonc began hauling freight from Wallula to Winnemucca, Nevada, where there was a big mining excitement at the time. He was gone eleven months on the trip. At Burnt River, Eastern Oregon, he lost two teams of oxen by the cattle eating some weed. In 1868, Mr. Coonc sold his ox teams at Minnemucca and went to San Francisco, and returned to Oregon. In the spring of 1869 we bought cattle and took them overland to Ocho-co, at Prineville, about 100 miles over the mountains east from Albany. Barney Prine was then king of Ocho-co.

The place was full of the toughest men I ever saw; every Sunday they would get drunk, quarrel and shoot up the town. They finally started to brand Mr. Coonc's cattle. Mr. Coonc couldn't kick, and I persuaded him to move to White Bluffs in 1872. The cattle were swum over the river and driven to Ringold Bar near White Bluffs. Here we lived three years. There was a large Indian camp up the river near us, but the Indians never molested us. Chinamen were then washing gold in the bars along the Columbia and frequently traded gold to me for flour and bread.

There was an Indian burying-ground near Ringold Bar and the Indians frequently passed, carrying dead bodies to that place for burial. I knew Joseph, the Nez Perce, and fed him many a dish of bread and milk. I knew old Moses and his tribe; they frequently came to the house. Mr. Coonc had the Indians bluffed; they respected him and were afraid of him. About 1878 he read in the almanac that there would be an eclipse of the moon. He told the Indians that he was a great man; that on a certain day he was going to place his hand over the moon. The eclipse came off on scheduled time. Mr. Coonc then told the Indians that if they stole any of his cattle he would blow "poof," and that would be the end of the thief. Mr. Coonc had been accidentally shot through the hand. This had left a bullet hole which he showed to the Indians as proof that shooting him with bullets could not injure him.

---

<sup>12</sup>The bridge was built by Joe Herrin and Tim Lee in 1864.



While at Ringold Bar we saw a great deal of the Indians; Mr. Coonc, myself and my two oldest girls could all talk "Chinook" fluently. When we moved to the "Bar" Mr. Coonc told me that if I would stay there three years after that he would move the family to town. In 1875 the family moved to Waitsburg.

At the time of the Nez Perce war, in 1878, a family by the name of Perkins was living in our house at Ringold Bar. Some of the renegade Nez Perce Indians tried to cross the Columbia at Umatilla to go to the Yakima country to stir up the Yakimas; they were shot while in the boats in the river and driven back by the whites; some of the Indians being killed and injured. The remaining Indians continued on up the east bank of the Columbia and crossed near our place. The Perkins family had gone to Yakima. Returning, they stopped at Rattlesnake Springs, turned their horses out and were eating their lunch, when they were surprised by these Indians and killed. The Indians got part of their lunch. Two weeks later Mr. Coonc, thinking something was wrong, swam his horses over the river. Later the body of Mrs. Perkins was found partly buried, the left arm sticking out of the ground. Old Jack Splain afterwards captured five of these Indians. It seems that they shot Mr. Perkins first; that Mrs. Perkins ran and jumped on a horse, but they shot her and she fell. They threw her body in a ravine and partly covered it. Three Indians were hanged at Yakima for this.<sup>13</sup>

While at the Bar we never had any trouble with the Indians. There was a big Indian camp above us—part of Moses' tribe. One day there was an earthquake and a big landslide somewhere up near Chelan. The Indians said that there was a rumble, a smell of sulphur and that the earth opened up in cracks, taking in some of the Indians, one of whom was left with a hand sticking out. The water of the Columbia was all muddy from the landslide, which for a time blocked the river. The Indians came to the house; they sat around on the floor against the walls, and I fed them bread and milk; then they smoked and passed the pipe from one to another, before they would talk about the earthquake and landslide with Mr. Coonc. This, I think, was in 1877.<sup>14</sup>

At one time Mr. Coonc was a partner of Dan Drumheller, now a pioneer of the city of Spokane. Mr. Coonc had lots of cattle and

<sup>13</sup>For an account of this murder see "History of Yakima and Klickitat Counties." Mr. J. B. Huntington, living in the Yakima Country at the time, states that the Indians crossed to the north side of the Columbia from Umatilla and proceeded overland, crossing the Yakima near Prosser, and thence proceeding north into the Rattlesnake Hills, where they encountered the Perkins family on their way to Yakima for safety from hostile Indians; and that the capture of the murderers was by Bill Splain, not by Jack Splain.

<sup>14</sup>This earthquake occurred in 1874.

horses. One spring we branded five hundred calves. Mr. Coonc used to drive beef cattle from Yakima over the mountains by Snoqualmie Pass to the Sound. In the winter of 1880 there was a big blizzard; there was a cold wind blowing and the cattle following and drifting with the wind, 1500 head broke through the ice on the Columbia and were drowned. That winter I think we lost seventy-five per cent. of our cattle. The early cattlemen trusted to the weather; they didn't winter their stock. One winter the weather was so bad, blizzards, snow and cold winds, that the cattle tried to get into the houses at Pasco. Some got into our house at Ringold Bar and died there. After the worst winter Mr. Coonc had only five hundred cattle left; he thought these too small to bother with so he went into raising horses.

In March, 1884, we moved to our farm at Spring Valley, near the depot.

My father, John Fenn, died at Waitsburg in 1882. Father was a man of sterling qualities whose word was as good as gold. He was a Christian also and read his Bible a great deal. It tried men's souls to live up to a Christian life in his time on the frontier. Father did not talk much to us children or relate to us things that happened, as many do, so many things of family history were not remembered by us children as they otherwise would have been.

My husband, Mr. Coonc, could ride anything; he was a daring rider. In 1869 he was in the saddle three months at a stretch, riding the range. He was killed by a horse at Rosalia on June 22nd, 1900.

While at Ringold Bar, he used to send letters back and forth to Waitsburg, 80 miles, by Indians; he often sent us salmon the same way. The Indians liked and trusted him. One old Indian, who thought a great deal of Mr. Coonc, wouldn't eat when he heard of Mr. Coonc's death, he felt so bad.

Several times in early days I was informed that my husband was dead. Once when he was freighting from The Dalles to Canyon City, Union County, Oregon, 150 miles away, near the Nevada line, it was printed in the paper that he had been killed by Indians. Mr. Smith, the postmaster at Waitsburg, once handed me a newspaper which stated that Indians had killed Mr. Coonc. A horse had been found with a bloody saddle, later a body was found which was identified as his. I did not know the truth for three weeks. I was just getting ready to go back to Oregon to my folks when Mr. Coonc returned.

My husband knew Mr. James Glover, the "Father of Spokane," in California, before Mr. Glover ever came to Washington Territory.

I am now living near Spring Valley, in Spokane County, Washington.

ELIZABETH ANN COONC.

## FIRST IMMIGRANTS TO CROSS THE CASCADES

Now that the people are building fine automobile highways across the Cascades, new interest has been aroused in the first band of immigrants that crossed through Naches Pass to Puget Sound in 1853. In that party were two boys of almost exactly the same age. I was born in Fountain County, Indiana, on May 8, 1844, and George H. Himes was born at Troy, Bradford County, Pennsylvania, on May 18, 1844. Although we boys were only nine years of age, we had to do all we could to help with the hard work in the mountains. Probably we have just as keen memories of those days as do those who were older at the time.

It is hardly necessary to add that Mr. Himes and I have been warm personal friends during all the sixty-three years since those strenuous days through Naches Pass. Mr. Himes has become famous as a historian of the Northwest. On June 19, 1907, he gave the annual address before the Oregon Pioneer Association and told well the story of that famous immigration of 1853. His address was published and with it a list he had compiled of the members of that party, which was the first to cross over the Cascade Mountains to Puget Sound. I kept his list and have been able during the last few years to correct it a little and to add some names that had been omitted. His list as I have corrected it is as follows:

Aiken, A. G.	Biles, George W.
Aiken, James.	Biles, James B.
Aiken, John.	Biles, Clark.
Baker, Bartholomew C.	Biles, Mrs. Kate (Sargent).
Baker, Mrs. Fanny.	Biles, Mrs. Susan Belle (Drew).
Baker, James E.	Biles, Mrs. Euphemia (Brazee)
Baker, John Wesley.	(Knapp).
Baker, Leander H.	Biles, Margaret.
Baker, Elijah.	Bowers, John.
Baker, Mrs. Olive	Burnett, Frederick.
Baker, Joseph N.	Brooks, Mrs. Martha (Young).
Baker, William LeRoy.	Byles, Rev. Charles.
Barr, James.	Byles, Mrs. Sarah W.
Bell, James.	Byles, David F.
Bell, Mrs. Eliza (Wright).	Byles, Charles N.
Biles, James.	Byles, Mrs. Rebecca E. (Goodell)
Biles, Mrs. Nancy M.	Byles, Mrs. Sarah I. (Ward).

- Byles, Luther.  
Claflin, William.  
Clinton, Wesley.  
Davis, Varine.  
Day, Joseph.  
Downey, William R.  
Downey, Mrs. William R.  
Downey, Christopher Columbus.  
Downey, George W.  
Downey, James H.  
Downey, William A.  
Downey, R. M.  
Downey, John M.  
Downey, Mrs. Louise (Guess).  
Downey, Mrs. Jane (Clark).  
Downey, Mrs. Susan (Latham).  
Downey, Mrs. Laura Belle (Bartlett).  
Finch, Henry C.  
Fitch, Charles Reuben.  
Frazier, ———.  
Frazier, Mrs. Elizabeth.  
Guess, Mason F.  
Guess, Wilson.  
Gant, James.  
Gant, Mrs. James.  
Gant, Harris.  
Gant, Mrs. Harris.  
Greenman, Clark N.  
Hampton, J. Wilson.  
Himes, Tyrus.  
Himes, Mrs. Emiline.  
Himes, George H.  
Himes, Mrs. Helen Z. (Ruddell).  
Himes, Judson W.  
Himes, Mrs. Lestina Z. (Eaton).  
Hill, Mrs. Mary Jane (Byles).  
Horn, Thomas.  
Horn, Mrs. Thomas.  
Judson, Peter.  
Judson, Mrs. Peter.  
Judson, Stephen.  
Judson, John Paul.  
Kincaid, William M.  
Kincaid, Mrs. William M.  
Kincaid, Mrs. Susannah (Thompson).  
Kincaid, Joseph C.  
Kincaid, Mrs. Laura (Meade).  
Kincaid, James.  
Kincaid, John.  
Lane, Daniel E.  
Lane, Mrs. Daniel E.  
Lane, Edward.  
Lane, William.  
Lane, Timothy.  
Lane, Albert.  
Lane, John.  
Lane, Mrs. Elizabeth (Whitesel).  
Lane, Mrs. Abigail.  
Light, Erastus A.  
Light, Mrs. Erastus A.  
Light, Henry.  
Longmire, James.  
Longmire, Mrs. James.  
Longmire, Elcaine.  
Longmire, David.  
Longmire, Mrs. Tillathi (Kandle).  
Longmire, John A.  
McCullough, ———.  
McCullough, Mrs. ———.  
McCullough, Mrs. Mary Frances (Porter).  
McCullough, Flora.  
Meller, Mrs. Getrude (DeLin).  
Moyer, John B.  
Melville, George.  
Melville, Mrs. George.  
Melville, Mrs. Kate (Thompson).  
Melville, Robert.  
Neisan, John.  
Ogle, Van.  
Ragan, Henry.  
Ragan, John.



Ray, Henry.	Woolery, Jacob Francis.
Ray, Sam.	Woolery, Daniel Henry.
Risdon, Henry.	Woolery, Mrs. Agnes (Lamon).
Risdon, Joel.	Whitesel, William.
Sarjent, Asher.	Whitesel, Mrs. William.
Sarjent, Mrs. Asher.	Whitesel, William Henry.
Sarjent, E. N.	Whitesel, Mrs. Nancy (Leach).
Sarjent, Francis Marion.	Whitesel, Margaret.
Sarjent, Wilson.	Whitesel, Alexander.
Sarjent, Mrs. Matilda (Saylor).	Whitesel, Cal.
Sarjent, Mrs. Rebecca (Kellett).	Wright, Isaac H.
Steward, Mr. —.	Wright, Mrs. Isaac H.
Steward, Mrs. —.	Wright, Benjamin F.
Steward, Miss —.	Wright, Mrs. Benjamin F.
Stewart, Celia.	Wright, James.
Watts, Evan.	Wright, Mrs. Eliza (Bell).
West, Newton.	Wright, Mrs. Rebecca (Moore).
Woolery, Isaac.	Wright, William.
Woolery, Mrs. Isaac.	Wright, Byrd.
Woolery, Robert Lemuel.	Wright, (Grandfather).
Woolery, James Henderson.	Wright, (Grandmother).
Woolery, Mrs. Sarah Jane	Wright, Mrs. Annis (Downey).
(Ward).	West, Newton.
Woolery, Abraham.	Woodward, John W.
Woolery, Mrs. Abraham (Aunt	Young, Austin E.
Pop).	

Attention should be called to the fact that Rev. Charles Byles and James Biles were brothers who had different ideas as to the correct spelling of the family name. The list needs further corrections, as a number of the names are incomplete, and it may be well to state that some names are still missing. I am glad we have the list in this form and hope it may yet be made perfect.

Since you have asked me to record my own reminiscences, I will do the best I can.

My father, James Longmire, was born in Indiana on March 17, 1820. My Mother, Virinda Taylor Longmire, was also a native of Indiana, born in 1829. The family started for the "Oregon Country" from Attica, Fountain County, Indiana, on March 16, 1853. There were four of us children; my brother Elcaine, who later became widely known through his work at Longmire Springs on Mount Rainier, myself next, Tillatha Longmire Kandle, now of Yakima, and John Longmire of Yelm.

The first part of our journey was by water to St. Joe, Missouri. There father bought eight yoke of oxen and two wagons. We travelled to Cainesville (now Council Bluffs, Iowa) and there we obtained a full supply of provisions, medicine, guns and ammunition for our long journey across the plains.

We travelled down the Missouri River and crossed on a ferry operated by a man named Sarpee, who was part Indian. Where we camped there was not a house at that time but since then Omaha City has risen on the site. At Wood River we crossed the wagons on canoes and swam the stock across. At Luke Fork we crossed by caulking the wagon boxes and making temporary boats of them.

At one of these stream-crossings, a young man of our party, named Van Ogle, rode a horse to head the band, the others being driven in after him. When well started, his horse became unmanageable, reared up and threw the rider backwards in front of the swimming steeds. With rare presence of mind, the young man dove to the bottom and remained there until the horses had passed over. He then bobbed to the surface and spouted up water in great glee to amuse the rest of us. Mr. Van Ogle, an Indian war veteran, now lives at Orting, Pierce County, enjoying good health in his ninety-second year, a more honorable man we never had.

We traveled on past Independence Rock, where Lewis and Clark spent their Fourth of July in 1805. Indians were numerous but our train was never disturbed by them. However, we were always on the lookout, standing guard over our cattle each night.

We saw many droves of buffalo and some antelope. We encountered many incidents—too numerous to mention. Really we must have been in a fortunate train as we did not encounter the hardships endured by other parties. We crossed the Rocky Mountains with such ease that we did not even know when we reached the summit.

We crossed the Snake River twice. At the second crossing one man was accidentally drowned. When we crossed the Grand Ronde Valley, we left the Oregon Trail and started for a new route for Puget Sound. We passed by where Doctor Marcus Whitman, his wife and twelve other white people were massacred by the Indians in 1847. We reached the Columbia river at Fort Walla Walla (now Wallula) and had to remain there until we could whipsaw lumber with which to construct a scow to ferry our party across. When the scow was completed we placed thereon our wagons, bedding and a very little provision. Then we swam the stock which was very soon completed. Then we tackled the scow. While some were pulling, the others were busy bailing it out to keep it from sinking.

By September 8, we were ready to begin our march through the sand up the bank of the Columbia to the Yakima River, eighteen miles. There we parted with the head chief of the Walla Walla Indians. He and several of his tribe had been traveling with us for several days. The chief rode a fine large American roan horse with one ear slightly cropped. He had two large revolvers fastened to his saddle. He had about one hundred fine cattle, one of which he had butchered and sold to us for fifteen cents a pound, as I remember. The Indian chief treated us well.

We crossed the Yakima River, traveling up the east bank and camped for the night. That night Mr. McCully died. He had been ill for some days. We had no boards to make a box or coffin so he was buried in the ground with some brush covered over him to keep the sand from his body. So far as I know he was the first white man to be buried in Yakima Valley. He left a wife and two little girls.

We travelled towards White Bluffs, then up Coal Creek and turned westward, crossing the Yakima River at Selah. There we met a Catholic priest and understood that there was another priest on the Ahtanum. Those were the only white men in the Yakima country. The next day we arrived in the Wenas Valley and camped on a beautiful spot owned by Chief Owhi. We remained here two nights. The chief was farming and our party bought of him thirteen bushels of potatoes. This was about September 20 and 21. Later we learned that George B. McClellan had camped at the same place the month before.

We followed up the Naches River toward Naches Pass. We crossed and recrossed the river about sixty-eight times. When we reached the summit and started down the western slope we came to a very steep place where we were compelled to lower our wagons suspended by the rear axle with a rope fastened to a tree while it was gradually lowered. There were thirty-six wagons to be let down that way.

Our party consisted of about one hundred and seventy-five persons, men, women and children. Of all the men of twenty-one or more years of age at that time there remains but one to my knowledge, that one being our friend Van Ogle.

We made our way very slowly, crossing Green river eighteen times and White river seven times. We waded round, made bridges of logs, rotten wood and bark and got through pretty well. It is hard to head off a sturdy pioneer. We crossed the Puyallup River and arrived at the Mahan place on the Nisqually Plains at Clover Creek on October 12, 1853. The place is east of Parkland and a monument

has since been placed to mark the spot. That is the place where our party broke up and scattered, never to meet together again.

Father took up a donation land claim near Yelm and that became his home until he found Longmire Springs. He filed a homestead there in 1883 and lived there when seasons permitted until his death in 1897 at the age of seventy-seven. Mother survived him until 1911. She was eighty-two at the time of her death.

During the Indian troubles of 1855-1856 we were kept dodging about to save our scalps. We knew Chiefs Leschi and Quiemuth very well. They were good neighbors until the war broke out. Then it was different. Leschi was captured for a reward by the Indian Sluggo, who could talk English well. Leschi was afterwards hanged. Quiemuth gave himself up to my father, being brought to the house by a Frenchman named Oska. Father and Oska took Quiemuth to Olympia at night. They were accompanied by Van Ogle, George Brail and Betsy Edgar, an Indian woman whose white husband had been killed by the Indians. The prisoner was turned over to Governor Stevens, but while sleeping in the Governor's office he was murdered, being both shot and stabbed.

I have had but little educational advantages. I started to school first in a log cabin school house in Indiana. When father took up his claim on Yelm Prairie, I helped to cut down trees and dragged them to the place chosen and then helped to build a log school in which I became one of the first pupils. One of the teachers in that school was Dillis B. Ward, now a pioneer citizen of Seattle. Later I went to school at Chamber's Prairie and part of the Indian war years I was in school at Olympia. Some of my pioneer schoolmates were John Yantis, John Miller Murphy, the veteran newspaper man, and Hazard Stevens, son of the Governor. Rev. George F. Whitworth was one of my teachers and so was Mrs. Hyde and Mr. Cornelius.

The Yakima Valley had impressed me so favorably that I made several trips there as a young man. On September 12, 1869, I was married to Elizabeth Pollard. She had crossed the plains with her parents in 1864. We moved to a farm I had secured in the Yakima Valley but we soon sold that and I acquired the old Chief Owhi farm that charmed me so when our party first camped there in 1853. Since then I acquired more land and now all my children have adjoining farms around me. These children are Mrs. Alice Longmire Lotz, Mrs. Martha Longmire Porter, Mrs. Burnetta Longmire Small, David E. Longmire, George B. Longmire and James Guy Longmire. My first wife died in 1888 and in 1890 I was married to Elizabeth Lotz Treat, a widow who had two sons—A. E. Treat of North Yakima and H. C.



Treat of Centralia. Her father, George Lotz, had crossed the plains and settled on Puget Sound in 1851 and her mother arrived in 1854. So you see we are all pioneers. I now have fifteen grandchildren and two great grandchildren. From my second marriage I have one son, Donald Longmire.

When we first moved to our farm our trading post was at The Dalles, one hundred miles away. The doors and other finishings for my house were shipped from Tumwater around to the Columbia River and hauled by team to the farm.

About July 9, 1878, my nearest neighbors, Lorenzo D. Perkins and wife, were murdered by Indians. Mrs. Perkins was a granddaughter of James McAlister, the first man killed on Connell's Prairie in the Indian war of 1855-1856. The victims of this Yakima murder were buried in the rocks. General Howard came up the Columbia River and received a promise from the Indians that the murderers would be given up. Nothing came of it. Then John Edwards, a young man of iron nerve, went into the Indian camp and had the murderers identified by a friendly Indian.

When he reported to the Yakima farmers, a hundred of them gathered horses, guns, ammunition and about twenty-five friendly Indians. I was one of the party. We selected William Splawn as our captain and we could not have made a better choice. His nerve stood every test. We crossed the Columbia River, captured Chief Moses and his braves. We made him give up the murderers of Mr. and Mrs. Perkins. These were tried, convicted and all put to death except the one who turned state's evidence.

Pioneer life is sometimes overshadowed with the blackest of clouds, though most of them have silver linings. I enjoy my memories of the old days and more especially do I enjoy meeting the friendly pioneers.

DAVID LONGMIRE.

## THE FIRST WHITE WOMEN IN WYOMING\*

Wyoming seems very young when one fully realizes that tomorrow it will be only eighty years since the first white women came into the Great American desert and that particular part of the arid west now known as Wyoming. But these white women did not long tarry within the confines of what is our state. They were on their way to the Oregon country, the route being over the Oregon Trail.

Marcus Whitman of the state of New York and Rev. Samuel Parker were sent in 1835 by missionary boards to visit the Oregon country with a view of establishing mission centers among the Indians who were living west of the Rocky Mountains. Starting on the Oregon Trail from Independence, near the present Kansas City, they journeyed by the usual route that followed the Platte River to Fort Laramie, finally reaching South Pass, a gap in the mountains near the central part of this state. Rev. Mr. Parker while here remarked, "There would be no difficulty in constructing a railroad from the Atlantic to the Pacific." In fact this trail proved to be a very feasible route for those who went to the west, but the trail was never utilized by any railroad, though today the general government has under consideration the use of this trail for a national military highway to the Pacific Coast.

When Whitman and Parker reached Green River, just beyond South Pass, they found so many red men who were eager of the "White Man's Book" that Whitman, the young man, immediately started back to civilization for helpers in the religious work, while Parker, the old man, pushed on into the wilderness with Jim Bridger, the old trapper, for a guide.

Whitman had not been idle, for we find him in the early spring of 1836 again on the Oregon Trail, accompanied by his bride and Rev. H. H. Spalding and his bride. A strange tour it must have been for the two women, quite the most remarkable on record. By June of that year this bridal party was well within the country covered by our state and with them, as an escort, was a party of fur traders. It was at this time that a four wheeled wagon was going over the Oregon Trail, the first that made the entire journey from Independence to Oregon. These wheeled vehicles had to cross the interminable leagues of sunparched plains, through tribe after tribe of savage redmen, who crowded about in awe to see the wonderfully fair creatures, the first

---

\*The author of this article, Grace Raymond Hebard, Ph. D., is professor of economics and sociology in the University of Wyoming. The article appeared first in the Laramie Republican, July 3, 1916, after which Doctor Hebard revised it for this Quarterly.—Editor.

white women they had ever seen; forded the Platte, the Sweetwater, the Green, and many lesser streams; scrambled through mountain passes; and finally settled down to their life work amid rudest surroundings.

On July 4, 1836, the small caravan reached South Pass. Here the missionaries, with two Nez Perce Indians who had been taken east by Dr. Whitman the previous year, moved over to the Pacific side of the sloping pass, "with Bible in one hand and the American flag in the other fell upon their knees, took possession of the land as the home of American mothers and the church of Christ."

Mrs. Spalding writes in her journal of that date, "It is a reality or a dream that after four months of painful journeying I am alive, and actually standing on the summit of the Rocky Mountains where the foot of a white woman has never before trod." This event of women on the trail to the west was even more significant than that of wagons on the road of the fur trappers. Women and wagons were immediate forerunners of home and representative of more than a temporary journey in this western territory. Many of the mountaineers and trappers not having seen a white woman since childhood, wept when the women took them by the hand. Just beyond the pass at the Green River rendezvous the party was met by four hundred white trappers and traders and fifteen tribes of Indians, all of whom tried to outdo the others in entertaining the white women who, not thoroughly understanding the honor (?), which was something in the nature of a more modern Wild West Show, all but fainted from fright and consternation.

The Wyoming Trail Commission, organized in 1913, has placed a monument on the spot, or as near as may be approximated, where white women for the first time traveled on the Oregon Trail through the historical rift in the Rocky Mountains known afterwards to the thousands and thousands seeking greater opportunities in the extreme northwestern part of the continent, as South Pass. Last week Colonel H. G. Nickerson, president of the Oregon Trail Commission, placed a monument on this spot in commemoration of the event of the first white women to be within the boundaries of our state. On a native stone Colonel Nickerson carved with chisel and mallet this inscription:

NARCISSA PRENTISS WHITMAN  
ELIZA HART SPALDING  
FIRST WHITE WOMEN TO CROSS THIS PASS  
JULY 4, 1836

Significant indeed that at South Pass City, about twelve miles

north and east of the memorable spot, is where Colonel William Bright once lived. He it was who in the year 1869, when he was a member of our first territorial legislature, introduced a bill granting to women the right to equal suffrage, which bill became a law December 10, 1869.

Women and wagons were not only suggestive of our nation's development, but were a permanent factor in the earliest development of the civilization of our nation. Women were synonymous with home and family, while the part the wagons played in a nation's drama was to convey those things that were typical of home, the simple farming implements, seed, a few books, the rocking chair, and, perchance, grandfather's clock.

GRACE RAYMOND HEBARD.



## THE PIONEER DEAD OF 1916

[Miss Prosch has continued the work begun by her father by again furnishing this annual feature of the Quarterly. Owing to sad afflictions in her own family, she fears that she may have omitted some records, but she has done the best she could. The Quarterly is grateful for her help.—Editor.]

Hughes, Mrs. Flora Eloris Payne, died January 9, 1916. She was the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. James H. Payne, pioneers of 1853. Mrs. Hughes was born near Halsey, Oregon, in 1858. The family moved to Seattle in 1869, and Miss Payne attended the University of Washington. She married William H. Hughes in 1878. She is survived by her husband and a daughter.

Burnett, Charles H., one of the earliest coal operators on Puget Sound, died January 9, after a short illness, aged 68 years. Mr. Burnett came with his parents to Port Gamble, from Providence, Rhode Island, in 1857. For many years Mr. Burnett engaged in a general merchandise business in Seattle, his partner being C. P. Stone. In 1884 he became interested in coal mining and was at different times superintendent of mines at Newcastle and at Renton and later he had an interest in a mine at Burnett, Washington.

Wolf, Mrs. Regina, wife of Simon Wolf, was 77 at the time of her death, January 9. She was born in Bavaria, but came when very young to America. She crossed the plains in 1860 and lived in Portland for many years. She and her husband were the second Jewish couple married there. She has lived in Seattle for twenty years.

Clarke, Wellington, speaker of the Washington Territorial House of Representatives in 1886, died in Los Angeles in January. He was born in California in 1856. In 1880 he moved to Walla Walla and formed a partnership with Judge T. J. Anders and Judge Thomas H. Brents. Of late years he has resided in California.

Glore, Michael, died in Caldwell, Idaho, January 6. He was born in Illinois in 1837. At the age of 16 he crossed the plains with an ox team to California. He moved to Seattle in 1874.

Fleming, C. P., an Indian War veteran, died January 21 at Garrard Creek, in Lewis County. He was a pioneer of 1852.

Dunlap, S. S., a pioneer of 1858, died the last of January, near Hoquiam. He had been a hermit for many years and died alone in his cabin on the East Hoquiam River. He was over 80 years of age.

Van Brunt, William D., of Bellingham, passed away on his 88th birthday, January 27, 1916. He was born in Pennsylvania and lived for a short time in Utah and also in California before coming to Washington. He served two enlistments in this territory, during the Indian War of 1855-56, the first as a member of Company D. Washington Territorial Mounted Volunteers, the second time in Captain Oliver Shead's guards in the First Regiment of the Second Washington Territorial Volunteers. He moved from Steilacoom to Whatcom County in 1880, where he had a ranch on which he lived until a short time before his death.

Brewer, Mrs. Margaret, a pioneer of the Willamette Valley of 1852, and of Mound Prairie, Washington, of 1859, died at her son's home in Hoquiam, February 2, aged 81 years. She was born in Georgia. Soon after her marriage she came to Oregon. She was of the party which was lost in the Cascade Mountains for three months, during which time they suffered extreme privation, men, women and children dying of starvation and disease. Her husband was at one time agent at the Oakville Indian Reservation.

Templeton, William, was a pioneer of 1847. He was born in Missouri in 1845, and died in Seattle, February 14, 1916. His parents took up a homestead near Brownsville, Oregon, where he continued to live until a short time before his death, when he moved to Washington. His wife was the eldest daughter of Ezra Meeker, and he is survived by six sons and a daughter. Mr. Templeton was actively interested in the affairs of the Presbyterian Church, of which for over fifty years he was an elder.

Denny, Orion O., first white boy born in Seattle, passed away February 26. He was the second son of Arthur A. and Mary A. Denny, who headed the party that established homes at Alki Point in November, 1851, and later were instrumental in the founding of Seattle. Mr. Denny was born July 17, 1853, in a log cabin on the present site of the Stevens Hotel in Seattle. He was one of the earliest students of the University. He took up marine engineering as a young man, and he was chief engineer at one time on the steamer Libby, and at another time on the well-known Eliza Anderson. He retired from business ten years ago, and since then had traveled extensively.

Noyes, Mrs. Melissa L., had been a resident of Washington since 1859. She died March 16, aged 80 years. Mrs. Noyes was born in Maine, May 30, 1835. Her husband came to Port Gamble in 1857 and she and her five-year-old daughter crossed the Isthmus two years alter to join him. The family lived at Port Gamble for twenty years, and at Utsalady ten years and later they made their home at Mount Vernon.

Frost, Mrs. Jane, was born in Lewis County in 1858, the daughter of C. C. Padgett, and she died at Chehalis, March 21, 1916. She lived for many years at Winlock and also on the Cowlitz River.

Creswell, Donald C., was born in Illinois in 1830. He came west in 1852, settling near Salem, Oregon. He moved in a short time to Benton County, Washington, where he lived until 1900, when he moved to Walla Walla. He died there at the home of his daughter, March 21.

Grennon, Mrs. Genevieve, aged 81 years, was a native of Washington. She was the daughter of M. Plomandon, and was born at a trading post near Spokane, her father being in the employ of the Hudson's Bay Company. Mrs. Grennon lived at the Hudson's Bay posts at Fort Nisqually and in Victoria. She died in Tacoma at the home of her daughter, March 22.

Callbreath, Captain John C., died at the Kenny Home, Seattle, April 9, aged 90 years. He came around the Horn in a sailing vessel to California in 1849. He was one of the earliest legislators of California, and represented his state in Congress for several terms. He went up into the Cassiar country and located mines and built a trading post on the Stikine River. Twenty years ago, while in Alaska, he lost his eyesight and since then has lived in retirement. He is survived by two sons.

McDonald, John Fulton, a pioneer of California and a resident of Seattle since 1897, died April 12 at his home. He was born in Connecticut in 1836. In 1858 he went to California, where he lived for forty years before coming to Seattle.

Wolf, Simon, a pioneer of Oregon, died at his home in Seattle, April 14, closely following his wife, who passed away in January of the same year. He was born in Poland and came to Oregon in 1860, where he was a merchant for many years. He is survived by two daughters.

Bunch, Mrs. Sarah Isabell, was a pioneer of 1852, living near

Brownsville, Oregon, for forty years. She died April 16, aged 72 years. Mrs. Bunch had lived in Hoquiam for a short time, later moving with her family to Elma, Washington.

Murray, Mrs. Henry, passed away in her chair at her home in Tacoma, April 22, while weaving a quilt. She was 84 years old. Her parents were pioneers of the Red River of the North. They were John Ross and Isabell Melville Ross. When she was six years old, with her parents, she came to Fort Vancouver with Dr. John McLoughlin, where her father was employed by the Hudson's Bay Company. Later the family moved to Victoria. She was married in 1851 to Mr. Murray at a place near the present site of Dupont, the ceremony being performed by Colonel Ebey. They settled on Muck Creek near Tacoma, where they resided for many years.

Jenner, Charles K., was a resident of the Pacific Coast since 1850. He was born in Wisconsin in 1846 and came with his parents to California four years later. He obtained his education there and was admitted to the bar in 1871. In 1876 he moved to Seattle where he practiced law for many years and was prominent in the affairs of the city.

Hill, Robert Crosby, of Port Townsend, was one of the best-known pioneers of the state. He was born in Pennsylvania in 1829 and came by the Isthmus of Panama to California in 1850 and to Washington in 1853, settling near his two brothers on Whidby Island. He served during the Indian War on the staff of Major Van Bokelen. About 1870 he moved to Port Townsend and with Col. Henry Landes and his brother, Nathaniel Hill, formed the First National Bank. Thereafter he was actively interested in all that pertained to the growth and welfare of Port Townsend. He was prominent among Masons, by whom his funeral was conducted. He died May 1, 1916.

Byles, Mrs. Mary, was a pioneer of 1852. She was the widow of David Byles. Her death occurred June 11. Mrs. Byles was 83 years old, and she had been a resident of Elma for many years.

Bornstein, Mrs. Louisa, died July 11 at her home in Seattle. She was born in San Francisco in 1855 and came with her husband to Seattle in 1881. Her husband, Julius Bornstein, was a prominent merchant of this city. Mrs. Bornstein was closely associated with all benevolent work from the time of her arrival in Seattle.

Gillespie, John W., died July 13 in Seattle, aged 69 years. He was a native of Wisconsin. With his parents he came to this coast



by the way of the Isthmus in 1855. He lived for a time in Portland before coming to Whidby Island in 1857.

Ross, Mrs. Mary Jane McMillan, has been a resident of Seattle since 1858. Her father was a well-known clergyman of Oregon, where he moved in 1853. She came to Seattle shortly after her marriage to John Ross, and has been a resident of Seattle ever since. Her death occurred July 27.

Jacobs, Hiram J., was a son of the pioneer jurist, Orange Jacobs. He was born in Oregon in 1860 and graduated from the law department of the University of Michigan. He died July 28. Mr. Jacobs is survived by his mother, three brothers and three sisters.

Alexander, John S., died at his home in Olympia, August 12. He was born in Wisconsin in 1836. At the age of 15 he crossed the plains to Portland, Oregon, and from there came by the schooner *Exact* to Olympia, at the time that the Denny family was brought to Alki Point. He served in the Indian War, being stationed at Fort Ebey on the Snohomish River. Later Mr. Alexander took up a homestead at Coupeville, on Whidby Island. He was married in Port Townsend in 1860 to Miss Anna Lanning, who passed away at her home in Olympia. At one time Mr. Alexander was deputy collector of customs in Seattle. During the Klondike gold excitement he had charge of the building of a fleet of steamers for the Yukon River. After an absence of sixty years from Olympia he returned there to end his days.

Denny, Mrs. Louisa Boren, the first bride in Seattle, died at her home in Seattle, August 31, aged 89 years. She was the daughter of Richard Freeman Boren and Sarah Latimer Boren. Her mother later married John Denny, the father of Arthur A. Denny and her husband David T. Denny. Mrs. Denny was the last of the original band of adults who came to Alki Point in November, 1851. She married Mr. Denny, January 23, 1852. They took up a donation claim on the shores of Lake Union.

Rabbeson, Mrs. Lucy A., aged 81, widow of Captain A. B. Rabbeson, Indian War veteran, and daughter of Nelson Barnes, pioneer of 1845, died September 4, in Tacoma. Mrs. Rabbeson was born in New York in 1835. In 1845 the family crossed the plains to Oregon. Her father had one of the first grist mills in Washington.

Henry, Mrs. Eliza B., for 63 years a resident of the Northwest, and for 54 in Washington, died in Seattle, September 9, and was buried in Olympia. She was the widow of the late Judge Francis

Henry, prominent in the early history of the territory. Mrs. Henry crossed the plains in 1853.

Crawford, Samuel LeRoy, was a native of Oregon, having been born near Oregon City, June 22, 1855. His parents were pioneers of 1847. Mr. Crawford lived in Oregon in early boyhood but moved to Olympia in 1869. He came to Seattle in 1876 to take charge of the mechanical department of the Daily Intelligencer. In 1880 he and Thomas W. Prosch purchased the paper and he remained with it after its consolidation with the Post. In 1888 he formed a partnership with C. T. Conover to engage in the real estate business and he was connected with the same firm until his death, October 11. He was an ardent baseball enthusiast and introduced the game to Seattle. Mr. Crawford was known far and wide for his many benevolences, giving not only of his money but of his time and influence.

Cochran, Jesse F., veteran of the Mexican and Civil Wars, died October 17, aged 93 years. He was born in Indiana in 1823 and joined an Indiana regiment to fight under General Scott in the Mexican campaign. In 1857 he came to California, attracted thither by the gold discoveries. Later he went to Alaska and then to Puget Sound, but at the outbreak of the Civil War, he went back to Indiana and enlisted, serving throughout the war. In 1869, Mr. Cochran came to Seattle, following his trade of sign painting. He joined the rush to Alaska in 1897, where he suffered many hardships. Later he went to Goldfield, Nevada, during their mining excitement. He is survived by nine sons and daughters.

Brents, Judge Thomas H., died at his home in Walla Walla, October 23, at the age of 76 years. He was born in Illinois in 1840 and crossed the plains to Oregon in 1853 settling in Clackamas County, where he remained until 1855. In 1860 he went to Klickitat County, in Washington, where he herded sheep day by day and studied law at night. Judge Brents moved to Walla Walla in 1870 and took up the practice of law. He was elected delegate to Congress in 1878 and was re-elected in 1880 and again in 1882. He was elected to the Superior judgeship of Walla Walla County in 1896, and held that position until 1912.

Porter, Nathaniel E., a Whidby Island pioneer, died at his home near Austin, October 27. He was born in Nova Scotia in 1837, and he early showed his love for the sea by varying trips made to remote parts of the world. In 1857 he decided to give up his roving life and he went to California and came to Puget Sound in 1859, taking up

a donation claim on the west side of Whidby Island. Here he engaged in farming for himself and family, providing them with a comfortable home.

Weir, Allen, died at Port Townsend, October 31, after a lingering illness, resulting from an automobile accident, in which State Senator D. S. Troy was killed. Mr. Weir was born in California in 1854. He came to the Sound as a very young man, living in Olympia for some time. In 1874 he purchased the Puget Sound Argus and published it in Port Townsend for many years. He was closely associated with the political life of the territory and state. Mr. Weir has resided in Olympia during the last years of his life.

Munroe, Mrs. Elizabeth, aged 73 years, a resident of Washington since 1853, died in Tacoma, October 31. She came to Thurston County with her stepfather, Franklin Kennedy, when she was fourteen years old. She was a cousin of Michael T. Simmons, one of the earliest of the Puget Sound pioneers.

Steward, Mrs. Angeline, died at her home in Vancouver, November 8, aged 77 years. She was a native of Missouri and crossed the plains in 1852. She was married to George Steward in Oregon. They moved to Vancouver in 1862, since which time it has been her home.

Chambers, Thompson McLain, was a resident of Pierce County for 71 years. He died at the home of his son in Tacoma, November 17, aged 82 years. He belonged to the family that gave its name to Chambers Prairie and Chambers Creek. He served in the Indian War of 1855-56 as second lieutenant.

Isaacs, Mrs. H. P., died at her home in Walla Walla, November 18. With her parents, Colonel and Mrs. Fulton, she came to Oregon from Illinois in 1855 and to Walla Walla in 1864. She was one of the first advocates of equal suffrage in Washington.

Israel, George C., one of the best-known criminal lawyers of Washington, died November 26, 1916. Mr. Israel was born in California in 1858. He practiced law in Baker City, Oregon, in California and in Olympia before coming to Seattle. He was connected with many of the greatest criminal trials in the state.

Drumheller, Mrs. Martha A., a pioneer of 1859, died at her home in Walla Walla, December 16, aged 72 years. She was a member of the Maxson family, which came to Walla Walla in 1859. She married Jesse Drumheller, a pioneer of 1862. He was an Indian fighter and one of the largest land holders of his county.

Duncan, William, known to many as "Big Bill," died in Seattle, December 17. He had the unique distinction of being the most prominent cab driver in Seattle, conveying many of the best-known visitors about the city. He was born in San Francisco in 1856.

Murphy, John Miller, former editor and owner of the *Washington Standard of Olympia*, died at his home there December 20. He was the dean of Washington newspaper men. Mr. Miller established the *Standard* in 1860 and edited it continuously until 1911. At the time of the fiftieth anniversary of its founding in 1910, a golden jubilee was held and scores of newspaper men attended from Oregon and Washington. He was born in Indiana in 1839. In 1850 he came with the Barnes family to Olympia. He had the first news route in Portland for the *Oregonian*. During his residence in Olympia he was territorial printer. Mr. Miller was ever an ardent upholder of the Democratic party in Washington.

Barr, Mrs. Margaret Jane, died in Roslyn, December 30. She was born in Ohio in 1827, her parents later moving to Iowa, where she married Samuel Barr in 1849. He came west to Oregon in 1852, and Mrs. Barr followed him in 1859. They resided in Portland until 1870, when they moved to Grays Harbor, where the family took up a homestead.

EDITH G. PROSCH.



## DOCUMENTS

---

### Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey

Edited by VICTOR J. FARRAR

(Continued from Quarterly for October, 1916, page 321)

---

#### Saturday 21

Weather quite warm and clear Capt. Bell started for Olympia tonight. This day one year ago we left Ft. Hall<sup>47</sup> and camped on a beautiful creek a half day's journey this side Weather extremely warm, and grass getting scarce.

#### Sunday 22

Day warm and pleasant Mr. & Mrs. Alexander visited us today. Samuel Crocket & Mr. Howe were here also in the evening.

#### Monday 23rd

Morning pleasant & clear Mr Ebey & John Crocket commenced breaking up ground for wheat; ground very dry and hard to break.

#### Tuesday 24th

Day warm and pleasant a good western breeze all day which makes it more comfortable than it would be otherwise The rolling of the surf against the shore is very loud this evening which sounds romantic and beautiful when there is nothing else to draw the attention.

#### Wednesday 25

Mornnig cooler than it has been for several days, but a very pleasant day a moderate breeze. Col. Crocket here today. Mr. Ebey gone over to the cove, received a good many pictorial magazines from Capt. Thomas.<sup>48</sup>

#### Thursday 26

Day pleasant and clear Mr Ebey & Mr Crocket are busy plowing today all very quiet no one passing today but now and then a lonely indian.

#### Friday 27

Morning a little cloudy Mr Pettygrove & Capt Huchinson<sup>49</sup> came over from Port Townsend today after butter and went on to Mr

---

<sup>47</sup> For an historical account of this fort see, Miles Cannon, "Fort Hall on the Saptin River," in the Washington Historical Quarterly, July, 1916.

<sup>48</sup> This is probably John T. Thomas, ex-government naval draughtsman, but at this time extensive shipbuilder on the Columbia river.

<sup>49</sup> Loren B. Hastings of Port Townsend. See, ante, note 31.

Crocket's but succeeded in getting none and looked quite disconsolate about it— Very tired today after washing very hard.

Saturday 28

Day pleasant Maj. Show here in the evening

Sunday 29

This is a beautiful day with a mild and pleasant west breeze. The waters are calm All gone this morning except myself and Ellison every thing very still Though not sad. The beautiful green trees and clear sunbeams makes every thing delightful although we are far from our native land and in a country where the gospel is not preached we have not our vows and live in hopes of realizing religious ceremonies in this Western Country.' went to see Mrs Smith this evening who is sick and has a fine daughter the second birth that has happened on the Island among the white settlers.<sup>50</sup>

Monday 30th

We had a good rain last night—with some heavy wind— Continued plowing—

Tuesday 31

Day very pleasant— Two Catholic Prest came here this Evening, they are seeking a location for a mission— Plowing

Wednesday Sept 1st

Day pleasant light wind from the west. Allen<sup>51</sup> and Hugh Crockett got back last night to the Cove with the Scows Plowing—

Thirsday 2

The Priests went this morneing over to the Cove to see the Natives— Mr. Alexander started up to Olympia today with his scows sent letters by him— Priest returned after dark haveing baptized several children A Ship or Bark at Anchor in Port Townsend this Evening

Fryday 3

Verry heavy fog this morneing could not burn off the grass

---

<sup>50</sup> There has been considerable controversy among the settlers now resident on Whidby Island as to priority of birth of the first three children. All disputants are agreed that Polowna, daughter of William Wallace, was the first. The date of her birth I have not been able to ascertain. For the others the evidence chronicled in the Ebey diary ought to be conclusive. On August 29 the diary records the birth of a daughter to Mrs. Jacob Smith, "the second birth that has happened on the Island among the white settlers"; and on November 13 states that a son was born to Mrs. Alexander. This son is Abram Lansdale Alexander, still living at Coupeville. Mr. Alexander, therefore, has the honor of being the third child and first boy born on the island.

<sup>51</sup> George Allen.

early in the morneing & then did not plow any today the Priests left us this morneing Afternoon clear breeze from west

Saturday 4

Morneing cloudy & warm—some prospect of rain paid a visit to Mrs. Bonsel today She is very lonely. Dr. Tolmie landed here tonight with his family and several young ladies three of wich took supper with us.

Sunday 5

Morning cloudy and cool Went to Mrs. Alaxander's today A gradual rain commenced about noon and continued nearly all day. Dr. Tolmie started this morning by daylight this morning.

Monday 6th

Morning cloudy but the day turned out to be very clear and pleasant. Mr. Ebey is hauling out house logs today

Tuesday 7

Part of the day cloudy and cool Hugh Crocket and Mr. Ebey plowing today gathered some ripe tomatoes today for seed and a few other garden-seeds. Eason learned two good lessons today

Wednesday 8

Day pleasant Mr. Ebey went to John Crocket's to try to plow but could not get the grass to burn and could not plow. John C. Mr. Smith and several others started up to Olympia today Susan Crocket paid us a visit this evening. and brought me over some painting she done for me, A basket and a dish of fruit.

Thursday 9

Day cloudy and showery all day a considerable rain fell last night. Mr. Ebey cuting house logs today.

Friday 10

Morning clear and the day very warm Mr. Ebey & Capt. Bell hauling logs today and I have done a large washing today.

Saturday 11

Morning foggy and after the prairie was clear of fog and mist and the sun shone bright upon it; there continued a singular looking cloud upon the water which assumed a reddish colour from the reflection of the sun upon it The opposite shore was invisible for a while but above the shore and the tops of the mountains very clear the cloud appeared to lie on the water as far as we can see. it

gradually flew off from the water in a streak in front of our door and towards noon was all gone. I am very tired Ironing today and Mr. Ebey very much fatigued hauling logs. Eason and Ellison have learned a lesson apiece today.

Sunday 12

The Sun arose this morning from a bright and clear horizon and continued her journey through a beautiful clear pale blue sky. Every thing today looks pleasant and happy; as though the smile of Heaven was upon it. The song of the black birds this morning sounded sweeter than usual. I think our friends by this time are crossing the Blue Mountains.

Monday 13

Day cloudy with a little rain a vessel passed up today.

Tuesday 14

Some what cloudy in the morning but clear towards noon Henry Wilson and another gentleman came here this evening from Olympia Mr Wilson brought several numbers of the Olympia paper which is just commenced The first paper published on Pugets Sound it is called the Columbian.<sup>52</sup>

Wednesday 15

Morning very foggy Wilson and his friend left today for Port Townsend Mr Ebey went out to ask hands to raise our smokehouse tomorrow.

Thursday 16

Morning very clear and beautiful; day very warm. The smokehouse was raised today. Six hands was all we could get.

Friday 17

Day clear and warm Samuel Crocket took dinner here today I washed today. a vessel went up this morning.

Saturday 18

Day clear and warm. Mr Ebey and Capt. Bell undertook to finish the smokehouse today. They sent John Bartlet to his house to get some tools on Mr. Bonsel's horse, the saddle turned and John fell off, & the horse turned instantly and stepped upon his arm and broke it between the wrist and ellbow. We were all badly frightened

Sunday 19th

This is another Beautiful clear Sabbath John's arm is better

---

<sup>52</sup>The first copy of the Columbian was issued on September 11, 1852, by the proprietors, J. W. Wiley and T. F. McElroy.



this morning he rested very well last night Mrs Bonsel has been here a short time today A barque went up today. Evening beautiful and clear.

#### Monday 20

Day clear and pleasant Mr. Ebey and the Cap. finishing the Smokehouse today. John's arm does not pain him much and appears to be on the mend We heard the cannon firing at Port Townsend today on the arrival of a vessel from above.

#### Tuesday 21

Mr. Ebey went to John Crocket's to plow today We had some rain last night John does not complain much of his arm After dinner he thought he must go home to attend to things there I felt sorry to see him go fearing his arm would get worse by taking cold in it.

#### Wednesday 22

This morning was very cold and frosty This was the first frost we have had this Fall. The day is very clear and pleasant Two vessels anchored at Port Townsend this morning a barque and schooner They left this evening and went down the Sound. Mr. Dray here tonight.

#### Thursday 23rd

Very cool morning with a large white frost Some thin ice found out in a tub this morning at daylight. Mr. Dray left here this morning for the Willamette. Samuel Crocket also starts today for Olympia. This evening Mr. Ebey came home from J. Crocket's sick.

#### Friday 24th

This morning is colder than ever; some ice found in the teakettle at daylight. Thermometer down to freezing. Mr. Ebey did not plow today but is better and preparing a place for potatoes in the smoke-house. I washed today.

#### Saturday 25

Not so cold this morning as formerly Though there is some frost. Mr Ebey is digging potatoes today.

#### Sunday 26

Morning quite cool and some frost but a pleasant clear day No white person passing today King George<sup>53</sup> and Lalac's<sup>54</sup> family were

---

<sup>53</sup> "The head chief of all the Clallams was Lach-ka-nam, or Lord Nelson, who is still living, but has abdicated in favor of his son, S'Hai-ak, or King George—a very different personage, by the way, from the chief of the same name east of the mountains. Most of the principal men of the tribe have received names either from the English or the 'Bostons'; and

here this morning from Port Townsend very anxious to know whether they are to receive any pay or not for their potatoes the cattle destroyed Mr Ebey had to reason the case with them and tell them Mr. Sterling<sup>55</sup> would be down and settle with them for the damages they have received from the White man's stock. Old King George was very easy satisfied but the woman talked a great deal. Our

Monday 27

Clear and pleasant today Mr. Ebey is plowing at Mr. Crockett's today and we are alone all day.

Tuesday 28

Morning foggy but the day clear and beautiful Capt Thomas' barque is in front of us all day We sent him over some milk and butter by Capt. Bell and he sent us back some pork, matches and Tobacco as a present This barque went down this evening late.

Wednesday 29

Morning cool with a little frost Mr. Ebey plowed some today at Mr Crockets but will quit after today as John arrived from Olympia last evening.

Friday 30th

Day cloudy and some rain We had a heavy shower last night Mr Ebey is cutting house logs today. Two vessels in the bay today one going downand another trying to come up all day The wind is against her.

Friday Oct 1

Cloudy all day until towards evening Mr. Crocket here today after the cat the mice are very troublesome at his house The vessel which was coming up last evening anchored at Port Townsend.

Saturday 2nd

We had our two new houses raised today We had 12 men and it was a hard days work for them Mrs Alexander Mrs Simth and

the genealogical tree of the royal family presents as miscellaneous an assemblage of characters as a masked ball in carnival. Thus, two of King George's brothers are the Duke of York and General Gaines. His cousin is Tom. Benton; and his sons, by Queen Victoria, are General Jackson and Thomas Jefferson. The queen is daughter to the Duke of Clarence and sister to Generals Scott and Taylor; as also to Mary Ella Coffin, the wife of John C. Calhoun. The Duke of York's wife is Jenny Lind; a brother of the Duke of Clarence is John Adams; and Calhoun's sons are James K. Polk, General Lane, and Patrick Henry. King George's sister is the daughter of the late Flattery Jack. All of them have papers certifying to these and various other items of information, which they exhibit with great satisfaction."—George Gibbs, in *Pacific Railway Reports* (Washington, D. C., 1855), I, 430.

<sup>54</sup> Lach-ka-nam or Lord Nelson. See note 53.

<sup>55</sup> The settlers expected that the government would pay these Indian claims, since by the passage of the Oregon Land Law the Indians' lands were open to settlement.

Ann Crockett were here all day and helped me cook dinner They were all quite cheerful and seemed to enjoy themselves.

#### Sunday 3rd

This is a beautiful Sabbath The sun shines warm and pleasant It is nine years today since we were married It does not seem more than half so long. I went to see Mrs. Bonsel a while today she is so lonesome Mr. B. being gone yet. Mr. Miller<sup>56</sup> and Mr. Wilson came to our house last evening at dark.

#### Monday 4th

Morning clear and day pleasant Mr. Bonsel came home last night after dark from Victoria. Mr. Miller left here this morning for Nesqually in co with Mr. Alexander and Samuel Crockett Cordelia Smith here today and her sister and Rebecca Bonsel. A. Moses here this evening

#### Tuesday 5th

Day foggy until noon Evening clear. The Olympic mountains are covered with snow at the present all summer they have had but very little snow upon them. Mr. Crockett here a little while today. Mr. Ebey digging potatoes Henry Wilson and Mr. Moses went to P. Townsend last evening from here.

#### Wednesday 6th

Day clear and pleasant Capts Bell & Paddle<sup>57</sup> went to Port Townsend today to charter a vessel to take to California. We are all very quiet today no one stirring.

#### Thursday 7th

Morning clear and a beautiful day. Not very well today Mr Ebey still digging potatoes We hear nothing of Thomas & the Dr. They have been gone over two months Some new Immigrants have arrived in Olympia and Port Townsend. Capts Paddle & B. returned this evening and have chartered the Mary Taylor to go to San-francisco.

#### Friday 8

Morning foggy great appearance of rain Washed today We have a family of indians hired digging potatoes. They are bringing in cranberrys frequently now.

---

<sup>56</sup> General W. W. Miller. He was surveyor of the Port of Nisqually.

<sup>57</sup> Captain William R. Pattle. The name is sometimes spelled Paddle or Pattles. He discovered coal on land fronting Bellingham Bay in 1852 and filed a claim thereon on April 18, 1853.

Saturday 9th

Raining this morning frequent showers all day. Turned very cold towards evening Mr. Bonsel is going to move on Monday next to another Island below here to attend to the fishing business.

Sunday 10th

Today is clear and pleasant None of the neighbors to be seen today We are spending this Sabbath in reading most of the time. All around seems beautifully adorned in quiet serenity No bustling crowd as in a City or town to mar our peaceful happiness Although we have not Towering Churches yet we can spend our time in training the young minds of our children in the principles of Christianity and creating within them a thirst for moral knowledge in the place of running from place to place in bad company. This is indeed a great blessing The liberty of training our children in the way they should go that they may be a blessing to us in our old age.

Monday 11

Cloudy today and some rain towards evening finished digging potatoes and paid off the indians this evening.

Tuesday 12

Still cloudy and some rain during the day Mr. Ebey moved Mr. Bonsel down to the beach to await the arrival of the Mary Taylor in which he intends moving away to another Island. Mrs. Bonsel took dinner with us today.

Wednesday 13th

Day clear and pleasant we had some rain last night Capt. Fay and Hugh Crocket were here today and went on over to Mr. Crocket's Mr. Ebey is out cutting board timber

Thursday 14th

Morning clear and day pleasant a large vessel anchored at Port Townsend Capt. Fay was here all night and has gone home today.

Friday 15th

Today is cloudy but no rain Capt. Cousins of the Powhattan was here today and took dinner He is a very sociable old gentleman he is owner of four vessels and has been running them in the Columbia and has concluded to run them between Cal. and the Sound He bought Capt. Bell's 2 shoats for 30 dollars



## Saturday 16

Day cloudy, windy, and cold Mr. Ebey out sawing timber today which is very dangerous in this wind in the thick timber Mr. Bonsel and family still camped under the hill.

## Sunday 17

Still continues to be windy but clear most of the time. the water is very rough. Capt. Porter arrived here this evening. The wind is exceedingly high more so than it has been since Spring.

## Monday 18

Morning cloudy and boisterous great appearance of rain. Mr. Ebey and Capt. Porter have gone around to see our neighbors and have not returned. it is very near night Ellison has become tired of his book and has laid down on his chair and gone to sleep Eason has a very sore foot and is lying upon a chest resting his foot and trying to study his lesson Mr. Alaxander and S. Crocket have just returned from Olympia and brings the news that Dr. Lansdale is not far behind them on his return from the Plains who left Thomas on the Umatilla. Immigrants have suffered a great deal this season by the loss of cattle. It is now raining gradually.

## Tuesday 19

Day cloudy until towards evening Capt Fay, Mr. Alaaxander and Mr. Smith came here today Capt. Porter went to Port Townsend this evening and returned in the night

## Wednesday 20

Day rather cloudy and cool. Capt. Brown of the Ship Persia came over from his vessel after Capt. Porter (owner of the same) in the night last night. He had been only seven days sailing from Sanfrancisco. He sais there were 12 vessels started for the Sound before he did. Two late Immigrants are here today one by the name of Fox and the other by the name of Thatcher They came down with Dr. Lansdale to look for claims raining all evening.

## Thursday 21

Still cloudy a good deal of rain through the night Dr. Lansdale came here last night after dark He sais he and Thomas heard of Mother, John and James being in the Grand Round Valley recruiting their stock Thomas went on to meet them. They have plenty of provisions— a great many immigrants have suffered a great deal for want of provisions

## Friday 22nd

Today calm and part of the day clear I washed a very large day's washing today I have been very much fatigued this week with company; There have been so many passing

## Saturday 23

Today is very cold and rainy Mr. Ebey and Mr. Marlet<sup>58</sup> has gone over to Coveland to assist in raising a storehouse for Capt. Coffman Three vessels in sight coming up this evening. Mr. Ebey Mr. M. and Dr. Lansdale are coming I have been ironing all day today Mr Bonsel went over to Port Townsend this evening.

## Sunday 24th

This is a very windy and cold day. Walter and Charles Crocket were here in the forenoon, and Hugh in the afternoon. Mrs Bonsel is camped on the beach in a very disagreeable situation She is too fearful of putting anyone to trouble to come and stay at the house.

## Monday 25th

Day cloudy and cool Mr. Ebey has gone to haul his board timber over the beach Mr. Crocket brought me over some pickled cucumbers today which was a great treat

## Tuesday 26

Cloudy and some rain Mr. Ebey and Mr. Bonsel are hurrying to get a little room finished for Mr. B's family to move into until they can get an opportunity of going to San Francisco.

## Wednesday 27

Morning cloudy; some rain through the day Mr. Crocket here today.

## Thursday 28

Day almost clear and pleasant I washed today Rebecca Bonsel helped me Mr Ebey and Mr. Bonsel finished the little room and moved the family and plunder up in the afternoon.

## Friday 29th

Day cloudy but no rain Mrs. B. busy washing Mr. Ebey very busy at work at house. No news from mother yet.

## Saturday 30

Cloudy, a considerable rain fell last night all well. all very busy today.

---

<sup>58</sup>Possibly the person referred to is Thomas Maylord, who filed a claim on November 20, 1852. A brother, Samuel Maylord, came to the Island in the early part of 1853, and filed a claim on April 23, 1853.

## Sunday 31

Morning cloudy with a drizzling shower now and then Mr. Ebey and myself went to Col. Crocket's today and left the children home. They were very much pleased to see us While we were gone Capts. Cousins, Hoffington, and Bell came over from Port Townsend to see all— they were gone when we came home. They drank up all the milk I had and left a dollar to pay for it.

## Monday Nov. 1st

Day pleasant and clear Mrs. Bonsel washing today. I feel better since my ride yesterday. Mr. Crocket here today to buy some articles from Mr. Bonsel.

## Tuesday 2nd

Day clear and pleasant. We had a large frost last night Mr. Ebey is hauling board timber

## Wednesday 3rd

Morning cold and a beautiful clear day Mr. Ebey took Mr. Crocket's wagon home this evening and the children went with him on a visit and staid all night.

## Thursday 4th

Morning clear but cloudy in the evening. I washed today Mr. Crockett brought us some turnips cabbage and venison today The children came home with him.

## Friday 5th

Day cloudy with some rain Mr Ebey very busy at his house. Capts. Fay & Coffin here today

## Saturday 6

Day somewhat cloudy Co very busy all day A Brig by the name of Cabbet<sup>59</sup> is commencing to load in the Cove with Spiles [piles]

## Sunday 7th

Morning cloudy a great deal of rain fell last night Mr. Hill<sup>60</sup>

---

<sup>59</sup>The brig John S. Cabot, Captain George Dryden.

<sup>60</sup>Nathaniel D. Hill was born in Montgomery County, Pennsylvania, on January 25, 1824, the son of Dr. John H. and Eliza (Davis) Hill. The father was for many years engaged in the druggist business in Philadelphia, and in his shop Nathaniel D. learned the pharmacy profession. At the end of his apprenticeship, in partnership with a friend, he set up for himself, under the style of Hill & Wright. In the year 1850, when the news of the discovery of gold in California had reached the Atlantic Coast, the entire Hill family, consisting of the parents, Nathaniel D., Robert C., William and Humphrey, decided to emigrate, and accordingly made their way to San Francisco. In that city Nathaniel D. tried his hand at several vocations, including a clerkship in the custom-house, stock-raising in the Sonoma Valley, and gold mining; but not finding in these lines the satisfaction he expected, he took passage on the brig John S. Cabot for Puget Sound, and filed a claim on Whidbey Island, near the Ebeyes, on November 20, 1852. On Puget Sound Nathaniel D. became a prominent citizen and

off the Cabbit was here all night just from California. Spent this Sabbath at home reading most of the day and teaching our children. No news yet from mother I greatly fear she is not getting along well; yet I still hope for the best as I have always done.

Monday 8

Day very pleasant Just received intelligence of the Brig Irvine arriving in the Cove She brought some goods for Capt. Coffin.

Tuesday 9th

Day cool with some rain Mr. Ebey & Mr Marlet are very busy building a chimney to one of our rooms We received a great number of newspapers today from Olympia and also a letter from Winfield dated Aug. 15. He sais all our friends were well except his mother He complains greatly of our not writing to them oftener this Summer. I am sorry to say that we have been very negligent about writing this Summer I must treat my friends better in future My daily labor and ill health this Season has almost compelled me to omit many duties which ought not to have been omitted All are very busy reading the news tonight My children are in the room with Mrs. Bonsel's and they are all making a great deal of noise.

Wednesday 10

Morning very cool The ground is frozen quite hard and some ice in holes upon the ground. Mr. Bonsel and family started from here this morning for Port Townsend and are going from there to San Francisco I felt sorry to see them start as I think a great deal of her and the children.

Thursday 11

Cool and cloudy a good deal of rain last night. Mr. Howe here tonight. Capt. Coupe<sup>61</sup> here today. Mr. Ebey and Mr. Marlet are very busy working at the new house trying to get it completed.

Friday 12

Very cool and cloudy all day Mr Ebey completed his chimney today and suffered a good deal of cold working in the mortar; though it

---

pioneer. During the Indian War, with R. C. Fay, he was in charge of the encampment for friendly Indians at Oak Harbor. In 1857 he returned to Philadelphia, and in that city was married to Sallie H. Haddock, a native of Lynn, Massachusetts. Four children were born to them. In 1868 Mr. Hill became identified with several important capitalistic enterprises. Robert C. Hill was born at Hatborough, Pennsylvania, on September 14, 1829, and came to Whidbey Island the year following his brother's arrival, where he filed a claim on February 10, 1853.

<sup>61</sup>Captain Thomas Coupe was born in New Brunswick on August 22, 1818, and at the age of twelve years went to sea. He arrived on Puget Sound in 1852 on the bark Success, of which he was part owner, and shortly afterwards, on November 20, 1852, filed a donation claim which included the site of the present town of Coupeville. His death occurred at Coupeville on December 27, 1875.



is not freezing. Mr. Wilson and another gentlemen are here today from Port Townsend on their way to the Cove.

#### Saturday 13

Day cool and cloudy; A great deal of rain fell last night and very stormy all night I was called out in the night about one o'clock to Mrs Alaxander's She was confined and has a fine son.

#### Sunday 14

Day pleasant and not so cool as formerly Mr. Ebey & Mr. M. have gone to Mr. Hill's. Dr. Lansdale was here a few minutes I see a barque anchored just below Port Townsend Mr. English<sup>62</sup> [Engle] here a few minutes.

#### Monday 15

The weather has turned warmer but still cloudy no rain in the daytime but it generally rains of nights The ground is not muddy and the rain does not make it at all disagreeable; men can continue laboring every day here in the winter, while in the states, they are all housed up, and can do nothing but keep large fires, and feed their stock; here we have no feeding to do at all. How great is the contrast!

#### Tuesday 16

Day clear and beautiful I went to see Mrs Alaxander she appears very well Mr. Ebey hard at work at his house.

#### Wednesday 17

Day clear heavy frost last night and a very cold morning a little thin ice in a barrel this morning.

#### Thursday 18

Morning clear and pleasant a vessel passed up the Sound today Col. Crocket here a few minutes and brought us some papers Samuel has returned home. I received a letter from aunt Martha today she and family are wintering at Margsville They say nothing about coming over here to look at the country

#### Friday 19

Cloudy today I washed today Mr. Ebey finished our house today and we moved in it. It is very comfortable to sit by a good fire place once more.

<sup>62</sup>William Ballinger Engle was born in Burlington County, N. J., on September 7, 1831, the son of Eben and Alcenia Engle. His mother's parents were Quakers. In company with the Hills, he came to Whidbey Island and filed a claim on November 20, 1852. Previous to his arrival on the Island he had sought gold in California without success. In 1876 he married Flora A. Pearson, who with her parents came to the Sound in 1866 with Asa Mercer's expedition. Their children are Carl Terry and Ralph Pearson, who reside on Whidbey Island, and Ernestine E., who married W. J. Waldrip of Oyster Bay, Mason County. Mr. Engle died on November 10, 1907.

Saturday 20,

I worked very hard today scrubbing off the floors Mr Ebey went to the Cove today and brought home 100 lbs. of flour which was owing to us over there

Sunday 21

Today very cloudy and some rain all day Mr. Alaxander, John Crocket, and Dr. Lansdale came over to spend the day with Mr Ebey before he leaves for the Willamette Capt Coupe took supper and staid until bedtime Dr. Lansdale staid all night.

Monday 22

raining very hard this morning cloudy and drizzling all day a vessel passed up today

Tuesday 23

Some rain fell early this morning but towards 10, oclock it cleared off and was a beautiful day Mr. Ebey started for Salem today I was very much distressed at seeing him start He has to be gone about 3 months he has worked very hard this Fall to get me fixed comfortable for the Winter before he would have to leave which he has done and has hired Clouston's John to stay until he comes back to make fires and get wood and work at the houses, and he gets Mr. Ingles [Engle] to stay every night until Thomas comes with mother, John and James.

Wednesday 24

Day cool and cloudy with some rain a great deal of rain fell last night John is chinking the cookhouse and shaving boards and nailing on the cracks in the other house and is very industrious There are a good many indians camped on the beach at present and are frequently coming to the house to take a look at us, but are not saucy.

Thursday 25

Raining all day today John is nailing boards on the cracks today.

Friday 26,

Day pleasant and clear I washed today J. is cutting firewood.

Saturday 27

This is a very pleasant day the sun shines clear though the evening is very cold. Mr. Hill returned from Victoria this evening after dark with a thousand pounds of flour 250 for us. He went up home although it was very cold.

Sunday 28

A clear and beautiful day for Winter, a heavy frost this morning. George Allen came over today and was only here a few minutes. He

brought me the distressing news of mother's death. O the distress of heart I now feel. If it is so that my dear mother has died on the plains how can I ever get over it I will reflect upon myself as long as I live that I did not persevere a little more and bring her with me. The word came from John Shaw who, has arrived in the neighborhood I have not seen him yet.

Monday 29th

Another beautiful day has dawned upon us I slept but little last night The thought of my mother being no more on this earth drives sleep and rest from my body Yet I know it is wrong to grieve If her spirit has left this earth I have a hope of meeting her in a far better world than this, which is the only consolation I have. Though I was looking for her every day and anticipating a happy winter in her company. But this is the way with the happiness of this world It soon vanishes never to return. John indian has almost finished daubing the house and has slipped off to the Cove and did not come back until after night I think he has a notion of leaving he is very idle, John Alaxander hauled us one load of wood today.

Tuesday 30

Day clear a vessel passed up the Straits today evening quite warm. The indians are camped here yet.

Wednesday Dec. 1st

Day clear and warm Myself Eason and Ellison cleaned at the yard all day We are alone today and try to keep ourselves company by hard work John left us today for good and was half way to Port Townsend before I knew he was going he has acted very trifling in doing so The men at P. Townsend had sent him word to come over there and he could make a dollar per day at loading vessels, so it induced him to go.

Thursday 2nd

Raining all day today I have the toothache and my jaw is badly swollen

Friday 3rd

Not raining today but all day cloudy Charles who went up with Mr. Ebey returned today bringing a letter from Mr Ebey he had a very hard time going up and had heard nothing of Thomas I hired one of Charly's indians to stay here and cut wood.

Day clear but cold a heavy frost this morning. busy all day and very tired at night.

Sunday 5th

Day cool but not raining Dr. Lansdale came this morning, also Samuel Crocket and Susan came over Susan to stay a few days Capt Coffin was here and wished to board but I refused boarding him. he went to several of the neighbors for the same I do not know how he will come out he has sold out his merchandise to Mr. Alaxander.

Monday 6

I am not quite so lonely today as Susan is here Cloudy with some rain and quite cool.

Tuesday 7th

Weather cool our indian Sam has to go to carrying wood our hauled wood is out again it was so rotten.

Wednesday 8

Day cool and some rain very windy in the evening. no one passing today Susan appears to be getting lonesome and uneasy about home Her father is not very well.

Thursday 9th

Some rain falling today, very windy and cool.

Friday 10

Raining some this morning about 9 o'clock the sun shone out beautiful and Susan wished to go to John's and wished me to go along; we went and the evening turned to be so cold and windy that I could not get home and had to stay all night. I had left Eason at home and Mr. Engle was to be there all night. I was very uneasy and came home early in the morning when it was quite pleasant I found all right and them getting their breakfast I finished it for them.

Saturday 11

Busy all day preparing for Sunday and very tired after my walk from Mr. Crocket's. Evening very windy

Sunday 12

Morning clear and beautiful Evening cloudy and turning very cool. The children and myself are alone all day no person passing We are reading most of the day Two vessels going out of the Straits today very slow

Monday 13th

Very cold today and windy I finished Eason's pants very cloudy this evening no more news from Mr. or Thomas Mr. Engle is hauling us some wood today Mr. Alaxander was over today and



said he could have none this week as his boys and cattle are all at work at the Cove.

Tuesday 14th

Today cool but clear nearly all day. I washed today fearing a storm. Some sleet and snow falling this evening very cloudy and windy a vessel coming up this evening.

Wednesday 15

Very cold and stormy today Considerable snow fell last night to the depth of an inch.

Thursday 16.

A little more snow fell last night. quite cool today. George Allen is here tonight hunting his cattle Mr. Hill is here tonight in the place of Mr. Engle who has gone to cut board timber. I heard today that Mr. Smith has started up to Olympia with our scow and was caught out in that storm on Friday evening and run her ashore on McDonough's Island<sup>63</sup> and broke her all to pieces It is a great loss to us and the other owners.

Friday 17

Still cold sometimes cloudy and sometimes clear and now and then a little snow falling. Mr Allen went home today and I sent our indian Bob with him to bring me some lard from the store He was to return tonight but did not and we could not get the cows. This is the coldest night we have had this winter. We have just heard of Snettem's<sup>64</sup> death which happened last night.

Saturday 18

Very cold this morning I did not think to notice the Thermometer Bob has just returned and Dr Lansdale soon afterwards. Mr. Hill

<sup>63</sup>This is the present Camano Island. It was first named McDonough Island by Lieutenant Wilkes of the United States Exploring Expedition in 1841 in honor of Captain Thomas McDonough of the ship *Saratoga*, who gained fame at the battle of Lake Champlain in 1812. The naming of McDonough Island, Saratoga Passage, etc., was a part of the plan of Lieutenant Wilkes who desired to perpetuate the names of the old naval heroes in the nomenclature of the Sound. Most of the islands in the Sound were named for these heroes. The publication of the Wilkes' charts was delayed; in the meantime, Captain Kellett of the British Navy made extensive surveys of the Sound and published his charts in 1847. He substituted for the Wilkes' nomenclature names of old Spanish explorers. During the early pioneer years many of the islands, watercourses, capes, etc., went by two names, according as one used the Wilkes or Kellett charts. At the present time Kellett's names have been preserved on most of the larger islands, while Wilkes' names are found on the points, capes, bays, etc., which Kellett did not name.

<sup>64</sup>Snettem was probably the greatest and most powerful of the sub-chiefs who ruled on Whidbey Island. He was a friend to the white settlers and this friendship probably explains the peaceful attitude of his Indian subjects. At the time of his death he is said to have had over one hundred slaves. His son, Kwuss-ka-nam, or George Snettem, Sr., and his grandson, Hel-mits, or George Snettem, Jr., were signers of the Point Elliott Treaty made on January 22, 1855. Snettem was a Skagit sub-chief under Goliah, chief of the Skagits, and dwelt in the vicinity of Watsak Point, the south cape of Penn Cove. This point is known locally as Snettem Point, or as many maps have recorded it, Snakeland Point.

has been out all day after the cows and cannot find them—Dr. took dinner and went home he brought us 10 pounds of lard and some nails. about two inches of snow fell last night.

#### Sunday 19th

Still colder ice thicker in buckets Not much wind stirring, but what we have, is from the North and is very cold The Skadgets have sent over to Port Townsend for all the Klalms to come over and mourn the loss of Sneightlem their head chief They all seem to take it very hard. he died with the quinzzy or sorethroat The Klalms have just left here on their way over I think all the tribe are over All the Tiees<sup>65</sup> had to come in and warm but I would not let any others in. One by the name of Queer handed me a bundle of letters he had brought from Olympia for the Island among them was a letter from Mr. Ebey dated Oregon City Dec- 5th He does not write me much news he had heard of Thomas and the ballance of our people coming on. He had also heard something of Aunt Martha I am very glad to hear that Mr. Ebey is well he has had such bad weather to travel in I had been fearing he was sick, and had worked so hard before he left home. I wish he was at home now I miss him a great deal in this cold weather I have a great deal of uneasiness about our cattle and potatoes fearing we will lose some of them in this cold snowy weather.

#### Monday 20th

Still very cold Thermometer 19 degrees above zero this morning at daylight

#### Tuesday 21

Last night was the coldest night we have had Thermometer 17 degrees above zero this morning Potatoes froze in the cookhouse last night The sun shines in the day but has little power. The weather is generally clear at present Capt. Bell and John B. came from Port Townsend this evening almost frozen and spent the night. Tonight at bedtime the thermometer is at 15 degrees.

#### Wednesday 22

Morning clear and cold thermometer 15 degrees above zero before day this morning 19 degrees at present. The sun is shining very beautiful and it looks as though we might have moderate weather. Mr. Hill killed our pet fawn this morning it had become very shy and we thought it best to have it killed. Capt. Bell and John has gone over to the Cove this morning and I sent word to

---

<sup>65</sup>Tyee is a Chinook Jargon word meaning chief or headman.

the people over there to bring home our cattle and plow Which they have been using for five weeks and in all this hard weather when cattle ought to run out all the time so as to get enough of food.

#### Thursday 23

Still very cold everything in the house is freezeing in the daytime Our potatoes in the smokehouse have not frozen yet. Thermometer 16 this morning early. Our indian left us yesterday evening I do not expect he will return any more.

#### Friday 24th

The weather is cold but I think it is a little warmer today than usual. Our cows are missing again and cannot be found.

#### Saturday 25

Very cold today Thermometer at 8 degrees this morning at daylight Samuel Crocket and Mr Hill are hauling us some wood This is Christmass day but it is so cold we cannot enjoy ourselves and it seems but little like Christmass though it makes me think of years gone by, and friends who are in their graves Mr. Ebey is gone and this is another lonely Christmass to me. Our friends who have crossed the plains do not come I have almost given out seeing them this winter. I can hear nothing direct from them if they knew of my uneasiness concerning them they would have writen Dr Lansdale and Mr Alaxander were here today they brought me a jar of pickles and a box of mincemeat as a Christmass present. I made some mince pies for dinner and they were excellent.

#### Sunday 26th

The weather moderated last night in the night and today is quite pleasant and thawing some out although it snowed from daylight until 12 oclock in the day The sun is shining warm this evening and a great appearance of good weather. The thermometer is 28 degrees above zero higher than it has been for two weeks. There is no person passing today We are alone all day We are employing our time in reading generally,

#### Monday 27

The snow is nearly gone George Sneightlem came back from Port Townsend this evening and I had to let him and his indians camp in the smokehouse all night I did not see that they stole anything. Thermometer at 28 today.

#### Tuesday 28

This is a very pleasant day. It is my birthday. I grieved so much about mother last night that I feel very unwell today I wrote a letter

to Mr. Ebey and one to Sister Martha. Eason has gone to Mr. Alexander's to get them to bring the oxen home so we can have some wood hauled I made a duff for our dinner the first I ever made right and it was very good.

Wednesday 29,

A good deal of rain falling today. two vessels came up today and went in to Port Townsend another came last night The water is rough and it is windy Thermometer is at 30.

Thursday 30th

This morning looked pleasant and I commenced washing but before I was done it commenced snowing very hard and in a little time the ground was covered with snow and sleet almost shoe mouth deep John Bartlet came over from Port Townsend on his way to Coveland this morning I quit washing to get his dinner he appeared very hungry. he brought the news that Capt. Gove<sup>ee</sup> had come with his two vessels and brought the word that General Pierce is elected President. No doubt but the Democrats are rejoicing.

Friday 31st

This morning is warm the snow is thawing off the house. there is a thick crust of ice over the snow. John Bartlet came from the Cove this morning after I had washed up our breakfast dishes and I had to get a new breakfast for him and give his indians permission to cook their breakfast in the smokehouse and after John had eaten hearty he went to gathering up his things they had left here in my care without saying a word he even caught four out of seven of the chickens which I had raised for him and which I thought he had given me for raising his hogs and feeding them every day last Summer on buttermilk and bran. He also picked the largest of our potatoes to pay for a few small ones we had used of his, without asking me where he should get them and had them in the sacks before I knew he was going to get them. Indeed John shewed what a peneurious heart he has after all my kindness to him last Summer. I suppose he thought he was shewing his independence and authority over his own It is thawing some. This is the last day in the year 52. let us look back with sorrow on the past year that we have not spent it as we should and promise to spend the coming year better.

Jan Sat. 1st [1853]

The first day of the new year has come There are great displays made in some places this day and a great deal of feasting done,

---

<sup>ee</sup>Captain I. W. Gove.



and I am sorry to say, a great deal of dissipation carried on in some places, but here everything is peaceable and quiet, I have not even heard a gun fire today. I do not feel well today, I have a very bad cold and coughed a great deal last night. Old Capt. Coffin came and sat nearly all day and I had to get dinner for him I did not feel like keeping him company or cooking for him. He is a very disgusting man, but appears to have been well raised. he has a great deal of pride. This is a beautiful evening the sun is shining very bright. The snow is thawing some. I see a schooner coming up this evening. How thankful we should be to our Creator for preserving us until another New Years day in health and bodily strength O, may He enable us to spend this coming year more to His service and to be more faithful in performing our religious duties. and in the end we will be happier.

#### Sunday 2nd

Snowing this morning very fast Sam wishes to go to the Cove on a visit today I thought it best to let him go as it is not cold today This is the first Sabbath in 53. We are very lonesome today I wish Mr. Ebey was at home, I would feel much better. Eason is reading to Ellison in his primer. Eason commenced reading the Testament through yesterday, but he is getting very careless and indolent his pa is gone so much that he is becoming a great deal of trouble to me I have often heard it said that little boys would not be industrious about everything under their mother's contrall altogether, and I find it is so, They become so accustomed to their mother's commands from the cradle that they get so they do not mind it. She has to watch every action and keep the child from all kinds of misconduct while they are small, but when little boys become old enough to do some work they need a father to show them and to push them forward to make them industrious. I have tried very hard to make Eason industrious but I find I will have to give it up. He will be idle about his book and everything else. I hope next Summer his pa will help me to attend to him and try to get him out of his indolent habits which distress me a great deal. I can hear nothing more of Thomas I cannot tell what has become of them all I fear the exposure and hardship has made Thomas sick two seasons hard running—

#### Monday 3rd

Very pleasant today snow going off very fast No person passing but Indians. I feel better today and more able to attend to my household affairs.

#### Tuesday 4th

Weather pleasant but windy a vessel came up today uncertain as to its name I see a great deal of snow has fallen upon the

Olympic mountains I have not been able to see them before today for the clouds for some time.

Wednesday 5

Day rather windy and a good deal of rain falling snow all gone. No news from Mr. Ebey and I cannot get an opportunity of sending letters to him I have been watching for one, for a long time.

Thursday 6th

Today very pleasant I washed today Sam has not returned yet I scoured the cookhouse floor after I was done washing. George Allen and Mr. Smith came in the time to borrow one yoke of the oxen to plow They are all in a great way over at the Cove about plowing—

Warm today thermometer at 50 degrees above zero Some rain fell last night Dr. Lansdale was here a few minutes this morning to hear if I had any fresh news from Mr. Ebey but I had none.

Saturday 8th

Morning cooler than common. I washed up the cupboard and everything about the house and hired an indian to scrub one floor in the forenoon, and in the afternoon I was very sick and thought I would have to send for some of the neighbors, but toward bedtime I became some better.

Sunday 9th

Day rather cool and some rain I was sick all night though I am a good deal better today but do not feel able to do much and make every one wait upon themselves. Sam arrived today and I gave him a scolding and told him he must not run off again. An indian brought me a letter from Mr. Ebey's sister, Mary, today from Port Townsend, O the distressing news it brought, the truth of the death of my dear mother on the plains. My heart is almost broken I feel that I cannot endure the torture of being sepperated from her in this life, Yet I know she is happy and I have the consolation left, that I can see her in a better and happier world But the anguish of my heart and my reflections upon myself are so great because I did not bring her with me, away from that sickly country. Had I thought of this I would have brought her at the risk of everything; but I like many others left that Country with expectations of seeing my friends the next Season But O how wicked and thoughtless we are, not to remember that another day or another year may bring some of us to our graves and, O my mother it was you who must be taken from us so soon. Well I remember the last time I saw you I have

spent many happy hours with you. Your kindness to me was more than I deserved for which I hoped to be able to repay you in after years but death has debarred me from so doing, and didst thou forgive me for leaving you almost desolate? If I could only hear and know that thou left a word of forgiveness for me before your death I would be happier; for, I left you in a hurry and did not take time to consider whether I could bring you or not. I think you would have been with me now alive and well. I have no one to blame but myself. The Lord have mercy upon me and pardon me. Thy will be done O Lord, and enable me to bear it with patience. Many trials I have had but this is worse than all the ballance I pray the Lord to enable me to be more dutiful and more faithful. I am greatly in need of His assistance and grace to sustain me under all trials and troubles. In a few years more I may be lain in the grave also. O may I be prepared to meet all those dear friends who have gone before to Heaven and to Stand before the judgment Seat of Christ and give an account of my deeds done in the body.

Monday 10

Day pleasant, a little cloudy Still in grief and find no consolation Scarcely able to attend to business. mind continually reflecting upon past scenes which cannot be brought back.

Tuesday 11

Weather cool some rain last night Very lonely no old friend near to converse with Still striving to keep the children at their books, but, feel little able to attend to them. I heard of the death of Uncle Samuel Eason and his little daughter Mary by Mary's letter also Uncle S —was very much afflicted in this life and he no doubt rests from his troubles. He was a christian and I hope his children will follow in his steps and try to do that which is right which no doubt he oftentimes tried to impress upon their minds They are no doubt very much distressed Yet they ought not to grieve for they were with him at his death, and their loss is his Eternal gain

Wednesday 12th

Day cloudy and quite windy a vessel in the Straits coming up this morning. Some rain fell last evening I can hear nothing from Mr. Ebey and Thomas I long for the time to come when I will see them at home again, and in health

(Continued in the next issue.)

## BOOK REVIEWS

---

MOUNT RAINIER, A RECORD OF EXPLORATION. Edited by Edmond S. Meany. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 325. \$2.00.)

Under the above title the public, and particularly that portion who dwell in this Northwest country, are favored with another contribution to local history from the handiwork of one who has already done a great deal to enrich it with the fruit of his labors. The present work, however, differs materially from its predecessors by the same authority. With the exception of one chapter, it is a compilation pure and simple. It gives in full, or in their essential parts, the authentic reports or writings of those who have visited or explored the Mountain since its discovery by Vancouver, and who have left records worthy of public confidence. For the most part these records are given verbatim, and in the chronological order of their occurrence.

But the book is more than a record of exploration. The first twelve chapters (except the fourth) satisfy this description perfectly; but Chapters XIII to XVI are rather in the nature of monographs upon the various physical aspects of the Park and Mountain. While these monographs are all based upon exploration and study, they are not records of the explorations themselves except in a purely incidental way. Chapter XVII is an account of the creation of the Rainier National Park, and Chapter XVIII is a statement of methods and results in the final determination of the altitude of the Mountain. Chapter XIX is a monograph on the Place Names of the Park from the pen of Professor Meany himself. The scope of the work is thus seen to be more comprehensive than the title itself would indicate.

The mechanical execution of the book is excellent, as one would naturally expect of any work put out by The Macmillan Company. The type is clear and large, and the technique throughout is thoroughly up to date. There are twelve pages of preliminary matter, 325 pages of text, and four pages of advertisements. There are sixteen full page portraits, all, except that of Admiral Rainier, being portraits of the contributors, and all beautifully done. There is an appropriate frontispiece in the form of a reproduction of the fascinating "first picture of the mountain" which dates from Vancouver's time. There is no map and there is no index.

Upon the whole, the book presents a very attractive appearance, and contains a fund of information which should be of positive



value to students of Northwest history, and of genuine assistance to visitors to the Rainier National Park.

With this general view of the work, some of its outstanding features will now be more particularly noted.

The writer is unable to determine whether the author of Chapter IV made any exploration of the Mountain or not. If he did, no narrative is given, and the chief value of the contribution lies in its beauty as an example of highly imaginative word painting. The writer is quite unable to discover in the Hamitchou Legend anything of sufficient importance to justify the prominence given it in this compilation.

A most interesting historic coincidence is suggested by the account of General Stevens' ascent of the Mountain in 1870 (Chapter VI). He reached the summit on August 17th. At that time, in a far-distant field, a party of explorers was on the eve of starting on one of the famous expeditions of discovery in American annals; and twelve days later, August 29th, this party stood upon the summit of Mount Washburn in what is now the Yellowstone Park. It was the real entrance of the white man into the mysteries of that wonderful region.

Chapter XIII contains a touch of true romance and self-sacrifice in devotion to a scientific purpose. That, in pursuit, of such purpose, a life should have been sacrificed upon the treacherous slopes of the Mountain where that purpose was being carried out, only serves to hallow the act of devotion itself. And surely it is most remarkable that these interrupted efforts should have yielded a result so near to the final official determination of the altitude of the Mountain. Not least astonishing is the fact that this close approximation (120 feet) was obtained by barometric estimates.

Of the descriptive monographs, Chapters XIII-XVI, the writer would particularly mention the admirable paper by F. E. Mathes on the Glaciers of Mount Rainier, and Professor Piper's exhaustive List of Species of the Flora of Mount Rainier. It would have been of great advantage to the large majority of visitors to the Park if Professor Piper could have selected about one hundred of the more common varieties which fall under ordinary observation and have devoted some especial treatment to them.

Perhaps the most interesting feature of the book to the writer is Professor Meany's chapter on the Place Names of the Park. This interest arises in part, no doubt, from the writer's extensive similar work in the Yellowstone Park; but it has a far deeper meaning—one going to the very roots of local history. In his book on the Yellowstone the writer has enunciated in the following terms what seems

to him an underlying principle on the subject of geographical nomenclature:

"In common experience, the importance of geographical names lies in their use as a means of identification. To describe an object there must be a name, and for this purpose one name is as good as another. But if the reason be sought why a particular name happened to be selected, it will generally be found to arise, not from this practical necessity, but from some primary fact or tradition, or from some distinguished character, in the annals of the community where it occurs. In its mountains and valleys, its lakes and streams, and in its civil divisions, the cradle history of a country may always be found recorded."

It is not, of course, all names that have this deeper significance; far from it. In the Yellowstone there are upward of 360 place names, not including those of geysers, etc. Yet the writer found barely one hundred (and he was successful in getting at the origin of practically all) which were entitled to mention for any other reason than their "use as a means of identification." In the Rainier Park there are, by rough estimate, 112 personal names, the origin of only about half of which is known. There are about 140 names which may be styled characteristic, but of these the origin of about eighty per cent seems to be unknown. From such casual survey as the writer has been able to make of Professor Meany's list, he questions if there are more than fifty names which have any significant interest; that is, serve any other purpose than that of identification.

The writer dwells somewhat at length upon this subject because it reveals a tendency which ought to be held in check. In the Yellowstone Park there is only about one name on the average to every nine square miles; in the Rainier Park there is very nearly one to every square mile. The impulse to give personal names in token of friendship is well-nigh irresistible; but any such criterion is unjust both to the past and to the future. *Service*, in some form, should be, with very few exceptions, the sole criterion. There must be some check to the contrary tendency. In the Yellowstone that same tendency was very manifest in the early days of exploration; but there has been a wholesome weeding out since.

H. M. CHITTENDEN.

---

MEMOIRS OF THE WEST, THE SPALDINGS. By Eliza Spalding Warren. (Walla Walla, Washington, the Author, 707 Lincoln Street, 1916. Pp. 153. \$1.50.)

The author of this interesting little book was the first American white child born in the Pacific Northwest who reached maturity. She

was born at the Lapwai Mission (now in Idaho) on November 15, 1837. Alice Clarissa Whitman was born at the Wailatpui Mission on March 4 of that same year, 1837, but she was accidentally drowned in the Walla Walla river on June 23, 1839. Mrs. Warren has passed her seventy-ninth birthday. Having lived all these years in the Pacific Northwest, she has probably witnessed more of the wonderful transformations from the old wilderness days than any other living person.

As a little girl of ten she was at the Whitman Mission school at the time of the awful massacre of Doctor and Mrs. Whitman and twelve others by the Indians on November 29, 1847. She says she can still hear the sound of those blows and the cries of the stricken ones.

As the title indicates, her book is especially devoted to the work of her parents—Rev. and Mrs. H. H. Spalding of the Lapwai Mission. But a book by such an author would be a precious document of human interest at any place at any time.

There are nine chapters in the book with the following titles: "Foreword, The Miracle of the Nez Percés, Reminiscences of Eliza Spalding Warren, Letters from Friends, In Retrospect by Martha Jane Wigle, Diary of Mrs. H. H. Spalding, Letters from Mrs. H. H. Spalding, Letters from Henry Hart Spalding, Excerpts from Lectures of H. H. Spalding, Joseph Chief of the Nez Percés."

There are a number of illustrations, including the Lapwai Mission cabin, the grave of Rev. H. H. Spalding and portraits of the Spalding family.

Collectors of Northwest Americana will be sure to want this book and about the only way to get it is by sending an order to the author, whose present address is given in the caption of this review.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

THIRD PARTY MOVEMENTS SINCE THE CIVIL WAR; WITH SPECIAL REFERENCE TO IOWA. By Fred E. Haynes. (Iowa City, Iowa. The State Historical Society of Iowa, 1916. Pp. 564.)

This volume is an addition to the widely known and very creditable work being done by the State Historical Society of Iowa under the very able direction of Prof. Benj. F. Shambaugh, and is a study in social politics.

Beginning with the idea of working out the history of Third Parties in Iowa, Prof. Haynes found that his study of Iowa parties drew him into the broader national stream, so that he felt compelled

in the case of each party studied to sketch the field from the national point of view first, and we have as a result a very fine brief history of all the third parties since the Civil War in the United States, with the exception of the Prohibition and Socialist parties. The book is, therefore, of considerable value aside from its bearing on Iowa parties.

In working out lines of demarkation, Mr. Haynes has excluded those third parties which seem to have no distinctly western or American background and his book is, therefore, divided into five parts, each one dealing with a distinct movement, viz., the Liberal-Republican, the Farmers, the Greenback, the Populist and the Progressive. No one familiar with these movements will need reminding what an important part Iowa has played in these new parties and the names of Larrabee, Weaver, Dolliver and Cummins at once suggest themselves. The notes and references are extensive and make an excellent bibliography. To say that the work is done under the direction of Editor Shambaugh is synonymous with saying it is exceedingly well done in every respect.

EDWARD McMAHON.

---

FRENCH POLICY AND THE AMERICAN ALLIANCE OF 1778. By Edward S. Corwin, Ph.D., Professor of Politics, Princeton University. (Princeton, Princeton University Press, 1916. Pp. 430.)

A careful, scholarly and detailed study of the relations existing between France and the American Colonies during the Revolutionary War in which the author defends the thesis that "France's intervention in the American Revolution was motived primarily by her desire to recover her lost pre-eminence on the Continent of Europe," and that it was not merely an "Episode in the British-French struggle for colonial domination in the Western Hemisphere."

---

JOSE DE GALVEZ, VISITOR-GENERAL OF NEW SPAIN, 1765-1771. By Herbert Ingram Priestley. (Berkeley, University of California Press, 1916. Pp. 448. In paper cover, \$2.75; cloth, \$3.00.)

Mr. Priestley is Assistant Curator of the Bancroft Library in the University of California. His book is Volume V of the University of California's Publications in History, a series that is winning just praise for its scholarship and its excellent technique.

The author in his preface declares that Jose de Galvez though relatively little known was certainly "the most competent Minister of the Indies during the Bourbon regime. It was largely due to his constructive statesmanship in that capacity that the material prosperity of the American possessions, and hence of the mother country,



made possible the great strides in national development for which other men have received full measure of attention and praise."

That is the thesis of the work which has been done in a sympathetic spirit and with evident skill. The book has an index and eight illustrations, including helpful maps. The dedicatory page carries the simple words, "To My Wife."

---

MANUSCRIPTS FROM THE BURTON HISTORICAL COLLECTION. Edited by M. A. Burton. (Detroit, C. M. Burton, October, 1916. Pp. 32.)

This is the first of a proposed series of four numbers of historical pamphlets. The purpose of the series is to print certain of the rarer documents contained in the Burton Historical Collection now a part of the Detroit Public Library. Short but illuminating specimens fill this number. The dates range from 1754 to 1795.

---

PROLEGOMENA TO HISTORY, THE RELATION OF HISTORY TO LITERATURE, PHILOSOPHY, AND SCIENCE. By Frederick J. Teggart. (Berkeley, University of California Press, 1916. Pp. 155 to 292, being Number 3 of Volume IV., University of California Publications in History. In paper covers, \$1.50.)

Mr. Teggart is Associate Professor of History and Curator of the Bancroft Library in the University of California.

His book is the result of patient years of study and reflection. The abundant footnotes reveal the breadth of his searching. In addition to the inclusiveness of the title, the brief table of contents will give an adequate idea of the work—"Introduction, The Method of Science, Historical Investigation and Historiography, History and Philosophy, History and Evolution, Bibliographical Appendix."

---

TEN THOUSAND MILES WITH A DOG SLED, A NARRATIVE OF WINTER TRAVEL IN INTERIOR ALASKA. By Hudson Stuck. (New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1916. Pp. 420. \$1.75.)

This is a second edition of the interesting book by the vigorous Archdeacon of the Yukon. He says he has made but little change beyond a few footnotes, a second preface and the correction of one printer's error. The new edition is beautifully printed and illustrated.

---

GRAY MEMORIAL CELEBRATION. By William D. Lyman and Others. (Walla Walla, Washington, Whitman College, 1916. Pp. 24.)

The Whitman College Quarterly, Volume XIX., Number 3, November, 1916, bears the title: "William H. Gray and Mary A. Dix

Gray Memorial Celebration." The account of the memorial ceremonies there recorded includes the historical address given by William D. Lyman, Blalock Professor of History in Whitman College. The title of his address is: "The Place of William H. Gray in History."

Mr. Gray was a colleague of Dr. Marcus Whitman in the famous Waiilatpui mission. For that reason his biography is of especial interest to all friends of Whitman College. The theme is also of interest to all students of Northwestern history. This issue of the Whitman College Quarterly will be one of the choice items of collectors within a short time.

---

OUTLINE FOR THE STUDY OF THE HISTORY OF IDAHO. By H. L. Talkington. (Boise, Idaho, State Board of Education, 1916. Pp. 20.)

Professor Talkington is at the head of the department of history in the Lewiston State Normal School. In this bulletin he gives an outline as suggested by the title and he has also assembled titles of books and other publications that will help in the pursuit of such studies. It is, of course, intended for the use of educational institutions in Idaho.

---

THE EARLY HISTORY OF CUBA, 1492-1586. By I. A. Wright. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 390. \$2.00.)

The title-page carries the phrase: "written from original sources." It is not a source book containing the documents themselves, but is written from those documents as studied by the author among the archives in Spain. American historians are always interested in fresh studies of Columbus and his followers.

The table of contents indicates four divisions: "Book I. 1492-1524, Spain Takes Possession of Cuba; Book II. 1524-1567, An Era of Stagnation; Book III. 1550-1567, French Influence; Book IV. 1567-1586, The Menace of the English." The volume is equipped with a glossary and three indexes—of topics, persons and places.

---

THE CONTROL OF STRIKES IN AMERICAN TRADE UNIONS. By George Milton Janes. (Baltimore, The Johns Hopkins Press, 1916. Pp. 131. \$1.00.)

Doctor Janes is now a member of the faculty of the University of Washington. For that reason, though the book does not deal with the Pacific Northwest, it is well to mention it here.

The author tells in his preface how the book was prepared: "This monograph had its origin in an investigation carried on by its author while a member of the Economic Seminary of the Johns Hopkins

University. The chief documentary source of information has been the collection of trade-union publications in the Johns Hopkins Library. This study of the printed material has, however, been supplemented by personal interviews and correspondence with both national and local trade-union officials and with employers of labor in a number of industrial centers."

---

THE NEW PURCHASE, OR SEVEN AND A HALF YEARS IN THE FAR WEST. By Robert Carlton. Indiana Centennial Edition edited by James Albert Woodburn. (Princeton, N. J., Princeton University Press, 1916. Pp. 522. \$3.00 net.)

The real name of the original author was Baynard Rush Hall, who was the first professor of the Indiana Seminary in 1824. The editor of this centennial edition of the work is the well known professor of American history at Indiana University.

Judge D. D. Banta, an authority on early Indiana history, says of "The New Purchase" that it is "the best and truest history of pioneer life and pioneer surroundings in Indiana that can anywhere be found."

---

OUR CHIEF MAGISTRATE AND HIS POWERS. By William Howard Taft. (New York, Columbia University Press, 1916. Pp. 165. \$1.50.)

The former President of the United States delivered a series of lectures at Columbia University on the George Blumenthal Foundation in 1915. This book is the result or substance of those lectures. The title is expressive and everyone concedes the distinguished author's ability to discuss such a theme in a way to enlighten and entertain the reader.

---

THE TOURIST'S NORTHWEST. By Ruth Kedzie Wood. (New York, Dodd, Mead & Company, 1916. Pp. 528. \$1.25.)

Ruth Kedzie Wood, Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, is the author of half a dozen books in this "Tourist's" series, including such titles as "Russia," "Spain and Portugal," "California," and "Maritime Provinces."

This volume is a useful and well illustrated handbook on the Pacific Northwest. Places of interest are pointed out and also the means of reaching them. There are two chapters on hotels, sports and amusements.

Oregon's rivers, mountains and valleys, Washington's great peaks, lakes, Puget Sound, British Columbia, Idaho, and Montana are all

given attention. Thirty-one illustrations and five maps add a charm to the book.

By way of introduction, there is a quotation on "Training of a Traveller" from an address by the Right Honorable Viscount Bryce, former Ambassador of England to the United States.

The author has pleasant things to say about the cities mentioned as, for example: "Chosen bride of the North Pacific, Seattle has domain over the lesser Nereids of the inland Puget Sea."

---

A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES. By Matthew Page Andrews. (Philadelphia, J. B. Lippincott Company, 1916. Pp. 368. \$1.00.)

This is another addition to the goodly number of text books designed for the seventh and eighth grades. There are a number of good maps and 151 illustrations. The Oregon country is treated accurately but with a too severe brevity.

---

SOUTH DAKOTA HISTORICAL COLLECTIONS. By the State Department of History. (Pierre, State Publishing Company, 1916. Pp. 596.)

Volume VIII., like its predecessors, is largely the work of Doane Robinson, the tireless worker for history in South Dakota. He is secretary and superintendent of the South Dakota Department of History.

---

THE RUSSIAN OFFER OF MEDIATION IN THE WAR OF 1812. By Frank A. Golder. (New York, Ginn & Company, 1916. Pp. 380-391, being reprinted from the Political Science Quarterly for September, 1916.)

Professor Frank A. Golder of the State College of Washington is making himself an authority on Russian history as it touches America. In this case he has not only consulted American sources, published and in manuscript, but he uses materials gleaned in the archives at Petrograd while at work there for the Carnegie Institution of Washington.

He succeeds in the purpose of this special study, namely, to establish the uprightness of Chancellor Romanzoff, who has heretofore been more or less under a cloud of distrust. That cloud is here shifted to the shoulders of Czar Alexander I. The study is especially interesting just now while America is out of war and Russia is in.

Professor Golder concludes about Romanzoff: "The stories circulated about him by Lord Walpole are false in every particular, for which Alexander's double-faced method was largely to blame. The



documents in the archives prove conclusively that Romanzoff was truthful, frank, and honest with the American commissioners. That he was a friend of America and appreciated its problems, our envoys knew, but even they did not realize how earnestly he worked in their country's behalf and how much he endured in their nation's cause."

---

THE TERTIARY FORMATIONS OF WESTERN WASHINGTON. By Charles E. Weaver. (Olympia, Washington Geological Survey, 1916. Pp. 327. Paper covers, 40 cents. Address State Librarian, Olympia, Washington.)

This is Bulletin No. 13 of the Washington Geological Survey, under the direction of Professor Henry Landes, State Geologist.

It is an exhaustive report well printed and abundantly illustrated with half-tones and maps. Professor Weaver has given years of research and field work in the collection of materials.

Those interested in local history as well as those interested in geology should secure this work while it may be had at bare cost. It is sure to be in demand during the years to come. Everyone connected with the preparation and publication of this work of scientific scholarship is entitled to the gratitude and congratulations of the people of the Pacific Northwest.

---

THE PURPOSE OF HISTORY. By Frederick J. E. Woodbridge. (New York, Columbia University Press, 1916. Pp. 89. \$1.00.)

The three chapters are headed: "From History to Philosophy; The Pluralism of History; The Continuity of History."

The author's tiny preface gives the reason of the book as follows: "This book contains three lectures delivered at the University of North Carolina on the McNair Foundation in March of the current year. It expresses certain conclusions about history to which I have been led by the study of the history of philosophy and by reflection on the work of contemporary philosophers, especially Bergson, Dewey, and Santayana."

---

REVIEW OF HISTORICAL PUBLICATIONS RELATING TO CANADA. Edited by George W. Wrong, H. H. Langton and W. Stewart Wallace. (Toronto, University of Toronto Press, 1916. Pp. 224.)

The Northwest receives especial attention on pages 127-143. Among the publications complimented as of use and interest to Canadians are the Oregon Historical Society's Quarterly and the Washington Historical Quarterly. In a signed article, Judge F. W. Howay says: "The Washington Historical Quarterly is doing a work, the

great value and real importance of which will, in the future, be fully recognized and appreciated."

The compliment prefaced his review of the serial articles: "The Journal of John Work, July 5 to September 15, 1826," edited by T. C. Elliott, and "Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House, 1833-1834," edited by C. B. Bagley.

Other briefer paragraphs are scholarly comments carrying important facts of use to historical workers in the Northwest.

---

A POLITICAL AND SOCIAL HISTORY OF MODERN EUROPE. By Carlton J. H. Hayes. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Two volumes, pp. 597 and 767. Vol. I., 1500-1815, \$2.00; Vol. II., 1815-1915, \$2.25 net.)

While this work is not at all in the field of the Washington Historical Quarterly, it is worth mentioning here as a fine example of the new efforts to vitalize the subject of history by "injecting some social or economic explanation of the chief political facts."

The author of the books is associate professor of history in Columbia University.

---

THE TEACHING OF GOVERNMENT. Report to the American Political Science Association by the Committee on Instruction. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 284. \$1.40.)

The committee making the report consists of Charles Grove Haines, chairman; J. Lyman Barnard, Edgar Dawson, Walter L. Fleming, Mabel Hill, Frank E. Horack and James A. James.

Teachers of history and government will find the book suggestive and helpful.

---

THE BALKAN WARS, 1912-1913. By Jacob Gould Schurman. (Princeton, N. J., Princeton University Press, 1916. Pp. 140. \$1.00.)

The present upheaval in Europe has justified a third edition of this work. The author says there are no changes in the text except the correction of a few errors. A new preface adds some recent information.

---

FATHER HERMAN, ALASKA'S SAINT. By Frank A. Golder. (Pullman, Washington. Privately Published by the Author, 1916. Pp. 20.)

This dainty little book is inscribed: "To my friends, a Merry Christmas and a Happy New Year." It is another evidence of Professor Golder's rich store of information about Eastern Siberia and Alaska gleaned by him in Russia. This time the materials come from

Valaam Monastery on Valaam Island, Lake Ladoga. He says he gives, not a critical, but a monstery life of the saint.

Father Herman was born near Moscow in 1756. When it was decided to establish the Kodiak Mission in 1793, Father Herman was one of the party. They arrived at Kodiak on September 24, 1794. For forty years the good priest served and became the holy father of the far northern folk.

SOCIAL LIFE IN ENGLAND, 1750-1850. By F. J. Foakes Jackson. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916. Pp. 338. \$1.50.)

The volume contains a course of lectures given at the Lowell Institute, Boston, in March, 1916, and the preface is dated at Union Theological Seminary, New York, August, 1916.

#### Other Books Received

BOUCHER, CHAUNCEY SAMUEL. The Ante-Bellum Attitude of South Carolina Towards Manufacturing and Agriculture. (St. Louis, Washington University, 1916. Pp. 243-270, reprinted from Vol. III., Part II., No. 2 of Washington University Studies.)

BOUCHER, CHAUNCEY SAMUEL. Sectionalism, Representation, and the Electoral Question in Ante-Bellum South Carolina. (St. Louis, Washington University, 1916. Pp. 62, reprinted from Vol. IV., Part II., No. 1 of Washington University Studies.)

CARPENTER MEMORIAL LIBRARY. Dedication exercises, November 18, 1914. (Manchester, New Hampshire, Frank P. Carpenter, 1916. Pp. 55.)

DONALDSON, JOHN L. State administration in Maryland. (Baltimore, Johns Hopkins Press, 1916. Pp. 155.)

DOUGHTY, ARTHUR G. Report of the work of the public Archives of Canada. (Ottawa, King's Printer, 1916. Pp. 25+255+471.)

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Proceedings, Volume 49, 1915-16. (Boston, The Society, 1916. Pp. 510.)

SAPIR, E. Time Perspective in Aboriginal American Culture, A Study in Method. (Ottawa, Department of Mines, Canadian Geological Survey, 1916. Pp. 87. Memoir 90, No. 13 Anthropological Series.)

WASHINGTON BANKERS' ASSOCIATION. Proceedings of the Twenty-

first Annual Convention, June, 1916. (Ritzville, Washington, W. H. Martin, Secretary, 1916. Pp. 206.)

WASHINGTON STATE CONFERENCE FOR SOCIAL WELFARE. Proceedings of the Ninth Session, Walla Walla, June 1, 2, 1916. (Seattle, Reverend Sydney Strong, Secretary, 1916. Pp. 48.)

WASHINGTON STATE FEDERATION OF WOMEN' CLUBS. Twentieth annual report, 1916-17. (Pullman, Mrs. Ira D. Cardiff, Secretary, 1916. Pp. 143.)

WASHINGTON STATE GRANGE. Proceedings of the Twenty-eighth Annual Session, June, 1916. (Tumwater, Washington, Fred W. Lewis, Secretary, 1916. Pp. 208.)

WAUGH, F. W. Iroquois Food's and Food Preparation. (Ottawa, Department of Mines, Canadian Geological Survey, 1916. Pp. 235. Memoir 86, No. 12. Anthropological Series.)



## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### The Gray Memorial

On November 1, 1916, near Walla Walla, were held exercises of a very impressive nature and of historic meaning. The bodies of William H. Gray and Mrs. Mary A. Dix Gray, after a long rest in graves at Astoria, Oregon, had been removed and placed in new graves by the side of their friends and missionary colleagues, Doctor and Mrs. Marcus Whitman, on the site of the Waiilatpui Mission, a few miles from the present City of Walla Walla.

The exercises were participated in by the president, faculty and students of Whitman College, members of the Walla Walla Pioneer Association, the Commercial Club, citizens, and the following members of the Gray family: Mrs. Jacob Kamm of Portland, Oregon; Mrs. J. H. D. Gray of Pendleton, Oregon; Captain W. P. Gray of Pasco; Captain James T. Gray of Alaska; Henry D. Gray of Pendleton; William H. Gray of Spokane; Mrs. J. H. Sprague of Pasco; Mr. and Mrs. George Hartman, Jr., and Miss Louisa Gray of Pendleton; Mrs. Charles Kamm and Jacob Kamm, 3rd, of Portland.

The new graves were surrounded with a carpet of evergreens, and as the students marched from the special train each boy dropped a sprig of evergreen and each girl a white carnation on the graves—a touching tribute of reverence and affection for the memory of those who had labored as missionaries with Doctor and Mrs. Whitman.

After the singing of "America" by the audience, Rev. Charles E. Tuke, rector of St. Paul's Protestant Episcopal Church of Walla Walla, offered prayer. Professor William D. Lyman, of Whitman College, delivered an address on "The Place of William H. Gray in Our History." The students sang their Founders' Day hymn and Captain William P. Gray, of Pasco, oldest living son of Mr. and Mrs. Gray, read two poems composed by himself for the occasion. One was entitled "The Pioneer," and the other, "In Memoriam." Rev. John H. Boyd, pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Portland, Oregon, delivered a memorial address on "Mary A. Dix Gray."

William H. Gray came to the Oregon country with Dr. and Mrs. Whitman and Rev. and Mrs. H. H. Spalding in 1836. He returned east in 1837. The next year he and Mrs. Gray returned in company with other missionaries, including Rev. and Mrs. Cushing Eells. This fact received pointed evidence in the ceremonies when President Stephen

B. L. Penrose of Whitman College read the following telegram from Edwin Eells, son of Rev. Cushing Eells:

"Congratulations that the remains of Mr. and Mrs. W. H. Gray are at rest by the side of their martyred compatriots, Doctor and Mrs. Whitman. Mr. and Mrs. Gray slept in the same tent with my father and mother while crossing the plains in 1838. We started the funds for the building of the monument and the honor is well deserved. I personally well remember them."

The students sang their song, "Whitman! Here's to You," after which the benediction was pronounced by Rev. W. H. Bleakney, Professor of Greek in Whitman College, who represented the Presbyterian Church of the United States of America, of which Mr. and Mrs. Gray were devoted members.

---

#### **Markers for the Oregon Trail**

In the Washington Historical Quarterly for October, 1916, pages 329-330, the record was given of three markers having been placed on the Oregon Trail at Tumwater, Tenino, and Bush Prairie. Since then seven more of the markers have been placed. The programs show that the Daughters of the American Revolution and the Sons of the American Revolution went at the work on a regular and earnest campaign.

On October 12, two markers were placed and occasion was also taken to celebrate Columbus Day at the same time. At 2 P. M. a marker was unveiled at the crossing of Skookum Chuck Creek by the Pacific Highway, near Centralia. The chairman was Orison J. C. Dutton, President of the State Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. The program was as follows: Invocation, Rev. Mr. Dore; singing, "America"; address, Mr. W. H. Cameron; "Pioneer Days," General Hazard Stevens; "Marking National Old Trails," Mrs. Henry McCleary; presentation of marker to state and city, Mrs. Edmund Bowden, unveiling, Miss Zeola Dickinson; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest Lister; acceptance for Centralia, Mayor John Galvin; Flag Salute, school children; singing, "Star Sangled Banner."

At 4 P. M. the ceremonies took place at the junction of the Pacific Highway and the Rochester road on Grand Mound Prairie. The chairman was Mrs. Edmund Bowden, State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution. The program was as follows: Invocation, Rev. Frank W. P. Camp; singing, "America"; address, Mr. Theodore Hoff; song, High School of Grand Mound; reminiscences, Mrs. E. N. Sargent; national medley, High School; "Grand Mound Sixty-four Years Ago," Mr. John R. James; solo, Miss Irene Holcomb;

presentation of marker to the state, Mr. Orison J. C. Dutton; unveiling, Miss Clara James; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest Lister; acceptance for Grand Mound, Dr. J. B. Stanley, secretary of the Southwest Washington Pioneer Association; Flag Salute, school children.

On October 25, two programs were given. At 2 P. M. on Jackson Prairie, the chairman was Mr. Orison J. C. Dutton, State President of the Sons of the American Revolution. The exercises were as follows: Invocation; singing, "America"; address, Mr. A. A. Hull of Chehalis; presentation of the marker to the state, Mrs. Edmund Bowden; unveiling; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest Lister; singing, "The Star Spangled Banner."

At 3:30 P. M. the ceremonies took place at Toledo (old Cowlitz Landing). The chairman was Mrs. Edmund Bowden, State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution. The program was as follows: Invocation; singing, "America," quartet and school children; "Marking National Trails," Mrs. Henry McCleary, chairman of National Trails Committee, Daughters of the American Revolution; address, Mr. A. A. Hull, of Chehalis; "The Old Trail and Cowlitz River in Early Days," General Hazard Stevens; presentation of the marker to the state, Mrs. Overton G. Ellis, chairman of Oregon Trail Committee, Daughters of the American Revolution; unveiling, Miss Minnie Packard; Flag Salute, school children; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest Lister; acceptance for Toledo, Mayor Frederick Williams; address, Mr. H. H. Hurst, of Toledo; singing, "Star Spangled Banner," quartet, school children and audience.

On October 26, three markers were unveiled. At 10 A. M. in Kelso, the presiding chairman was Mrs. Henry McCleary, chairman of the National Trails Committee, Daughters of the American Revolution. The program was as follows: Invocation, Rev. T. M. Reese; song, "America," quartet and school children; address, Mr. J. L. Harris; "The Oregon Trail and the Pioneer," General Hazard Stevens; presentation of the marker, Mrs. Edmund Bowden; unveiling, Miss Bernice Ely; Flag Salute, school children; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest Lister; acceptance for Kelso, Mayor C. O. Talbert; song, "Star Spangled Banner," quartet and school children.

At 1:30 P. M. in Woodland, the presiding chairman was Mr. Orison J. C. Dutton, State President of the Sons of the American Revolution. The program was as follows: Invocation, Rev. A. Vanderlinde; song, "America," quartet and school children; presentation of the marker, Mrs. Edmund Bowden; unveiling, Miss Ruth Powell; Flag Salute, school children; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest

Lister; acceptance for Woodland, Mr. L. N. Plamondon, president of the Commercial Club; song, "Star Spangled Banner," quartet and school children.

At 3:30 P. M. in Kalama, the presiding chairman was Mrs. Edmund Bowden, State Regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution. The program was as follows: Invocation, Rev. Mr. Stoetzel; song, "America," quartet and school children; "The Old Oregon Trail," General Hazard Stevens; "Pacific Highway," Mr. James E. Allen, State Highway Commissioner; address, Judge C. Kalahan; presentation of the marker, Mrs. Overton G. Ellis, chairman of the Oregon Trail Committee, Daughters of the American Revolution; Flag Salute, school children, led by Mr. O. J. C. Dutton; acceptance for the state, Governor Ernest Lister; acceptance for Kalama, Mr. E. W. Gaither, acting mayor; song, "Star Spangled Banner," quartet and school children.

---

#### **Death of Allen Weir**

Allen Weir, a well-known maker and writer of Northwestern history, died at Port Townsend on October 31, 1916. He had lived in Port Townsend in Territorial days. Being elected the first Secretary of State, he moved to Olympia in 1889 and lived there from that date. While visiting in his old town he was injured in an automobile accident and did not recover, though he battled on for several weeks in the hospital.

He was one of the organizers and for many years was the secretary of the Thurston County Pioneer and Historical Society. That organization adopted a set of resolutions showing a full appreciation of his unusually faithful services. The document is signed by Hazard Stevens, president, and Fred W. Stocking, secretary.

---

#### **Collections of Papers**

The Librarian of Congress is seeking lists of the collections of papers of prominent Americans. In a letter of inquiry he says: "We do not ask for a list of all of your collections of personal papers, but merely for a list of those whose historical importance or size justify mention." It is hoped that the Pacific Northwest will be represented in the list when compiled.

---

#### **Oregon Historical Society**

The eighteenth annual meeting of the Oregon Historical Society was held in Portland on Saturday, October 28, 1916. The principal address was given by Mr. E. O. S. Scholefield of Victoria, Provincial Librarian of British Columbia. His subject was "The Cartographers



and Explorers of the Coast Line of the Oregon Country." The address was illustrated with thirty lantern slides of early maps and thirty slides of portraits of explorers and views of Fort Vancouver, Fort Victoria and other places of historic interest.

---

#### **Pacific Coast Branch of the American Historical Association**

The annual meeting of the Pacific Coast Branch of the American Historical Association was held at San Diego, California, on Friday and Saturday, December 1 and 2, 1916. Headquarters were at the U. S. Grant Hotel and the Saturday meetings were held on the Exposition grounds. On the program were two numbers of especial interest to western historians. Professor Levi E. Young of the University of Utah read a paper on "Town and Municipal Government in the Early Days of Utah," and James M. Guinn, Secretary of the Southern California Historical Association, gave an address on "Thirty-three Years of Historical Activity."

---

#### **American Historical Association**

The thirty-second annual meeting of the American Historical Association was held in Cincinnati, Ohio, December 27-30, 1916. The president is Professor George Lincoln Burr of Cornell University and the secretary is Waldo G. Leland, Washington, D. C.

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Contributing Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
WILLIAM S. LEWIS, Spokane.	HAZARD STEVENS, Olympia.
F. W. HOWAY, New Westminster, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VIII. NO. 2

APRIL, 1917

*ISSUED QUARTERLY*

## Contents

THOMAS B. BEALL .....	Pioneer Reminiscences .....	83
WILLIAM PICKERING .....	Washington's War Governor.....	91
LUCULUS V. McWHORTER.....	Chief Sluskin's True Narrative....	96
O. B. SPERLIN.....	Washington Forts of the Fur Trade Regime .....	102
EDMOND S. MEANY.....	Early Records of the University..	114
DOCUMENTS—Diary Kept by Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar .....		124
BOOK REVIEWS .....		153
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		159

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

Entered at the postoffice at Seattle as second-class mail matter.

# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### PIONEER REMINISCENCES\*

I was born at Washington, D. C., on December 28, 1832. My father was Col. Benjamin L. Beall of the United States army, and my mother Elizabeth Taylor from Virginia. They were married at Washington, D. C. I came from a family of soldiers. My grandfather, Lloyd Beall, served as a major in the war of 1812, and was in command of Fort McHenry at the time that Francis Scott Key wrote the Star Spangled Banner. My father, and two of my uncles, brothers of my father, were graduated from the United States Military Academy at West Point. Two of my maternal uncles were in the navy: Rear Admiral Taylor and Col. Sidney Taylor of the marines. In 1841 the family moved to Fort Wichita in Indian Territory. My father, then captain of the Second Dragoons, was stationed there with three companies, under Col. Harney.

Shortly before the Mexican war father was ordered to Fort San Antonio, and the family moved to Jefferson barracks, just below St. Louis, Missouri. My father and two brothers served in the army as officers during the Mexican war. After the war my father was ordered to New Mexico and the family moved to Fort Leavenworth, Kansas.

In 1853 I left Fort Leavenworth and came across the plains to Fort Lane in the Rogue River country, and went from there south to San Francisco, and then to Fort Tejon in Los Angeles County where my father was then stationed. I remained there from 1854 to 1857, being employed in the quartermaster's department as wagon master.

In 1857 I came up north with a company of the First Dragoons of which regiment my father was then colonel. We came through the Rogue River country via Salem and Portland to Fort Vancouver, and continued on up the Columbia to Fort Walla Walla. I remained

---

\*This relation was made by Thomas B. Beall of Lewiston, Idaho, to William S. Lewis, Corresponding Secretary of the Spokane Historical Society. The footnotes are by Mr. Lewis.—Editor.



at Fort Walla Walla about two months and then returned to Fort Vancouver.

In the spring of 1858 I was ordered to take charge of wagons at The Dalles, Oregon, for Company H of the Second Dragoons and took the wagon train to Fort Walla Walla about the first of April, 1858, and then accompanied Col. Steptoe's expedition north, crossing Snake river as pack master of a train of eighty pack mules. In regard to the expedition not taking more ammunition with it, I would say that I do not think any more ammunition was set out of the magazine for the expedition by the quartermaster in charge. I sent two packers with four mules to the magazine and they came back with but three mule loads—this was all that had been set out for them.

On the 15th of May, 1858, we camped near the present site of Rosalia, Washington. Next day we packed up and moved eighteen miles north and west to a point about six miles due west of Spangle, near what is now known as Filio Lake.

Here a number of Indians came into our camp and held a council with Col. Steptoe, who told them that he had not come out to fight them, but was sent out to pick out a point for a fort on the 49th parallel to protect men engaged in the boundary survey. The Indians said they would refuse to let Col. Steptoe have any canoes with which to cross the Spokane river and Steptoe concluded to go back to Fort Walla Walla. Among the Indians there were Saltees of the Coeur d'Alenes, and Polatkin, war chief of the Spokanes. I don't recall seeing Spokane Garry there. I know Spokane Garry. He could read and write very good English. Big Star, the Spokane Chief, as I understand, had his people go home. Chief Moses' band was there and participated in the fight. My recollections of the Steptoe and Wright expeditions were published in the Lewiston (Idaho) Tribune in July and August, 1916.

I returned to the Spokane Country as a pack master in charge of one of the pack trains of Col. Wright's campaign in August and September, 1858, when the battles of Four Lakes and Spokane Plains were fought, and I have pointed out to members of the Spokane Historical Society the sites of these battles, and the place where the first Indian<sup>1</sup> was hung and the nine hundred horses killed on the Spokane river, and the site of the Indian council, and Col. Wright's camp on Hangman's creek, at what is now known as Smith's ford. The way I happened to be selected to hang that first Indian and the Indians

---

<sup>1</sup>This Indian was a Palouse. Colonel George Wright's report, H. Ex. Doc. in No. 2, 35 C., 2 S., p. 394, states: "I investigated the case of the Indian prisoner suspected of having been engaged in the murder; the fact of his guilt was established beyond doubt; and he was hung at sunset." See, Kip, *Army Life on the Pacific*, p. 67.

whose execution led to Latah creek receiving the gruesome title of Hangman's Creek was this: At the camp on the Spokane, afterwards known as "Horse Slaughter camp," one of the officers enquired of us whether we knew how to tie a certain noose or knot called a hangman's noose. I knew how to tie this knot and upon answering that I could tie that kind of a knot was informed that I was detailed to act as hangman, and it thus happened that I tied the knot and placed the rope about the neck of all the Indians hung by Col. Wright's command in the Spokane country. There is nothing in the gossip reported by my good friend, Mr. John Smith, to the effect that I received twenty dollars for each Indian hung, as I never received any bonus or reward for obeying the commands of my superior officers in assisting in the execution of these Indians.

At the time of the Wright campaign in 1858, many of the Indians in the Spokane country raised grain and vegetables. In the little valley just around the rocky point east of "Horse slaughter camp" on the Spokane river we found fifteen or twenty Indian houses filled with grain. A great deal of the grain was threshed and in Indian sacks. Near Post Falls, I recall, that we also found some four or five more Indian houses filled with grain. All this was burned and destroyed by Col. Wright's Command<sup>2</sup>. At that time the Spokane Indians had a big village on the Little Spokane, near its mouth, and, as I was informed, raised considerable grain in that vicinity. This village was out of our way and was not disturbed by Col. Wright.

After the Wright campaign I remained at Fort Walla Walla for a while as assistant wagon master. I then entered the employment of the Indian Department for the Nez Perce Indians and went in charge of some stock for the Lapwai Agency, but did not remain there but a short time. In April, 1859, I was engaged by Quartermaster Captain Ingalls to go to Fort Vancouver and enter the employment of the quartermaster's department and to organize a pack train to accompany two companies of the Ninth Infantry being sent north as an escort for the boundary commission from Fort Simcoe. Another train was also being organized for an expedition to go in command of Major Heller to Fort Hall, in Idaho. This train was in charge of Ben Drew. We went up the Columbia to the mouth of the Okanogan and up the Okanogan to Lake Osoyoos and waited there about six weeks for the surveying party to come through from the west and meet us and then we accompanied the surveying party on east to Fort Colville. During

---

<sup>2</sup>The report of Colonel George Wright, *op. cit.*, p. 396, states: "Large quantities of wheat and oats, also many caches of vegetables, kamas and dried berries, have been destroyed." Kip, *op. cit.*, p. 70, gives a more detailed account.

the fall I was sent down from Colville to Fort Walla Walla for supplies which I brought back with my train. Major Lougenbeel of the Nineteenth Infantry was in charge of the troops at Colville. The troops went into winter quarters at the post which was then being erected.

My route from Colville to Walla Walla was south through Walker's prairie to the Spokane river, where the late James Monaghan was then in charge of the newly established ferry. From the river I proceeded south to Sprague Lake, a little creek running into the lake was then called Loughenbeel Creek. Shortly afterwards a man named Smith<sup>3</sup> took up a ranch in the vicinity. From the lake the route was down Cow Creek. We struck the Palouse and crossed it at its mouth where a ferry was then established. This was about five miles below the mouth of the Tucannon. From there the route was south, hitting the Touchet River about five miles south of the present town of Prescott and then to Fort Walla Walla. In those days there were no settlers north of the Snake river, except a few old Hudson Bay men in the Colville valley. I remember one of these, a Frenchman named Brown.<sup>4</sup> I also met one of the Finlays<sup>5</sup> at the new army post at Colville. He was a tall, bony man about fifty or sixty years old. A Mr. Wolf<sup>6</sup> located on some land about fifteen miles south of the garrison on the road to Walla Walla.

I went to the Wild Horse mining excitement in the Kootenay country in 1864, leaving Lewiston on the 4th of July. I met Anton Plant on the Spokane about ten miles above the falls on the north side of the river near the bluff at Trent. Lieutenant Mullan had installed a ferry there, and during the Wild Horse excitement in '64 Anton Plant<sup>7</sup> operated the ferry.

The first man at what is now known as Rathdrum, Idaho, was a man named Connors.<sup>8</sup> He afterwards bought out Herrin & Lee at Spokane Bridge. In '64 Connors had a two-story, log road house.

<sup>3</sup>I have been unable to ascertain either Smith's Christian name, or his history.

<sup>4</sup>Doubtless Mr. Thomas Brown, a member of the Sinclair party, mentioned by John V. Campbell, in *Washington Historical Quarterly*, III, 193.

<sup>5</sup>Probably either Francis Finlay or Xavier Finlay, half-breed sons of Jacques Raphael Finlay, both of whom resided near the Hudson's Bay Company's post at Colville, in 1850 and 1860.

<sup>6</sup>Francis Wolfe, mentioned in the *Washington Historical Quarterly*, VII, 276. He drove the first wagons loaded with merchandise into Colville Valley in 1856.

<sup>7</sup>Antoine Plant's crossing was a short distance above the present town of Trent. The legislature of 1860-61 passed an act, "authorizing Antoine Plant, his heirs and assigns, to establish and keep a ferry across the Spokane river, at or near the point where the military road from Fort Walla Walla to Fort Benton crosses said river." At his brother-in-law's place, Antoine Camille's, some three miles above, the Mullan road connected with the old Colville road coming down over Peone Prairie.

<sup>8</sup>The settlement at Rathdrum was first called Westwood after Wesley Wood. The name Rathdrum was not given it until the construction of the Northern Pacific Railroad.

Later Mr. Frederick Post, of Post Falls Fame, bought Connors out. At that time, I think that Connors was a bachelor. Tom Ford, an early partner of M. M. Cowley, later settled at Rathdrum.

At Sinneacatine Ferry, on the Pend O'Reille, Guy Hanes,<sup>9</sup> in '64 had a road house. Governor Miles Moore of Walla Walla had a small trading post there. In those days there was a road house at the Snake river crossing,<sup>10</sup> another on Cow Creek, a short distance from its mouth where it joins the Palouse, another at Sprague Lake then run by Tom Reynolds.

At Bonners Ferry, in 1864 Ed. Bonner had a ferry across the Kootenay which led to the name of Bonners Ferry for the subsequent settlement of that point. In the Spring of that year John Walton, Dick Eddy, and Ed Bonner left the Walla Walla Country for the gold fields on Wild Horse Creek, B. C. Arriving at the crossing of the Kootenai River, they concluded to stop and establish a ferry. Dick Eddy and Ed Bonner were half brothers, Eddy being the oldest. James Galbraith and Marion Nolan established a ferry about six miles south of the mining camp on the Wild Horse, and at Pake River Turning, three miles from its mouth, Ed Jordon from Lewiston, Idaho, established a ferry in 1864.

Returning from the Wild Horse mines in the fall of 1864, I came through by Rathdrum, the California ranch, by what is now Rockford, by the new Coeur d'Alene mission on Hangman Creek, crossing the palouse river two miles above the present town of Palouse, then down by the present town of Moscow to Lewiston, Idaho.

In the middle of November, 1864, I started out from Lewiston with supplies and tools, together with Joe Herrin and Tim Lee, who intended to put in a ferry and bridge across the Spokane at what is now known as Spokane Bridge. Both Herrin and Lee had been to the Wild Horse country that spring and had selected the site as a good location for a bridge and ferry.

The Indians came around occasionally while we were building the bridge. I think their principal village was then on the Little Spokane. There may have been a small village at Anton Plant's place. I saw Chief Garry frequently that winter and spring while we were building the bridge. He was pretty well fixed and then talked very good English. He wanted Herrin and Lee to pay him a bonus for the right to

---

<sup>9</sup>In 1862-64 these various ferries, and the Pend d'Oreille River and part of the Kootenai River, where all within the bounds of Spokane County, Washington Territory.

<sup>10</sup>The McWirck Bros. had the first ferry at the mouth of the Palouse, operating under a charter granted in the early sixties. The name of this ferry was later changed to "Lyons ferry." I have been unable to learn the names of the men who ran the road-houses at the Snake River crossing, and on Cow Creek near the Palouse. A settler named Hines ran an eating-house on lower Rock Creek.



construct a bridge there. Garry was the leading chief of the Spokane Indians, Polatkin was war chief of the Spokanes. Big Star was considered a pretty good Indian, while I think that Spokane Garry was treacherous. I met Kamiaken a couple of times. He was tall, very dark and a good physique. The Palouse Indians appeared to be a mixture of several tribes, Umatillas, Yakimas, Nez Perces, etc., and were nearly all renegades. The Indians in the Spokane country had churches in the early days.<sup>11</sup> There was one near the Indian houses where we burned the grain, east of Horse slaughter camp in 1858. This had a cross on it. I know old Judge Yantis.<sup>12</sup> He came from Olympia and died, I think, at Walla Walla.

Regarding the bridge, Joe Herrin later sold out his interest to Charles Connor and later Lee and Connor sold out to M. M. Cowley. In January, 1865, I went back to Lewiston for supplies, accompanied by Bob Emery, who was working on the bridge. We came right back. On account of the deep snow, we changed our route to the Spokane river, going down Snake River to Almota, about twenty-five miles below Lewiston. We had a half-breed Spokane and Nez Perce Indian for a guide. From Almota we struck north across the country, crossing the Palouse river at Kamiaken's camp. His family consisted of about eight or ten Indians. In the vicinity of this camp there is a butte still known by the name of "Kamiaken Butte" after the old chief. Going north from there we struck for Rock Lake and a mile or two further on we came into the old Mullan road, which we followed to the vicinity of Wright's old camp on Hangman creek, where a trail branched off by way of California ranch. This was called the "Kentuck cut off" after Kentuck Ruark, who had put in a ferry on the Snake river at what is called Texas ferry—opposite Riparia. The trail passed Liberty Lake on the right—it might have been Salteese Lake; I think, though, the trail ran between the two lakes. Reaching the gravel, the trail struck across the valley to Rathdrum. Connors was not at Rathdrum when we went up to the Wild Horse in July, '64.

I think that Kentuck Ruark was in the first Coeur d'Alene excitement of '65. It was called the Wilson excitement. About five hundred men participated in the rush. After Wilson made his find in

<sup>11</sup>The Catholics did not commence their missionary work among the upper Spokanes until several years after 1858; the Indian Churches mentioned were undoubtedly the result of the efforts of Spokane Garry and the Reverend Cushing Eells and Elkanah Walker among the Spokane Indians. For descriptions of early Spokane Indian churches see the journal of W. H. Gray, p. 77, and Elkanah Walker's diary, under date Sept. 22, 1838.

<sup>12</sup>Judge Yantis was a noted pioneer character. An early resident of the towns of Tacoma, and Colville, in Washington Territory, and of Lewiston, Idaho, he served as justice of the peace, legislator, and captain of the "Spokane Invincibles," a volunteer military organization raised among the miners in the Colville country in 1856. He was a Kentuckian by birth and died on the Sound in 1879.

the Spring of '65 he came down to Walla Walla to purchase supplies which he paid for in gold dust, exhibiting in the transaction considerable gold. He never told anybody anything about where he got it, but people got suspicious and followed him.

At that time I was with a party from Lewiston prospecting on the upper Palouse about eight or ten miles above Palouse Bridge which was put in in 1864 by a man named Bugsby about two miles above Palouse City. In 1865 it was owned by Bill Ewing. I had gone down to Ewing's to get some mail, he said there was a big excitement, that they had struck it in the Coeur d'Alenes and that many men were going by from Walla Walla bound for the new diggings.

I went back to camp and told my partners and we concluded to pull up our stakes and join the rush. When we reached the Old Mission we found a number of men camped there. Wilson, with six or eight men, was cutting a trail into where he had made his find. A guard was put out to prevent anyone going into the section until the trail was built.

Several of us went back twelve or thirteen miles from the Mission and on a small stream found another bunch of men encamped. That was as far as we ever got. Poor Wilson became so confused and excited that he could not find his mine. The wrathful miners who had followed him came very near hanging him. He was only saved by the intervention of the Catholic priest at the Mission. Wilson said to the excited miners: "I never told you I had any gold and now when I cannot find it you want to hang me." I think that his find was on Pritchard Creek, probably somewhere in the neighborhood of the later discovery and excitement of 1883.

Thirteen or fourteen of us miners now concluded to go east over the Mullan road into Montana to another stampede or mining excitement in McClellan's Gulch on the west side of the Rockies. I was posted on the location of a piece of ground for a claim, but in going in I got off on an old buffalo trail and was too late by about an hour to stake the ground. The parties who got it took out about eighteen hundred dollars a day in coarse gold.

I afterwards went to Blackfoot City, Montana. I was then nearly broke, having only two or three dollars left. I saw a sign over one of the stores "Mason & Wiley." I had thought it would be a good business proposition to put in a saloon at McClellan Gulch, provided I could secure the necessary credit. Going to the store I was confronted with a large sign, "Positively no credit." I asked one of the proprietors if he had any liquor stock and bar fixtures, stating that I had seen a good opportunity for an opening at McClellan Gulch,

and asking him to back me, as I had nothing except eight or ten head of horses. He asked me if I did not see the sign, and I told him "yes" and upon my insisting that the sign did not apply to my case he asked me where I was from. I told him "Lewiston, Idaho." This was not a very happy reference, for just then the vigilant committee was hanging people and running all the "black legs" out of the Lewiston country. After I had told him my name and stated that my father used to command the post at Fort Leavenworth, Wiley told me that he had formerly clerked for Hiram Rich, post sutler, at Leavenworth, and I finally got my stock and fixtures on credit. Later I sold the stock out and went back to Lewiston, Idaho.

In the mining excitement in the Pend O'Reille country in 1865, three boats were built on the south end of the lake near Lakeview, about fifteen or sixteen miles east of Rathdrum, Idaho.

In 1862 I was married at Lewiston, Idaho, to Jane Stewart, who died fifteen years ago. We had one child, Tom Beall, now farming near Rubens on the road between Lewiston and Grangeville, Idaho. Most of my time since the '60's has been spent in prospecting and mining. I have participated in most all the mining rushes in the Northwest, and was very active up to above five years ago, when I contracted inflammatory rheumatism. I am now living at Lewiston, Idaho.

THOMAS B. BEALL.

## WASHINGTON'S WAR GOVERNOR

[The following letter is furnished by George H. Himes, Curator and Assistant Secretary of the Oregon Historical Society. We have no more successful collector of Northwest Americana than Mr. Himes. He is continually bringing to light unpublished letters and documents. This letter, while largely personal, gives an interesting account of Lincoln's appointee while making the journey from Illinois to Washington Territory.—Editor.]

---

Executive Office,  
Olympia, Washington Territory,  
July 26th, 1862.  
CAPT. J. W. STEPHENSON,  
near Cascade City, W. T.

*Dear Sir:*

When I last parted with you when I left Edwards County, Illinois, for Washington City, D. C., I had no expectation that you and your family would have left our old neighborhood for the Columbia River, before I should reach Albion again on my return from Washington. And on finding you had come to this country, I then had no particular expectation of following you so far to the West.

Before I left Edwards County, I called at Miss Jane Taites to enquire for your address, and told Jane that if she had any letters or other thing to send to you, that I would cheerfully bring it with me when I came and I would endeavor to hunt you up, and contrive to get it safely to you. So about two weeks afterwards, she brought a letter for Mrs. Stephenson, just before I started, and I packed it carefully away with some letters of introduction I brought to persons already settled in this territory, and I have not yet been able to find the package of said letters with Jane Taites' included amongst them, and I have delayed writing to you ever since I landed here on the 16th of June, because I have not yet been able to find Jane's letter to Mrs. Stephenson, but I am determined to go immediately and examine every package of papers I placed very carefully in my trunk and I will not give up the search until I have found it, unless through some mistake, I have accidentally left the parcels of letters at home after carefully packing them up.

Afternoon, 26th of July, 1862.

Well Sir:—Nothing so good as determined perseverance; I have had a thorough overhauling, and I have found the said package of



letters very carefully put inside of another bundle of letters and papers, and herewith I enclose Jane Taites' letter to her sister Mrs. Stephenson, and I beg your good wife's pardon for my negligence in putting her sister's letter into such a very safe place, that I could not find it again when I wanted it, to forward to her as soon as I had reached this place.

I left Albion on the morning of Saturday, the 26th of April, 1862; left New York on Thursday, May 1st; reached Aspenwall on the evening of the 9th and left there next morning in the railroad cars and crossed the Isthmus of Darien to Old Panama. The Pacific Railroad Dock is entirely outside the limits of the town of Panama. The water is too shallow to allow the large steamships to come nearer than about three miles distant from Panama—so they employ small shallow-draught steamer to carry our passengers from the wharf at the end of the railroad to the large seagoing passenger steamships stationed three miles off, and while the small steamer was taking our cargo to the ship, I went into and through the old Spanish town of Panama. On the evening of the 10th we were all on board the Orizaba of 1,400 tons and sailed or rather weighed anchor and steamed away with about 1,500 passengers for San Francisco on the 17th, went into the harbor of Acapulco, laid there six hours taking in coal, fresh water, fruits, etc. Acapulco is one of the finest harbors in the world; there were four English ships of war at anchor in the harbor; we went in at the south entrance and when we left we went out through the north entrance, there being an island stretching across the mouth of the harbor, with wide spaces of deep water, between the island and the main land, leaving two fine outlets from the harbor into the Pacific; the shores (all around the anchorage in the harbor and along the island and main lands, adjoining both sides of the entrance), rise gradually from the edge of the water to a lofty height. The harbor and its two entrances may be said to be surrounded by very high hills. We reached San Francisco on the morning of the 26th, and I left there on the 29th of May on the Sierra Nevada for Victoria on Vancouver Island, reached there on the 2nd of June, left there on the 3rd and reached the mouth of the Columbia on the evening of the 4th, and arrived at Portland on the 5th; went that evening to Vancouver, and saw Colonel Steinberger, then commanding officer; staid that night with Major Francis, formerly editor of the Springfield Journal, Illinois, for many years, now a paymaster in the U. S. Army. General Benjamin Alvord of Vancouver is now commanding officer of the military of this district. Went to Portland the next morning, the 6th of June, staid there two or three days, until I could leave on board

the ocean steamer "Brother Jonathan" on the 9th for Victoria again; arrived there on the 11th and again had to wait a few days for a steamer; left Victoria on the 14th, reached Westminster, up Frazers River, that night, and touched at Port Townsend at the entrance to Puget Sound, and touched at Seattle and Steillacoom and landed here on the 16th of June.

The first days out from New York the weather was very cool, with a pretty rough sea, most of the passengers seasick; on the fourth day the wind moderated and the sea became smoother and the seasickness abated. The weather became very warm as we proceeded southward; the 7th, 8th and 9th of May the weather was very hot—and at Aspinwall, the night we staid there, was too hot and sultry to sleep; on the 10th, at Panama, it was hot beyond endurance. The Catholic Church, with its thick walls of roughly built, unchiselled rock, was the only cool place I found in that old dilapidated old Spanish town. Both at Aspinwall, across the Isthmus, and at Panama, the cocoanuts are hanging on the trees at all stages of ripeness, and plaintains of all kinds growing wild. Oranges, lemons with pine-apples, are offered at all the states, in the streets, and at all the stores.

The weather was very hot for ten days after leaving Panama, and at Acapulco, on the 17th, it was sultry and very hot. I went on shore and walked round the old Spanish fort, tolerably strong walls, but could easily be knocked into heaps of stone rubbish with their present heavy shot and shell in use at this time by the United States gunboats and Mortar Boats.

Hot weather continued three or four days after we left Acapulco, when on the evening of the 21st (I think it was), the wind blew a gale from the north, so very cold that with two coats on, well buttoned up, I could not stay on deck, the wind was so very cold.

After that night, the days were moderately warm, and the nights quite cool, until we reached San Francisco, and ever since the nights have all been cool. It appears to be one of the peculiar characters of this climate to have cool nights throughout summer.

Well sir, I want to hear from you. Pray write back immediately and tell me how your own health is at this time, how Mrs. Stephenson's health is and all your family, and I have forgotten your daughters' names, all but Barbara's; tell me their names, beginning with the oldest and take them all in order of their ages and which is married, their husbands' names, and where they live.

Tell me what sort of winter you had last, at your place, and what sort of land you have had the luck to settle on this time, whether

prairie or timber, what sort of soil, how much you have fenced, how many acres of wheat, how many bushels of wheat, oats, barley, peas, etc., you get per acre, for each year ever since you have been on your present farm. Where is your farm located? how far from the banks of the Columbia River? where is the landing place nearest to your house, and how shall I know how to find you and that landing place? by what name or by what mark, on the bank of the Columbia River? for if I go up the river to Walla Walla this fall along with Mr. Hale, the superintendent of Indian Affairs, as I now intend to do, I shall certainly land at the nearest place to your house and come to see you all. What town is nearest to you, and how far are you from your nearest town? how far from Vancouver? how far from Cascades? It is very costly and expensive traveling in this country. If a man had a good horse and started early in the mornings, he could come from your house here in three days, I should think. If you could ride over without the cost of your journey, making it a pain of a pleasure, I should be glad to see you, but I shall be away from this place a good deal of my time this fall, and I should feel sorry if you came here while I happened to be away. Sec. Turney from Fairfield is here, Secretary of the Territory, but although he professes to be a Republican since 1856, yet he is as contrary as any Democrat can be. I think his having been the Acting Governor from the time he came here until my arrival, at least very good men here think that has spoiled him. I do not like to say anything more on that unpleasant subject, but I am very much grieved at the courses he has adopted and pursued. I am very deeply grieved at the way he has acted, and the way he is going on now, but no matter how sorry I am for it, I cannot help it. He is as obstinately self-willed as he ever was when he was a ramping, unscrupulous Democrat. But however much grieved I feel, I beg you not to mention it to any person, for I do not want to speak unkindly of him or any other person. You will see by the paper that notwithstanding the great preparations, the Rebels had for many years been making for war, and how entirely unprepared the United States Government were when the Rebellion broke out, yet how thoroughly the United States Army has driven the Rebels at almost every conflict, and although the Rebels very frequently had the greatest number. Edwards County has sent about 360 men into the Volunteer Army out of 960 voters, and I believe they can raise another company yet in Edwards, if needed.

My sincere respects to yourself and Mrs. Stephenson and to your children, for John and most of your daughters will recollect me, although I suppose I should not recognize any of them if I should

meet them, for they were all small when I saw them last, and now they have grown entirely out of the size and shape they were in when I knew them. Write to me as soon as you receive this and tell me all that you think will be news to me. Yours truly,

WILLIAM PICKERING.



## CHIEF SLUSKIN'S TRUE NARRATIVE

In the correspondence and statements which went the rounds of some of the Coast papers during October, 1915, a great injustice was done Chief Sluskin, of the Yakimas. The interview of the chief by an over-zealous correspondent, reported that the aged Indian acted as guide for the Stevens-Van Trump expedition to the great mountain in 1870. Chinook jargon is, at best, a very unsatisfactory medium of conversation when questions of importance are at stake, and, unfortunately, the chief was credited with statements he did not make. Sluskin has never claimed to have acted as guide for the explorers of 1870. Inadvertently I was led to corroborate the published error, but when my attention was directed to it, I determined to sift the affair directly with the chief. This I did in November, 1915, in four different interviews, and with two interpreters. The narrative was given to a Tacoma paper, after which I had a fifth talk with the venerable tribesman, in which a few minor errors were corrected and some new data obtained. The result is here given in full. It is the clear, simple statement of the Sluskin of today, devoid of perversive injections. Those who are closely acquainted with Chief Sluskin believe him incapable of willful prevarication. Seemingly he had no knowledge of the 1870 expedition. To a direct query, he plainly stated that he knew nothing of this exploration of later years. That the chief did act as guide for two white men who visited the mountain just subsequent to the treaty at Walla Walla, should now be conceded. The facts are too obvious to be ignored.

Who were those mysterious strangers? While the chief may be in error a year or two, either way, it is not at all possible that the explorers were either Dr. Tolmie, who visited the mountain in 1833, or General Kautz, some twenty-four years later. The riddle is one for the student and historian to solve.

Chief Sluskin's narrative is as follows:

"I am thinking of my people—the old people who are no more—and of this country which once belonged to us. I was raised here since the sun was created, and I do not want to speak the lie. You white people, you big men, I know what you are thinking, but you ought to listen to me. You were lucky to come here, but I am sorry the way you have treated us. You now have all but a little of our land. I wanted everything straight. Governor Stevens was to settle all the troubles, and for this, he called the big Indians to Walla

Walla in council. I was there as a boy to care for the horses of Chief Owhi. After the treaty Governor Stevens finished the work [arrangements] and in about four years we were to go on the reservation.

"It was, I think, one or two years after this, our people were camping above the [now] Moxee bridge [about two miles east of North Yakima]. For a long time a big topis [pine] tree stood there.<sup>1</sup>

"One day an old man, Ya-num-kun, came to me and said: 'Two King George men come.' I look and see them. Both were short [scarce] middle age. They came to us. One was a short man—black eyes like Indian. Fine looking man, clean face. Some old Indians said: 'He is Mexican.' His clothes looked like corduroy. He wore a hat, and had a big, banded, flint-lock pistol. It shot big bullets.

"The other man was tall, slender, not good looking, but about right. He had brown, not quite red, hair on upper lip. Had light hair and brown eyes. He looked some mixed blood with white, just little mixed. He had gray clothes and cap. Had long flint-lock gun with ilquis [wood] all along the barrel.<sup>2</sup> Barrel was round and shot big ball wrapped in blanket [patching]. I found the short man had strongest mind.

"They rode Indian horses, one blue [or roan]. Had two pack-horses, one buckskin. No big, or American horses, here then. All cayuses. No white men here. Old man Thorp had not come.<sup>3</sup>

"They wanted to know a man who could go to Tahoma, the 'White Mountain.' The old people were afraid and said: 'Do not show them

<sup>1</sup>The Yakimas were camped on the Moxee side of the Yakima River, east of the present city of North Yakima. The large pine tree, still remembered by many of the older white settlers, was in later years cut down.

<sup>2</sup>Chief Sluskin's statement that these men were armed with flint-locks has been cited as reflecting on the truth of his entire narrative that such weapons were at that time obsolete. I brought this fact to his notice and he vehemently insisted that he was correct. He came to my house and I showed him both a flint-lock musket and rifle. He discarded the former and taking the rifle, pointed out wherein it was like the one carried by the taller of the strangers. The only difference was in the barrels. That owned by the explorer was **round**, while the one examined is **octagon**. Taking the powder horn, the aged Indian showed in pantomime how it was loaded. After the powder was measured and poured into the muzzle, the large bullet was put in a "**blanket**" and rammed home, after which priming placed in the "**pan**." The older Indians generally use the term "**musket**" in describing all guns used in an early day. The ground taken by the critics is not well founded. It is an historical fact that flint-locks were in use in many isolated localities long after the introduction of the percussion cap. Captain Bog-gess' company of militia called out in Lewis County (now), West Virginia, at the commencement of the Civil War, were armed with flint-lock muskets. Captain McNeill's company of Confederate Spartans, when surrendered at the close of the war, were to lay down their arms above Romney, on the Wappatomaka, Virginia. Nothing but antiquated guns, including many flint-locks, were found. It is said that the men concealed their better arms and the old guns were procured for the purpose of carrying out the terms of surrender. No more than a quarter of a century ago an old hunter in West Virginia killed a bear with his ancient flint-lock.

<sup>3</sup>F. M. Thorp was the first settler in the Yakima Valley. He came there in 1861 and his homestead was in the Moxee. He had come to Oregon in 1844.

the trail. They want to find money [mineral]. Then the Indians asked: 'Why do you go to the White Mountain?' The men said: 'We are Governor Stevens' boys [employes]. We came up the river from Walla Walla, and are looking for reservation line made at treaty. They had long glass to look through.

"Then the old people said: 'All right!' They told me to show the white men the trail. I am old man Sluskin now. I was young then. My father raised me here. I knew the trail. I asked my father if I must go. He said: 'Yes.' I was not afraid. It was about the middle of June, and patches of snow still in mountains.

"I started, leading the buckskin pack-horse and my extra saddle-horse. I took them to mouth of Tieton and camped. We got lots of trout—plenty of fish.

"Next day we traveled and camped in Tieton Basin. The white men catch plenty of fish again.

"Next day we went to Ai-yi [trout] and camped. [This was Fish Lake.] We camped at mouth of river at head of lake.

"We went on big ridge near head of Natches River and camped. Next morning the men looked with glass every way.

"Then we started and went to Tahoma, the big 'White Mountain.' The men look all around; south side is bad. They asked me about west side. Yes, I knew it. On sunny side [east] water comes out, called mook-mook. Dirty water from middle of mountain and ice. The tall man killed young yamis [deer] as we crossed the mook-mook. Shot it as it passed in front of us. This was all the game killed.

"We got to ridge-like place and found plenty green grass and nice lake, good sized, called Wah-tum. We camped there. The men looked everywhere with glass.

"The Sum-sum [sharp ridge] runs down from the mountain. It was covered with wou [mountain sheep].

"The men ask if I could catch sheep for them. I told them 'No! Only when they have young one.' They said, 'If you catch one we will buy it. Big one.' I never try to catch that sheep. Too wild. That night we roast yamis for supper.

"Next morning we went to a lake, not a big lake, only tenas [little] big, at foot of mountain. We got there about one hour after noon, camped and had dinner. This was north side of mountain.

"Next morning the men took glass up the mountain and looked. They asked if I could take them to top of mountain. I did not know the trail. Too many splits in ice. No! I was not afraid of bad spirits. Maybe that is all lie. We camped over night and roasted yamis. The men said, 'In morning we go somewhere.'

"Next morning I saw them put lunch in pockets and leave camp. I did not know where they go, but they start up the mountain. They put on shoes to walk on ice. No! not snow-shoes, but shoes with nails in two places like this [heel and toe]. They started early at daylight and came back after dark same day. I stayed in camp all day and thought they fell in ice split and died. At night I saw smoke go up from top of mountain, and I heard it like low thunder. [Here the chief gave an imitation of the noise he heard, in a deep, guttural throat sound, not unlike the distant rumble of thunder]. The men did not tell me if they heard this sound.

"The white men told me they went on top of mountain and looked with glass along Cascades toward Okanogan and British Columbia, Lake Chelan and everywhere. They said, 'We find lines.' They told me they set stick, or rock on top of mountain. I did not understand much Chinook, and could not tell if wood or stone. They said, 'Ice all over top, lake in center, and smoke [or steam] coming out all around like sweat-house.'

"Next day I started home and did not know where these men went. I left them there. I do not know if they got other Indians to guide. Before I left, each man gave me a double blanket and shirt. They gave me a cotton handkerchief, big and green striped. A finger ring [plain brass band] lots of pins and fish hooks. Too-nes [steel], and sow-kus [flint] to make fire, a file and [common] hatchet. They gave me a lunch of yamis. I was two days and a half getting home.

"On this trip," concluded the chief, "I tasted bread for first time. It was nice. We had no coffee, only some kind of tea made from berries I did not know.

When asked if he ever heard of any other strangers visiting the "White Mountain" in the early days, he answered:

"Soon, not many snows after, I guided these men; we heard that four white men were in the Cowlitz. All the big men [chiefs] held council and said, 'We will go see what these men want.' We started to Cowlitz about berry-time and went to Fish Lake. There came to our camp, Poniah, Kom-kane and Koo-ciash, whose hand, I forget which one, had been broken. It was crooked in the joints. We had council and these old men told us the white men had two horses and two mules.

"After council we went to see the white men. One of them was old man Longmire.<sup>4</sup> We asked, 'Why are you here?' They said, 'Only to see the country. We are looking for a mine found by Poniah.'

---

<sup>4</sup>Mr. David Longmire, son of "old man Longmire," tells me that this description and location of the mining party tallies with the known facts in the case.



Then we would not bother them, because they only came to see the mine."

To a question:

"Yes, I was there. I saw those men. Most white men coming here came to see me. I was born here, grew up here and in the Cowlitz country. I knew all the trails. I am telling the truth. I am not fooling. Longmire at that time looked to be about thirty or thirty-five years old, not very tall, but near middle size, not very heavy."

In answer to further questions, the chief replied:

"I did not think either of the men I took to Tahoma were sons of Governor Stevens. They only worked for him, his boys. Most Indians thought they were King George men. I did not know their names. They did not tell me.

"There were no white people living here when I guided to the white mountain. We saw lots of deer, lots of sheep and plenty of yeet-tah [goats].

"The name of the white mountain is Tahoma. It was called that before the white people came. It was Tahoma, standing up to the skies. We sometimes called it the White Mountain.

"We met but two persons, Indian boys, Charley Toom-kins [possibly Tompkins] was one of them. Met them this side of Tieton Basin.

"I am no relation to the Sluskin [note difference in the name] with the crippled hand [guide to the Stevens-Van Trump expedition]. He was half-brother to my wife on the father's side. He used to live at Thoppenish [corrupted to Toppenish] about six miles below Moolmool [Fort Simcoe]. He worked at the Agency. He went to Cowlitz and married two sisters, daughters of Poniu. He wore two sleigh-bells, suspended under each arm, and they thought him a big chief. His little finger on right hand was gone. He was drowned in the Yakima River several years ago. Never found his body. I never heard he took two men to the White Mountain. My crippled thumb [right hand] I broke in a fight with four Columbia River Indians. We were gambling. My thumb was caught in blanket.

"The Sluskin hanged at Old Town [Yakima City] for helping kill the Perkins' people, was a Columbia River Indian, and not a Yakima. I am a Yakima, and no kin to him. My father's mother was a Cowlitz woman. My mother was a Yakima named So-patkt. My father was a Yakima, named We-owkt. He was a chief.

"If you do not understand my talk—if not interpreted straight—then you will write it as a lie. It must be right. Chinook [jargon]

is not good for story. I am glad to have two interpreters. You must get this story as I tell it.

"White people are always making me stand up and talk. Why is this? I do not understand what they want. They get me tangled. Then the temis [paper] tells my talk different from my words. I do not want this. It is a lie. It is same as stealing. I did not show the White Mountain to Stevens and another man. I only guided the two strange men there. I have given you my true story. It is all that I have told to anyone. I never told it but once before this. I did not know what they wanted. You are the first man to tell me about the Stevens man going to the White Mountain. But you say that he went there long time after we had all gone on the reservation. I know nothing about this. It was before we went on the reservation that I took the white men over the trail to Tahoma.

LUCULLUS V. McWHORTER.

North Yakima, November, 1916.

## WASHINGTON FORTS OF THE FUR TRADE REGIME

For our better understanding, let us consider this period of our history as a drama in three acts. The first act is entitled "The Pacific Fur Company, or Astoria." The second act is "The North-West Company, or Spokane House." The third is "The Hudson's Bay Company, or Vancouver." It may be well also to consider a prologue called "The Spanish Dream" and an epilogue, "Uncle Sam's Army Arrives on the Scene."

The first establishment in our state was by the Spaniards at Neah Bay in March, 1792. The settlement was called Nunez Gaona. It was built by the Spaniard Fidalgo, acting under orders from Bodega y Quadra at Nootka. At the height of the famous Nootka<sup>1</sup> controversy it looked as if the British would win all lands north of the Straits of Juan de Fuca and that the Spaniards could hold the country south of the Straits only by actual and immediate occupation. Out of this necessity grew the expedition under Fidalgo to Neah Bay in March, 1792, shortly before Vancouver and the Spanish explorers Galiano and Valdez entered the Straits.

But the Spanish had orders, or at least advices, from their government not to enter the fur trade and not to promote any company or organization for the fur trade. Aside from mere occupation, the establishment was an agricultural experiment. The buildings in course of construction were of Spanish brick, on the slight rise just north of Washburn Brothers' general store at Neah Bay. The establishment was abandoned in October,<sup>2</sup> for Bodega y Quadra had found some of Meares' claims so flimsy that he now had hopes of holding even the region north of the Straits for Spain.

In the scant eight months that Nunez Gaona was occupied it boasted an abundance of cattle, poultry, hogs, sheep, goats, etc.<sup>3</sup> The Spanish friars were very active in missionary work, baptizing and teaching among the various Makah tribes. This missionary work seems to have begun at least a year before Fidalgo arrived at Neah Bay in the *Princessa*, for Gray in 1791 found Indians south of Cape Flattery who proved beyond doubt that they had been baptized into the Catholic faith. The chief rebuked Gray's crew for their irreligious<sup>4</sup> manner of life. All this did not, however, prevent the usual clash be-

<sup>1</sup>Bancroft, *History of the Northwest Coast*, Vol. I., p. 286.

<sup>2</sup>New Vancouver Journal, p. 32.

<sup>3</sup>Ibid.

<sup>4</sup>John Hoskins, *Narrative of a Voyage to the Northwest Coast of America and China, 1790-93*. Transcript in Provincial Archives, Victoria, B. C. See p. 99.

tween Spaniards and natives at Neah Bay. As the unknown author of the newly discovered Vancouver journal puts it:

"The first pilot of the *Princessa*,<sup>5</sup> going on shore with his fowling-piece, to amuse himself shooting, after proceeding a little distance from where he landed, was dragged by a party of the natives (with whom till that time they had been on most amicable terms) into the woods, where they stripped him naked, and taking his gun from him, which was loaded with ball, they shot him dead with it. No provocation was known to have been given. Seigr. Fidalgo therefore determined very properly to punish these savages for so atrocious a crime in a manner that it well deserved and with a severity that would make them ever remember it and deter them from committing such for the future. He fired indiscriminately on the whole tribe, laid the village waste, and routed them so successfully that they fled to the opposite side of the Straits."

Such is the account of the first establishment in our state and the third battle with the Indians.<sup>6</sup> From the Spanish attempt to settle nothing permanent resulted.

The second establishment within what is now our state was by the British overland from Canada. Gradually the North-West Company of Montreal had pushed over the Rockies under the leadership of their great explorer, David Thompson. He established Kootanae House, at the very source of the Columbia, in 1807<sup>7</sup>. In 1809<sup>8</sup> he built Kullyspell House near the present Hope, Idaho, and Saleesh House<sup>9</sup> near Thompson Falls, Montana. In the late summer of 1810<sup>10</sup> two of his men, Finlay and McDonald, entered the present state of Washington and established the famous Spokane House. To Jaco Finlay<sup>11</sup> probably belongs the credit for selecting the site and erecting the first buildings at Spokane House. The spot is about ten miles northwest of the city of Spokane, about one-half mile up the Spokane river from the junction of the Little Spokane, and on the north bank of the river. On this sheltered, flat peninsula between the two rivers Indians were accustomed to gather<sup>12</sup> in great numbers to dry their fish. Spokane was always the most important trade emporium of the North-West Company this side of the Rockies.

<sup>5</sup>New Vancouver Journal, p. 32.

<sup>6</sup>The first was the fight between Quadra and the Quinaults in 1775; the second between Captain Barkley and the natives near Destruction Island, 1787.

<sup>7</sup>David Thompson, Narrative of His Explorations in Western America, p. 375.

<sup>8</sup>Ibid., p. 410-11.

<sup>9</sup>Ibid., p. XCI and p. 417-18.

<sup>10</sup>Ibid., p. 464.

<sup>11</sup>Journal of David Thompson, note by T. C. Elliott, Oregon Hist. Soc. Quart., Vol. XV., p. 125.

<sup>12</sup>Mr. T. C. Elliott's note in Thompson's Narrative of His Explorations in Western America, p. 46.



But you will remember that I set out by calling the North-West Company the second act in the drama; and as we haven't had the first act yet I am ahead of my story, except in a chronological sense. The first act was played by the Pacific Fur Company, usually known as the Astor Company. One year after the building of Spokane House, a fairly well equipped expedition<sup>13</sup> landed at the mouth of the Columbia and during the summer built Astoria, just beyond the borders of our state. But the company's most successful operation was within our state. During the same summer of 1811 a small party under David Stuart built Okanogan Post,<sup>14</sup> the third establishment in Washington. The site of this house is the southeast bank of the Okanogan river one-half mile from its junction with the Columbia.<sup>15</sup> The post consisted of only a small dwelling, 16x20, with storage for goods. Other buildings were added from time to time during the next three years.

Scarcely had the first building been completed when Stuart pushed on into the wilds of New Caledonia to the north, leaving only his clerk, Alexander Ross, in charge of the Okanogan trading. Winter set in and cut off Stuart's return, and Ross was alone with the Indians for 188 days. As he writes,<sup>16</sup> "Man was made to endure, and my only consolation was in my Bible." We may suspect, however, that he found some consolation in his collection of "1,550 beavers, besides other peltries, worth in the Canton market, 2,250 pounds sterling."<sup>17</sup>

In April, 1812, Robert Stuart came up the river leading a strong party with supplies for his uncle at Okanogan.<sup>18</sup> More important still, John Clarke led an expedition<sup>19</sup> by the way of the Snake and the Palouse to Spokane, where he had the daring to establish Fort Spokane alongside the Spokane House that David Thompson's men had built two years before for the North-West Company. This opposition led to a very lively trade war, which was certainly not diminished when the United States that same year, 1812, declared war on Great Britain. Fort Spokane, an Astor establishment, may be thought of as American; Spokane House, built by the North-West Company, was British. The two were contiguous<sup>20</sup> to each other, according to Ross; alongside, according to Ross Cox and others.

During the ensuing year, 1813,<sup>21</sup> Astoria was on tenter hooks. With news of the declaration of war, which was brought overland from

<sup>13</sup>See Ross, Franchere, Cox, and Irving's Astoria.

<sup>14</sup>Ross, Oregon Settlers, Ch. VII. and VIII.

<sup>15</sup>Judge Brown's "Old Fort Okanogan and the Okanogan Trail," in Oregon Historical Society Quarterly, Vol. XV., p. 14.

<sup>16</sup>Ross, Oregon Settlers, p. 146.

<sup>17</sup>Ibid., p. 150.

<sup>18</sup>Ibid., pp. 186 and 199.

<sup>19</sup>See Ross Cox and Alexander Ross.

<sup>20</sup>Ross, Oregon Settlers, p. 202.

<sup>21</sup>See Alexander Ross, Ross Cox, Gabriel Franchere, Irving's Astoria, and Dr. Coues, "New Light on the Early History of the Great Northwest."

Canada, came the information that a privateer and a man-of-war were both headed for the mouth of the Columbia river. This was in January. In February the partners decided to abandon their establishments. In March they were on the verge of famine. In April a brigade of North-Westers arrived and encamped under the guns of the fort. In May the Astorians secretly bought up horses to transport their rich stores of fur overland. In June the Okanogan and Spokane brigades came in with the richest returns yet, and the partners decided to keep up the establishment for another year. In July the North-Westers, starved out by the non-arrival of their privateer, retreated to Spokane House. In September they returned with ten canoes, flying the British flag. In October the North-Westers promised to buy Astoria; but expecting every day the arrival of their privateer, they held off, hoping to save their bills of exchange. In November the Astorians, fearing a ship of war hourly, loaded their cannon, pointed them at the North-Westers' camp, and with lighted matches forced them to buy. Thus Astoria was delivered up November 12, 1813, and the first act of our drama, the Pacific Fur Company, comes to an end.

In addition to Astoria, which they renamed Fort George, the North-West Company now had command of the two important posts within the boundaries of Washington; namely, Okanogan and Spokane House, with which Fort Spokane was now merged. The North-West Company in the Oregon country had no opposition; but, due to poor leadership, little development was attempted. The first improvement<sup>22</sup> was the rebuilding of Okanogan post under Ross Cox in 1816. The new post was one and one-half miles southeast<sup>23</sup> of the old. It was across the peninsula, and therefore on the banks of the main stream, the Columbia. Cox made fair progress, and by September he had completed a new dwelling, two good houses for his men, and a spacious store for furs and merchandise. Most of these buildings were of timber, though some adobe was used. The whole was surrounded by palisades fifteen feet high. The palisades were flanked by two bastions, each with a light four-pounder below and loopholes for musketry above.

For some years Alexander Ross and Donald McKenzie, better known as "Perpetual Motion" McKenzie, had contended for the establishment of a new post<sup>24</sup> at the forks of the Columbia, because the main North-West emporium, Spokane House, was an out-of-the-way place. To this, however, the bourgeois at Fort George said nay.

---

<sup>22</sup>Ross Cox, *Adventures on the Columbia*.

<sup>23</sup>Judge Brown's "Old Fort Okanogan and the Okanogan Trail," p. 19.

<sup>24</sup>Ross, *Fur-Hunters of the Far West*, Ch. IV.

Finally, in 1817, the partners in the great council house at Fort William on Lake Superior <sup>25</sup>ordered the new post built. Still the bourgeois at Fort George delayed furnishing the needed men, and it was not until 1818 that the new fort, Nez Perce, later known as Fort Walla Walla, was erected.<sup>26</sup> The site chosen was one and one-half miles west of the present town of Wallula. McKenzie and Ross, with ninety-five men, reached Walla Walla river July 11, 1818. They located about a half mile from the mouth of the Walla Walla, on the east bank of the Columbia. The site is a peninsula in ordinary stages of the river, but something like an island at flood.

Although the Indian report gave this as the exact spot where Lewis and Clark a dozen years before had celebrated a perpetual peace<sup>27</sup> with the Indians, the builders found the natives hostile, chiefly because John Clarke of Spokane House had hanged one of their relatives for a petty theft.<sup>28</sup> Furthermore, the builders found no timber; they had to collect the logs one hundred miles away and float them down the Walla Walla. First a temporary inclosure was made for the protection of the stores. When the fort proper was completed it was the most formidable<sup>29</sup> in the Northwest. It was surrounded by palisades of sawed timber twenty feet long, two and one-half feet wide and six inches thick. On top was a range of balustrades four feet high, which served the double purpose of ramparts and loopholes. A strong gallery five feet broad extended all around. At each angle was placed a reservoir sufficient to hold two hundred gallons of water, as a security against fire. Inside the wall were ranges of store houses and dwellings for the men. In front of these buildings another wall, twelve feet high, also with portholes and slip-doors, divided the buildings from the open square inside. Thus, should Indians at any time get in, they would see nothing but a wall before them on all sides. They could have no intercourse with the people inside unless by their consent. The outer gates opened and shut by a pulley; two more double doors also helped to secure the entrance. The natives were not admitted except on special occasions. All trade was carried on by means of an aperture in the walls, eighteen inches square, secured by an iron door. There were four mounted cannon, ten swivels, sixty stand of muskets, and bayonets, twenty boarding pikes, and a box of hand grenades. There were four strong wooden towers or bastions, and a cohorn or small mortar was above the gate. Ross proudly called his work "the Gibraltar of the Columbia, a triumph

---

<sup>25</sup>Ibid., Ch. VI.

<sup>26</sup>Ibid., Ch. VI.

<sup>27</sup>Ibid.

<sup>28</sup>Ibid. Also Ross Cox, *Adventures on the Columbia*.

<sup>29</sup>Ross Cox, *Adventures on the Columbia*, Ch. VII.

of British energy and enterprise." Such was the third, and in many ways the strongest <sup>30</sup> fort erected within the boundaries of our state.

The North-West Company was going forward slowly on the Columbia, because it was carrying on open war in the Red river district and other parts of Canada with the Hudson's Bay Company. This war itself did not affect our forts, but the outcome of it did; for in 1821 the two companies suddenly gave up the struggle and amalgamated, keeping the name of the older, the Hudson's Bay Company. Thus closes the second act of the drama; the North-West Company is no more.

The new chief factor for Hudson's Bay, Dr. John McLoughlin, began the third act of the drama with wonderful foresight and indomitable energy. Three new posts were to be established at once, and Spokane House and Fort George at Astoria were to be abandoned. One of the new posts, near the mouth of the Willamette, was to be the commercial center of the vast empire which had fallen to Hudson's Bay. After most painstaking surveys the three new posts were located at Vancouver, Kettle Falls, and Nisqually.

The first site of Fort Vancouver, selected by Governor Simpson in the winter of 1824-1825 was the spot<sup>31</sup> where the state asylum for the deaf now stands. It was partly constructed in 1825,<sup>32</sup> so that the goods and effects at Fort George were removed to the new post. It was finished in 1826. It was named Vancouver because it was thought to be near the place named Point Vancouver by Lieut. Broughton in 1792; but Point Vancouver was in reality some miles up the river, opposite Corbett, Oregon. Notwithstanding the careful survey, the new fort was no sooner completed than found inconveniently located, because it was too high above <sup>33</sup>and too far from the river for portage purposes, and water was obtainable only with great difficulty. Within two years a second post, the Fort Vancouver well known to the settlers, was in process of construction. It was built on the low flat just below the parade grounds of Vancouver barracks. This fort was a parallelogram<sup>34</sup> 226 yards long, 106 yards wide, enclosed by a picket wall fifteen feet high. Originally there was a bastion at the northwest corner, but cannon were always more a matter of ornamentation than of use. In the interior were about twenty-five buildings, all of wood except the powder magazine, which was of brick and stone.

<sup>30</sup>See Warre and Vavasour's Report, Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart., Vol. X., p. 42.

<sup>31</sup>See Warre and Vavasour's Map, Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart., Vol. X., No. 1.

<sup>32</sup>Journal and Letters of David Douglas, Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart., Vol. V., p. 248.

<sup>33</sup>Lieut. Vavasour's Engineering Report, Ore. Hist. Quart., Vol. X., p. 85 and p. 46.

<sup>34</sup>Ibid., p. 85.



A short distance west and near the river landing a village<sup>35</sup> of about fifty houses for mechanics and servants was built in rows so as to form streets. Here also were a hospital, a boat house, a salmon house, and near by were barns, threshing mills, granaries, and dairy buildings. The hall within the stockade has been called "an oasis in the vast social desert of Oregon." It was a fairy land to early travelers and settlers.

In the same year that Vancouver was begun, a force of mechanics squared the timbers for the new fort above Kettle Falls, Fort Colville. During the summer of 1725 Governor Simpson staked out the site on the flat or "little nick," as John Work called it, just south of the present city of Marcus, within sound of Kettle Falls still farther to the south.<sup>36</sup> Fort Colville was not extensively fortified. It was first occupied in 1826; Spokane House was abandoned at the same time. From the first Colville was strongly interested in agriculture as a matter of self-preservation, for Governor Simpson had said that no food supply from Vancouver would be transported to a post so distant.

The last of all the fur-trade posts of our state was built at Nisqually in 1833. The region had been hastily explored by John Work<sup>37</sup> nine years before; more definitely by Archibald McDonald in the spring of 1833. The complete story of the founding of this place is told in the *Journal of Occurrences at Nisqually House*, ably edited by Mr. Clarence Bagley of Seattle and published in the *Washington Historical Quarterly*, Vol. VI, nos. 3 and 4, and Vol. VII, nos. 1 and 2. In the spring of 1833, McDonald, on a trading expedition to the Sound, erected a trading house<sup>38</sup> and naval depot, 15x20, and left three men there to clear the ground and plant seed. This first store was just south of the mouth of Sequelichew creek. May 30, having come from Vancouver by the Cowlitz, McDonald arrived again at his embryo establishment<sup>39</sup> and immediately set his men to work building a farm house on the edge of the plain above the high bank, one-half mile from the store. Ten days later the schooner Vancouver arrived with supplies and within two weeks from McDonald's arrival we have this picture from the *Journal*<sup>40</sup>:

"A good deal of stir about the little establishment this afternoon; canoes arriving by sea—dozens of horses and riders by land, two plows at work on an endless plain, and a ship riding at anchor before the

<sup>35</sup>Ibid., p. 46.

<sup>36</sup>Journal of John Work, Sept. 7, 1825-Sept. 15, 1826. *Washington Hist. Quarterly*, Vol. V, and Vol. VI.

<sup>37</sup>Journal of John Work, November and December, 1824. *Wash. Hist. Quart.*, Vol. III.

<sup>38</sup>Journal of Occurrence at Nisqually House, Vol. VI., p. 180.

<sup>39</sup>Ibid., p. 182.

<sup>40</sup>Ibid., p. 186.

camp, is a scene I venture to say not very common in the Indian country; far less at a new establishment."

In a few days McDonald left the work in charge of Dr. Tolmie until the arrival of Chief Trader Heron. The first fort erected was to be a temporary affair, at the immediate summit of the bank. Scarcely had the ground been cleared when a better place was found in the woods to the south. Here a temporary store was erected, the Indians carrying the goods up the bank. July 21, 1833, the observation of Sunday was instituted amongst the neighboring tribes. In August the temporary posts were torn down and the timbers carried to the new site. The schooner *Cadboro* now arrived, and Chief Trader Heron, who had been partial to Whidby Island<sup>41</sup> as a site to answer for both Fort Langley and Fort Nisqually, embarked on her for another reconnoissance of Whidby. After his return Dr. Tolmie made his botanizing excursion towards the mountain, and was the first to view the great glaciers there.<sup>42</sup>

At the new post, after the store was well under way, dwellings and stockade were the next concern. Indians were employed to bring clay from the island (apparently Anderson) for the chimneys.<sup>43</sup> The main house was 55x20 with twelve-foot walls. October 20 a gale blew down the newly erected stockade, but did not damage the store and dwellings. During October a road was built from the beach to the fort. By November the erection of the stockade was completed. In December the squaring of timbers for bastions was begun. These were to be used either at Nisqually or at Whidby, as might later be determined upon.<sup>44</sup> When Nisqually House was completed it consisted of the usual bastioned stockade, store, dwellings, kitchen, Indian hall, and farm buildings of all descriptions. Later another Indian hall was built outside the stockade for stranger Indians. Although the success of Nisqually as a fur post was approved by the big wigs at Vancouver,<sup>45</sup> yet a reader of the journal always feels the greater importance of the agricultural part of the establishment.

Such were the six primary posts: Spokane House, Okanogan, Nez Perces, Vancouver, Colville, and Nisqually, ruled by the Hudson's Bay Company. There were minor establishments at Chinook, Cowlitz landing, and the mouth of the Cowlitz, but they depended upon the greater posts. Soon after his arrival Dr. McLoughlin abolished the traffic in liquor. Regarding this first prohibition movement, the first

---

<sup>41</sup>Wash. Hist. Quart., Vol. I., pp. 77-81.

<sup>42</sup>Ibid.

<sup>43</sup>Journal of Occurrences, Vol. VI., p. 195.

<sup>44</sup>Ibid., p. 273.

<sup>45</sup>Ibid., p. 160.

time our territory went "dry," the two English spies, Warre and Vavasour, wrote in their report of 1845<sup>46</sup>:

"The total abolition of the sale of intoxicating liquors has done much for the good of the whole community, white as well as Indian; and so long as this abstinence (which can hardly be called voluntary) continues the country will prosper. When prohibition is withdrawn, and the intercourse with the world thrown open, such is the character of the dissolute and only partially reformed American and Canadian settlers that every evil must be anticipated, and the unfortunate Indian will be the first to suffer."

At three of the establishments, Colvile, Vancouver, and Cowlitz, Catholic churches were established; by Jesuits at Colvile, by itinerant priests from Red River at Vancouver, and by Oblate Fathers at Cowlitz. At other posts, notably Nisqually, though no priests came for a long time, the chief traders or the clerks taught religion regularly. Under date of December 22, 1833, Sunday, Chief Trader Heron<sup>47</sup> records:

"Several Indian families came in as usual to get some religious instruction—I began to give them some instruction soon after my arrival which they treated with much indifference, but I have at length succeeded in altering their savage natures so far that they not only listen with attention to what I tell them, but actually practice it."

In August of the next year McDonald<sup>48</sup> enters under Sunday, the 10th:

"The natives assembled and requested me to point out to them what was proper for them to act in regard to our Divine Being. I told them that they should endeavor to keep their hands from killing and stealing, to love one another, and to pray only to the Great Master of life, or as they say, the Great Chief who resides on high. In fact I did my best to make them understand good and evil. They on their part promised fair, and had their devotional dance, for without it they would think very little of what we say to them."

In 1846 the treaty between the United States and England left all these posts stranded south of the 49th parallel of latitude. By 1869 the arbitration treaty settlement arranged that the United States should pay the Hudson's Bay Company \$450,000 and the Puget Sound Agricultural Company, a subsidiary, \$200,000 for all their property.<sup>49</sup> Thus ends the third act of the drama.

There remains only for us to see what finally becomes of these old posts after the United States soldiers came upon the scene.

<sup>46</sup>Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart., Vol. 10, p. 57.

<sup>47</sup>Journal of Occurrences, p. 272, of Vol. VI.

<sup>48</sup>Ibid., Vol. VII., p. 70.

<sup>49</sup>Mr. Bagley's Introduction to Journal of Occurrences.

Spokane House, first built, was likewise first abandoned. It was never reoccupied except occasionally by Indians and hunters. When Uncle Sam's troops came to the region the fort was established near Spokane Falls, ten miles up stream, and named Fort Wright. Of the first settlement in our state nothing remains but four cellar holes or chimney bottoms, in the midst of which a log cabin of certainly later date looks as if it might be a relic of the first Spokane House.

Of the next oldest, Okanogan, nothing remains of either fort but cellar holes and fragments of the foundation and chimneys.<sup>50</sup> The older, or Astor fort, is better marked than Fort Okanogan of the Hudson's Bay Company, which was so long the company's gateway to New Caledonia. The last Caledonian brigade came down the Okanogan Trail in 1847<sup>51</sup> Because of the boundary settlement and the Cayuse war, thereafter the brigades went over the Fort Hope trail to Fort Langley.<sup>52</sup> General McClellan<sup>53</sup> passed Okanogan in 1853 on the Northern Pacific Survey, and called it a "ruinous establishment." A few years later came the gold rush; soon after, the buildings at Okanogan disappeared, probably to build miners' fires and to make sluice boxes. No military post was established in this vicinity.

The third post established, Nez Perces, or Fort Walla Walla, was burned to the ground in spite of the precautions of the four great reservoirs of water. This was in 1841, while the Red River immigrants were encamped about the fort. These immigrants<sup>54</sup> came on to Cowlitz prairie and Nisqually and became the first settlers in the neighborhood of Tacoma. The Hudson's Bay Company immediately rebuilt Fort Nez Perce, but this time it was built entirely of adobe and stone. The bricks were made of clay procured near by; also the wild rye used in the adobe grew near the spot. This adobe fort was the one known to settlers. It was from here that rescue came at the time of the Whitman massacre. This fort remained standing until about 1894, when it was washed away by the flood. Only the foundations can be seen at the present time. When United States troops came they were established at a different place, near the present city of Walla Walla, whereas the old fort was at the present Wallula.

Of Fort Vancouver, so far as I know, nothing remains. Walking about Vancouver Barracks, near the landing, you will see an apple tree bearing a legend to the effect that it is the oldest apple tree in the Northwest and was raised from seed planted at Vancouver in

<sup>50</sup>Judge Brown, "Old Fort Okanogan and the Okanogan Trail," p. 35.

<sup>51</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 29.

<sup>52</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 29.

<sup>53</sup>Exploration for a Railroad from the Mississippi to the Pacific Ocean, Vol. XII, Part I.

<sup>54</sup>Warre and Vavasour's Report, p. 48.



1826. Though the post by the present barracks was not begun till 1828, the story is still possible, as the tree would have been transplanted from the first site; but most accounts agree in locating the orchard much farther back from the river. The site of the second fort has been a United States military post since 1849, known first as Fort Columbia and now as Vancouver Barracks. The Hudson's Bay Company left in 1863.

Fort Colville was abandoned about 1872; the remnant of it, McDonald's dwelling, burned a few years ago, so that nothing but a few brick and some scattered lumber mark the spot. When United States troops came into this region they were sent not to Fort Colville, but to Mill creek, some fifteen miles east, where a government fort, also called Colville (spelled with two ls this time) was built about 1858 or 9, to protect the settlers who had built the town which, soon after it was built, was moved four miles south to the present city of Colville. Of the United States government Fort Colville nothing is left but the fragments of the foundations, for the present owner of the farm got tired of tourists tramping over his field and burned the building to the ground.

There remains only Nisqually to dispose of. In 1845 the British secret agents, Warre and Vavasour, visited the place, and in preference to all the other posts recommended Nisqually as a landing place for troops in case of war over "Fifty-Four Forty or Fight." Here are their exact words:

"At Nisqually I would recommend a blockhouse or defensible guard house overlooking the Sound, and commanding the road from the landing place, the banks on the shore being too steep to be easily ascended except at this point. Any description of work can be thrown up (such as a bastioned redoubt), on the large plain near the Sequality stream, with barracks, etc., for the accommodation of troops."

It may be interesting to note parenthetically that instead of England's sending troops and war supplies to this spot, this spot is now sending vast quantities of war munitions to England; and that the government's choice of this region for its new army post confirms the wisdom of England's secret agents.

About three years after the visit of Warre and Vavasour, or about 1848, the post was moved about a mile farther inland, to the present site of the old Huggins house, on the old Olympia road. Where the old fort stood and where the wheat fields flourished of old, there now grow fir trees two feet in diameter, so long ago was the post abandoned. The place of the stockade can be easily traced. Over

at the new site at the Huggins house, part of the picketing and one of the gates still stand. When troops came into this region they were stationed at Fort Steilacoom, some distance to the north.

The three most influential men in the actual building of old Nisqually were Archibald McDonald, Dr. William Fraser Tolmie, and Chief Trader Heron, all of whom have descendants living. Last summer I talked with George Heron, who was born at Nisqually the first year of its existence. He is now in his 84th year, blind and feeble, living near Curlew, north of Republic. Three sons and three daughters of Dr. Tolmie live in Victoria, B. C. One of McDonald's grand-nephews I met in western Montana last summer. After the Hudson's Bay left Nisqually in 1869, Mr. Huggins became an American citizen and took over the site as his homestead. His estate sold it to the Dupont Powder Company about ten years ago.

Eighty years and more ago, when chief trader or chief clerk was preaching to the Indians gathered about the post at Nisqually, the Indians complained sometimes that they could not remember it all when the preacher told them so much. Therefore a rule was made that when anyone felt that he had heard as much as he could remember he should stand up in meeting and say so, and the sermon would stop forthwith. Now I feel sure that some of you are wishing that you had the same privilege of standing up in meeting and crying "Enough!" I therefore take mercy on you and quit.

Tacoma, March 19.

O. B. SPERLIN.

## EARLY RECORDS OF THE UNIVERSITY

Prior to 1875, the Territorial University of Washington did not issue circulars or catalogues. It has therefore been difficult, if not impossible, to ascertain when those earlier sessions opened and closed. If manuscript records were made, they have mostly disappeared and other sources of information had to be sought. Victor J. Farrar, Research Assistant in History, was detailed to examine the earliest newspapers published in the Puget Sound cities. Clarence B. Bagley, of Seattle, was kind enough to make available his fine collection of old newspapers.

There, Mr. Farrar found the first announcement signed by Rev. Daniel Bagley as President of the Board of Commissioners on September 16, 1861. Others were found for the years that followed. Meager as was the information in this series of announcements, it was at least dependable and in the absence of other records they will prove fundamental when a history of the University of Washington is compiled. Photostat copies were made of the announcements for the archives and a number of them are here reproduced for such historic interest as they may have at the present time.

In the winter of 1860-1861 the Territorial Legislature enacted laws locating the University at Seattle and providing that Rev. Daniel Bagley, John Webster and Edmund Carr should constitute a Board of Commissioners to locate and build the institution. The Board of Commissioners met in Seattle on February 22, 1861, and organized. They began work at once and on March 1, 1861, let the contract to clear the ten-acre site contributed by Arthur A. Denny, C. C. Terry and Judge Edward Lander. The corner-stone of the main building was laid with due Masonic ceremonies on May 26, 1861. The law had required that school should open in the new institution within one year. Before the building was finished, therefore, Rev. Daniel Bagley made public announcement that A. S. Mercer had been engaged as "Professor and Teacher" and students would be received for the opening session on November 4, 1861. This announcement is here reproduced and with it is given the announcement by A. S. Mercer for the second year.

In the first session thus announced by Mr. Bagley school was maintained for twenty-two weeks and the attendance was about thirty pupils. At the end of that first session, the southwest corner room of the partially completed building was used for a Seattle school. It was taught by Mrs. Ossian J. Carr from May to July, 1862. She

had twenty-four pupils and received sixty dollars a month as compensation. President Mercer then issued his announcement and the second year of the University began on October 20, 1862. This year was of five months and the attendance was fifty-one students. Of those who attended during the first two years it has been possible to identify sixty names from the old pictures and the memory of the few survivors.

## Territorial University.

### THE TERRITORIAL UNIVERSITY

Building will be so far completed that School will be commenced in it on Monday, the 4th of November next, under the supervision of the President of the Board of Commissioners, Rev. Daniel Bagley, who has secured the services of A. S. Mercer, A. M., late of Ohio, as Professor and Teacher.

The term will continue twenty-two weeks, and be divided into two quarters, each eleven weeks.

#### Tuition will be as follows:

Primary Department, per qtr	\$5 00
Common English " "	6 00
Common English, with History	
Algebra and Physiology per qtr	7 00
Higher English " "	8 00
Latin and Greek " "	10 00

Daily lessons in vocal music gratuitous.

A dormitory building will be in readiness that will accommodate twenty-five or thirty young men.

It is recommended that all who design attending be with us at the opening of the term, as much is lost by not being present at the formation of classes.

DANIEL BAGLEY,  
Pres't Board.

Seattle, W. T., Sept. 16th, 15—

—Port Townsend North-West, Oct. 10, 1861.

# UNIVERSITY

Of the Territory of Washington

**P**RELIMINARY to the opening of this Institution, for the purposes provided for by law, it has been determined, subject to the approval of the board of Regents, when assembled, to open in a portion of the building, for the immediate accommodation of the patrons of the institution and the people of the Territory.

**A Primary and Collegiate School,** To be conducted under the supervision of Mr. A. S. MERCER, A. B., in which will be taught all the branches usually taught in the PRIMARY department of the public schools of the Territory, and all the branches usually taught in the GRAMMAR and HIGH SCHOOLS of California and the Atlantic States.

The girls will be under the immediate care of MRS. VIRGINIA CALHOUN, including the PIANO Pupils.

Vacation—Christmas to New Year.

Prices of Tuition in the Primary

School .....\$5 per qr.

Prices of Tuition in Common Eng-

lish .....\$6 pr. qr.

Prices of Tuition in the Higher

Classes .....\$7 pr. qr.

Prices of Tuition in the Collegiate

Studies .....\$9 pr. qr.

Prices of Tuition in Music \$10 pr. qr.

Board per week, \$3 00.

The term of five months will commence on Monday, the 20th October next. Pupils of both sexes will be under proper restrictions and care be received, and their education in the several branches above named industriously and carefully attended to, **without any sectional bias or influence whatever**, and subject at all times to the most rigid guards over their moral demeanor and accomplished manner. For further information apply to

A. S. MERCER, Principal,  
At Seattle, W. T.

September 17th, 1862. 46:tf

—Olympia Washington Standard,  
Oct. 4, 1862.

The second President of the University—W. E. Barnard—made a more extended announcement, dated August 15, 1863. As will be seen by the reproduction, he divided the school year into four sessions.



## UNIVERSITY Of Washington Territory.

THE UNIVERSITY established at SEATTLE on Puget Sound by Legislative Enactment and in accordance with an Act of Congress approved July 17th 1854, being completed, now opens its doors to all those who desire to avail themselves of the facilities it affords for acquiring a thorough acquaintance with the common and higher English branches, and also the usual Collegiate course of Study.

The Board of Regents have recently elected W. C. Barnard, A. M., President of the University. Mr. Barnard is a graduate of Dartmouth College, and was for two years at the head of one of the most flourishing academies of New England. His subsequent experience as Principal of La Creole Academy at Dalles, Oregon, and still later, the reputation he acquired while connected with the Willamette University at Salem, as a thorough teacher and disciplinarian, justify the expectation that the University of Washington Territory under his management, will rank second to none on the Pacific Coast.

### CALENDAR.

The school year will be divided into four Sessions of eleven weeks each:

First or Fall Session opens, Sept. 7, 1863.

Second or Winter Session opens Nov. 30, 1863.

Third or Spring Session opens February 15, 1864.

Fourth or Summer Session, opens May 9th, 1864.

### COURSE OF STUDY.

The studies that each scholar shall pursue, will be determined by the instructors, while the wishes of the patrons will be complied with, so far as they may not conflict with the systematic progress of the student. All will be required to pursue Reading, Orthography, Writing, Geography and Mental Arithmetic, or pass

a satisfactory examination in the same before engaging in more advanced studies. Classes formed at the commencement of the Fall Term, will continue without interruption through the year, or until the subjects considered shall have been mastered. It is therefore very desirable that those purposing to join the School, to do so at the commencement of the year, as those coming later must join classes already formed.

### DISCIPLINE.

No student will be allowed to retain a connection with the school whose habits are such as to render him an unfit companion, or who will not render a ready compliance with the regulations of the School. Frequenting of saloons, and attendance upon theaters and balls, are not allowed, but students are required to be at their respective places of abode at stated hours. A respectful observance of the Sabbath is required, and at 3 o'clock P. M. each Sabbath the Students will assemble at the University Chapel, to study the Scriptures as a Bible Class.

The reading of the Scriptures, regarded as the only safe text book of morals, will be a daily exercise of the school.

### BOARD.

A limited number of Students can be accommodated at the Boarding House on the University grounds, by making immediate application, while a few can find accommodations in private families in the town. Price of Board \$3 to \$4 per week—washing, lights and fuel, extra.

### TUITION RATES:

Primary Department, per Quarter,	
- - - - -	\$6 00
Academic, - - - - -	8 00
Collegiate, - - - - -	10 00

Payable in advance. No deductions made for absence except in cases of protracted sickness.

Books and Stationery can be obtained at the city Book Store.

For further particulars address the President,  
au24-6w W. E. BARNARD, A. M.

—Seattle Gazette, Aug. 15, 1863.

This third year was of forty-four weeks, commencing September 7, 1863. It must have been discouraging to the new President, as there were only about twenty-six students at the beginning and forty-two at the end of the year.

Mr. Barnard remained as President until April 13, 1866. The attendance at the University had dwindled to such an extent that he first resigned in February, 1865, and went into the real estate business. The Regents failed to secure a new President and Mr. Barnard continued to serve until his final resignation on April 13, 1866. Dur-

ing those years he published three other announcements which are here reproduced.

## UNIVERSITY Of Washington Territory.

The School Year will be divided into two Sessions of twenty-one weeks each:

The first session opens on the first Monday in September.

The second Session, on the first Monday in February.

### BOARD:

Board and Room Rent are furnished, at the University Boarding House, at \$3 00 per week—the Student providing his fuel, lights, bedding and washing.

When preferred, Board, Tuition and Incidentals furnished at \$240 00 per annum, payable QUARTERLY, IN ADVANCE.

A limited number of Young Ladies can be accommodated in the family of the President.

### TUITION:

Primary Department, per Annum, \$24 00

Intermediate, " " " \$32 00

Collegiate, " " " \$40 00

Music—Twenty-four lessons on the piano, with use of instrument, [Extra] \$20 00

Drawing and Sketching, " per Session, - - \$10 00

Tuition bills payable quarterly, in advance.

Students are required to pursue Reading, Spelling, Arithmetic, (both Mental and Practical,) Geography and writing, or pass a satisfactory examination in the same, before engaging in more advanced studies.

Young Men, desirous of defraying their own expenses, by personal labor, while attending the University, can be furnished employment by making early application to the President.

Students will not be admitted for a less period than one Quarter.

For further particulars address the President of the University,

W. E. BARNARD, A. M.  
Seattle, W. T., July 19th, 1864.  
no25 tf

—Seattle Gazette, Aug. 6, 1864.

## University of Washington Territory

This Institution will re-open on the Third Monday in October:

### Rates of Tuition:

[Payable in advance per Quarter.]  
COLLEGIATE Course, \$10 00  
ACADEMIC " 8 00  
PRIMARY " 6 00  
INSTRUCTION ON THE PIANO, 15 00

Students can be accommodated on the University Grounds, in the family of the President, at \$75 per Quarter, in advance, Board, room-rent, washing, fuel, lights and Tuition included. Room-rent and Board, without incidentals, at \$5 per week.

For further Particulars, address  
W. E. BARNARD,  
President.

Seattle, W. T., Sept. 30. no18-1y.

—Seattle Gazette, Sept. 30, 1865.

## UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY.

This Institution will open on the Second Monday of April:

### Rates of Tuition:

[Payable in advance per Quarter.]  
COLLEGIATE Course, \$10 00  
ACADEMIC " 8 00  
PRIMARY " 6 00  
INSTRUCTION ON THE PIANO, 15 00

Students can be accommodated on the University Grounds, in the family of the President, at \$75 per Quarter, in advance, Board, room-rent, washing, fuel, lights and Tuition included. Room rent and Board, without incidentals, at \$4 per week.

For further Particulars, address

W. E. BARNARD,  
President.

Seattle, W. T., April 5th. no1-tf

—Seattle Puget Sound Semi-Weekly,  
April 19, 1866.

Rev. George F. Whitworth served as President of the University twice. He was first elected on April 16, 1866. During his first year he published three announcements as follows:

#### TERRITORIAL UNIVERSITY.

The Primary Department of this Institution will open on Monday next, 21st inst., in charge of Mrs. H. Smith.

It is contemplated that arrangements will be made to admit, free of charge, such scholars, belonging to the Seattle school district, as are not advanced beyond the branches required by law to be taught in Common Schools.

Other Departments of the University will be opened, as soon as arrangements to that end can be perfected, of which, due notice will be given.

GEO. F. WHITWORTH,  
Pres't W. T. University.

Seattle, May 19th, 1866. m19:3t

—Seattle Puget Sound Semi-Weekly,  
May 21, 1866.

### UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY.

This Institution will re-open on the 10th of September next, under the charge of the President, with such Assistant Teachers as may be required.

Each quarter will consist of 11 weeks and the rates of Tuition and Boarding will be as follows:

#### Rates of Tuition:

[Payable Quarterly, in advance.]	
PRIMARY DEPARTMENT,	\$5 00
INTERMEDIATE "	6 00
ACADEMIC "	8 00
COLLEGIATE or SCIENTIFIC	10 00
MUSIC on the PIANO	15 00
BOARDING, without incident-	
als, per week,	3 50

Rooms will be provided in the University Boarding House, rent

free, the Pupils finding their own furniture, bedding, &c.

Instructions, in Vocal Music, will be given, free of charge.

Arrangement will be made with the Seattle School District for the children of the District, who are not advanced beyond the Primary Department.

For further information, address

REV. GEO. F. WHITWORTH,  
President.

Seattle, W. T., Aug. 18, '66. [22-3w

—Seattle Puget Sound Semi-Weekly,  
August 27, 1866.

### UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY.

THE next term of this Institution will commence on Monday, the 7th day of January, 1867, and will continue 22 weeks.

Pupils from the country can be furnished with Board at the University Boarding House at \$3 50 per week.

The Rates of Tuition, per Quarter of eleven weeks, will be as follows:

Primary Department,	\$ 5 00
Intermediate " "	6 00
Academic " "	8 00
Collegiate or Scientific Dep't,	10 00
Music on the Piano, " "	15 00

Instructions in Vocal Music free of charge.

Payments for Board and Tuition will be required to be made quarterly in advance.

For further particulars address,

Rev. GEO. F. WHITWORTH,  
President.

Seattle, Dec. 17, 1866

—Seattle Puget Sound Semi-Weekly,  
Dec. 24, 1866.

The Seattle Puget Sound Semi-Weekly for April 16, 1866, says that arrangements had been made to admit the children of Seattle into the University without charge of tuition. The Board of Town Trustees voted to pay the common school fund into the treasury of the University. This arrangement apparently tided the institution over a hard year or two.

President Whitworth published two announcements for 1867 as follows:

## UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY.

The second Quarter of the present term will commence on Monday the 25th inst.,

Pupils from a distance can board at the University Boarding House at \$3 50 per week or \$38 50 per quarter.

The rates of Tuition are as follows per quarter of 11 weeks:

Collegiate or Scientific Department,	
Academic	\$10 00
Primary	" 8 00
Music on the Piano	" 6 00
Use of Instrument	" 15 00
	" 2 00

Payments for Board and Tuition are required to be made quarterly in advance.

For further particulars address  
REV. GEO. F. WHITWORTH, Pres't.  
Seattle, W. T., March 9, 1867.

—Seattle Gazette, April 15, 1867.

## UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY.

The next term of this Institution will commence on Monday, the 22d of July next, and continue for 22 weeks.

Pupils from a distance can board at the University Boarding House at \$3 50 per week or \$38 50 per quarter.

The rates of Tuition are as follows per quarter of 11 weeks:

Collegiate or Scientific Department,	
Academic	\$10 00
Intermediate	" 8 00
Primary	" 6 00
Music on the Piano	" 5 00
Use of Instrument	" 15 00
	" 2 00

Payments for Board and Tuition will be required to be made quarterly in advance, unless otherwise agreed at the time the pupil enters.

For further particulars address  
REV. GEO. F. WHITWORTH, Pres't.  
Seattle, W., T., June 17th, 1867.

President Whitworth's term ended on June 28, 1867, when the Regents informed him that the funds were exhausted.

There was no regular session of the University in 1868 and an effort was made to lease the property as shown in the following advertisement:

## UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON TERRITORY!

THE REGENTS OF THIS INSTITUTION propose to LEASE it for a term of years, and for this purpose invite Bids or Proposals until the First day of July, 1868, from Teachers competent to conduct an Institution of this kind. Propositions to lease it as a sectarian institution will not be entertained. The Regents reserve the right to reject any proposition deemed unsuitable. References will be required.

The Institution embraces ten acres of ground, well cleared and fenced; the University Building proper; President's House, Boarding House and Outbuildings, with a good supply of running water. It is pleasantly and healthfully situated in Seattle, W. T., is well suited to school purposes, and is in condition to be occupied immediately.

Proposals to be sent to the President of the Board of Regents, Hon. B. F. DENNISON, Port Townsend, W. T. a13-6

☞ Olympia Standard and Tribune, Portland Herald and Oregonian, Salem Democrat, San Francisco Weekly Alta and Sacramento Weekly Union, please copy, six insertions, and send bill to this office.

—Seattle Intelligencer, April 13, 1868.

John H. Hall became the new President and his first session of the University began on April 12, 1869. He continued as President until the spring of 1872. During his administration the following four advertisements were published:



# UNIVERSITY UNIVERSITY

OF OF

## WASHINGTON TERRITORY ! WASHINGTON TERRITORY !

**THIS INSTITUTION WILL BE** permanently re-opened on MONDAY, the 12th day of April, 1869, under the charge of PROFESSOR J. H. HALL, as President, assisted by such Professors and Assistant Teachers as may be required.

Its central and convenient location makes it easy of access to all; and no effort will be spared to increase its present advantages so as to make it second to none on the coast.

The government will be firm but parental, particular attention being paid to the morale of the students; but the people of the Territory may be assured that no sectarian influences will be exerted upon their sons and daughters in this Institution.

Rooms are provided, rent free, for Young Men, in the University Boarding House, and for Young Ladies at the residence of the President, both of which buildings are within the same enclosure with the University; but students are required to supply the necessary furniture, bedding, etc. Board can be had on reasonable terms.

There is a Library and Apparatus in the University, to which additions will be made from time to time as the demand of the Institution shall require.

Tuition per Term of Eleven Weeks.  
 Scientific Department, - - \$10 00  
 Collegiate " - - - - 12 00  
 Drawing and Painting, (extra,) 10 00

Modern Languages,  
 French - - - - - \$5 00  
 German, - - - - - 7 00  
 Spanish, - - - - - 6 00

### PREPARATORY DEPARTMENT.

A Preparatory Department will be opened in connection with the University, under the charge of competent instructors.

Tuition per Term of Eleven Weeks.  
 Primary Department, - - \$6 00  
 Intermediate Department, - 7 00  
 Academic Department, \$8 00 to 10 00  
 Payment for Board and Tuition will be expected in advance.

The growing wants of the Territory and its increasing commercial importance, render it necessary for young men to prepare themselves for the places which they will soon be called upon to fill. The importance of furnishing them with the means of acquiring a thorough knowledge of business at home, has induced the Regents to open a

### COMMERCIAL DEPARTMENT.

TERMS, FOR FULL COURSE, \$60.  
 For further information, address the President.

By order of the Board of Regents.  
 Seattle, W. T., April 5th, 1869.

—Seattle Intelligencer, June 28, 1869.

**THIS INSTITUTION WILL BE RE-**opened on MONDAY, the 6th day of September, 1869, under the charge of PROFESSOR J. H. HALL, as President.

### COLLEGIATE DEPARTMENT.

Terms, per session of fourteen weeks, - - - - \$14 00

### PREPARATORY DEPARTMENT,

Terms per Session of Fourteen Weeks:

Primary Department, - - \$8 00  
 Intermediate Department, - 10 00  
 Academic Department, \$11 to 14 00  
 Drawing and Painting (extra) 15 00  
 Music, - - - - - 20 00

### MODERN LANGUAGES.

French, - - - - - \$7 00  
 German, - - - - - 9 00  
 Spanish, - - - - - 8 00

### COMMERCIAL DEPARTMENT.

Terms, for Full Course, \$60.

Rooms are provided, rent free, for Young Men, in the University Boarding House, and for Young Ladies at the residence of the President, both of which buildings are within the same enclosure with the University; but students are required to supply the necessary furniture, bedding, etc.

Board, per week, - - \$3 50

Tuition payable always in advance.

Friends abroad may be assured that no sectarian influences will be exerted upon their sons and daughters in this Institution, but that every effort will be made to ensure their comfort and welfare.

For further information, address the President.

By order of the

### BOARD OF REGENTS.

Seattle, W. T., August 30th, 1869.

—Seattle Intelligencer, August 30, 1869.

# UNIVERSITY UNIVERSITY

OF OF

## WASHINGTON TERRITORY! WASHINGTON TERRITORY!

**THIS INSTITUTE WILL BE OPEN** for the reception of Students on MONDAY, the 5th day of September, 1870, under the charge of PROFESSOR J. H. HALL, as President.

### COLLEGIATE DEPARTMENT.

Terms, per session of fourteen weeks, - - \$15 00

### PREPARATORY DEPARTMENT.

Terms, per session of fourteen weeks, - - \$14 00

### ACADEMIC DEPARTMENT.

Terms, per session of fourteen weeks, - - \$8 to \$12 00

### COMMERCIAL DEPARTMENT.

**TERMS, FOR FULL COURSE, \$60.**  
Music, Modern Languages, Painting, etc., extra.

Board for Young Men in University Boarding House, or for Young Ladies at the residence of the President, per week, \$3 50.

Board and Tuition payable always in advance.

For further information, address the President.

By order of the

### BOARD OF REGENTS.

Seattle, W. T., August 16th, 1870.

—Seattle Intelligencer, August 22, 1870.

**THIS INSTITUTE WILL BE OPEN** for the reception of Students on MONDAY, the 4th day of September, 1871, under the charge of Professor J. H. HALL, as President.

### COLLEGIATE DEPARTMENT.

Terms, per session of fourteen weeks, - - \$15 00

### PREPARATORY DEPARTMENT.

Terms, per session of fourteen weeks, - - \$14 00

### COMMERCIAL DEPARTMENT.

Terms for full course, - \$60 00

### ACADEMIC DEPARTMENT.

The Academic Year is divided into four quarters of ten and one-half weeks each.

Primary Class,	\$5 00
Intermediate Class,	7 00
Senior Class,	10 00
Music, including use of Piano,	12 00
Drawing and Modern Languages, each,	5 00

Board for Young Men in University Boarding House, and for Young Ladies at the residence of the President, per week, \$3 50.

Board and Tuition must be paid during the first week of each session.

For further information, address the President.

By order of

### aug28 BOARD OF REGENTS.

—Seattle Intelligencer, August 28, 1871.

The attendance under President Hall averaged from sixty to one hundred students, even though the old arrangement of including the primary pupils of Seattle had been discontinued. President Hall was an energetic executive.

In the summer of 1872, Eugene K. Hill was elected President, his first session beginning on September 2, 1872. The institution was closed in February, 1874. So far as can be learned, no announcements were published during Mr. Hill's administration.

Rev. George F. Whitworth became President again in the summer of 1874. During this second administration four advertisements were published as follows:

## TERRITORIAL UNIVERSITY.

**T**HIS INSTITUTION WILL BE RE-OPENED September 14th, under the management of Rev. G. F. Whitworth, A. M., and will be divided into three departments—Preparatory, Academic and Collegiate.

MISS MAY W. THAYER, formerly a Teacher in the University, has been engaged as assistant, and in addition to the branches usually taught, will give particular instruction in Etiquette, Conversation, Needlework, &c.

The Scholastic year will consist of three terms of 14 weeks each, and the rates of tuition from six to ten dollars per term, to be paid in advance. Board will be furnished at \$50 per term, students furnishing their own rooms, lights, etc.; one-half to be paid at the beginning, and the remainder at the middle of the term. Those who desire can board themselves.

For further information, address Rev. Geo. F. Whitworth, President of University, Seattle, W. T.

E. M. SMITHERS,  
President Board of Regents.  
H. A. ATKINS, Secretary.  
Seattle, W. T., Aug. 27, 1874. se5

—Seattle Intelligencer, September 12, 1874.

## TERRITORIAL UNIVERSITY.

**T**HIS INSTITUTION WILL BE RE-OPENED September 14th, under the management of Rev. Geo. F. Whitworth, A. M., and will be divided into three departments—Preparatory, Academic and Collegiate.

The Scholastic year will consist of three terms of 14 weeks each, and the rates of tuition from six to ten dollars per term, to be paid in advance. Board will be furnished for \$50 per term, students furnishing their own rooms, lights, etc.; one-half to be paid at the beginning, and the remainder at the middle of the term. Those who desire can board themselves.

For further information, address Rev. Geo. F. Whitworth, President of University, Seattle, W. T.

E. M. SMITHERS,  
President Board of Regents.  
H. A. ATKINS, Secretary.  
Seattle, W. T., Aug. 27, 1874. se5

—Seattle Intelligencer, September 5, 1874.

## TERRITORIAL UNIVERSITY.

**T**HE WINTER TERM OF THIS INSTITUTION will commence on MONDAY, JANUARY 4th, 1875. An efficient corps of Teachers is employed.

It is of the utmost importance that Pupils should enter at the beginning.

For Terms, &c., see Circular, or apply to

REV. G. F. WHITWORTH, Pres't.  
Seattle, W. T., Dec. 26, 1874. d26-3t

—Seattle Intelligencer, January 9, 1875.

## TERRITORIAL UNIVERSITY.

**The Summer Session** of this Institution will commence on Monday next, 25 inst.

For terms, apply to

Rev. G. F. Whitworth,  
ap24-2t President.

—Seattle Intelligencer, May 1, 1875.

Before Mr. Whitworth took charge for his second administration the institution was conducted during the spring of 1874 as a private enterprise under the management of Miss May W. Thayer and F. H. Whitworth, son of Rev. George F. Whitworth. Mr. A. S. Nicholson of Kingston, New York, had been elected President. When he

arrived he found Mr. Whitworth in the office. He brought suit for damages against the Board of Regents but did not succeed.

From the date of the last advertisements above reproduced there were printed regularly circulars and catalogues which are available in the institution's archives.

During those early days it is claimed that there were but two students of collegiate rank—Clarence B. Bagley and Clara A. McCarty. Miss McCarty graduated under Mr. Whitworth in 1876, the first one to receive that honor from the University. The attendance under Mr. Whitworth reached one hundred and twenty-five.

Though the academic year of 1876-1877 was begun under Mr. Whitworth, it was not completed on account of the lack of funds. The Seattle School Board then made arrangements to use the building, the advanced classes being held there under Professor (now better known as Major) E. S. Ingraham.

On September 3, 1877, the institution reopened under President A. J. Anderson. Since that date there has been no break in the regular sessions of the University of Washington.

EDMOND S. MEANY.



## DOCUMENTS

---

### Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey

Edited by Victor J. Farrar

The Ebey Diary is concluded with this installment. Its publication began in this Quarterly in the issue for July, 1916.

(Continued from Quarterly for January 1917, page 62.)

---

January, 1853.

Thursday 13th

Morning frosty and clear quite cool last night Some ice again in the water barrels I feel very uncomfortable today have a bad pain in my breast from hard grieving to see our family all going to the tombs so fast; a few years ago father, mother, and a number of other relations were living and in happiness together and now we number but few, but we must not repine the world must all go to the graves. We are all doomed to die for dust we are, and unto dust we must return, While our souls if righteous go back to God Who gave them—

Friday 14

Day cool and a large frost on the ground this morning I have Sam digging beds to set out onions there are a great many in the old beds growing

Saturday 15th

Still cool, and clear, with frost greatly fear some more cold weather. Very busy today as usual on Saturday.

Sunday 16th

This is a beautiful clear warm day. Samuel Crocket here a few minutes this morning I looked for his mother but she is not coming I do not know why they cannot come to see me in my distress They are happy or ought to be happy no deaths among them; Yet, they know not when their time may come. I do not envy them their happiness for no doubt they think they have their troubles. We ought all to be content when we are all alive and well for we know not how soon we may have a departed friend to mourn for. Another Week has commenced and we are yet spared who of us are here. and I hope my dear husband is still well and will get home safe. When he is gone I always feel dessolate But how thankful we should be that we are still spared and in reasonable health. Yet the burthen of grief is not extinguished.

## Monday 17.

Another beautiful day has dawned upon us. It is so warm and clear that I begin to feel like gardening though it is too soon for some vegetables. I am very busy today sewing at Ellison's coat. He is very anxious that I should get it done. The water is very calm and the Snow mountains are quite visible today. Two large vessels anchored at Port Townsend last evening. One is very much like a Man of War.

## Tuesday 18th,

Weather pleasant with but very little wind. John Shaw and Capt. Coffin went over to Port Townsend today with some Indians. I sent some letters to Mr. Ebey and three to the States and one to Aunt Martha, by John Shaw to take to the Olympia office as he is going up the first opportunity.

## Wednesday 19th

A little cloudy today and strong wind South. Orinaldo Smith<sup>67</sup> came over to borrow coffee and staid all night last night. He is so rude that I had a disagreeable time with him. Cordelia is at Mr. Alexander's staying there.

## Thursday 20th

Today is pleasant but a little cloudy. Not much breeze stirring. I am washing today and I have Sam busy digging onion beds. He gets along very slow. We have now 3 long beds of onions set out and two or three more to dig. Evening clear and my clothes drying.

## Friday 21st

Clear and warm today, very much like Summer weather. But little wind stirring. Hugh Crockett here a little while this morning on his way to the Cove. The male neighbors all stay very close at home. I suppose they are afraid to turn out to walk on account of changeable weather. They all have horses but are afraid to ride them.

## Saturday 22nd

Still clear and warm. The Straits are very calm and beautiful. The children are digging onions today and Sam is digging a bed. I am ironing and baking bread for Sunday. Dr. Lansdale was here today. He says Mr. Smith started up the Sound today and he wrote by him to Mr. Ebey. A great many Indians have gone up to Olympia to trade potatoes.

## Sunday 23rd

Very foggy this morning. We can see no distance but the weather is warm. I am very lonesome today. No person here but the

---

<sup>67</sup>Rinaldo R. Smith.

children I am reading to the children in the bible about Christ's Crucifixion which seems to interest them very much. A great many squaws came to dig potatoes, I made them leave some came trading but I would not trade with them. on this day.

#### Monday 24th

Very foggy this morning but when it went off the day was clear and pleasant until toward evening when it thickened up again and continued so. The days appear to be getting quite long by rising early. We get up every morning in time to have breakfast by daylight, by which means I have the daylight to do my particular work in. Sam is setting out onions today. The children are digging them up for him. Some indians came over from Port Townsend today I expected to receive a letter and some papers by them but did not and was badly disappointed. It seems I can get no letters and papers at all from the office and am quite discouraged at hearing no good news from my friends.

#### Tuesday 25

Morning very thick with fog everything very damp from it continues so all day. Mr. Engle and Mr. Hill have started with our oxen in the Scow over to Mr. Martin's to haul their piles. I sent by them to the store for some ticking to make the children a bed. John Crocket was here today to borrow tools chisels and a plane. Susan is at his house and her and Ann talk of coming over to see us but I do not look for them at all and think very hard of them for not coming to see me. Sam is sick today and can do nothing but sit in the corner. I wrote a letter to Mr. Ebey today to send by the indians to Port Townsend to go to Olympia.

#### Wednesday 26th

Day warm and clear equal to a Summers day. Sam is sick and cannot do much today. The children finished setting out Some fine raspberry bushes and went with Sam to get gooseberry bushes to transplant in the yard, and procured some very fine ones. We are all well today. A vessel has been trying to get out of the Strait all day but is driven back by the tide and cannot get out today. She is anchoring above Port Townsend this evening. Major Show and Mr. Howe were here this evening to see if I had heard anything from Mr. Ebey lately. I had heard nothing from him but hope to hear soon. George Allen was here to borrow our frow.<sup>68</sup> I could not refuse but hated very much to let it go.

<sup>68</sup>A frow. A primitive instrument for splitting shingles, staves, etc. See New Standard Dictionary.

## Thursday 27th

Morning warm but cloudy but little breeze this morning The water is very calm. The above named vessel has sailed again and going out very slowly. I feel better today than I have done; Although I grieved a great deal in the night when all was sound asleep I cannot get this load of grief away yet I know it does neither Mother nor myself any good but is a great injury to me, but I cannot help it. She was so near to me. I think if Mr. Ebey was here I would not take it so hard I am alone and no person who can take interest in my wellfare to converse with and thus I have a great deal of time to think over times past and gone I pray to the Lord to uphold me and enable me to bear it with more patience lest I wear my body down and become unable to raise my family.

## Friday 28th

Cloudy in the forenoon and very windy but the afternoon is clear calm and warm. I am alone all day with the exception of the company of Sam which is better than none; Eason and Ellison have gone on a visit to John Crocket's They were very anxious to go and as they have been confined at home all winter I concluded to let them go. They are a great deal of company although they are noisy I discovered a vessel a long distance off, coming up the Straits this evening, but she is not discoverable at present. None of the neighbors passing today I have not felt well today and have employed my time knitting and reading a part of the time in the bible and a part in the life of Olympia Morata.<sup>69</sup>

## Friday 29th

Vrey cloudy and windy today a good deal of rain fell in the evening Eason and Sam went to Mr. Crockett's after some turnips and cabbage and was gone nearly all day. I do not feel well today but I washed some by the assistance of an indian who chanced to come along. The above named vessel has been anchored all day on the shore opposite us but in the evening late the wind ceased and she put in to P. Townsend and fired two cannon shot.

## Sunday 30th

Still cloudy a refreshing rain fell last night this morning is quite warm but the evening is turning cool and the South wind is very high Another vessel came up today she is anchored below Port Townsend and cannot get up for the wind No person was here

---

<sup>69</sup>Olympia Fulvia Morata (1526-1555), an Italian scholar, author of *Critical Observations on Homer*.



today but Hugh Crocket. We are all well for which I am truly thankful.

#### Monday 31st

The wind has been harder all night than I ever have known it. The house rocked to and fro all night and I expected every minute the house top would come off. The wind continued very high from the South West all day. A large barque came up today and anchored above Port Townsend.

#### February      Tuesday 1st

Very pleasant today. a good westward breeze for vessels to sail in at the Straits. This morning at daylight we discovered a brig and a barque coming up very rapidly. The brig came very near and appeared to be anchoring for a while but she was Capt. Coupe's vessel chored above P. T. We thought at first she was Capt. Coupe's vessel but I suppose were mistaken. Capt. Fowler<sup>70</sup> is today anchored in Penn's Cove. From her we received the mail from Olympia which we have not had for a long time. I received two letters from Mr. Ebey which state that he will be home before long. The last Olympia papers give the proceedings of the legislators. Mr. Ebey has had four Counties organized and their county seats stationed for which among other things he is extolled very highly by his friends publicly. I am very much pleased to hear that they can see that he has attended to his duty faithfully. Our county is called Island county and Coveland the County seat. The name is very appropriate and I am truly glad we have a county of our own. Olympia is made the Countyseat of Thurston County. Those who have went this Winter to the Southern mines have suffered a great deal for want of provisions and lost all their cattle by the cold weather. They had snow from five to six feet deep. I fear my brothers have gone there. I can hear nothing of them. Snow at Salem was two and three feet deep. I think we were greatly blessed not to have more snow than two inches.

#### Wednesday 2nd

We ate breakfast before daylight this morning. Just at daylight we saw two vessels coming up the Straits. We had some rain last night. Sam wants to go to Capt Fowler today, he has heard he wants him. I understand the Capt bought Sam some time ago. This morning is still cloudy, with a beautiful westward breeze.

#### Thursday 3rd

It is colder than common this morning. Day very clear and cool. The ground is frozen. Wind North. No vessels passing today

---

<sup>70</sup>Captain E. S. Fowler.

we have no indian now and we are quite lonesome The cattle are begining to interupt our onions I fear they will injure them greatly before I can get them fenced but I think Mr. Ebey will be at home soon and then all will be right. Mr. Alaxander brought me over 13 pounds of pork today for which I gave him  $3\frac{1}{2}$  pounds of butter. The children have been obedient industrious boys today and have studded their lessons well. Evening clear, and air feels frosty.

Friday 4th

Morning cold a good deal of ice in the house this I washed today I sent word to George Allen the other day to send me Charley's brother John to stay a month as I heard he had been wanting to hire to him very cheap but he could not get him to come and sent Charley's nephew a little boy of 12 who appears to be very industrious and obedient much better than Sam. Eason has gone after the cow she is hard to find this morning. Sam came today for his pay I had to give him a blanket but he did not deserve anything more than what I had given him which was a good old coat hat boots and 2 good old shirts They are all a great deal of trouble to settle off with and I hope the time will come when we can do without them It is a trouble and an agravation to get them to do their work you have to be always hurrying them and explaining to them.

Saturday 5th

Very cool this morning but toward evening the weather moderated greatly I scrubbed the floor this morning and this evening I feel very badly. Mr. Howe and Mr. Hollbrook were here today to see if the indians had brought over the Island mail from Port Townsend but they had not and it is very wrong of the people over there that they have kept our mails all over there this winter that have been sent down from Olympia which has been done at different times this Winter.

Sunday 6th

Very pleasant this morning, but cloudy all day very little wind The bay is perfectly calm all day Myself and children are alone all day No person at all passing but we are not lonely we are diligently employing our time in reading The Scripture and Sermons and striving to store up knowledge in our minds, Which will be of some advantage to us in our latter days Eason & Ellison have been very good boys today and have not played nor done anything very wrong They have studded their lessons and rested themselves by taking a walk over the prairie and done the little cheurs which was obliged to be done about the house such as carrying water bring up the cow to be milked &c. I

feel much better today both in mind and body than I have done for some time and hope I may continue to feel so well I feel determined to spend more of my time to the service of God; and through the support of his grace and His protection, through life, and a strict adherence to what should be a christian's duty, I think I will enjoy life better. A firm Christian can be resigned to whatsoever troubles may befall them and make themselves happy and content by doing good and living in the path of duty.

#### Monday 7th

This morning is very cloudy a little snow fell last night and I fear we will have more though it is not very cold I am all alone at present; the children have gone to Mr. Alaxander's on an errand. I will look for Mr. Ebey home now in a few days I will be very happy to see him come to his pleasant Island home once more and I hope he will not have to leave it soon again. Yet he *may*, I cannot tell at *present*.

#### Tuesday 8th

Morning cloudy and frosty; Toward noon the sun shone out very bright and the evening was beautiful and clear. We could see old Mount Baker very plain and the tops of the Olympic mountains. Dr Lansdale was over to exchange some newspapers. Some indians were here from Port Townsend. They are in a great way about their potatoes. Mr. Starling will not pay them now, and wishes us settlers to do it, I think, very wrong in him, for, it is his duty.

#### Wednesday 9th

Clear and frosty this morning; And quite cool, but very pleasant Winter weather Mr. Engle went to Oak Harbor today and will not be back tonight so he got John Alaxander to come and stay all night The day has been so clear and warm that I looked for some of the neighbor women to come and see me but it seems they cannot get off from home this Winter. Eason and Ellison have a great deal to do now; We cannot keep an indian more than two or three days at a time, and the little boys are almost run down now hunting the cow, bringing water, and other little errands; They have gone now to Mr. Hill's to see if there are any indians there, and to feed their cat and dog as none of them are at home The water is beautiful and calm today. There is but very little wind, and very little serfe rising. No vessels are passing these days.

#### Thursday 10th

Morning very foggy and also a heavy frost, Evening clear and pleasant; very little breeze from the West. Looking anxiously for my

husband home every day, and all the time hoping he may get home safely and in usual health. My mind is a little better composed for a few days back than it had been heretofore I do hope and pray it may continue so, particularly on account of my health and the comfort of my family. Eason and Ellison are very busy today at their books and have learned several lessons a piece today; some days they are very studious and others they are very neglectful.

Friday 11th

Somewhat cloudy all day today. I washed today Tonight it is raining. Mr. Engle here tonight. Looking hard for Mr. Ebey and very anxious to see him.

Saturday 12th

Day cloudy and a great appearance of rain Very little wind, the water is beautiful and calm. I have been busy all day ironing cleaning up and mend the children's clothes Mrs. Alexander came over this evening to spend the night I was very much pleased to see her and had been look for her for a long time She brought her two small children with her. The babe is the best child I ever saw.<sup>71</sup> and Mrs. A. is very cheerful and makes me feel much better than I have done to be awhile in her company.

Sunday 13th

Morning cloudy, but warm and pleasant Susan Crockett walked here today with Hugh and spent the day and went home in the evening, I was very happy to see her in my house once more, yet I was fearful the walk would make her sick and wished her to stay all night but she could not. This Sabbath was not as lonely to me as the former ones have been since Mr. Ebey went away. The neighbors begin to think they must come to see me again before Mr. Ebey comes home. Mrs. A. went home late this evening.

Monday 14th

Morning cloudy with some rain; a good deal of rain fell last night. Our cattle are brought home and they look very badly I fear they will not be able to do our Spring's work. Ellison is sick and I sent to the Dr. for some medicine for him and he came himself and left two doses. He thought it was worms and cold. something like he was last Spring.

Tuesday 15th

Very gloomy and cloudy today and some rain now and then;

---

<sup>71</sup>Abraham L. Alexander.



though moderate and warm, growing weather. We had stuffed pheasants for dinner today which was excellent

Wednesday 16

Morning cloudy with a little rain Hugh Crocket and Mr. Hill are cutting wood to haul for me as I am out again. They will haul tomorrow as they cannot get the oxen today It cleared off in the evening and we had a beautiful clear moonlight night

Thursday 17

Morning clear and very pleasant until noon when it clouded up again and has the appearance of rain. Hugh Crocket hauled us wood today. I hired two Cloochmen<sup>72</sup> to finish digging and setting out onions and paid them in a few potatoes and a little thread Capt. Paddle came today in a canoe and sent up for some potatoes I let him have a half bushel for a dollar. Six large indians came today and crowded in the door so that I could not stand them, and tried to get them out and shut the door but they stood still and sauced me untill I was afraid of them and went and sat down and gave them up, but when they found I would say no more they started off. I never was more vexed, and still affraid to compel them to go not knowing what so many large indians might do where there was no white man near and they knew no person was here but myself and the children.

Friday 18th

Morning a little cloudy and quite warm. I am very unwell today scarcely able to go about the house; but if the indians would let me alone I could get along better. three lads came today just to pester me because they knew Mr. Ebey was not at home; They stood around the door and when the children would have to go out they would fight them and sauce me and laugh when I would tell them to go away. At last I took a stick and tried to run them off. They ran a short distance and one who had a rifle pointed it at me and held it so for some minutes and I started in the house and sat down directly two of them came in the house with a rifle I made them take it out and started Eason after Mr. Hill. They soon started off in a run and did not stop to look back. In the time I almost fainted and trembled all over, although I knew they would be afraid to do any mischief yet I could not help being frightened, not being well and unable to bear such disturbances. I hope it will not be long before Mr Ebey will come I am becoming weary with anxiety for his return I am continually looking and cannot see nor hear of my

---

<sup>72</sup>Cloochman or Kloochman is a Chinook Jargon word equivalent to squaw.

dear husband I am not afraid of the savages if he is only in the neighborhood

Saturday 19th

Morning cloudy with some gentle showers of rain, until 10 o'clock when the Sun shone out clear, and we had a delightful evening; And one thing which made it seem more exceedingly delightful, My dear husband arrived safe at home, about 11 o'clock; I had, all morning, been wishing to the children that their pa' would come home; and felt more desirous of seeing him than usual. I feel truly thankful to the "giver of all good and perfect Gifts" that he was spared to return home safe to his family, who stood so much in need of his assistance and company. May the Lord bless and sustain us, and make us humble and grateful servants unto the end. We received a letter from brother John. He was at the falls of the Columbia and expected to come on, soon.

Sunday 20th

Day pleasant and clear Mr Alexander was here a short time today talking over the doings of the Legislature. We are all well. Mr. Ebey is very tired traveling but is in good spirits, at his own happy home once more. Hugh Crocket and G. Allen were here for dinner today.

Monday 21st

Cloudy this morning but warm. Evening clear and beautiful. Mr. Ebey went over to the Cove this morning after fruit trees and some other things he brought down with him. Mr. Fox,<sup>74</sup> Mr. Ivans<sup>75</sup> and Mr. Miller came home with him and took dinner. They have chartered the brig Cabbet to take to the Columbia, after families who wish to reside on the island; perhaps 30 or 40 which will be a great addition to our little settlement. We only number six families and about 15 children at present, most of them are too small to go to school. There are 18 bachelors and youths residing on the island, but we want more families, so we can have schools and churches for ourselves and our children. Coveland is beginning to improve. Vessels are beginning to load in the Cove with Spiles [piles] and square timber. There is one store at Coveland, and Mr. Fox is going on to erecting a saw and grist mill there, which will be a great advantage

---

<sup>74</sup>The identity of Mr. Fox, who is credited in this entry with the promotion of a saw and grist mill at Coveland, is not ascertained. None of the larger local historical works mentions him, nor is he credited by Whidbey Island historians with this work. Captain P. B. Barstow built the first store which was situated on the point which bears his name between the lagoon and the waterfront in Still's Park. The first mill was built about the time of the Civil War by John Robertson in the house now occupied by Jack Rosenfield. The second mill was operated by the Busbys. Flora Pearson Engle, *Early History of Whidbey Island, MS.*, in Edmond S. Meany Collection, Seattle.

<sup>75</sup>Henry Ivans.

to our beautiful island: as there is plenty of good timber for sawing and plenty of hands and oxen to cut and haul it to the mill, and our farmers have some wheat coming on, and will be able before another year to make their own bread in place of having to bring it from California and pay twenty dollars per hundred for it. We have but few hogs yet; but in another year we expect to have some. They can do well here on Kammus<sup>76</sup> there are quantities of it on this island, and it is excellent both for indians and hogs. A vessel went down the Straits today.

#### Tuesday 22nd

Day partly clear and partly cloudy. Mr. Ebey is setting out his fruit trees today in the yard. They consist of grafted apples, pears, peaches, and cherry, and grape, and plum. In the course of three years, if we live, and the trees do well, we will have plenty of choice fruit; which will be a great luxury indeed. Evening cloudy and turning quite cool. Some of the Klalm indians have returned to their old camping ground here in the lower part of our garden again; I do not intend to be troubled by them, as much as I have been heretofore. My health is some better today than it has been latterly. I hope it may continue better that I may be able to attend to my family and my household duties without suffering all the time. The children are studying their new books which their pa' brought them.

#### Wednesday 23rd

Morning a little cloudy. Mr. Crocket was here this morning to see what is best to be done in regard to paying the indians for the potatoes our cattle destroyed for them. Mr. Hays<sup>77</sup> from Olympia arrived here today off the Franklin his intention is to pay a visit to Susan Crocket. He is a widower. Dr. Lansdale is here tonight. Mr. Ebey enjoys himself very much in conversing with the Dr. I am pleased to see him so cheerful around his own peaceful fireside and hope he may continue cheerful and happy; Yet, he has many cares and troubles as we all have, and a great deal to attend to in supporting his family I Humbly pray God to sustain, assist him, and support him by His all saving grace; and help us both to tread this Earthly path together in happiness and affection. Training our children in the

<sup>76</sup>Kammus, or camas (*Camassia esculenta*) is a lily-like plant having a cluster of blue flowers at the end of the stem. The bulb, which forms the edible portion, resembles a fig in outward appearance. The Indians throughout the Northwest depended upon this plant for a portion of their food supply. The word is of Nootkan origin from "chamass" meaning fruit or something sweet to eat.

<sup>77</sup>Gilmore Hays, a leader of a train in the emigration of 1852, took into company a lone wagon, in which was a sick child, and Mrs. Naomi Gilmore, taking pity on the child, nursed it for several days, not suspecting the nature of its malady. In the wake of the epidemic which followed Mr. Hays lost his wife and three of his seven children.

way they should go'' and setting an example before them which they may look to as a pattern and guide when we are no more on this Earth.

Thursday 24th

Day pleasant and clear, very calm. Mr. Ebey and Mr. Hays have gone over to Col. Crocket's. We are alone all day but I am very busy ironing and doing up shirts. They returned towards night I do not know how the old gentleman succeed though I suppose not very well.

Friday 25th

Morning cloudy with some rain toward noon the wind became very high and disagreeable out. Mr. Ebey has commenced plowing today Mr. Engle is helping him. It is time to begin to plant some garden vegetables We have sown some cabbage, lettuce and tomato seeds. The ground is in fine order.

Saturday 26th

Morning foggy with a little rain. Mr. Ebey and Mr. Hays have gone to Mr. Alaxander's houseraising today. Evening still cloudy and a little rain falling now and then. Mr Ebey came back from the raising and brought Samuel Crocket with him who staid all night. They also enjoyed themselves very much in conversation on various interesting subjects, and we sat up very late.

Sabbath 27th

Day cloudy, but no rain fell until the close of the day John Crockett and Mr. Hays came a short time after breakfast Mr. Alaxander also came a while afterward. The indians are bothering us a great deal about their potatoes which our cattle and the cattle belonging to their neighbors, destroyed for them last Summer through their own neglect in not fencing or guarding them through the Summer and fall. They have been to see the agent and he will not pay them; And they threaten to kill our stock if we do not pay them. Their potatoes were estimated at 300 dollars by three competent judges The neighbors therefore met together and concluded it would be the best to pay them half the amount at this time and get them to wait for the ballance, rather than have any difficulty with them now when our settlement is weak; But to see that the same will not be to do again, and make them build good fences around their potatoes.

John Crocket paid 20 dollars,  
S. B. Crockett—paid 30 dollars,  
Mr. Alaxander paid 20 dollars



## Monday 28th

Morning cloudy, and some rain during the evening King George, General Taylor and Clonason are all here today receiving their money for their lost potatoes, and seem very well pleased.

## March 1st Tuesday

This is a beautiful warm day Mr. Ebey is very [busy] setting out his nursery of apple trees in the yard next the gate and had room only to transplant two for bearing trees and all the ballance in a nursery until next season One of the bearing trees is the Sweet Jane apple and the other

The names of the grafted peach trees are as follows. The first next the right hand of the Smokehouse is

1st Nectarine

2nd Admirable

3rd Ernest's favorite

4th Avery's Early

5th Red Rareripe.

## Wednesday 2

Day very clear and warm Mr. Ebey and Mr. Engle are plowing and getting along finely I am making a lead coloured dress, and the children are studying their books and doing a great many other turns. We succeeded in finding a young calf yesterday belonging to Bloss cow.

## Thursday 3rd

Morning foggy and a little showery I washed a large washing today with my new soap which takes the dirt and stains out of the clothes without boiling and with but little rubbing I only have to soak them 3 or four hours and rub them a little, ring them out and rinse them. It is called the Excelsior family soap. Mr. Ebey is sowing his wheat today Evening vey clear and warm like a Summer's eve.

## Friday 4th

Day clear and pleasant. Some young men came ashore from a brig wishing to find a location on the island for a storehouse Mr. Ebey recommended them to Coveland; they have 15 ton which they wish to land here and have it hauled over to the Cove— Today our new president Gen. Pierce takes his seat in the presidential Chair at Washing City, While President Fillmore retires from his seat I do not know at present where; There is a great parade made in the City today no doubt I hope and trust we will have a good President

in Mr. Pearce I think from what I can learn that he is a great and good man.

Saturday 5th

Morning clear and warm. We are very busy today scrubbing off the floors and cleaning the doors and tables I have an indian hired today to clear off the yard at 50 cts. Mr. Ebey is finishing harrowing in his wheat The crows are very troublesome on it.

Sunday 6th

Morning very thick with fog but quite warm and pleasant When the fog cleared away we noticed a large brig anchoring in close to our shore to put off some passengers from California who wish to settle on this island. Those young men who were looking for a station for a trading house, have their goods on board and wish to land them here but the Captain wishes them to get the scow and meet him at the head of the island and bring their goods off in it to the Cove; Which they have gone to do, and the vessel left this evening for above.

Monday 7th

Day beautiful and clear with a strong west wind Mr. Ebey hauling fire wood in the fore part of the day. the two young men who staid here last night went out to look for claims today and returned this evening.

Tuesday 8th

Morning cold and frosty a strong breeze from the North All day clear and warm in the middle of the day but toward evening it turned cool and the air frosty. My husband went to Coveland today and came home about 2 oclock with Mr. Howe with him who staid all night. Mr. Jenks and the other gentleman who have been here two nights left this morning for Oak Harbor after paying their bill which was six dollars.

Wednesday 9th

Still clear and frosty with a cool North wind. Mr. Howe got him some onions out of the garden to set out for seed and left for home. John Bartlet was here last night It is so rough and the wind so strong that he cannot go back to Port Townsend today and is staying until tomorrow. a Vessel went down the Straits today.

Thursday 10th

Morning quite warm The ground is white with snow this morning, but the Sun shone out so warm and bright that it all went off in an hour after sun up. This is a beautiful calm and pleasant day. John Bartlet left for home this morning after geting him some onions to

set out There is a great deal of trading and travelling backward and forward with the Klalm and Scadget indians. Mr. Ebey is cutting rail timber on the beach where there is an unusual quantity of drifted cedar timber.

#### Friday 11th

Morning rather cool the ground is frozen and some frost and ice discovered Evening clear and warmer We had a young calf out with the cow and it has been missing for several days We thought the indian dogs had killed it but last evening the indians found it in a hole in the prairie which had been dug for water The calf had been there three days and was still alive The cow had been around it but could do it no good Mr Ebey brought it home and paid the indian 8 yds. of callico for finding it.

#### Saturday 12th

Day very clear and pleasant We all dreamed a great deal about seeing Thomas and John and letters and newspapers last night and think perhaps they will come in a few days with Mr. Alaxander who is up the Sound.

Mr. Ebey went to the Cove today to get some pork and was gone until evening. Dr. Lansdale came home with him and went to Mr. Crockett's and returned here after dark and spent the night. I am very tired tonight and feel very badly have done a great deal today such as cooking cleaning up and ironing.

#### Sunday 13th

Another beautiful clear and warm day has dawned I feel as though I would like to hear a Sermon preached this beautiful Sabbath which makes a person feel so happy I hope the time will not be very long untill we will be blessed with the preached Gospel from Zealous Christian Ministers who are not laboring for money alone but for the good of the Church and Kingdom of Heaven, whose whole study and aim is to do good We do not want proud hypocritical men who call themselves Ministers of the Gospel in this new Country; we cannot place confidence in such if we know them Though they are hard to find out. Let us pray the Lord that He may send us pure-hearted laborors in this His plentiful vineyard that they may gather together those who seemed to be lost and scattered abroad in a heathenish land. and that He may preserve our faith in Christ and make us thankful for all His kind and tender mercies Dr Lansdale left for home this morning John Crockett was here a few minutes.

## Monday 14th

Morning cool and cloudy with a very strong South wind. A vessel passed downward this morning. Evening very clear and warm. We heard this evening that the Klalms have been over this morning to the Cove and killed four Skadget indians. The latter came over here this evening with their guns to fight the Klalms who are camped here on our beach but they are cowardly and went away without doing any injury after firing a few gun shots.

## Tuesday 15th

Morning cool and clear with some frost. Samuel Crockett came over this morning to get the indians to take him over to Port Townsend to get some provisions off a brig which has just arrived from California; but the indians charges four dollars for taking him over and back and therefore he and Mr. Ebey took oxen and wagon and went over to the Cove and hauled over a canoe which Mr. Ebey had there and now I think we will be independent of the indians in that respect. Old King George came over from Port T. today and there was a Skadget standing by their camp door when K. G. slipped up behind him and shot him dead and threw him in the bay. I heard the report of the gun but did not go out to look what was going on but presently I heard the news from the indian children. Mr. Ebey went down in the evening and there was the dead indian floating back and forth upon the beach by the surf. It was a distressing sight. They say their reasons for doing so is that they think there is among the Skadgets what I suppose superstitious white people would call witches and they are trying to kill them off as a head klalm and a Skadget chief died this winter the klalms think they have been killed in that way by some of their doctors.

## Wednesday 16th

Morning cloudy but calm. Samuel Crockett, Hugh and Mr. Hill went over to Port Townsend this morning. Evening beautiful and clear. Water almost perfectly calm. Mr. Ebey is harrowing his potatoe ground today. The children are cutting potatoes to plant and I am doing housework and sewing, but feel but little able to attend to business. I hear no shooting among the indians today but some of old Lalock's family stood guard all night fearing the Skadgets would come upon them and kill them. I understand today that they have all moved off from the Cove to Oak Harbor 8 or ten miles distant. You may see this in years gone by, may wonder how the first settlers of this country could live here without being in a great deal of danger but suffice it to say that although there are but few families of us



here we feel in perfect safety The indians know better than to murder a white person They know we could soon have them all killed and driven off Therefore they live in obedience and fear toward the Whites.

Thursday 17th

Day rather stormy and blustery water very rough this morning Two indians came over from Port Townsend this morning and was overwhelmed in the water near the shore and lost their canoe and everything in it. Evening more calm The indians on the beach about eight in all came to us for protection this evening they were afraid to stay in their own house all night We let them stay in one room.

Friday 18th

Day very pleasant but a little cloudy and some appearance of rain Samuel Crocket and the ballance returned home from Port Townsend today. They bought flour for 10 dollars per hundred and corn meal for eight dollars from a vessel that is anchored there; There was no pork to be had. I am washing today Mr. Ebey is beginning to plant potatoes.

Saturday 19

Cloudy all day today. We are preparing to go to Mr. Crockett's this evening to stay all night on a visit The neighbors held a small convention today at our house to nominate a delegate to go to the convention at Salem but they did not send one.

Sunday 20

Day cloudy and cool some rain falling arrived home from Mr. Crockett's and found Thomas here; he had left John and James on the Columbia who intend coming soon. They lost all their cattle in the winter except four which they intended selling at the Paxodes I am very sorry for their losses but thankful that they are all in good health after such trouble as they had in The Fall and Winter. as every one experienced who immigrated last Season Most of them lost all their cattle in the snow and had to pay very high for provisions I am very glad that Thomas has returned once more and hope he will continue.

Monday 21st

All went to work today planting potatoes. Day very pleasant The indians have all returned from Port Townsend and are camped above the beach

Tuesday 22nd

Day very clear, calm, and warm Mr. Ebey and the boys are planting potatoes. No news and no person passing today. All well.

## Wednesday 23rd

Night very stormy some rain fell this morning about 10 oclock the rain turned to snow and it snowed on until night but a great deal of it melted as it fell The wind blew very hard all day The men could not work out but staid about the house and cut potatoes to plant.

## Thursday 24th

Morning warm and pleasant The sun shone out very bright and soon melted off all the Snow and dried the ground Mr. Ebey and the boys have gone about three miles off to cut rail timber as the ground is too wet to plant potatoes I am alone all day.

## Friday 25th

Day warm and pleasant. The men are all gone to the rail timber. The children are studying their books and getting wood. No news to relate today.

## Saturday 26th

Day warm but cloudy I washed a large washing today and was very tired in the evening. My clothes dried in a few minutes commenced raining late in the evening and rained harder than it has done since last Fall.

## Sunday 27th

Day very clear, but very windy Wind from the South. No visitors today We are all generally engaged in reading and all well, for which I feel as if I cannot be thankful enough for to our Heavenly Father Who is so much better to us than we deserve. We do not praise him enough for all His tender mercies. May He give grace and make us more obedient children is my prayer.

## Monday 28th

West wind very light today and quite cool too much so far the men to be out at work. Thomas is making a door to his house and the ballance are keeping fires and reading, there is but little pleasure in or out.

## Tuesday 29th

Day very calm and warm. They continue planting potatoes. Dr Lansdale came over today to go to Port Townsend to see Mrs. Pettygrove who has been ill for some time; But the wind raised and blew very hard all night and the indians would not venture out.

## Wednesday 30th

Very Strong West wind all day today and very cool for the time in the Season A vessel seen coming up the Straits today which went

in to Port Townsend. Thomas is working at his chimney today, and Mr. Ebey has gone to the Cove. Quite cool this evening.

#### Thursday 31st

Still cool and windy The water is very rough. another vessel came in to Port Townsend today Mr. Ebey is harrowing his potatoe ground. I feel very unwell today Dr. Kenedy & son took dinner with us today. They are just from Fort Nesqually and brought us a handsome present of Grape Slips from Dr. Tolmie which is very acceptable and will give us a good commencement of grape vines if they do well. They also brought us some late papers.

#### April 1st Friday

Morning cool and wind high. Though towards noon the wind ceased and it became very calm Dr. Lansdale took dinner here today and went to Port Townsend this evening in a canoe Henry Wilson of Port Townsend came over this evening and went back with King George who was drinking a good deal. Turning cooler towards evening and the wind rising a great appearance of rain The men are planting potatoes today. I feel better today than usual but have no hopes of continuing so longer than one day at a time But I pray God to make me content with my situation and happy under any circumstances whatever.

#### Saturday 2nd

Day cloudy with some showers of rain all planting potatoes two vessels in the Straits.

#### Sunday 3rd

Day beautiful and clear looking a good deal for Ann Crockett today but she does not come We are very scarce of female neighbors here and desirous of having more hope we will have some time. Mr. Alaxander here this evening Hugh Crockett here for dinner.

#### Monday 4th

Day pleasant with but little wind. Mr. Ebey and Samuel Crockett went to view out a road today to Coveland.

#### Tuesday 5th

Morning clear and frosty; quite cool and but little breeze. All busy planting potatoes I am very unwell today and scarcely able to do my work. The two little boys are kept busy all the time doing the turns and helping me.

Wednesday 6th

Day clear and pleasant, but the morning was cool with a large frost. Mr. Ebey planted a pound of onion seed today and some turnip seed.

Thursday 7th

Morning foggy and a good deal of rain fell through the day. Finished planting potatoes today. Dr. Lansdale over today a short time.

Friday 8th

Day cloudy but no rain. Mr. Ebey, Thomas and Howard all went to help cut out a road from this prairie to Coveland and returned in the evening very tired. I washed today and had a hard job.

Saturday 9th

Day cloudy and some rain during the day. A vessel coming up the Strait. Thomas and Howard are working on Thomas' claim. Mr. Ebey is making a book case. I am ironing and cooking for Sunday, and the children are doing the chores and studying their books and are uncommon industrious.

Sunday 10th

Morning clear and pleasant. We were very late getting up this morning; A little after breakfast Brothers John and James came and no one on Earth can describe my feelings when I saw them. I was truly glad to see them but fresh thoughts of my dear mother came in to my mind and O the anguish of my heart but for giving vent by screaming as loud as I could it seemed my heart would break. I thought I had gotten over her death and given up to be resigned to it, until I saw them and the sight of those who saw her leave this world and buried her brought her fresh to my memory. But the Lord assist me and enable me by his grace to be content. John looks very natural and how happy I am that he has come. He is my eldest brother and has such sound judgment and so steady that he appears to me almost in the place of a father. Hereafter I will not be so lonely when Mr. Ebey is gone.

Monday 11th

Day very pleasant and clear. Mr. Ebey and John have gone to look for claims over to the Cove. Thomas and Howard have gone to Maj. Show's to haul home some potatoes for Thomas.

Tuesday 12th

Morning cool and day clear. Mr. Ebey and John have gone out again to look for claims in a large prairie South East of here. Thomas



Howard and James are planting potatoes on Thomas' claim a vessel went into Port Townsend today.

Wednesday 13th

Morning cloudy and South wind very high Mr. Ebey and John have gone to look at some more prairies and the ballance of the boys have all gone to plant potatoes. I washed a large washing today by having a s quaw to assist me Dr. Lansdale was here today.

Thursday 14

Day clear and pleasant John has gone to Oak harbor to look around a vessel gone up today.

Friday 15th

Day very pleasant a little west breeze. Hired a squaw to wash the floors all well but Eason who is complaining John returned from Oak Harbor by noon Hugh Crockett here at dinner.

Saturday 16th

A very pleasant warm day. All the boys gone to cut a road to the rail timber I am very much fatigued this evening ironing and preparing for Sunday Twenty or thirty indians landed on our shore this evening from Port Townsend with their guns and knives to make war with those who are camped here They fired guns and made a great noise but soon made friends again and are in peace.

Sunday 17th

Day cloudy till towards evening when it was clear and pleasant John and Ann Crockett were here today I was glad to see her and it done me a great deal of good, and raised my spirits some.

Monday 18th

Morning a little cloudy, but the day warm and clear Mr. Ebey and the boys have gone to haul rail timber. John has gone to work on Capt. Bell's claim and thinks of taking it. Bought some feathers from the indians Evening clear and the West wind rising. James started at twelve to take the men their dinners.

Tuesday 19th

Morning cloudy with a heavy dew, but towards 9 oclock the Sun shone out clear and we had a pleasant, calm day. Maj Show came over this morning to go to Port Townsend; There were no indians here and he and John went to Mr. Crockett's to get Mr. Ebey's canoe and go. I sent by them for some cupboard ware. Mr. Ebey has been out all day hauling rail timber, came home this evening very tired, but has gone to Mr. Crockett's to take a yearling calf that

gets all the milk from its mother. We have just received the mail by Capt. Paddle's boat. I feel very much fatigued this evening; I hired a Squaw to wash and assisted her some and done my other work. The indians have all left today for some time.

Wednesday 20th

Morning clear but evening cloudy. John Ross a half breed and his wife also half french and half indian are here this evening. They are moving from Cowlitz to Victoria. He brout us a letter from the Colonial Schoolmaster of the Hudson Bay Company at Victoria very respectfully inviting us to send our children to school under his charge. He promises to do a great deal by them and the price for each pupil is only 12 pounds per annum, for boarding and tuition. We think we will avail ourselves of such an excellent opportunity of getting our children educated. This gentleman (Mr. Robert Barr) previous to his leaving England was Master of the Leeds Moral and Industrial Training College (England) and has a certificate of Competency from the Lords Commissioners of the Queen's privy Council on Education. Mr. Ebey and myself are both complaining today of being rather unwell. Mr. Ebey made a door to the little bed room, and a bedstead.

Thursday 21st

Cloudy, and raining a great deal this morning. Just after we finished breakfast Maj. Show and brother John came home from Port Townsend. They started from there at dark and were nearly all night geting to shore. The water was very rough and they made a narrow escape with their lives. They had a large canoe and a great many heavy things in it. They had to throw some of them over board. It is a great blessing that they did not get drowned. They are very much fatigued, and worn. Continues raining very hard.

Friday 22nd

Day clear and pleasant. Two preachers (Rev Mr. Clare from Olympia and Mr. Morse<sup>78</sup> from the Willamette,) and Mr. Miller came here this evening after night and staid all night. Mr. Clare intends preaching here on Sunday morning.

Saturday 23rd

Morning cloudy but evening clear. Six men came from off the brig Cabbot (which landed last night in the Cove from the Co-

---

<sup>78</sup>"In 1852 the Methodist conference of Oregon assigned Benjamin Close to a pastorate at Olympia. He preached his first sermon on the 26th of Dec. [1852] in a school-house just erected in that place. In the following April Close and an associate, Morse, made a tour of the settlements down the Sound, and Morse was assigned to duty."—H. H. Bancroft, *History of Washington*, etc., p. 373.

lumbia) They all have families and some of them wish to take claims on the island. The preachers have gone to Port Townsend.

This evening a gentleman off the Cabbot brought a lady to our house with 5 other ladies and gentlemen and was married by brother Clare who just returned in time. It is the first marriage that has ever been on the Island.<sup>79</sup>

#### Sunday 24th

Morning cool and rainy. All our neighbors cannot get out to preaching today. Col. Crockett brought Mrs. Crockett and Susan over, and all his boys. We had tolerable good congregation, and heard a good Sermon. All left after the Sermon and went to the Cove to preaching.

#### Monday 25th

Still raining some today and cool. The bride and groom Mr. and Mrs. Doyle are staying here until they get a house raised. Mr. and Mrs. Ivins also came this evening to stay a while. The preachers left today. One of them is going to preach to us monthly. It is a great thing to have preaching once more. I hope it may do our Island some good.

#### Tuesday 26th

Still raining and quite cool. Mrs. Doyl's sister (Mrs. Kellogg came from the Cabbot to see her before she would leave for Olympia, where she is going to reside.

#### Wednesday 27th

Morning clear and warm. Evening cloudy and cool. Mr. Ivins is working on his claim not far from Mr. John Crockett's. Mr. Miller was here today all day. Judge Strong Mr. Starling and Maj. Goldborough were here today on their way to Dungeness.

#### Thursday 28th

Day pleasant until toward evening. A vessel passed going up the Straits. Mr. Hancock<sup>80</sup> was here trying to hire oxen to haul out

<sup>79</sup>"In the spring of 1853 the brig J. C. Cabot, Dreydon master, brought to the island from Portland John Kellogg, James Busby, Thomas Hastie, Henry Ivins, John Dickenson, all of whom had families, Mrs. Rebecca Maddox and five children, Mrs. Grove Terry and daughter Cloe, R. L. Doyle, who married Miss Terry, Nelson Basil, and A. Woodard, who subsequently went to Olympia."—*Ibid.*, p. 30.

<sup>80</sup>Samuel Hancock must be enumerated among the early pioneers of Washington. According to a manuscript which he prepared in 1860 entitled "Thirteen Years' Residence in Washinton Territory," he was on the Sound as early as 1847 and between that date and 1851 visited most of the coastline of the territory, including Puget Sound. He claims to have been the first discoverer of coal in the region east of the Sound, and he further claims to have been the first white man to have explored the Duwamish, Cedar, and other streams. He settled down to simple life in 1852 and was married to Susan Crockett. He died in 1883 at Coupeville.

Spiles [piles] He could not get them, and went on to Mr. Crockett's to hire them to haul out several cargoes.

Friday 29th

Morning clear and warm. Mrs. Doyle washed a large washing of clothes today Mrs. Ivins went out to her claim to make some garden and was gone all day

Saturday 30th

Day pleasant until towards evening when the wind raised very high and it was quite cool.

Mr. Morse our preacher for the island came this evening from Billingham's bay and is very well pleased with that country and the people Tomorrow was his day to preach at Port Townsend but the water is so rough that he cannot get over and intends preaching here.

May the 1st Sunday

Morning warm and clear. preaching commenced at 11 oclock. We had a tolerable good congregation for this country. John and Ann Crockett staid until evening The ballance of the crowd left as soon as preaching broke.

Monday 2nd

Raining this morning very hard and rained a great deal in the night. Cloudy and cool all day. I am very unwell today my cold is no better this evening. Thomas and John are plowing and planting potatoes. Mr. Ebey is making an axehelve, Mr. Ivins and Mr. Doyle are working on their claims and the ballance of us are cooking and sewing. Mrs. Ivins gave us several tunes on her guitar this evening and Mr. I assisted by playing the violin They have a beautiful tone when played together.

Tuesday 3rd

Raining very hard this morning at daylight and we have had showers of rain all day. Mr. Ebey and Thomas are fencing on the beach to prevent the cattle from coming on the wheat Mrs. I. is gone all day to her claim to make garden. I was very unwell this morning but feel better this evening The evening appears to be clearing off and we have an appearance of clear weather, we have had a long spell of rain for this time in the year which is unusual in this country. Though everything is growing finely

Wednesday 4th

Still cloudy but warm A vessel is coming up the Straits this morning and another is going out from Port Townsend.



## Thursday 5th

This morning is clear and the day pleasant I feel stronger and in better health today than I have done for three weeks I think the weather has a great effect on my health.

## Friday 6th

Morning warm and clear The Straits are very calm and everything looks pleasant all day. Mr. Ebey and the boys are rafting rail timber and it is a serious job.

## Saturday 7th

Today is a warm and clear day. Thermometer is at Summer heat. Mr. Ivans is raising his house today. All the families are gone this evening but myself and Mrs Doyle. She is busy ironing and I am doing the baking for Sunday.

## Sabbath 8th

Another beautiful clear morning has dawned The water is perfectly calm. A gentleman from Billingham's Bay staid here last night He is gone over to Port Townsend this morning. He is one of the owners of the Coal claim there. Two Gentlemen from Dwamish have just arrived. One of them is Mr. Wiley the first editor of the Columbian and the other is a lawyer by the name of McConaha<sup>81</sup> who is candidate for Congress from this northern territory. He is a very self conceited man in appearance.

## Monday 9th

A gooddeal of strong west wind today, the Water is quite rough; Though the Sun shines very clear. Mr. Ebey and his two guests have gone over to the Cove.

## Tuesday 10th

Day very pleasant Mr. and Mrs. Ivans prepared and moved this evening to their claim although their house has no covering and there is a great appearance of rain. Mr. Ebey and Thomas are busy making fence around the potatoes. Mr. Ebey is working very hard digging holes for posts for palings.

## Wednesday 11th

A very heavy rain fell last night which causes me to pity Mrs. Ivans knowing she has been very wet all night without a shelter. The mail carrier came today with a great many papers for us and

<sup>81</sup>G. N. McConaha, Sr., of Seattle, first president of the territorial council, was drowned by the overturning of a canoe, while in company with Captain P. B. Barstow, on May 23, 1854. See, ante, note 74.

some letters. Among them was a letter from Winfield They are all well and wish very badly to come to Oregon but cannot make the outfit this Season. I hope they can come next season at farthest Sister Martha and husband are coming this Season.

We have just received news by the mail that our territory is Organized and called Washington Territory and a gentleman from Massachusetts by the name of [Isaac I. Stevens] is appointed Governor We are all very much rejoiced at the Idea of having a territory of our own North of the Columbia It will go forward in improvements and settle up very fast in spite of Oregon territory The great rush hereafter from the States will be for Washington Territory And it will make one of the best States in the Union and has more advantages besides its mild climate than any state in the Union But I am too unwell to say so much on such subjects I will leave it for those who are stronger, I am very weak at this time.

#### Thursday 12th

We had a gooddeal of rain last night again but today it has cleared off and is quite pleasant and calm. Mr. Hancock and Samuel Crockett took dinner here today. They brought us down some pork from the vessel I sent Mrs. Crockett some vinegar by Samuel and Susan a dress. Capt. Boscow and his partner staid here last night.

#### Friday 13th

Weather calm and clear. A vessel coming up the Straits today Capt. Paddle called here today on the hunt of a boat that got away from him last night It was loded with about \$500 worth of flour, pork and other articles—

#### Saturday 14th

Day cloudy and until evening which is clear and pleasant Mrs Doyle is busy scrubbing and ironing today I am not able to do much.

#### Sunday 15th

This is a beautiful Sabbath, Everything and person looks pleasant and happy. We have had preaching here today and but a small congregation only three females of us Mrs. Alexander Mrs. Doyle and myself I thought brother Morse preached a better Sermon than usual. I hope his preaching will do our island a great deal of good in the end, he seems so zealous in the cause of the Gospel. I feel better today than I have done for some time.

## Monday 16

Still clear but quite windy water very rough a vessel coming in and one going out.

I wrote a letter to Aunt Martha and one to aunt Polly today.

## Tuesday 17

Weather clear today but quite cool and a strong West breeze stirring. Dr. Lansdale and Hugh Crockett here a short time today. Brother John killed a fine deer last night Mr. Ebey is splitting rails on the beach. I am very unwell today scarcely able to sit up. Mrs. Doyle is very kind doing the work and letting me rest. or I would give entirely out.

## Wednesday 18th

This is a beautiful clear and calm day All seems serene and happy. I feel quite well today, The preacher staid here last night. He is going to start over to Oregon in a few days I have written to aunt Martha to come over with him and the roads are dry at this Season of the year. Mr. Ebey is very hard at work malling rails. Two Frenchmen and some indians came here this evening in a canoe. They found Capt. Paddle's boat on a little island below here cut to pieces and some of the other articles not far off. An. account book with the Capt. name in several places and writing. We suppose the indians from Port Townsend Stole the boat that night and took it down there to hide it and the articles.

## Thursday 19th

Calm and pleasant; I think this is the most lovely day we have had this Spring The Straits seem perfectly calm. A vessel going up today. Mrs. Doyle is washing today. Mr. Doyle has gone to Oak Harbor to look at the Country and will be gone until tomorrow evening Mr. Ebey is malling rails on the beach and it appears to be very warm for him today. Hugh Crockett and John went to Port Townsend today.

## Friday 20th

Day cloudy and a great appearance of rain Cleared off towards evening and was very windy but pleasant. all the men gone but Mr. Ebey.

## Saturday 21st

Morning cloudy and warm very much like rain Towards 12 oclock the Sun shone out and we had a beautiful evening. Mrs Doyle is ironing I am very weak today Can scarcely do my cooking. I am very lean and feel sometimes like my stay on this earth will not be very long. The Will of the Lord be done in all things I have become

resigned to His Will. If He thinks it best for me to leave this earth soon, it is all right. I will leave all I hold dear here, into his special care. O, may he watch over them and protect them during life and not let them neglect their Soul's Salvation. O, may they not quench the teachings of the Spirit and not neglect the reading of His bible and fervent prayer continually.

Sabbath 22nd

Day beautiful and clear. No person here today the first Sabbath we have not had company for five or six of them. Dr. Lansdale came over late this evening to see Mr. Ebey about holding an inquest over the body of Old Mr. Church who was found dead on his claim at Oak Harbor. It is supposed he was killed by the indians.

Monday 23

Went to day to Oak Harbor and held an Inquest over the body of Judah Church—inquest of the jury that he came to his death by some cause unknow to the jury his body was a good deal decayed we buried his remains by throwing a mound of earth on the same—returned home late in the evening

Tuesday 24th

Hawled some wood to day and went to Col Crockettes after a cask of pork

Day pleasant

Wednesday 25

Split rails in the fore noon in the afternoon went to Coveland for Dr Lansdale in the evening went for Mrs Alaxander Thomas went for Mrs Ann Crockette and Mrs Ivans; John killed a deer this evening Evening quite windy.

Thursday 26

Rebecca was delivered this morning at about 1, oclock AM of a fine daughter She suffered a good deal but not so much as we expected Our little daughter we conclude to call Sarah Harriet for Rebeccas Mother and Sister and for my Mother and Sister, She is quite comfortable day verry pleasant—and warm women Dr and all went home after brakfast Capt Dryden called this evening from Olympia brought me word down of my appointment as Collector of the Port of Pugets Sound vice Simpson P. Moses removed— Mrs Crockette came over this evening



Fryday 27th

Day pleasant Dr Lansdale called over today Rebecca doing well—

Sat 28th

Dr Hayden U S A and Lieut Rentz of sam with Col. E. A. Starling Indian Agent with a detachment of soldiers called here this morning spent the day in company with them—

Sun. 29

Went this morning with the Leut and Dr to the Cove called on Capt Bascom [Barstow] Dr Lansdale and others returned in the afternoon day pleasant—

Rebecca still improving— Mrs Crockett went home to day

Monday 30

Commenced halling rails to fence in my feald Lieut. K. Dr. H. & Col. S. all gone to Col Crocketts on a hunting and visiting excursion. four vessels this morning in sight all going out I think— Afternoon verry windy from the west

Tuesday 31st

Morning cloudy with a light wind from the south the Lieut starts this morning for New Dungiess the Dr and Col Starling goes back to Steilacoom— I conclude to go with them Rebecca quite smart—

Sat Oct 8

Kind Reader the hand that pened the most of this volum is now cold with the icy chill of death. The loveing heart from whence flowed the passages of affection in this volum is forever stilled, But the sperit that animated and prevad all I trust still lives, more pure, and refined than when on earth. A sperit perfect rejoicing around the throne of God and a Savior forever.

Rebecca W. Ebey Departed this life on the 29 day of September A D 1853 at about 6 oclock P M. Aged 30 years 9 months & one day and in ninth year eleventh month and 26th day of wedlock.

I. N. E.

## BOOK REVIEWS

---

THE JOURNALS OF CAPTAIN MERIWEATHER LEWIS AND SERGEANT JOHN ORDWAY, KEPT ON THE EXPEDITION OF WESTERN EXPLORATION, 1803-1806. Edited by Milo M. Quaife. (Madison, State Historical Society of Wisconsin, 1916. Pp. 444.)

Mr. Quaife, who edits the volume with introduction and notes, is superintendent of the society that publishes it. The work is Volume XXII of the society's collections.

"But few exploits in the annals of American exploration deserve or have received the degree of interest and attention which attaches to the expedition of Lewis and Clark across the continent in the years 1803 to 1806." Thus the editor begins his preface. He shows that the State Historical Society of Wisconsin has borne an important part in making known the immortal achievements of the two youthful captains of the expedition. Lyman C. Draper, first secretary of the society, is credited with saving the journal of Sergeant Floyd, which was published by the society under the editorship of Professor James D. Butler. Ten years later, in 1904, Reuben Gold Thwaites, second superintendent of the society, gave to the world an edition from the original journals.

A century ago, Nicholas Biddle edited the first narrative of the expedition. Two grandsons—Edward and Charles Biddle—have aided in this effort to bring forth new light with these documents found among the Biddle family papers.

The Lewis journal is brief, occupying about fifty pages of this volume. The Ordway journal is especially important for three reasons: It gives about the only complete record of each day's doings written by one man; it is the only complete record kept by a subordinate who participated in the expedition; and "it fills the one gap hitherto existing in our narrative record of the exploration, the descent of Ordway's party from the Three Forks of the Missouri to Whitebear Islands above Great Falls, Montana, July 13-19, 1806."

The unique portion contributed by the Lewis journal is the record of the river trip from Pittsburgh to the winter camp on River Dubois. That this record existed has apparently been unknown to students of the subject until the discovery of this journal.

In the foot-notes Editor Quaife has tried to identify each camping place and other localities mentioned in the journals.

There are thirteen maps and illustrations in the book. The frontispiece is a beautiful half-tone of Alice Cooper's statue of Sacajawea.

jawea in Portland, Oregon. The first pages of each journal are reproduced. Several pictures are reproduced from Maximilian, Prince of Wied's Travels. From the Philadelphia, 1811, reprint of Sergeant Patrick Gass's Journal is reproduced the quaint drawing entitled, "An American, having struck a bear but not killed him, escapes into a tree."

Those who have collected the works of Lewis and Clark should certainly secure this book. It makes a rich supplement to any of the other editions.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

EUROPE IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY; AN OUTLINE HISTORY. By E. Lipson. (London, A. & C. Black, 1916. Pp. 298.)

In a volume of three hundred pages the writer gives an "analytical rather than narrative" account of the various larger European states from the fall of Napoleon to the outbreak of the present war. The interest is centered primarily in the internal development of the peoples on the continent; and the attention is centered at all times on the great problems of the nations. It fills a need in the history world in this method of presentation; and it is to be highly recommended to advanced classes in the history of the period.

J. N. BOWMAN.

HISTORICAL RECORDS AND STUDIES. By the United States Catholic Historical Society. (New York, by the Society, 1917. Pp. 208.)

Volume X in this series is in large measure a memorial to Charles George Heberman, who died at his home in New York City, on August 24, 1916. He was chosen president of the United States Catholic Historical Society in 1898. His devotion to the work prompted his unanimous re-election year after year until his death. He is given credit for much of the work that has been published by the society. In this volume there are several of his studies and many appreciations of the man from the pens of others.

STONE ORNAMENTS USED BY INDIANS IN THE UNITED STATES AND CANADA. By Warren K. Moorehead. (Andover, The Andover Press, 1917. Pp. 448.)

This is a monumental work, beautifully printed and sumptuously illustrated. While it has a general interest wherever Indian life is studied the greatest interest in the book will be among those in the Mississippi Valley and the Eastern states.

There are about a dozen references to the Pacific Coast. Two of these have a special significance. On page 403 the author says: "While it seems to the writer the Pacific Coast was settled first, and

tribes or bands found their way from there to the East, one must not overlook the possibility of another solution." On page 407, he says: "Therefore, it is unlikely that the Southwest or Pacific Coast was settled by people coming from the East. If there was any migration it was more likely to have been from the West to the East and at a period of unknown antiquity, since the forms described between the covers of this book developed in the East and not in the West."

In the long list of those to whom the author makes acknowledgments for help are the following: F. S. Hall, Curator, State Museum, University of Washington, Seattle; W. H. Thacker, Arlington, Washington; J. P. Tonsfeldt, White Salmon, Washington.

---

THE MIDDLE GROUP OF AMERICAN HISTORIANS. By John Spencer Bassett, Ph. D., LL.D. (New York, The Macmillan Co., 1917. Pp. 324. \$2.)

The middle period of American historical writing as treated by Professor Bassett begins with the work of Jared Sparks about 1826 and extends to 1884 with the organization of the American Historical Association and the more marked emphasis upon strictly scientific historical writing of which that association was at once the outgrowth and in turn the cause.

An interesting chapter traces the early progress of history before the time of Sparks in very interesting fashion. Sparks, Bancroft, Motley and Peter Force are studied at length as the leading historians of the middle period. The work is, of course, creditably and sympathetically done by Professor Bassett, and historical students everywhere will hope that "health and years" will allow him to fulfill his wish to complete his work along the line of the present volume.

From the press of Smith College (Smith College Studies in History, Volume II, No. 2, January, 1917,) also comes a small volume edited by Professor Bassett, giving the "Correspondence of George Bancroft and Jared Sparks, 1823-32," which supplements the first book and throws an interesting light on the relationship existing between Sparks, as editor of the *North American Review*, and George Bancroft, one of the reviewers for that publication.

EDWARD McMAHON.

---

THE ANNUAL PUBLICATIONS OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA (Volume X, Parts 1 and 2, 1915-16).

This report contains, in addition to many valuable articles dealing with South Pacific Coast history, two reprints that are rare. One is the report of Commodore Stocton on the battles of January 8 and



9, 1847, in the neighborhood of Los Angeles, and the other is the vigorous protest of Governor Pico against the action of the Bear Flag Party, which played an important part in severing California from Mexico. The latter document has not heretofore been printed.

---

ANDREW JOHNSON, MILITARY GOVERNOR OF TENNESSEE. By Clifton R. Hall, Ph. D., Assistant Professor in History and Politics in Princeton University. (Princeton, Princeton University Press, 1916. Pp. 234.)

A very carefully worked out study of a much neglected field of activity in the Civil War which throws an interesting light on Andrew Johnson and the bitter controversies of a border state during that trying period.

---

THE CONGREGATIONAL HOME MISSIONARY ASSOCIATIONS OF THE NORTHWEST. By W. D. Lyman. (Walla Walla, Washington, Association of Congregational Churches, 1916. Pp. 20.)

Professor Lyman of Whitman College gathered much history for his address, delivered at Pasco on October 3, 1916. The address, according to the foreword, "was thought by the members of the association to embody facts and dates not before given in one connected view, and to possess in consequence a permanent value." The address is therefore issued in pamphlet form.

The Whitman Mission occupies the first few pages, after which many other pioneer efforts for religion and education are discussed. A fine tribute is paid to the late Professor Thomas Condon, "Oregon's Grand Old Man of Science."

---

THE CASE OF SPOKANE GARRY. By William S. Lewis. (Spokane, Spokane Historical Society, 1917. Pp. 68.)

This is Volume I, Number 1 of the Society's Bulletin. Mr. Lewis is Corresponding Secretary of the Society and is devoted to its success. As the author is a lawyer, it is natural that this work should assume the form of a "case." Part I has the subtitle: "The Facts in the Case." Part II is "The Case Against Garry" and Part III is "Conclusion."

There are eleven valuable half-tone illustrations in the book. Two treaties are given in the appendix and several documents are used in the text. Spokane Garry is one of the large Indian figures in early Spokane history. Mr. Lewis has certainly rendered an important service by bringing together such dependable material in this definite addition to Northwest Americana.

THE CALL OF THE WEST; LETTERS FROM BRITISH COLUMBIA. By C. F. J. Galloway. (New York, Stokes, 1916. Pp. 328. \$3.50.)

There is real merit in the unpretentious travel sketches of Mr. Galloway's "The Call of the West." Without preface or introduction, the author proceeds at once to describe the people and country of Western Canada as he met them during a recent visit. The descriptions are intended for readers in the Old Country and therefore fuller of explanations of ordinary matters than if prepared for a local audience. The author writes with sympathetic appreciation but without exaggeration. The book is fully illustrated.

---

LADD & BUSH QUARTERLY. (Salem, Oregon, Ladd & Bush, Bankers, 1917. Pp. 30.)

The word quarterly seems not to be appropriate for this publication at present. This issue is for January, 1917, and is called Volume III., Number 3. It succeeds the issue of January, 1916, and is therefore more of an annual than a quarterly. This is said, not at all in criticism but for the guidance of collectors of historical materials. Each of the issues carries something of historic value. In the present issue there is an article on Oregon based on the writings of Jonathan Carver, Greenhow, Vancouver, Drake and others.

---

STEEL POINTS. By William Gladstone Steel. (Medford, Oregon, the author, 1917. Pp. 47. 25 cents.)

This is called Volume II., Number 1, and the author says it is "published occasionally." Four preceding numbers constitute Volume I. The dates and titles of those are: October, 1906, Portland; January, 1907, Crater Lake; April, 1907, Mount Hood; July, 1907, The Olympics.

This present number is dated March, 1917, and is devoted to Oregon Place Names. There are about 500 names noted in alphabetical order. The author invites corrections, additions and suggestions for the improvement of a second edition. He promises to devote this series of his little publication to American nomenclature. The next four numbers are announced as follows: Washington Place Names, Idaho Place Names, Montana Place Names and Biblical Names and Characters.

---

THE WATERWAYS OF THE PACIFIC NORTHWEST. By Clarence B. Bagley. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1917. Pp. 298 to 307.)

This pamphlet is a "separate" reprinted from "The Pacific Ocean in History" by H. Morse Stephens and Herbert E. Bolton, the book

being a record of the papers given at the meeting of the American Historical Association held in San Francisco during the Panama-Pacific Exposition. Mr. Bagley's paper, though brief, is packed with facts and figures about the use and improvement of the waterways. He closes with a prophecy made by John C. Calhoun in the Senate on January 24, 1843. The debate was on the "Oregon Bill" and Calhoun pointed out a great future for the commerce of the Pacific. Mr. Bagley's comment is: "The present witnesses the culmination of this remarkable prophecy made by one of America's ablest statesmen more than seventy years ago."

---

#### Other Books Received

CAMBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Publications, Number 9. (Cambridge, The Society, 1915. Pp. 92.)

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF NEWBURGH BAY AND THE HIGHLANDS. Publication, Number Seventeen. (Newburgh, The Society, 1916. Pp. 39.)

HUGUENOT SOCIETY OF SOUTH CAROLINA. Transactions, Number 22, 1916. (Charlestown, The Society, 1917. Pp. 95.)

KANSAS STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. Twentieth Biennial Report, 1914-16. (Topeka, State Printer, 1916. Pp. 320.)

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS. Report of the Librarian of Congress and of the Superintendent of the Library Building and Grounds for the Fiscal Year ending June 30, 1916. (Washington, Government Printing Office, 1916. Pp. 236.)

MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION. Prize essays written by pupils of Michigan Schools in the local history contest. (Lansing, The Commission, 1917. Pp. 35.)

ROBINSON, MORGAN PORTIAUX. Virginia Counties: Those resulting from Virginia Legislation. Bulletin of the Virginia State Library, Volume 9, Numbers 1-3. (Richmond, State Library, 1916. Pp. 283.)

## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### Gift of Valuable Manuscripts

Edith G. Prosch has presented to the University of Washington Library for preservation in its fireproof vault a collection of rare documents collected by her father, the late Thomas W. Prosch of Seattle. The most valuable item consists of a satchel filled with official letters received by Colonel William H. Wallace. The satchel was carried by Colonel Wallace on his trips from the territories of Washington and Idaho to Washington city as delegate in Congress, and many of the letters relate to official business. It will be remembered that Colonel Wallace came to Washington Territory in 1853 and became an early delegate in Congress. In 1861 he was appointed governor of the territory by President Lincoln, but being elected as territorial delegate he failed to qualify as governor. While still in Washington, D. C., he was appointed on March 10th, 1863, first governor of the newly created Territory of Idaho. This office he accepted, but resigned in the fall of the same year on being elected as Idaho's first delegate in Congress. During these years he had official relations with the leading men in the Pacific Northwest. The letters in this collection bear upon important events of the period covered. In addition to these letters are many other documents covering the period of the fifties and sixties. Noteworthy among these are proposals and other manuscripts relating to the Northern Pacific Railway, papers concerning the Nez Perces Indian Agency, the W. A. Slaughter papers, and receipts and accounts illustrating the business life of old Steilacoom.

---

### Gift of Missionary Record

William S. Lewis, Corresponding Secretary of the Spokane Historical Society, has copied and compared with the originals an extensive volume of records of the Spokane Mission. The mass is substantially bound in a large volume of 428 pages of typewritten matter. The volume is presented through the Washington Historical Quarterly to the Library of the University of Washington. The contents include the diaries of Rev. Elkanah Walker and Mrs. Mary R. Walker from 1838 to 1852 and a large number of letters. A few of the letters were written by Mr. Walker but most of them are letters from Marcus Whitman and one from Mrs. Whitman.

The Elkanah Walker family and the Cushing Eells family were of that part of the so-called Whitman Mission which settled and



worked near where the present city of Spokane is located. They arrived there in 1838. The place was known as Tshimakain, though often referred to in later days as Walker Prairie. These copied manuscripts are, of course, fundamental as to the history of that part of the State of Washington.

---

#### **Old Record of the University**

Clarence B. Bagley has presented the University of Washington a transcript of its own early records. It is the cash book of the Board of University Commissioners of Washington Territory from 1861 to 1867, inclusive. Mr. Bagley has written a certificate to accompany the transcript and there gives a brief resume of the matters covered in the record. His father, Rev. Daniel Bagley, was president of the Board of Commissioners and the son was familiar with the records from the date of the first entry. The transcript with his brief essay are therefore dependable and valuable additions to the historical records of the University.

---

#### **Plan to Honor Stevens**

Senator W. S. Davis was author of Senate Bill Number 24 in the last session of the Washington Legislature. By this measure it was sought to allow the State of Washington to honor the first Territorial Governor—Isaac Ingalls Stevens—by the erection by a statue of him in Statuary Hall in the National Capitol.

The bill was passed by the Senate, but it was allowed to die in a committee in the House. However, enough interest in this matter has been aroused to ensure success at the next session of the Legislature. In the meantime plans are being formulated to keep the interest alive and to allow many people throughout the State to take part in bestowing such an honor upon the memory of this most important character in the history of the Commonwealth.

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Contributing Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
WILLIAM S. LEWIS, Spokane.	HAZARD STEVENS, Olympia.
F. W. HOWAY, New Westminster, B. C.	

## Managing Editor

EDMOND S. MEANY

## Business Manager

CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VIII. NO. 3

JULY, 1917

*ISSUED QUARTERLY*

## Contents

F. W. HOWAY.....	The Spanish Settlement at Nootka....	163
HAZARD STEVENS .....	The Pioneers and Patriotism.....	172
EDMOND S. MEANY.....	Richard Dickerson Gholson.....	180
T. C. ELLIOTT.....	David Thompson's Journeys in the Spokane Country .....	183
DOCUMENTS—Angus McDonald: A Few Items of the West, Edited by F. W. Howay, William S. Lewis and Jacob A. Meyers.....		188
BOOK REVIEWS .....		230
NEWS DEPARTMENT .....		238

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

Entered at the postoffice at Seattle as second-class mail matter.

# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### THE SPANISH SETTLEMENT AT NOOTKA

After Captain Cook's third voyage maritime traders began to resort to this coast lured by the stories of its illimitable wealth in furs and skins. Spain looked with jealous eye upon this trade, which, besides enriching other countries to her detriment, was regarded as an infringement of her territory and a trespass upon her closed sea—the immense Pacific ocean. This lay at the root of the struggle between Britain and Spain, which is known as the Nootka dispute.

To assert her rights and to maintain her position it was determined to found a Spanish settlement at Nootka Sound. Accordingly, in the spring of 1789, two vessels were dispatched, from San Blas in Mexico, with colonists for this proposed venture. Shortly after their arrival some English vessels from China, operated by John Meares, a lieutenant of the Royal Navy, were seized and their crews imprisoned. This brought the relative claims of Great Britain and Spain on the coast into conflict. During the early summer the Spaniards built upon the highest point of the island dominating Friendly Cove, a fort mounting ten cannon and near by a barracks for the garrison.

On the semi-circular shore of Friendly Cove, with its wide stretch of white sea-sand, Maquinna, the famous chief of Nootka, had his summer village. From pre-historic days the spot had been a village site. It combined proximity to the fishing grounds, safety for canoes, and abundance of fresh water. But the uncivilized must make room for the civilized. The site of the Indian village was also convenient for the Spaniards. Maquinna and his subjects were, therefore, forced to abandon their old homes and select a new locality some five or six miles farther up the sound. With great sorrow, as Maquinna told Jewitt, they found themselves compelled at the behest of a stranger



to quit the home of their forefathers. Except from the sentimental point of view this was not a serious matter, for they were in the habit of regularly changing their homes at least twice a year. On such occasions everything was removed except the upright posts which formed the skeleton of the building. In their stead, though but slowly, now rose the Spanish village. By the end of July only three houses had been built—a workshop, a bakery, and a lodging house. It must be confessed that in external appearance and in the regularity of its laying out the new village had very little to boast of over the efforts of the untutored savage.

In this spot, so wild and new, so far from any other Spanish settlement, a ceremony dazzling with all the pomp of circumstance so dear to the Castilian heart, occurred in June, 1789. It was the formal taking of possession, an empty ceremony frequently performed, upon which Spain greatly relied as placing her ownership beyond dispute. In the archives the instrument of possession, a long, very formal, and high-sounding document, is preserved. As it gives a complete description of this mediæval custom, the following translation may prove of interest:

In the Name of the Holy Trinity, Father, Son and Holy Ghost, One True God in three Distinct Persons, who is the creative principle and creator of all things, without whom nothing good can be instituted, achieved or preserved—and Whereas the principle of everything good must be in God—and therefore it behooves us to begin it in God—for the glory and honour of HIS MOST HOLY NAME.

Therefore Know All Men To Whom these presents and the present Chart of Possession shall come that: Today being Wednesday the 24th day of June 1789 on the arrival of the Frigate named “*Nuestra Senora del Rosario*” (Alias “*La Princesa*”), together with the packet boat “*San Carlos el Filipino*” both belonging to His Most Mighty Illustrious and Catholic Majesty Carlos the Third, King of Castile, of Leon, of Aragon, of all the Sicilies, of Jerusalem, of Navarra, of Granada, of Toledo, of Valencia, of Galicia, of Majorea, of Seville, of Sardinia, of Corsica, of Cordova, of Murcia Jaen, of the Algarves, of Algeciras, of Gibraltar, of the Canary Islands, of the Eastern Indies and Western Islands, and of the (foreshore) first land “*Y Tierra prime del Mar Oceauo*” in the Oceanic Sea, Archduke of Austria, Duke of Bologna, of Brabant, and Milan, Count of Aspurg, Flanders, Tyrol, and Barcelona, Lord of Biscay and Molina, The said frigate and packet-boat, by Command of His Excellency Don Manuel Antonio Florez Maldonado Martinez de Angul y Bodquin, of Knight of the Order of Calatrava, Commander of Nolino and Laguna Rota, Lieutenant General of the Royal Armada, Viceroy and Captain General of New-Spain, President of the Royal Audiencia, and Sub-Delegate General of Corres in the said Kingdom, Having sailed from the port of San Blas, on the Southern Sea, in the Government of the Viceroy, aforesaid, on

the 17th day of February in the same year, for the purpose of discovery along the coast from Monterey northwards. This expedition being under the command-in-chief of Don Estevan Jose Martinez, Ensign of Marine, in the Royal Armada; and said expedition being anchored in the port of Santa Cruz, one of the numerous harbors contained in the Bay of San Lorenzo de Nuca, with the aforesaid frigate of his command and the packet-boat of his following. Said Commander-in-Chief having disembarked with the officers of both ships, with the troops, and a number of the sailors, together with the Fathers Chaplains Don José Lopez de Nava, and Don José Maria Diaz and the four Missionaries of the Order of San Francis of the Apostolic College of San Fernando de Mexico, Brother Severo Patero, (President) Brother Lorenzo Lacies, Brother José Espi, and Brother Francisco Sanchez—The said Commander drew out a cross, which he worshipped devoutly on his knees, together with all those who accompanied him:—then the Chaplains and Friars sang “Te Deum Laudamus”—and the canticle having been concluded the Commander said in a loud voice: “In the name of His Majesty the King Don Carlos the IIIId—Our Sovereign whom may God keep many years, with an increase of our Dominions, and Kingdoms,—for the service of God, and for the good and prosperity of his vassals, and for the interests of the mighty lords the kings, his heirs and successors in the future as his commander of these ships, and by virtue of the orders and instructions which were given to me in his royal name, by the aforesaid His Excellency the Viceroy of New-Spain, I take, and I have taken, I seize, and I have seized possession of this soil, where I have at present disembarked which had been formerly discovered by us, in the year 1774—and once more, on the present day,—for all time to come, in the said Royal Name, and in the name of the Royal Crown of Castile and Leon, as aforesaid—As if it was my own thing, which it is, and shall be and, which really belongs to the King aforesaid, by reason of the donation and the bull “*Expedio Motu Proprio*” of our Most Holy Father Alexander VI. Pontiff of Rome, by which he donated to Most High and Catholic Monarchs Ferdinand V and Isabel his spouse, Kings of Castile and Leon, of illustrious memory, and to their successors, and heirs—one-half the world—by deed made at Rome on the 4th of May in the year 1493—by virtue of which these present lands belong to the said Royal Crown of Castile and Leon, and as such I take, and I have taken possession of these lands aforesaid, and the adjoining districts, seas, rivers, ports, bays, gulfs, archipelagos, and this Port of Santa Cruz, in the island named by Martinez—among the many which are enclosed in the Bay of San Lorenzo de Nuca,—which bay is situated in latitude North  $49^{\circ} 33'$  and longitude  $20^{\circ} 18'$ —West of the meridian of Sn Blas where I am at present anchored with the said frigate and packet-boat of my command, and I place them, and they shall be placed under the dominion, and power of the said Royal Crown of Castile and Leon, as aforesaid, and as if it was my own property, which it is.”—And as a sign of such possession he drew his sword which had hung by his side, and with it he counted the trees, the branches, and the lands, he disturbed the stones on the beach and in

the fields without encountering any opposition, asking those presents to be witnesses of these facts, and to me Rafaël de Canizares, who am the Notary appointed to this expedition by the Commander-in-Chief he ordered me to relate the facts in due form, as a public testimony. thereof.—Then taking a large cross on his shoulders, and the crews of both ships having been formed in marching column, armed with guns and other weapons, the procession marched out, the Chaplains and Friars chanting the Litany of "Rogation"—the whole troupe responding—and the procession having halted, the Commander planted the cross in the ground, and made a heap of stones at the foot thereof—as a sign and in memory of the taking of possession in the name of His Catholic Majesty Carlos III. King of all Spain (whom God keep)—of all these lands and neighbouring districts discovered, continuous and contiguous—and gave the name of "Santa Cruz" to this port, as has been said—And when the cross was planted, they worshipped it once more, and all prayed, demanding in supplication from our Lord, Jesus Christ, that He should accept their offering, because everything had been done for the glory and honour of his Holy Name, and in order to exalt, and enrich our holy catholic faith—and to introduce the word of the holy Gospel among these savage nations, which until the present time had been kept in ignorance of the true knowledge and doctrine,—which will guard them and deliver them from the snares and perils of the Demon and from the blindness in which they have lived,—for the salvation of their souls.—after which the chaplains and friars began chanting the Hymn "Vexilla Regis."—Following this, a solemn high mass was celebrated on an altar which the Commander had caused to be erected, by the Rev. Chaplain of our frigate, Don José Lopez de Nava, assisted by the chaplain of the packet-boat, Don José Maria Diaz, and the four friars aforesaid—this being the first mass which was said in this land in honour of our Lord God Almighty,—and for the extirpation of the Devil and of all idolatry.—The sermon was given by the Very Rev. Father President—Severo Patero, Apostolic Missionary of the order of San Francis and of the Royal College of San Ferdinand of Propaganda of the Faith—of the City of Mexico.—

This function being concluded, the aforesaid Commander as a further sign and testimony of the taking of possession, caused a tree to be cut, which he had made into a cross, into which he engraved the Holy Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, with four capital letters I. N. R. I.—and wrote at the foot of the cross: Carolus tertius, Rex Hispaniorum.—

In Witness Whereof these presents were signed by the Commander, and witnessed by the Captain of the Packet-boat, "San Carlos," Don Gonzalez Lopez de Haro; the first pilot of the Armada, Don José Tovar, the chaplains aforesaid Don Jose Lopez de Nava, Don José Maria Diaz, and the four friars of the College of San Ferdinand—And I the Notary appointed by the said Commander, authenticate these presents as a true testimony of what took place—as it has been related herewith.—Signed: Estevan José Martinez—Gonzales Lopez de Haro,—José Tovar y Taniariz—Dr. José Alexandro



Lopez de Nava—Fray Lorenzo Lacies—Fray José Espi—Fray Francisco Miguel Sanchez—

Before me

Rafaël Cañizares—

This is a copy: Mexico 27th August 1789

—Antonio Bonillaz.—

The Spanish settlement, so pompously launched, was abandoned late in the autumn of 1789, the fort dismantled, and everything taken back to San Blas. This step had been ordered almost as soon as the expedition sailed. The reason is unknown. Flores, the viceroy of Mexico, under whose direction the step was taken, seems to have been of a vacillating nature. His successor, Revilla Gigedo, following the Royal Instructions, purposed to sustain with vigor the new establishment at Nootka, and had already planned to send three vessels with complete equipment, supplies, and reinforcements. The unexpected return of Martinez with the whole Nootka settlement completely shattered his arrangements. He was determined, nevertheless, to maintain effectively the Spanish possession of the port, not only for its inherent value, but to prevent its being occupied by the British, who had entered into the maritime trade with great energy and contemplated the erection of trading posts on the coast.

He re-cast his schemes, and in February, 1790, three vessels, well-fitted and carrying supplies for a year, sailed from San Blas for Nootka. A garrison, consisting of two corporals and eighteen privates, formed part of the expedition. Elisa, the new commandante, was instructed to re-establish the fort; to erect the necessary buildings; to seek the friendship of the natives; to defend the settlement from attack by them or by any foreign power; and to explore carefully the northern coast and the strait of Fuca. In the last order can be seen a remnant of the belief in the north-west passage.

The first official act was the re-taking of possession, with all the glitter and glamour of the preceding occasion. The abandoned fort and barracks were re-established. And now upon the shores of Friendly Cove arose a little Spanish village: the earlier attempt had scarcely reached the point where it could properly be called a village. The gigantic firs were felled to make room for the irregularly built houses, which were scattered along the one straggling street. All day long, thrown back from the heights of San Miguel, the sound of axe and hammer re-echoed over the narrow waters of the placid cove.

The most imposing structure, occupying a prominent position almost in the centre of the horseshoe shore, was the dwelling of the commandante, Elisa, and later Quadra and Alava. Clustered about it were some sixteen houses: store-rooms for the supplies for the set-



tlement and for war materials for the fort and the vessels, a hospital, a bakery, blacksmith's and carpenter's workshops, and residences for the officers and men. The church, too, with the priest's house and the church yard, stood in a conspicuous position. The impressiveness of the primeval stillness of Sabbaths and holy days was only increased by the mellow notes of the angelus and the sweet and solemn hymn of the devout worshippers. But in the eyes of the natives, Father Catala, the Franciscan monk, was the possessor of a strange magical power, akin to that of their medicine men.

A brick-lined well, whose ruins yet remain, supplied the little village with abundance of *buen agua*, as the old plan has it. Gardens and enclosures for domestic animals edged their way amongst the blackened stumps. And in the background, hemming in the scene, was the dense forest, with its mighty colonnades, dense, dank, and sombre. From the commandante's residence ran a narrow, winding path, about a mile in length, leading to the little lake, so familiar in later years, as the place where Jewitt, the captive of Nootka, was accustomed to spend his Sundays.

The settlement was purely military. It existed by official order only, and not as a result of voluntary action. Of colonists in the real sense of the word there were none. Family life was unknown. So far as any records show the whole population was male.

The garrison, having no military duties to perform, gave their attention to cultivation. The soil was found to be productive. Vegetables of all kinds were grown plentifully, in these, the first gardens in Old Oregon. Years afterwards Jewitt found on the spot, self-propagated onions, peas, and turnips, though the latter had so deteriorated that nothing but the tops was fit to be eaten. When wheat and corn were tried, however, the results were disappointing, owing, probably, to the proximity of the ocean. Vancouver has very little to say about the gardens of the settlement. He gave his attention to live-stock, and reports that "the poultry, consisting of fowls and turkies, was in excellent condition, and in abundance, as were the black cattle and swine."

The settlement was a piece of Old Spain, in miniature. Spanish manners, customs, and ideals held sway as rigidly upon the wild shores of Nootka as in the precincts of Madrid. All vessels, royal or merchant, entering the sound, saluted the fort, punctiliously, and received the same courtesy in return. The commandantes, or governors, Elisa, Quadra, and Alava, vied in extending to all visitors the Spanish grace of hospitality. They kept open house, and showered upon British

naval officers and "Boston pedlers" alike generous gifts of the produce of the establishment and of luxuries imported across half a world.

Vancouver mentions that he and his officers dined with Quadra and were gratified with a repast "such as they had been lately but little accustomed to or had the most distant idea of meeting with in this wild region." A dinner of five courses, consisting, as he says, of "a superfluity of the best provisions," was served with great elegance. Captain Ingraham, of the *Hope*, a Boston trading vessel, tells us that when he dined with Quadra he had "an excellent dinner, everything being served on silver." He adds, somewhat naively, that knowing the general Spanish custom of taking a siesta, he retired soon after the meal.

Other trading captains were the commandante's house guests. Many were supplied with store-houses for the lading of their ships; and to all were freely given the assistance of Spanish launches to tow their vessels into and out of the sound, and of Spanish carpenters to aid them in making their repairs, and generally every kindness or good office that the most tender concern for their welfare could suggest.

When Ingraham was about to sail from Nootka, the Spanish commander, Quadra, sent to him: "Forty fresh salmon, some fresh pork, eggs, butter, fifty loaves of new bread, some wine, brandy, and a good supply of cabbage, salad, etc., which considering the part of the world we are in, I thought a very handsome present. Not a day passed during our stay in this port, but every ship, without respect to nation or person, received marks of Don Juan's hospitality."

Even the untutored savage showed the beneficial effects of daily intercourse with the Spanish settlement. Maquinna and his brother, who as the head chiefs of the tribes of the vicinity, were frequent guests at Quadra's table, soon abandoned their uncouth way of eating, became quite proficient in the use of knife and fork, and learned to behave almost decorously. Most of the chiefs, not excepting treacherous old Maquinna himself, commenced to exhibit considerable polish in their conduct, meeting or parting with strangers with a great deal of ceremony, copied from their Spanish mentors, and bowing and scraping "Adieu, Senor," in the most approved Castilian style.

For five years this strange settlement existed. It did not grow; it was not intended to grow. Called into existence at the behest of the Viceroy of Mexico, it depended upon that part of the Spanish dominions for its continued existence. It was never self-sustaining, and, outside of the cattle and vegetables raised, it made no effort to become so. No storekeepers or traders of any kind resided there. It

had no commerce: it desired none. No vessels came to trade with it. Such merchant vessels as did cast anchor in the port of Nootka sought the trade of the neighboring Indian tribes; and the Indians looked only to these vessels for trade. The settlement was intended principally as a support of the claim of Spanish sovereignty; though it afforded a place of refuge and a centre of operations for the three or four Spanish public vessels on the northern part of the coast. It is true that soon after its establishment the Nootka Convention, provided for its abandonment; it might therefore be urged that under such circumstances it could not be expected to grow; but, apart from that agreement, its nature and purpose contained no germ of growth. It was created by official action; it was terminated by the same.

In March, 1795, as a result of the arrangement arrived at by Great Britain and Spain, the flag of Castile and Leon was lowered on the ramparts of San Miguel, never to float again. So unpretentious was the ceremony on that occasion that no details of the event have been preserved. The practical British mind was more interested in the result than in the formalities. Once more the fort was dismantled; on this occasion, permanently. The buildings were abandoned, and in part destroyed; and, with gladsome hearts it may be assumed, the Spaniards returned to Mexico.

No sooner had they departed than down upon the scene swooped the natives, rejoicing greatly to re-occupy their old village site, with such added improvements as remained. Every bit of iron, every scrap of metal left behind was greedily seized upon. This search completed the demolition of the Spanish buildings. To the Indians the churchyard was a veritable mine. Like ghouls they exhumed the coffins for the sake of the nails, which they converted into fish hooks.

Soon all evidence of civilization was blotted out. The Indian came again into his own; and once more there arose on the shores of Friendly Cove a native village, with its dozens of canoes drawn up on the beautiful stretch of sloping sand. Jewitt, who was at Nootka eight years later, mentions only the foundations of the church and of the governor's house as remaining. To-day, evidences of the existence of the old well can be found; and an indistinct ridge shows where the houses stood. Occasionally one of those old-fashioned, strange-shaped Spanish bricks is dug up. Of the frowning fort, so prominent in the Spanish pictures of Nootka, no vestige remains. Ichabod! Ichabod!

But though so soon and so completely vanished all material evidence of Spanish occupation, others of a less tangible kind remain. Tradition points out the site of the governor's house, the church, and the burial ground. Spanish numbers up to ten can be counted by

many Indians of the neighborhood, though only a linguist could recognize their identity. Roman Catholic forms of worship and customs at Christmas-tide are still remembered. The late Father Brabant writes:

I asked him if there was any priest in Nootka during the time of the Spaniards' occupation of the fort and cove. He at once brightened up and began his narrative: "Oh yes, there were priests—two priests, very heavy and very corpulent—they had no hair, were almost completely bald, and when the sun stops [solstice of winter] they had two babies. My grand uncle used to go and see the people in church (indicating the place where the chapel was erected, close to where the chief has his house now) and the people would go on their knees and get up; yes, there were priests—two big bald men, and the Spaniards kept Sunday." The description of the Indian is very accurate. The priests are described as corpulent, for the Franciscan monks wear heavy cloaks, and even a delicate man looks robust when clad in their robes. These Franciscian monks came from South America and Spain. Their heads were considered bald by the Indians, though the appearance was a consequence of the tonsure or shaved head of the monk, it being a point of their rules and description to wear the tonsure. The babes at the time of the solstice of winter, Christmas-tide, were noticed in the church by the Indians, it being the practice in many Roman Catholic churches to erect a crib as a representation of Christ's birth in the stable of Bethlehem, only the Indian mentions two babes instead of one, the other may have been a statue of the Virgin Mother of our Saviour. An Indian woman one day sang at my request different Catholic hymns before the late Archbishop Seghers.

F. W. HOWAY.



## THE PIONEERS AND PATRIOTISM\*

The march of the Oregon Pioneers across the wide desolate plains and mountains is one of the most remarkable movements in the history of that Republic. Preceded by the Lewis and Clark exploration of 1805-06, the fur-traders and trappers from 1812, and afterwards the missionaries of 1834 and 1836 and a handful of settlers who in some measure explored the country and prepared the way, the immigration of the Pioneers began in 1842 with the coming of 105 persons; next year 700 arrived; in 1844, 475; in 1845, 3,000; in 1846, 1,500; in 1847, 5,000; and they came in ever increasing numbers in following years. Many mingled motives induced this exodus: the spirit of adventure, love of change, the desire to escape the fever and ague then widely prevalent in the Mississippi Valley, the lack of markets for their produce, the pressure of debt; but among them all, land-hunger and patriotism were the strongest. For years the Oregon Question—the conflicting claims of the United States and Great Britain to the vast undefined Oregon Country—had been debated in Congress and discussed in the newspapers. A number of books and pamphlets describing the country in glowing colors had been published. By these means great interest was aroused among the people, especially in those of the then western states which we now term the Middle West and the strong feeling and determination excited to hold that great and beautiful region for the United States and defeat the British designs upon it. The men of that generation were bitter against England, for the animosities engendered by the Revolution and War of 1812 had not yet subsided. Their patriotism was stronger, more outspoken, self-assertive, self-reliant than that of to-day. They were proud of their country, of her colonial and revolutionary history, of her free institutions handed down from Anglo-Saxon forefathers. They delighted in celebrating the Fourth of July by the firing of cannon, and noise of guns and firecrackers; and in hearing the eagle scream by the voices of fervid orators who declared the glories of the Republic and her manifest destiny to gather beneath the Star Spangled Banner the whole continent from the North Pole to the Isthmus of Darien and from Ocean to Ocean.

And the Donation Act, which offered 640 acres to every settler and his wife who located in Oregon, pending and debated in Congress

---

\*Address by General Hazard Stevens on the occasion of the thirty-fourth annual meeting of the Pioneer Association of the State of Washington, at Seattle, June 5, 1917.

from 1839 until 1850 when it passed and which everybody believed would pass, added the lure of land to the call of patriotism and the pioneer immigration was the result.

These Pioneers were not rude, ignorant, lawless, reckless, borderers usually associated in literature and common belief with the frontier and mining camps. In reality they compare favorably with the founders and settlers of any of the States. They were people of more than average courage, enterprise, and self-reliance, for no others would undertake such a journey. With few exceptions they were intelligent, manly, self-respecting, honest, hospitable, kindly; and many of them deeply religious. They were all true Americans, patriotic and brave, and filled with firm faith in the future growth and greatness of the new country which they had come to make "blossom like the rose." Among them could be found the best blood of New England; the sturdy and kindly yeomanry of Virginia, Kentucky and Missouri; and men from every state of the Middle West. Most of them had slowly wended their way across the great plains and mountains, overcoming every obstacle and suffering untold privations; others had come by sea around Cape Horn or across the Isthmus. Governor Stevens appreciated the character of these people and spoke of them as follows: "They have crossed the mountains and made the long journey from the valley of the Mississippi to their homes on the Pacific, having to cut roads as they went and knowing little of the difficulties before them. They are therefore men of observation, of experience, of enterprise, and men who at home had by industry and frugality secured a competency and the respect of their neighbors, for it must be known that our emigrant traveled in parties and those go together who were acquainted at home because they mutually confide in each other. I was struck with the high qualities of the frontier people and soon learned how to confide in them and gather information from them."

The Pioneers, especially in Oregon, were commonly called "Pikes" because so many of them came from Pike County, Missouri. When a newcomer arrived, he was asked, "did you come the Plains over, the Isthmus across, or the Horn around." It was frequently remarked of a man of known or suspected dishonesty that he had sent his conscience around the Horn and it had not yet reached him. In nothing was the high character of the Pioneers better shown than by their fair and kindly treatment of the Indians. They frequently hired Indians to work on the farms, and squaws to do the housework, and traded with them for fish, shell fish and berries. They

opposed the sale of liquor to Indians, and as jurymen were prompt to convict the miscreants guilty of such offense.

It was the coming of the Pioneers that saved Oregon to the United States, especially that part north of the Columbia River, the present state of Washington. For forty years the whole Oregon region was under the absolute sway of a British fur company, at first the Northwest company of Montreal which, in 1820, was merged in the Hudson's Bay Company of England. The able, far-sighted chiefs of that Company early determined to keep all north of the great River of the West as British Territory. To that end, in 1825, they moved their principal establishment from Fort George (now Astoria), on the south bank of the Columbia River, to Fort Vancouver, on the north bank. In 1833 they built Fort Nisqually on the Sound. In 1840 they opened farms on the Cowlitz and Nisqually Plains and stocked them with cattle and sheep; and in 1841 they brought out and colonized at those points with Canadian and Scotch settlers.

The British Government strenuously upheld their contention. To them and to anyone knowing and contrasting the action of the two countries in supporting their people, there appeared no doubt that the Columbia River would be made the boundary, and all north of it became British soil.

But this well-laid plan of the Hudson's Bay Company's chiefs was defeated by the advent of the American pioneer settlers with their ox-teams, their cattle, their plows and their rifles, and their reputation as fighting men earned at Bunker Hill, Saratoga and New Orleans.

To them the people of this State owe a debt of perpetual gratitude. But for them there would be no state of Washington. This beautiful land would be British soil and its inhabitants subjects of a European king.

The patriotism of the Pioneers was put to an even severer test by the Indian war of 1855-56. The war was not caused by aggression of whites upon Indians as has been erroneously claimed. Said Governor Stevens in his message to the Legislature of January, 1856: "The war has been plotting for two or three years, a war entered into by these Indians without a cause, a war having not its origin in these treaties nor in the bad conduct of the whites. It originated in the native intelligence of restless Indians, who foreseeing destiny against them, that the white man was moving upon them determined that it must be met and resisted by arms. We may sympathize with such a manly feeling, but in view of it we have high duties."

The Indians most closely in contact with the whites—all the

tribes on the Sound—remained friendly and at peace except the Nisqualli who were largely intermarried with the Yakima, the chief instigators of the war, and the majority of the Nisquallies refused to take the war-path. The great unbroken tribes of the upper country east of the Cascades, the Yakima and Cayuse, instigated by Kamaiakam, the leader, and Owhi, the diplomatist, brought on the war.

Year after year they saw the long trains of immigrants pass through their country and settle like swarming bees upon the fertile plains of the Willamette. They saw the Indians there dispossessed of their hunting grounds and rapidly dying off the face of the earth. The tale of every Indian wronged, or who thought himself wronged, was borne with startling rapidity to their ears. Thus far their intercourse with the whites had been of immense benefit to them. The fur-traders supplied them with superior weapons, blankets, and many articles of comfort and had greatly improved their condition. Devoted missionaries had labored among them for years, and with some success. By trade with the immigrants they were growing rich in cattle. But the actual occupation of the soil by the settlers filled them with alarm. Amid all these benefits the fear was fast growing into conviction that the fate of the Chinook and Wallamettes was the presage of their fate, and that the whites would pour with increasing numbers into their country and appropriate it to themselves. In these two tribes, the Yakima and Cayuse, the desperate resolution was extending and deepening itself to rise and wipe out the dreaded invaders ere it was too late. For several years the bold and turbulent spirit among them had been enlisting the disaffected Indians far and wide in a great combination designed to crush the unsuspecting whites simultaneously at all points by one sudden and mighty blow. Their emissaries visited the tribes on the Sound, Grays Harbor and Shoal Water Bay but met with no success except with their kindred among the Nisquallies.

In the spring of 1853, General Benjamin Alvord, then a major and commanding the military post at the Dalles, heralded among the Indians of the upper country the approach of General Stevens with his exploring parties, and in reply was visited by a delegation of chiefs of the Yakima, Cayuse and Wallawalla who declared that "they always liked to have chiefs, Hudson's Bay Company men, or officers of the army, or engineers, pass through their country, to whom they would extend every token of hospitality. They did not object to men hunting, or wearing swords, but they dreaded the approach of the whites with plows, axes and shovels in their hands." Major Alvord had largely dealt with and studied these Indians, and, more-



over, had confidential information from Father Pandosy, a Catholic priest of the Yakima Mission. He became so impressed with the danger of an outbreak that he reported the facts and rumors to his superior, General Hitchcock, commanding the Pacific Department, by whom they were discredited, and Major Alford was soon afterwards relieved from the Dalles. Events were soon to prove that the magnitude and imminence of the danger were even greater than he apprehended, yet outwardly all was serene. The people were lulled into a complete sense of security.

The blow fell in October, 1855, like a thunderbolt from a clear sky. Settlers on White River and other places were massacred, miners and travelers in the upper country were cut off; Agent Bolon was murdered by Qualchin, the son of Owhi; Major Haller with a hundred regulars was forced to retreat by the Yakima. Another force of regular troops under Captain Maloney, after crossing the Cascades and entering the Yakima country, fell back to Fort Steilacoom. This, the only military post on Puget Sound, could muster barely one hundred soldiers and was so far from protecting the settlements that it called for and received the reinforcement of a company of volunteers. Fort Vancouver, the only other post, was but a handful in strength, and was reinforced by two companies of volunteers. But even this pitiful force was not to be used against the savage enemy, for Major-General John E. Wool, commanding the Pacific Department, disbanded the volunteer companies after they were mustered into the United States service, refused to take any active measures to protect the people, and loudly proclaimed both in his official reports and through the press that the war had been forced upon the Indians by the greed and brutality of the whites and that the former would be peaceful if only let alone and not treated with injustice.

The settlers in dismay abandoned their farms and fled for refuge to the few small villages. They were all poor, having no reserves of money, food or supplies, and starvation stared them in the face if prevented from raising a crop. Moreover, there was a deficiency of arms and ammunition, for the Legislature had neglected the Governor's recommendation to organize the militia, and the war department in consequence refused to issue arms and ammunition to the territory.

In this emergency, when the country seemed overwhelmed and the future hopeless, the Pioneers rose at the call of their Governor as one man. Out of a population of scant 4,000 men, women and children, over a thousand volunteers took up arms, and inside of three weeks were in the field attacking the foe.

The old men, boys and families returned to their farms and held them with blockhouses and stockades. The merchants furnished food and supplies to the extent of their abilities, the settlers oxen and wagons, Portland, Victoria and San Francisco aided with supplies and munitions. The volunteers were organized in three battalions. While the northern battalion blocked the Snoqualmie Pass and guarded Seattle and the lower Sound, the central battalion under Major Gilmore Hays advanced across the Puyallup, and on March 10, 1856, broke the power of the hostiles at the battle of Connell's prairie. The Indians, emboldened by their previous success, fought for five hours with a stubbornness that enabled the volunteers to inflict severe losses upon them. They were finally routed by a charge on their left flank by Captains Swindal and Rabbeson and a simultaneous attack in front by Captains Henness and White with a loss of 25 or 30 killed and many wounded. An hundred Yakima warriors aided the Nisquallies in this fight. The Indians now scattered and war parties doubled back behind the troops and killed men near Olympia. The southern battalion was brought over to the Sound from the Columbia River. The Indians were allowed no respite from attack and could find no refuge even in the densest swamps and thickets. The central battalion sent out strong parties to beat up the country of the White, Green, Cedar and Puyallup Rivers to the base of the mountains. Major Van Bokkelen, with Captain Smalley's Company and 76 of Chief Patkamim's Snoqualmie braves, swept the forests from the Snoqualmie to Connell's Prairie, thence up the mountains to Naches Pass, thence northward along the foot of the range to and over the Snoqualmie passes. Captain Sidney Ford, with his Chehalis Indians, and Agent Wesley Gosnell with a party of friendly, or pretended friendly, Indians from the Squaxon reservation—own brothers to the hostiles these—scoured the swamps of the Nisqually and Puyallup. Lieutenant Pierre Charles with a force of Chehalis and Cowlitz Indians scouted up the Newaukum and Cowlitz Rivers and captured a number of the enemy.

The ladies of Olympia made blue caps with red facings with which these red allies were equipped to distinguish them from their hostile kindred. Another company under Captain E. D. Warbass built a blockhouse on Klickitat Prairie and kept scouting parties constantly on the move. Major Mason and his command searched the whole length of the Nisqually far into the Cascade Range, leaving their horses and plunging into the tangled forests on foot, and on one scout killed eight and brought in fourteen captives. Miller's and Achilles's companies joined in the work. Captains Howe and Pea-

body led detachments of the northern battalion from the Snoqualmie down through the unknown and trackless forest to Lake Washington and beat up the shores of the Lake. Lieutenant Neely led a party in canoes up Black River into the Lake and fell upon the camp of the hostiles just after it had been abandoned, which was filled with remains of cattle and goods plundered from Seattle and the settlers.

Every blockhouse with its little garrison, every armed train and express as well as the numerous scouting parties, was constantly watching and searching for hostile Indians, and more than all, their own kindred, of whom Colonel B. F. Shaw declared "Blankets will turn any Indian on the sides of the whites" now joined in the hunt, and, stimulated by rewards, showed the way to all their secret hamlets and trails.

Then the whole tangled region with its dense forests and almost impenetrable swamps from the Snohomish to the Cowlitz, 200 miles, was beaten up, the Indian resorts and hiding places, and trails searched out. It was in the midst of the rainy season that this aggressive campaign was waged. Amid constant rains and swollen streams the volunteers threaded the dripping forests where every shaken bough drenched the toiling soldier with another shower bath, following some dim trail, or often cutting or forcing their way through the trackless woods—heavy packs of blankets and rations on their backs, the axe in one hand, the rifle in the other. Scarcely would they return from one scout when they would be ordered out again. To every demand the volunteers responded with the greatest alacrity, spirit and fortitude. The mounted men without a murmur left their horses and took to the woods as foot scouts. The southern battalion, who enlisted with the expectation of campaigning on the plains of the upper country, promptly and cheerfully obeyed the order summoning them to the Sound, to the discomforts and hardships of the rains, forests and swamps.

For two months after the fight of Connell's Prairie the whole force thus incessantly hunted down the hostile with unrelenting vigor. The Indians thrown completely on the defensive, did not commit another depredation on all that long line of scattered settlements. They were driven and chased from covert to covert, their hidden camps and caches of provisions were discovered and destroyed, many were killed or captured, and by the middle of May over five hundred came in and gave themselves up and were placed on the reservations with the friendly Indians while the guilty chiefs and warriors fled across the Cascades and sought refuge among the Yakima.

Thus the war west of the Cascades was ended by the complete surrender or flight of the hostiles.

In June the forts and blockhouses built by the volunteers on Puyallup and White Rivers, Connell's Prairie and Camp Montgomery were turned over to the regular troops, and the volunteers on the Sound were disbanded in July.

Starting from Camp Montgomery on June 12, Lieutenant-Colonel B. F. Shaw led a force of 175 mounted men of the central and southern battalions across the Naches Pass, traversed the Yakima and Walla Walla Valley without finding an enemy, and struck the hostiles in the Grand Ronde Valley, instantly charged and broke them and chased them fifteen miles across the valley, killed forty and captured all their provisions, ammunition and over 200 horses and mules, many of which bore the "U. S." brand, and had been taken by the Indians from the regular troops. These captured animals sold at auction in Vancouver brought more than the cost of Shaw's expedition.

Shaw's command marched via the Dalles to Vancouver except one company which Governor Stevens retained to protect his camp at a council with friendly and hostile Indians in the Walla Walla Valley in September and which rendered good service in repelling an attack of the hostiles. This company, too, marched to Vancouver, and all were mustered out in October.

Thirty-five stockades, forts and blockhouses were built by the volunteers, 23 by the settlers and 7 by the regular troops. The discipline and good conduct of the volunteers were remarkable and more creditable to them. All captured property was turned over to the quartermaster and properly accounted for. There was no case of murder or unauthorized killing of Indians by the volunteers, nor plundering, nor serious offenses of any kind. They were the best type of American settlers, brave, intelligent, self-respecting, and patriotic. They went into the war in self-defense and were determined to put it through as soon as possible. Their achievements form an example of patriotism of which their descendants and the whole State may well be proud, and one worthy of imitation at this time.

HAZARD STEVENS.



## RICHARD DICKERSON GHOLSON

In 1915, I published a little book on the Governors of Washington, at which time the materials available for a biography of the third Territorial Governor were searched, the Library of Congress and the Department of Historical Research of the Carnegie Institution of Washington were helpful, but only the smallest items of information were gleaned. The chapter on Governor Gholson was at that time closed with the sentence, "The search is still in progress."

One method of searching was the use of directories of American cities. From these were obtained a list of addresses of various Gholsons to whom letters of inquiry were sent. One reply was interesting and quite indicative of experiences in the Old South when slaves took the names of their masters. This Gholson said he would like to help, but he supposed we were looking for a white man, while he belonged to the black family of that name.

The best reply to the letters was from L. T. Gholson of Kevil, Kentucky, who is a nephew of Governor Gholson. He kindly sent a brief manuscript and promised to render any further assistance in his power. Victor J. Farrar, Research Assistant in the University of Washington, while on a journey to his former home in New York State, took occasion to visit Kevil, Kentucky, and was rewarded by being able to glean a number of facts that make for a much better understanding of the man.

First let us have the brief statement written by L. T. Gholson:

"Richard Dickerson Gholson was born near Culpepper, Va., January 31, 1802.

"His father, William Jarrell Gholson, was Welch and English, his mother English and Cherokee Indian. He was educated in Virginia, moved with his parents to Kentucky when a young man, studied law and soon rose to prominence among his people.

"In the early fifties he went to Indian Territory with a view of locating and securing land which was due him as a Cherokee descendant, but, upon the protestation of his wife that she would never live among the Indians, he gave up the idea. He was an ardent supporter of President Buchanan, stumping the State of Kentucky for him in his race for the presidency and by whom he was appointed third Governor of Washington Territory.

"He had been appointed assistant commissary of United States Volunteers in the Mexican War, June 26, 1846, with the rank of cap-

tain. His widow drew a captain's pension until her death. Governor Gholson died at Troy, Tennessee, August 28, 1861, from injuries received from a runaway team.

"He was married in 1826 in Kentucky to Miss Jane Martin and to this union eleven children were born. Two of these are now living—Mrs. A. L. Steel, Weatherford, Texas, and Mrs. S. F. Baker, Duncan, Oklahoma. The eleven children were as follows:

1. Agnes, born 1827, married Seymore Puryear.
2. Martin Frederic, died when a young man.
3. Angelline, married Harlerson Millican.
4. Richard D., Jr., died when young.
5. Phoebe, died young.
6. William Samuel, married Mary Brooks.
7. Sarah, died when a child.
8. Susan Frances, married Robert Wilson.
9. Marguerite, died at age of 17.
10. Birdine, married Les Shubert.
11. Daniel, died an old bachelor at Lawton, Oklahoma, December 10, 1913."

When Mr. Farrar called upon Mr. L. T. Gholson at Kevil, he was quite willing to add to the biography, but he felt as though he had written all the facts in his possession in that sketch. However, there was another source of information in that neighborhood. When his uncle had gone out to Washington Territory as Governor he took along his younger brother, Samuel, to act as his private secretary. Samuel had a sweetheart who afterwards married a man named Lovelace. She is now a widow, living near Kevil and she has a keen memory. She remembered much about "Dick" Gholson, as she called him.

He was a tall, lean man with high cheek bones, black hair parted in the middle and falling down over his ears. He wore a square-cut black beard. His eyes were blue, but otherwise he had much the appearance of an Indian.

He was an eloquent orator and was passionately fond of politics. In fact he neglected his family to follow his political plans and schemes. One evidence of his method of "politics first and business afterward" was the way he conducted a little gristmill. He was rarely there to attend to the grinding, but he left all the necessary apparatus and farmers would grind their own grain and leave a portion to pay the miller. He built himself a large house so arranged that he could turn it into a sort of hotel when entertaining political guests or friends. He never held large numbers of slaves, just a few to care for his place. In all his political activities he was a thorough-going Demo-

crat and he most cordially hated the Whigs. He was very ambitious to become a Congressman, a Senator or to secure some other position that would allow him to live in Washington City. In that he was disappointed, but he did get to be Governor of Washington Territory.

He had gone to Texas two or three times and acquired some property there. When he went to Washington Territory, he left his family on the property in Texas and the leave of absence he got from his new office was largely for the purpose of taking Mrs. Gholson from Texas back to their old home in Kentucky.

Before he returned to his work in Washington Territory, great changes became imminent. Governor Gholson wrote to Jeremiah S. Black, Secretary of State, that he would not serve even for a day under a Republican president and he resigned before President Lincoln was inaugurated.

Mrs. Lovelace says that Governor Gholson was quick-tempered and did not hesitate to draw his pistol when the argument gave any excuse for such added force. She says he would have had a part in the fighting for the Confederacy if he had the physical strength. She says he was suffering from tuberculosis. Even at that, he went from Kentucky into Tennessee to take some part when he suddenly died. Mrs. Lovelace says the home place in Kentucky was "full of Yanks" and they could not bring his body there for burial. He was buried in Tennessee.

So far no picture of Governor Gholson has been found and his descendants fear none was ever taken.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

## DAVID THOMPSON'S JOURNEYS IN THE SPOKANE COUNTRY

During the years of 1811-1812 David Thompson, the astronomer and geographer of the North-West Company of Canada (fur traders) and a partner in the Company, upon five different occasions visited Spokane House, which by his orders, but during his absence had been built in the summer of 1810; and in so doing traveled through that part of the state of Washington now commercially tributary to the city of Spokane. Mr. Thompson made entries daily in a journal which is now among the archives of the Province of Ontario, Canada, the text of which, as far as relates to these particular journeys, has been copied for the writer by Mr. J. B. Tyrrell, of Toronto. It is proposed to present these parts of the original journal in series, with introduction and explanatory notes.

These are of interest and value as the first written record of actual travel by white men through that part of the state of Washington; also as indicating the importance of the general vicinity of the city of Spokane as a trade center in those early days by the convergence of Indian trails there; also as showing the actual residence of white men in that vicinity as early as 1810 and 1811, and prior to any settlement at Astoria, Oregon. David Thompson's connection with the Spokane Country (or as he often termed it the "Skeetshoo Country") has already been mentioned in this *Quarterly* (vi, 1) and in the *Oregon Historical Quarterly* (xii, 195).

David Thompson's first visit to Spokane House was in June, 1811, while on his remarkable trip that summer to the mouth of the Columbia River. With a small party of voyageurs he had crossed the Athabasca Pass of the Rocky Mountains during January; had passed the remainder of the winter at the west end of the Pass (Boat Encampment); in the spring had ascended the Columbia River, portaged over to the Kootenay River, descended the Kootenay to the mouth of Fisher Creek at Jennings, Montana, and there packed his trading goods on horses and proceeded by the Kootenay Indian road south to the Saleesh, or Flathead Country; and there built a canoe in which he traveled down Clark's Fork River and across Pend Oreille Lake, and down the river of the same name. On the 8th of June he had arrived at a camp of the Indians residing near and opposite to the Calispel River; a favorite place for Indians because of the abundance of camas in the meadows (known as the Root Plains) north of Calispell Lake.



Mr. Thompson called these the Kullyspell Indians, and included in their habitat the borders of Pend Oreille Lake, which he called Kullyspell Lake. A little over thirty years later Father DeSmet established a mission at this same place.

The melting snows caused very high water that June of 1911, and the low lands were all inundated. Mr. Thompson's camp on June 8th and 9th was near the present town of Cusick, Pend Oreille County, Washington. He at once sent two of his men, Boulard and Coté, with an Indian guide, to Spokane House to announce his arrival.

Beginning with June 10, 1811, Mr. Thompson's Journal reads as follows:

[1811]

June 10th.

*Monday.* A rainy mornng. At 8 a. m. ceased & we loaded & went up abt.  $1\frac{1}{2}$  m. to the Woods where we camped<sup>1</sup> on dry ground, went a shooting, killed 2 Ducks & a Bittern, the last is larger by half than those on the east side of the Mountain, with fine blue wings & Body, brick coloured Breast. Hoole & Chas. Loyer<sup>2</sup> came to see us in the evening.

June 11th.

*Tuesday.* A very rainy morning & day. Traded Roots & a horse & colt for the Men, as the Roots alone gave a violent Cholic. Waited for the Men & Horses.

June 12th.

*Wednesday.* A misty morning but fine day, traded a few Roots & abt 9 a. m. Mr. Finan McDonald,<sup>3</sup> Boulard, Coté & a Spokane Ind. arrived with 10 horses, also Martin with 3 Horses. Abt. 10-2/3 a. m. set off to go to the end of the Lake,<sup>4</sup> from whence we set off, the Pt. of Woods on the No. Side, as beg. of the Root Plains bears N. 18 W. 1 M. our Co. N. W.  $\frac{3}{4}$  M. down the River, we now turned out of the river & went over inundated Ground S. 10 W.  $\frac{3}{4}$  M. S. 3 W.  $3\frac{1}{2}$  M. 11.5 a. m. to 2.0 P. M. but waited for the Bon Vieux say 5', we then put up to arrange the Goods, of which we arranged to major part for the Horses &c.

<sup>1</sup>Near the present town of Usk, south and up the Pend Oreille River from Cusick, Washington. A wooded ridge extends southerly from here to Calispell Lake.

<sup>2</sup>Free hunters and North West Company voyageurs. Jacques Hoole was a full-blooded Frenchman, and is mentioned at length by Ross Cox, Columbia River (ed. 1832), p. 171.

<sup>3</sup>A clerk of the North West Company and the Hudson's Bay Company in the Columbia District continuously from 1807 to 1826, when he returned to the Saskatchewan District; for a detailed account of him consult Ross Cox, pp. 164-68. He was David Thompson's principal assistant, west of the Rocky Mountains.

<sup>4</sup>The southeasterly end of Calispell Lake; here the canoe was laid up.

June 13th.

*Thursday.* A very fine warm day. Arranged the rest of the Goods, & at 8 a. m. set off, we held on abt. S. 20E. by the ☉<sup>5</sup> 2½ M. to a Lake on our right, this Lake<sup>6</sup> is obliquely more than ½ M. of the last Co., we went along the Lake abt. South by the ☉ 5 or 6 M. to 11¼ a. m., when we stopped to bait the Horses, & carried all the Goods over a Bridge across a narrow of the Lake<sup>7</sup> abt. 30 yds. wide. At ¾ P. M. set off & held on abt. S. 10 or 15 W. by the ☉ 5½ M. sharp walkg. to 3 P. M. when we crossed a Brook<sup>8</sup> of 12 yds. ∞ belly deep of the Horses, and Weir, here are 7 Tents of Kullyspels, they are making a Weir for small Fish, we went abt. ¼ M., crossed another Brook<sup>9</sup> of 6 yds. ∞ from small Lakes at the foot of the high Banks, these Brooks run into the Skeetshoo River, we now went up high, but easy Banks & camped at 3½ P. M. as there is no water near us. Co. say S. 30 W. 1¼ M., the Country all day has been hilly, but fine tolerable clear woods, the Soil rocky & sandy, much Grass in places & plenty of shrubs of the willow kind, few Orrenials & those of the Chevrail.

June 14th.

*Friday.* A fine warm day. After trading a few furs &c. set off at 7 a. m. & held on abt. S. b. W. South to S. S. E. to South—Say South 9 M. walked smartly, trotted & Galloped over fine ground to Beaulieu's Brook<sup>10</sup> at 10 a. m. here we baited the Horses till 11 a. m. when we again set off & held on abt. South 6 M. to the River<sup>11</sup> we then turned off abt. S. b. E. 1½ M. to the House<sup>12</sup> of the N. W. Co'y. Thank Heaven for our good safe journey, here we found Jaco<sup>13</sup> &c. with abt. 40 Spokane Families.

<sup>5</sup>This character (a period within a circle) is used to represent the sun, and another character, similar to the figure eight written horizontally, for the word "across."

<sup>6</sup>Probably a beaver-dam lake bed which has since been drained lying between Calispel and Sacheen Lakes, Pend d'Oreille County.

<sup>7</sup>Narrows at the southwesterly end of Sacheen Lake; a bridge there to-day.

<sup>8</sup>West branch of Little Spokane River flowing from Horseshoe Lake, Pend d'Oreille County, into Eloika Lake, Spokane County, also mapped as Beaver Creek.

<sup>9</sup>Now mapped as Hemlock Creek and emptying into the "brook" just mentioned.

<sup>10</sup>Now called Dragoon Creek, Spokane County. Beaulieu was a French-Canadian freehunter and voyageur; name also spelled Boileau; first name not identified. He crossed the Rocky Mountains in 1807-08 with David Thompson. James Birnie of Astoria and Cathlamet and an officer of the North West Company and the Hudson's Bay Company for many years, married a Boileau, probably a daughter of this man.

<sup>11</sup>The Spokane River about a half mile below confluence with Little Spokane River.

<sup>12</sup>Spokane House; trading post of the North West Company and Hudson's Bay Company until 1826.

<sup>13</sup>Jacques Raphael Finlay, the clerk in charge there; an "intelligent sauteur," according to David Thompson.

June 15th

*Saturday.* A very fine day. Obsd. for Longde. & Latde.

Latde by  $\odot$  LL. M. A. Aug. 14th

Mean Latde.  $47^{\circ} 47' 4''$  N.<sup>14</sup>

Longe. 117. 27. 11 W.

Varn.  $21^{\circ}$  East.

June 16th.

We got a few Carp from the Spokane Indians & I arranged the Goods to be left here for the Trade. Gave a small supply to each of the White Hunters & traded Roots &c.

*Sunday.* A very fine day. We got abt. 40 small black carp from the Indians—our Horse Meat now done.

Stated in narrative form, Mr. Thompson was encamped on June 10th and 11th on a low ridge of dry ground a little south and east of Usk on the bank of the Pend Oreille River, state of Washington; a mile down stream was a point of woods—also unsubmerged—which marked the edge of the bottom or meadow lands bordering the Calispell River southward to Calispell Lake. On the morning of the 11th, Mr. Finan McDonald (clerk) arrived with the pack animals and was at once sent back to the southerly end of the Lake, while Mr. Thompson, with Hoole as a guide (Hoole was between eighty-five and ninety years old and seems to have gone by the nickname of Bon Vieux) proceeded by canoe to that point, it being always the habit of fur traders to transport goods by water just as far as possible. From the loading place at the Lake Mr. Thompson proceeded south, possibly along the east side of Davis Lake, but more probably along an old lake bed that has since been drained, and came to Sacheen Crossing; to the west of Sacheen Lake the country was and still is more or less swampy, and filled with small ponds. Crossing to the higher ground, Mr. Thompson turned southwest to the waters of the Little Spokane River north of Eloika Lake, Spokane County, crossed over to the hill lands beyond and camped for the night before getting further away from water. The next day he proceeded on south, near or through Deer Park and across Dragon Creek, to the Spokane River and the trading-post of the Northwest company there. The trail used was noted by Mr. Thompson as the "Kullyspell Road."

The richness of the streams for beaver trapping is evidenced by the presence of French-Canadian freehunters, the blood of some of whom had descended to the families of well-known citizens of Wash-

<sup>14</sup>The U. S. Weather Bureau records show the city of Spokane to be in Lat.  $47^{\circ} 40'$  and Long.  $117^{\circ} 25'$ . Spokane House was very close to nine miles north and five miles west of the center of the city of Spokane.

ington and British Columbia. It may be remarked that Usk takes its name from the river and town of that name on the west coast of England, and that Sacheen is said to be the corruption of a similar name in Upper Canada. Cusick was named after the original land owner at that point.

T. C. ELLIOTT.



## DOCUMENTS

### ANGUS McDONALD: A FEW ITEMS OF THE WEST

Edited by F. W. Howay, William S. Lewis and Jacob A. Meyers

#### *Introduction*

Members of the McDonald family were among the first Scotchmen to engage prominently in the northwest fur-trade. John McDonald, of Garth, was by his grand uncle, General Small, and an elder brother, Angus, bound out to the Northwest Company as clerk in 1791,<sup>1</sup> and was prominent in the Columbia River district at the time of the Astor enterprise, 1811-1813. Retiring in 1816, John settled at Gray's Creek, County of Glengary,<sup>2</sup> where he died at a ripe old age. Another member of the family, Dr. Archibald McDonald of Leechkentium, Glenco Appin,<sup>3</sup> after receiving a medical education, was appointed clerk and agent by Selkirk in the winter of 1812, and was prominent both in the Red River and Columbia River districts.<sup>4</sup>

Our narrator, a nephew of Dr. Archibald McDonald, was born at Craig House, Loch Torridon,<sup>5</sup> Ross-shire, Scotland, on October 15, 1816. As a youth he received a good education and, in 1838, after attaining the age of twenty-one years, entered the employ of the Hudson's Bay Company, as an apprentice clerk, and spent his first winter in the North in the vicinity of Hudson's Bay. In the minutes of Council of the Hudson's Bay Company held at Red River in 1839 Angus is mentioned as an apprentice clerk and assigned to the Flatheads. In 1840 and 1841 he is mentioned as an apprentice clerk assigned to Fort Simpson. In 1842 he was promoted to clerk and engaged for three years, from June 1, 1842, at 75 pounds per annum. In the minutes of Council for 1842 and 1843 he was assigned as clerk to Fort Nisqually. Later he was stationed for a time at Forts Hall and Boise, Idaho, but is not to be confounded with his namesake, Angus McDonald, interpreter and postmaster, serving in the vicinity at about the same time. Later he was transferred to Saleesh House in the Flathead country, in Montana, where he succeeded Mr. McArthur<sup>6</sup> at Fort Connah, in 1850.

<sup>1</sup>L. R. Masson: *Les Bourgeois de la Compagnie*, II, 11ff.

<sup>2</sup>Province of Ontario, about 50 miles west of Montreal, Canada, where he died in 1860 at the age of 90 years. See George Bryce: *Remarkable History of the Hudson's Bay Company*, p. 163.

<sup>3</sup>On the south shore of Loch Leven, Northern Argyll-shire, about 25 miles northeast of Oban, Scotland.

<sup>4</sup>The Canadian Northwest (Canadian Archives, publications, No. 9), pp. 53-54.

<sup>5</sup>An inlet to the ocean on the west coast of Ross-shire.

<sup>6</sup>Frank McArthur.

As has been stated, Angus McDonald was a nephew of Dr. Archibald McDonald of the Hudson's Bay Company previously mentioned and in charge of Fort Colville from 1834 to 1844,<sup>7</sup> and he succeeded his uncle at that post in 1852<sup>8</sup> when he was promoted to the position of Chief Trader and made a shareholder in the Company. Angus McDonald remained in charge of Fort Colville from 1852 to 1872 and was one of the last Chief Traders of the Hudson's Bay Company to conduct a post within the territorial limits of the United States. In 1871 he sold out his interest to the Company<sup>9</sup> and removed to Montana in 1872-1873,<sup>10</sup> where he engaged in stockraising until his death on February 1, 1889.

About 1840 he took as a wife Catherine, a Nez Perce Indian, sister of "Eagle of the Light," a chief of that tribe<sup>11</sup>; she died in 1892. The following children were born to them: John, Christina, Duncan, Donald, Annie, Maggie, Thomas, Alexander, Angus P., Archie, Joseph A., Angus C. and Mary.<sup>12</sup> Several of these children reside in Montana: Duncan at Ravalli; Angus C. at St. Ignatus; Donald at Dixon; Angus P. at Camas. The daughter, Christina, lives at Spaulding, Idaho.

Though he spent his entire life on the frontier, Angus McDonald was a student and a thinker; he was well informed, especially in the classics and philosophy. His strong opinions on religious and other subjects are disclosed by his writings. In the State Historical and Miscellaneous Library, at Helena, Montana, a number of his manuscripts<sup>13</sup> have been gathering dust for more than twenty years. It is not known when they were deposited or by whom.<sup>14</sup> Among these are

<sup>7</sup>Archibald McDonald signed the deed poll of 1834 as a Chief Trader; he was made a Chief Factor in 1842; he was succeeded at Fort Colville by John Lee Lewis in 1844; on his retirement he took up his residence at Glencoe, St. Andrews, Quebec.

<sup>8</sup>Angus McDonald's immediate predecessor at Fort Colville was Alexander Caulfield Anderson. After the abandonment of Vancouver in 1862, Colville was made the headquarters for the Hudson's Bay Company's business for the Okanogan, Kootenai and Flathead sections—in fact of everything in the "Inland Empire."

<sup>9</sup>Fort Colville was vacated by the Hudson's Bay Company on June 1, 1872, when Angus McDonald moved all goods and property to Kamalooops, B. C. Prior to this in the sixties Angus McDonald had been interested in the settlement and appraisal of the Hudson's Bay Company's claims against the United States.

<sup>10</sup>Angus McDonald claimed the old trading post site as his home until 1873-4; the old Hudson Bay Colville ranch is now owned by his son, Duncan McDonald, of Ravalli, Montana.

<sup>11</sup>Authority of McDonald's daughter, Mrs. Christina McDonald Williams.

<sup>12</sup>History of North Washington, p. 201; verified by Mrs. Williams.

<sup>13</sup>None of the manuscripts are signed by Angus McDonald. The handwriting has been identified by Mrs. Williams as that of her father, and she states that some of his writing was done when visiting her at her home at Kamloops and Shuswap, on the Thompson River in British Columbia.

<sup>14</sup>Mrs. Williams states that some time after her father's death her brother, Duncan McDonald, delivered a number of Angus McDonald's manuscripts to the late Judge Knowles of Missoula and Helena, Montana, for publication, and that these manuscripts, now in the library, may be the ones formerly in the possession of Judge Knowles.

a number of long poems and several plays—one, a tragedy, based on the Whitman massacre. They all show wide classical reading and considerable literary ability. The following manuscript, "A Few Items of the West," is presented through the courtesy of Mr. W. Y. Pemberton, Librarian of the State Historical and Miscellaneous Library of Montana.

From a reading of the manuscript, it is evident that Angus McDonald had in mind a description of the trip from the Flathead country in Montana to Victoria, B. C.; and he has included in this description personal reminiscences of a number of separate trips taken over this route by him at various times; and, though no dates are mentioned, the text indicates that the first of these trips was probably taken about 1860, and the last undoubtedly between the months of April and December, 1881. Major A. B. Rogers of the Canadian Pacific Railroad survey came to the Province in April 1881, while Mr. W. H. Lowe, of Osoyoos, died in December, 1881. The reference to the assassination of the Russian Tzar and to Guiteau lead to the same conclusion.

The editing of the manuscript has been collaborated by Hon. F. W. Howay, F. R. S. C., of New Westminster, B. C.; Mr. Jacob A. Meyers, of Meyers Falls, Washington; and the undersigned; the footnotes indicate by whom they were prepared.—WILLIAM S. LEWIS.

### *A Few Items of the West*

Leaving my home fronting the precipitous ridge of *Coul-hi-Cat*, now known by the tamer name of Mission Ridge, I camped on Kamass Plain. This *Coul-hi-cat*, the western of the three great bars of the Rocky Mountains, forms the eastern boundary of the Flathead Reservation, and in its sublime grandeur overlooks one of the most beautiful valleys of America.<sup>15</sup> The Jesuit Mission, established in 1853 is on one of its western rivulets called *Sin a Jial a min*,<sup>16</sup> from a band of elk

<sup>15</sup>For another description of this valley and the mountains see Therese Broderick: *The Brand*. (Harriman Book Co. Seattle. 1909.) pp. 21, 22.—W. S. L.

<sup>16</sup>This mission, the second to be established within the boundaries of the present state of Montana, was first begun some time in 1844 by Fathers Peter De Smet and Adrian Hoecken, and then located on the east bank of the Pend Oreille River, about opposite the present town of Cusick, Wash., but was abandoned on account of inundations and moved to its present site in September, 1854, by Father Hoecken. The Saleesh or Flathead word "Sin-a-jail-a-min," or "Sn-i-el-e-men," means where they were surrounded. The Indians have given this name to the Mission also, and call one of the peaks of the Mission range "Sin-yal-e-a-min." Some say that it designates the place where the Flatheads surrounded their enemies, the Blackfeet; though Angus McDonald's statement, on knowledge received nearly three-quarters of a century ago, is the better authority. A somewhat similar word denotes "meeting place" or "rendezvous."—W. S. L.

in days of yore once surrounded there. My home six miles due north of it is called *Kootle tzin ape*,<sup>17</sup> from an alley formed by two birches and willow groves on the left of the stream. Here then was begun by McArthur<sup>18</sup> and finished by me the last Post<sup>19</sup> established by the Hudson Bay Company in the Territories of the U. States. The Reservation itself is divided by the Flathead River and the Blackhorse or the Flathead Lake, as it sweeps down from British Columbia, and each of its many generous little tributaries have stories enough for a hundred Othellos or Macbeths. The dark cliff of the Symbols overlooking the lake, the mount of the Rattlesnake's horn, the plains of the Kamas, and the Peak of the "familiar,"<sup>20</sup> once the Sinai of Montana's Red men, but now named after myself, are a few items yet to be described long after this generation will find their mouldering ranches in the "Land of the Leal."<sup>21</sup>

The great precipices of Coul-hi-Cat chiefly front the north. Their impassable perpendiculars are implied and expressed in that name.<sup>22</sup> The force originally upheaving that lofty ridge would appear to have been somewhat swayed from the south like an ocean billow of a longer incline behind him than his forward prow, and the McDonald<sup>23</sup> twin peaks soar in looming spirally southward, as if when in a molten state they had been pressed from their vertical dip by a southwestern hurricane, which leaves them now treeless and naked to the sight, like twin spiral frozen flames. The western of them is that one of the "Familiar" ascended by the red men to commune with the apprehended, tho' unknown Everlasting, and to finally know as much as Beecher or Wiseman knows today in not knowing whence we came and whither we go.

In this plain of the Kamas, we hear no more the voice of hundreds of men and women, keeping time to the wild pathetic strain of the *San-ka-ha*,<sup>24</sup> the red man's farewell before he leaves for battle. To hear it sung by five or six hundred voices in a calm, starry night on

<sup>17</sup>Literally this means "the inclosed door to his immediate surroundings." The Flathead Indians have another name for the McDonald place: "Lnemele"; what this means I am unable to state.—W. S. L.

<sup>18</sup>Frank McArthur. Mount McArthur of the Mission Range (elev. 8,200 ft.) is named after him.—W. S. L.

<sup>19</sup>Fort Connah.—J. A. M.

<sup>20</sup>Used in the sense of "familiar spirit"; the peak whereon the Indians went to commune with their guardian spirit. The Indian name for the Mount of the Rattlesnake's Horn is "Ha-who-la Ca-a-mean-means."—W. S. L.

<sup>21</sup>A reference to the exquisite song by the Scotch authoress, Caroline Oliphant. Leal is here used in the sense of true, faithful.—W. S. L.

<sup>22</sup>It is difficult to identify this word "Coul-hi-cat" from McDonald's phonetic spelling; it is evidently some form of the Kalispell word "Kuel-chi," meaning "to turn upside down."—W. S. L.

<sup>23</sup>Named after our narrator, Angus McDonald.—J. A. M.

<sup>24</sup>San-Ra-ha means "the trails." The common name among the Indians for any chant is "N-Kune." The particular chant referred to by Mr. McDonald is called "Kaes-chshinim" and means "to follow," or better, "We follow—we attach ourselves to the party."—W. S. L.



the plains of Montana, is a rare thing, never, perhaps to be heard again. The Mothers and Sisters, always the most tender, could not for a moment stand its thrilling notes, and they wept loud and deep for those that were and were not. In 1850 at a great gathering of Indians to dance this staid, insistent strain, I stripped with the leading men, painted with vermillion the groves and dimples of my upper body mounted my black buffalo charger with my full eagle feather cap and cantered round and round with them, keeping time to the song. This new sight of a white man to them and to myself they never forgot to speak of.

Not a soul occupies this plain now, but a solitary Indian rancher called Nichola. His wife untied from my saddle a goose I had killed, saying she wanted the feathers. On telling her to wish me well on my trip, after she ate it, she laughed and thanked me heartily.

On passing the timber mountains of the reservation's western line, we pass many an old hidden Blackfoot fort, occupied in the days of blood, and enter the Horse Plains, where in days gone all the tribes of Missoula County and more were wont to congregate and trade with the H. B. Boats dispatched from Colville for that purpose. Here a war party of Blackfeet took all our horses from us once and we narrowly escaped the entire destruction of our party; as our horses grazed untied however they did not trouble themselves with taking our scalps. They were sixty well armed, while we were only five with two guns. The "Horse Plains" is not so called in Indian, but Comkaneec,<sup>25</sup> from a yellow granitic boulder, resembling in shape the upper part of the human body. Frequent offerings were made in good will, in past days, to that same stone. This plain will be a place of much resort and value in days hence.

Leaving it we pass the Bad Rock, which is now partially leveled and blasted (but in my early days was the steepest pass for pack horses in Montana) and come to Thompson Falls, named after the western traveller of that name<sup>26</sup>; above them was an old H. B. Post<sup>27</sup> last

<sup>25</sup>Comkane, probably meant for Com-kin or Kom-kan, meaning "the scalp of the head"; from the roots Kom, "take," and Kan, "hair." The word for scalp is "Sock-a-kim." These personified rocks and places, where the passer-by is required by Indian custom to leave an offering, are somewhat common in the northern Indian country. See account of the Painted Stone Portage, Franklin's First Journey, pp. 40-41. The "He-He Stone" at the headwaters of the Tonasket, between Ferry and Okanogan Counties, and the "Custom Rock" in the Coeur d'Alene River, are of this class, and each has an interesting legend. It is also the custom of the Saleesh Indians to deposit small articles each year upon the graves of the departed ones.—W. S. L.

<sup>26</sup>David Thompson, surveyor and trader of the Northwest Company of Merchants of Canada.—J. A. M.

<sup>27</sup>Old Hudson's Bay Company's post "Saleesh House," first established by David Thompson in October, 1809, and intermittently occupied by the various companies until 1847, as stated. The description given places the site of the post on the Dubia place, on the first bench above Clark's Fork, one and one-half miles south from Woodin, on the N. P. R. R.—J. A. M.

occupied by myself and party in 1849. Many a fine Buffalo tongue and boss<sup>28</sup> and many a glass of the best Cognac that ever crossed the Atlantic was served in that Sylvan building; not a vestige of it now remains. Where the stirring reel of "Gille Cruback" and the solemn strains of the "Flowers of the Forest" were whistled and sung, and where we were glad to hear once a year from Europe, though seldom, if ever, from the United States, is now covered with Montana's mountain ryegrass and evergreen Kenekenek. The wolf and fox may howl there, and the cock of the hills and meadows dance there, but we say like the old Bard, "When will it be morn in the grave to bid the slumberer awake!"<sup>29</sup>

Continuing our descent through the forests of the Pend 'd' Oreille for about fifty further miles, I came to where I once camped with two fathers of the Jesuit society. One of them had his clarinet and my two daughters (Christina and Maggie) being with us he blew on his instrument some of the best old airs of Scotland, and they accompanied him with their voices and the locality being most favorable to assail its echoes, nature made splendid return to the notes they gave her, and I could distinguish five full reverberations of the airs they played, away in the mountains on the other side of the river after they ceased playing. The fascinating swell which the ancient Columbian forests and hills lent to the music of their intruders, was a grand accompaniment. As the father played well and "Lochaber" being one of the master strains of the British Empire, I thought I could hear some of the fallen angels beat it out of the rocks after the father ceased. This is said to be the master tune played by James Gowy (?) over to Ireland; no better could suit a dying Empire. It is a Gaelic air called "Gleann a garradh na'n Craodhbh," or "Glengary of the Trees." France, Italy and Germany and also Spain made claim to this tune, but Scotland finally proved her own to be her own. It is probable that some ancient Celtic Monk in the Caledonian Valley was the true father of it. The present English words by Burns do not roll to the measure of that splendid air as well as its native Gaelic ones: "Ge binne cuach 's ge binne smeorach, 's ge binne coisir 's gach crann," and so on. These are by Ross.

---

<sup>28</sup>The boss is the hump of fat and gristle on the shoulder of the buffalo.  
—J. A. M.

<sup>29</sup>This quotation from "The old Bard" after considerable search is still obscure.—W. S. L. This is not biblical; it has a tinge of Ossian, and may possibly appear in Macpherson's forged Ossian poems, supposed to be a translation from some old Gaelic bard; writings that would appeal to such a man as McDonald. The reference to "Lochaber" in the following paragraph and the "English words by Burns" can not be to the words now universally used, beginning "Farewell to Lochaber, farewell to my Jean." These are by Allan Ramsay, 1686-1758.—F. W. H.

About forty more miles of green and burnt forests of magnificent growth and we are at the Pend'd'Oreille Lake. In a sequestered basin right in front of us, but entirely unseen and unvisited by travellers stand the oldest chimneys now on the Columbian waters.<sup>30</sup> They are of stone and stand up yet from the debris of their wrecked buildings like stumps of the previous world. They are the chimneys of Phinan McDonnen<sup>31</sup> of Glengary, one of the very first pioneers of the west, and grandfather to Mrs. J. P. Higgins,<sup>32</sup> and a bough of the same tree as my own. He is said to have been a powerful<sup>33</sup> man and a trader of the Northwest Company.

About 180 more miles brings us to Colville, where I dine with the officer in charge, who has a very beautiful young son. Col. Gibson's wife is this officer's sister. I saw her at my home in Montana. The Colville Garrison is fifteen miles from old Fort Colville, after which the whole valley is named. It was named after Gen. Colville<sup>34</sup> of the H. B. Co., who did not put two ls in the last syllable of that name, as they now erroneously do. This Fort was built by General Harney as a defense for the boundary Commissioners running the Oregon international line.<sup>35</sup> Harney after nearly embroiling the west in a war was recalled at the suggestion of General Scott who was sent

<sup>30</sup>These "oldest chimneys" were those of David Thompson's Northwest Company's "Kullyspell House," built by him and his party in September, 1809. Finan McDonald, one of the party, occupied it in subsequent years more than any other. It was abandoned in December, 1811. The site is on the Fred Owen place, Lot 2, Sec. 24, Twn. 56 North, Range 1 East, Boise Meridian. The chimneys of "Kootenay House" on Toby Creek, B. C., were built in July, 1807.—J. A. M.

<sup>31</sup>A distant relative of our narrator. The name does not appear in the list of "Commis, engages et voyageurs," 1804, in the appendix to Vol. I of Masson's *Les Bourgeois*. It is given as Finan McDonald in the lists of employees of the Hudson's Bay Company, 1821-1825. He was born at Inverness, Scotland, and first appears at Rocky Mountain House in the fall of 1806. See Coues: *Henry and Thompson Journals*, I, 279. His subsequent history is recorded by David Thompson and others. See note in David Thompson's *Narrative* (ed. J. B. Tyrell), pp. 378, 379; Ross Cox: *Columbia River* (London, 1832), I, 316-324. The latter author gives an excellent account of his physical appearance and prowess, and dominant characteristics. The last mention of him that I have been able to find states that he was badly gored by a buffalo on July 1, 1827, on the plains east of Fort Vermillion. David Douglas *Journal* (Wesley & Son, London, 1914), pp. 270, 271; Edward Ermatinger's *Journal* (*Transactions of The Royal Society of Canada*), Vol. VI, Sec. 2, pp. 87-89.—W. S. L.

<sup>32</sup>Probably S. P. Higgins, who was with Governor I. I. Stevens as a wagonmaster with the rank of sergeant from St. Paul to Fort Benton, and as packmaster thence to Vancouver in 1853; courier, Fort Vancouver to Cantonment Stevens, in March and April, 1854.—J. A. M.

<sup>33</sup>See Ross Cox: *Columbia River*, I, 316-324.—W. S. L.

<sup>34</sup>Andrew Colville, deputy governor, 1839-1852; governor, 1852-1856. A son, Eden Colville, was for a time director; 1871-1880 deputy governor; and 1880-1889, governor. Willson: *The Great Company* (Toronto, 1899), appendix, pp. 531-532.—W. S. L.

<sup>35</sup>Erected by order of General Harney and first named "Harney's Depot," later changed to Colville.—J. A. M. Four companies of the Ninth Infantry, under command of Major Lougenbell, arrived on the flat near Mill Creek, about three miles from the Colville River, on June 21, 1859, and the erection of log barracks for a four company post was at once commenced. This was completed late in the fall, and the American Boundary Commission under Captain Parke wintered there. The post was occupied until the troops were withdrawn in 1881; it was definitely abandoned in 1882. The old buildings were removed by settlers and are now scattered up and down the Colville Valley for twenty-five miles.—W. S. L.

to the Georgian Gulph and Puget Sound to investigage his conduct. From what I know I have no doubt Scott was an enemy of Harney's and he reported Harney's doings to Washington in a damning light.<sup>36</sup> I was at the American review of their 700<sup>37</sup> troops on San Juan. The British had no land troops there, but two of their frigates<sup>38</sup> covered the American camp with their guns. The Americans had only three unsheltered guns<sup>39</sup> that could reach the frigates. As the troops started to parade, I went to look at the guns about a half mile from the parade. They were sentineled by one man. Curious to know how he felt and believing him to be an Irishman, I said a word or two in Gaelic, then said "You are an Irishman." "Yes, I am." "Are they going to fight about this little island?" "I do not know." "How would you like to fight against the flag of your own country?" The man with a quick lift of his rifle, and a more advanced lift of his foot said, "I would like to see old England catch a good drubbing anyhow." Leaving him loading his pipe and bidding him good day in the ancient Celtic of Scotland, I went my way thinking that there is some account between Erin and England that never was squared.

Although Governor Douglas and Colonel Hawkins, the British Commissioner, were rather in favor of a war, the lucky arrival of Admiral Baines<sup>40</sup> muzzled their desires in a council of war held at Victoria, where he told the Governor that if ordered to attack the American camp on San Juan he would refuse doing it, and he hooted the idea of raising a war with America for such nonsense, it having as reported been started by a personal quarrel over a Hudson Bay Company's pig.<sup>41</sup> The British Commissioner was then sent to London

<sup>36</sup>In Ex. Doc. No. 65, 36 Cong. 1 Sess., pp. 190-191, will be found, concisely stated, Scott's opinion of Harney.—F. W. H.

<sup>37</sup>This figure would appear to be excessive. In the document above referred to, on page 28, Harney says that they were "in all nine companies, say five hundred men." Later, on page 49, the exact number is given as 461.—F. W. H.

<sup>38</sup>At the outset of the San Juan trouble there were in the vicinity the following British men-of-war: Tribune, Captain Hornby, 31 guns; Pylades, Captain deCourcey, 21 guns; Satellite, Captain Prevost, 21 guns; and Plumper, Captain Richards, 10 guns.—F. W. H.

<sup>39</sup>The American force had eight 32-pounders taken from the Massachusetts, one 6-pounder, and five mountain howitzers. See H. Ex. Doc., No. 65, 36 C., 1 S., p. 49.—F. W. H.

<sup>40</sup>Rear Admiral Robert Lambert Baynes, Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Station, 1857-1860, Flag-ship Ganges, 84 guns. Viscount Milton, in his History of the San Juan Water Boundary Question, p. 284, says: "The Admiral was complimented by the British Government for the line of conduct adopted by him." Captain Hornby, on the other hand, wrote to his wife (see Life of Sir Geoffrey Phipps Hornby, p. 68) on Dec. 4, 1859: "I hear that the Governor has got much praise in England for keeping peace with the Yankees. That is rather good, when one knows that he would hear of nothing but shooting them all at first and that peace was only preserved by my not complying with his wishes as I felt he was all in the wrong from the start."—F. W. H.

<sup>41</sup>Lyman A. Cutler and the historic pig. See the pig story in slightly different versions in H. Ex. Doc., No. 65, 36 C., 1 S., pp. 10, 13, and 14.—F. W. H.



for final instruction,<sup>42</sup> and the old salt's prudence was highly approved of. Dining with him and the Hudson Bay Governor Dallas, I found him a plain, little, big-hearted, unassuming, lowland Scotchman, lame, but full of salt and fresh fun. As the frigate awaiting final orders to fire on the American camp in San Juan, hove to outside of Victoria harbor, the sound of the Admiral's guns was a welcome lay to the eager tars that crowded the decks to know what it was. He had been on a cruise on the Pacific, and had now luckily arrived at a very serious moment. As soon as his flag was distinguished by the frigate, she steamed out to salute him and tell her tale, which no sooner done than the lame, grey-headed little sailor said "Tut, tut, no, no the damned fools."

This Colville Garrison is built in about 300 yards square, manned by three companies of troops, horse and foot. I was on a given evening at tea with the Major in charge. Important news was expected from the east. The major<sup>43</sup> was a kind but short-sighted<sup>44</sup> man. While both of us stood in his door chatting about "Coming events that cast their shadows before them," I said yonder surely gallops the express and there is a swift shadow coming straight here across the square. The tall, excited shadow in the shape of Lieut W. U. S. Army, handed the mail hurriedly to the Major and sprang as suddenly away saying, "God Damn them they have opened the ball and fired on Sumpter," and he left at once, going down the Columbia in a canoe to join the southern army.<sup>45</sup>

Fifteen miles and I stand in old Fort Colville, the prettiest spot General McLellan said he saw on the Columbia River. I was in charge here in 1853 when Governor Stevens met here. I had full instructions as to the hospitality and the discretion of it entirely trusted to

<sup>42</sup>Captain Pickett landed on San Juan Island on July 27, 1859. Captain John Summerfelds Hawkins, R. E., the British commissioner for the land boundary, sailed for England on the Pylades on August 3, 1859, via San Francisco.—F. W. H.

<sup>43</sup>Major Pinkney Lougenbeel, in charge of the building of "Harney Depot."—J. A. M. On November 17, 1861, Major James F. Curtis, Second Infantry, California Volunteers, relieved Major Lougenbeel, who started at once for Walla Walla with his command.—W. S. L.

<sup>44</sup>Shortsighted; that is, nearsighted.—J. A. M.

<sup>45</sup>Lieutenant N. Wichliffe left the Colville garrison in the spring of 1861.—J. A. M. Four companies of the Ninth Infantry were then stationed at the Fort. In the spring of 1861, Companies C, Captain Frazier, and I, Captain Archer, were ordered east to take part in the war. Both these captains, with Captain Fletcher, and Lieutenants Harvey and Wichliff, all of the Ninth U. S. Infantry, resigned and joined the rebel forces. The War Department records show: That Nathaniel Wickliffe, of Kentucky, was appointed second lieutenant, Ninth U. S. Infantry, on June 30, 1855; was promoted to first lieutenant on March 15, 1861, and that he resigned on May 17, 1861, from Fort Colville, Washington, and subsequently joined the Confederate Army. That thereafter he was appointed first lieutenant, C. S. A.; served as captain and assistant adjutant-general to Generals A. S. Johnston and Preston; was appointed lieutenant-colonel to the Fifth Mississippi Cavalry, C. S. A., on July 3, 1862, and was recommended for promotion to be brigadier-general, C. S. A. No further record of him has been found, nor has his place of residence in Kentucky at the time of his appointment been found.—W. S. L.

myself. The Governor had ample credentials from the east crossing the Rocky Mountains by the Hell Gate defile. McLellan met him here with an escorting party from Puget Sound. I had fifty imperial gallons of extra rations to entertain the gentlemen. McLellan drank but little, The Governor was rather fond of it and laid back about ten on the first night to sleep the darkness out.<sup>46</sup> His last words that night were "Mac this is powerful wine." All hands had been steeped during the day and found the grass and their blankets the best way they could. As all the party had disappeared McLellan began to sip the juice of the vine more freely and we sat on the old sofa together, as closely as space allowed. Having to undergo the hospitalities of the day to all hands, I felt my grog inviting me to go to my blankets. But I was well trained to that splendid brandy and in prime of life too, and hard to make me give in at it. Suddenly the General put his arm around my neck and whispered in my ear "Mc, my proud father too was at Culloden,"<sup>47</sup> and he quietly slipped down off the sofa to the floor. I soon made the sofa an easy place for him and he and the Governor snored the night till daylight. This spree has been spoken of, God knows where not; McLellan Spoke of it in the Creman [Crimean] when sent as one of the Commissioners to observe military arrays and genius of the France-British and Russian armies.

When the Columbia is up in June, the sound of the Colville Falls<sup>48</sup> on a silent summer night is very grand. All the congeated water from Ross Hole to the smallest spring of Condi River<sup>49</sup> are massed in that torrent. Its Indian name is Schonet Koo, meaning Sounding Water. Salmon as heavy as one hundred pounds have been caught

---

<sup>46</sup>George B. McClellan and surveying party from the west crossed the Columbia River at this point on October, 18, 1853. Governor Stevens arrived there from the Spokane River at 9 P. M. the same day and Angus McDonald sent a note to McClellan at his camp a mile from Fort Colville. The surroundings of this drinking bout are not as recorded by Governor Stevens in his Railroad Reports and it is possible that it should be considered as "Old Settlers' Reminiscences." See U. S. Pacific R. R. Reports, Vols. 1 and 12.—J. A. M.

<sup>47</sup>Culloden—from Cullo'den Moor, a heath four miles east of Inverness, Scotland, where on April 27, 1746, the Duke of Cumberland defeated Prince Charles Edward Stuart (the Pretender) and his adherents and put an end to the attempts of the Stuart family to recover the throne of England. This was the last battle fought on the soil of Great Britain.—W. S. L.

<sup>48</sup>Colville Falls, Kettle Falls, Ilthkoyape Falls of David Thompson, 1811; Quiaripi Falls (Basket Falls) of Lieutenant Johnson, 1841, so called from the Indians' catching the salmon there in baskets. The total fall is 26 to 28 feet, and there is a great change in the current at different stages of water. The salmon are thrown to the surface and in sight by the boils, not whirlpools, when speared. The Indian name for the falls is Swah-niquet (pronounced as unique).—J. A. M. These were the Chaudiere Falls of the voyageurs. For another description see Paul Kane, *Wanderings of an Artist Among the Indians of North America*, pp. 308, 309.—W. S. L.

<sup>49</sup>Condi; the Canoe River, the north head of the Columbia River.—J. A. M. See James G. Swan: *Northwest Coast*, p. 121.—W. S. L.

in those falls. A little gray log mill<sup>50</sup> of 15 by 25 feet belonging to this establishment, ground for years all the flour that was consumed between the head waters of the Colorado and Peace River. Annual gatherings of the Columbian Indians were wont to meet here. Foot-racing, horse-racing, wrestling and archery used to be the fun. Adultery was punished by death, and the moral commands instilled into their children by these wild and hospitable red men were equal to anything that either Moses or Christ ever said, but the insidious and overbearing evils of the white man have been making heavy raids on their descendants, always the result with weaker nations before the strong.<sup>51</sup>

The H. B. Company made all the Columbian boats here of the native Yellow Pine. Excellent beer and some superior whiskey were distilled and furnished for the Mess, but the laboring men fared on very simple rations; if simple, they were solid, however, such as flour, salmon, lard or tallow, venison and potatoes; no sugar or coffee or tea until later days; regular rations of such were issued.

The Colville Falls were the only ones of the Columbian River never run by us. Although their elevation is only about 20 perpendicular feet, no state of the water changes the pitch of the torrent, and the compact momentum is always so strong that the Company never ran it; and if they did not, it is certain that others did not try it. Salmon are taken at those falls by basket and spear. The spear in rest in the hand of a naked Indian standing on the foam drenched cliff is a fine picture. As the eager fish glances to the surface of the whirlpool, looking to his leap, he is pierced and dragged quivering ashore. Now and then, however, the spear man loses his life. I have known two athletic Indians seal their fate in this way. Having speared a strong fish, the sudden struggle and iron pressure of the mighty waters jerked these poor fellows from the dizzy standing, and falling headlong into those terrible whirlpools they never breathed again. The basket is a vessel made of stout hazel or birchen osiers hung to the lower edge of the Falls by a rope of the same boughs. The

<sup>50</sup>The first mill is reported to have been erected in 1828.; some reports indicate as early a date as 1816. It was erected about 25 feet south-east of the present mill. In 1837 it was doing a custom business and grinding grain raised by the Indians in the Spokane country. The second mill, the "grey log mill," was built by the Hudson's Bay Company in 1843, after the first mill had probably gone to decay. A Mr. Goudy superintended the erection of this mill and it became known as the "Goudy Mill." The stones were dressed from rock secured near Kettle Falls. The third mill was built by Mr. L. W. Meyers in 1872 and occupied the site of the old "Goudy Mill."—W. S. L.

<sup>51</sup>From an intimate knowledge of the local Indians since 1869 I have formed a different conclusion. Young girls had no idea of chastity, but were allowed free license until mated. After choosing a husband they were kept straight by fear of their husband's displeasure. "Huck-ha-hat-kin" was reputed by the local Indian to be the only squaw of the older ones that could be considered chaste.—J. A. M.

fish that fail in their leap are cast back and fall by scores into the ever open basket. When it is full, two strong, hardy men strip and club in hand go down through the drenching cold foam into the basket to knock the yet living in the head and heave them up or hand them up with the already dead. One basket has caught a thousand salmon in a day in this way. About fifteen minutes of that shivering spray is all they can stand and then a new relay of fresh men take their places. These splendid fish are so thickly crowded in the billows at the foot of the falls that I often thought they could be shot. This, however, the Indians would not allow. Probably the salmon is the cleanest and shyest of all fish. But the many fisheries now on the lower Columbia established to can and export them are fast at work in destroying the noble supply, for they are no sooner above the Columbia bar than they are waylaid by numberless nets and their way to the spawning ground counter-marched by death. Wherefore, if not otherwise provided for, the extinction of the Columbia River salmon is only a question of time. A cloudless sky at eight o'clock in the morning and four in the evening are the best hours to see the salmon's ascent against the falls of his native rivers.

Fort Colville was never attacked by Indians. When the Kay-oozas murdered their Protestant Missionaries in 1847, the Spokane Missionaries took refuge here.<sup>52</sup> There was a report, probably true, that one tribe of the Colville tribes intended to kill all English speaking people of the Fort, but they never put their intention into practice.

American, Englishman, Protestant, have only one term or distinction in the Indian mind. To him they are all synonymous in being Soo-ha-pees.<sup>53</sup> Frenchman, or man of the Cross, is also the same to him, in being distinct in language and story to the So-ja-pee. An in-

<sup>52</sup>The missionaries did not leave the Tschimokaine Mission until Wednesday, March 15, 1848, and arrived at Fort Colville on Saturday, March 18, at noon. Thereafter several visits to the mission station were made by the men. On June 1, 1848, the missionaries and their families left Fort Colville for the lower country. See Diary of Mary R. Walker, 1847-1848, pp. 83, 94, and 103. In library of the University of Washington, and the Spokane Historical Society.—W. S. L.

<sup>53</sup>Soo-ha-pees. The Saleesh or Flatheads have three words by which to designate Americans or white people, other than "Frenchmen": (1) "Soi-a-pi," (2) "Pik-skel-i-gu," and (3) "Chipik-aze." The Spokane word for blue eyes is "Sch-pa-paas"; the Flathead word for gray eyes is "I-ch-pa-paas," and the word "Soi-a-pi" and "Soo-ha-pees," as given by McDonald, means blue or gray eyed. The Flathead word for white or pale is "Ipiik" or "E-pike"; the word for human beings is "Kelig" (skeligu) and the word "Pik-skel-i-gue" is the combination of the two. The remaining word "Ch-ipik-aze" is the Flathead word meaning white all around; that is people who are white all over, white folks. The Flathead or Saleesh word to designate the Frenchman is "Seme" (plural, "Sem-sem-ma"); this is their word of exclamation or astonishment. It was probably given to the Frenchmen—the first white men to come among them—for the reason that the Indians thought these white men were supernatural—not of this world. An Indian account of the coming of the first white men (Frenchmen) to the Spokane country states that "the Indians got word that a number of wonderful strangers were coming to the places where they were, and the simple Indians thought that if these wonderful 'Frenchmen' came they would die no more, etc."—W. S. L.



teresting volume could be written on this old establishment, but I leave it here and proceed to the old British Boundary Barracks,<sup>54</sup> built in 1860 by Col. Hawkins. Here I often dined with Her Majesty's Commissioner. We often talked about the Heenan and Sayer fight.<sup>55</sup> The Col. said he was advised by letters from England, sealed by parties present at the fight, that Sayers was undoubtedly overwhelmed in the struggle for that his knee at last gave way, and that his countrymen seeing it picked him up and made off with him. Three of his engineering officers, I see have since led the excavating expeditions to the Holy Land, perhaps searching for Abraham's pipe or Solomon's looking-glass.

When Commissioner Hawkins was leaving he called to bid us goodbye and offered to sell me a fine double barrel English gun. The weapon was beautifully finished with some newly invented safeguards to the locks of it. The weapon he said was perfectly safe to handle, at the same time showing me how very safe it was by cocking and recocking it, and setting it to his shoulder, said he need not take it home, there being plenty of them in London whence it would take me some time to get them. I objected to the price, and as to the safety of the locks I, David like, would prefer my old simple weapon. Insisting that this was superior and while again cocking his gun, bang! fired the charge right through the window, and the room made full of smoke, his fellow officers roared and I heartily joined them, while he swore excitedly at his own carelessness. However, taking it as an unaccountable accident he again began to press on me the value and safety of his gun, and while in the act of again uncocking the gun, bang! went the second shot right into the wall. We all roared with laughter, but he laid hold of the weapon by the muzzle and was going to mash it against the wall, when I laid hold of him and cooled his temper by telling him that he never used the weapon, that the locks were unacquainted with his hands, and that the Old Angel himself only made his grand mistake from his presumption. Finally we had

<sup>54</sup>In 1859 the British Boundary Commission under Colonel Hawkins located its quarters and erected comfortable log buildings on the south side of the Columbia River, two miles above Kettle Falls, and about fifteen miles from the American post, the place being now occupied by the town of Marcus, Wash. One of the original buildings was still standing a few years ago. The work of locating the boundary line by joint efforts of American and British engineers was completed in the spring of 1861 and Captain John G. Parke, in charge of the U. S. Boundary Commission, sold his surplus supplies and started east on August 6, 1861; Parke subsequently attained the rank of Major-General during the Civil War. On April 4, 1862, Major Hawkins of the British Boundary Commission, having likewise sold his surplus supplies, abandoned his buildings and started for England, via Walla Walla.—W. S. L.

<sup>55</sup>The Heenan-Sayer fight occurred on April 17, 1860, when Tom Sayer, the then champion of England, fought a draw with John C. Heenan, the Benecia Boy, for \$1,000 a side under the English prize ring rules. Sayer permanently retired from the ring after this battle, which was one of the noted sporting events of that generation.—W. S. L.

him cooled down, drank us a hearty Deoch an Dorus (?) and bade me farewell. Thus much of her Majesty's Commissioner.

Here in this bench in the fall of 1854 was found the gold that led to the finding of it in British Columbia. It was by Joseph Morel, who was then my teamster. The first authentic gold dug in Montana was brought me from Flint Creek and assayed by a friend of mine and made known by me to Major Owens and a few other friends in 1850. I took charge of Colville in 1852 and hinted at the golden geology of that country to our men. I had a little sack of black sand given to me by a friend from California, which I showed to our men. Morel had been out cutting a large tree for firewood and felt dry. He went and drank freely with his mouth deep into the Columbia. He saw some black sand of the kind I showed him in my little sack. Pulling off his old hat he put some of the gravel of the beach and water into it, and managed to shake it enough to see several scales of gold, bigger and smaller than a pin head remain in the hat after he poured the water out of it. He took a half a cup full home of this rare kind of stuff. It was gold indeed and no mistake. How much there might be of it. Perhaps it could be cut away up the Columbian Cliffs with chisels. The whole mountain might be full of it. Such were the anxious inquiries and suggestions made by us when winter came on and covered the country with ice and snow. Private information was sent to a few friends in Oregon about it. A few French Canadians and half breeds arrived early in the spring and fixed their Rocker Machines where Morel washed before. They washed about three dollars a day per man. On consulting with these men about the upper Columbia, whither I had sent a man accompanying the H. B. Express to wash and prospect whatever and whenever he could, two of them agreed to go in a canoe to meet the return of that man and if possible find the present locality of this drift gold. In four or five days they returned, bringing three or four ounces of splendid gold scales from the mouth of the Pend O'Reille,<sup>56</sup> where it leaps with a bound of about ten feet into the Columbia. There was a short thick brazen field piece, said to have been taken at the Heights of Abraham rusting in the Fort yard. It was twice loaded to the Muzzle with strong powder and twice lashed to a big stone with mountain buffalo cords. An old buffalo robe and a bear skin were hauled up on the flagstaff, instead of a flag we had not, a boat

---

<sup>56</sup>It is reported that coarse gold was found in the roots of a drift tree in the thirties. Mrs. Mary R. Walker in her journal mentions that gold was sent to England in 1847 and a watch charm made of it.—J. A. M. The short, thick brazen field piece, mentioned in the following lines, was recently donated to the museum of the Spokane Historical Society by the Stevens County Pioneer Society.—W. S. L.

was moored immediately and off we started. The little cannon made the opposing mountain answer him as if it has been a young earthquake. When fired he rolled lashed to the boulder as if he had been a devil or a tortoise. In short, we went and found the Pend O'reille mines, the first found in British Columbia, save a few signs previously found sinking under the sea of Queen Charlottes Island. In the fall I sent 17 pounds weight of this Pend O'reille gold to Victoria via Fort Hope. This is the first gold that ever went down the Frazer River.

One hundred miles brings us over the line and zizzag on the line through a beautiful country of alternate plain and forests to Lake So-jooos<sup>57</sup> where I find my old friend Mr. Haynes,<sup>58</sup> the British resident Magistrate and Custom Officer. He is an Irishman, but not of the discontented ones. He now owns 25 miles of land in this rich, grazing valley, so that the curse of Ireland is fast laying hold of British Columbia. He and his brother officer, Lowe,<sup>59</sup> have taken to themselves English wives from Canada and New Westminster. If ever Providence left His eternity to interfere with man He did it here. As Lowe arrived in Canada to be married, the railroad with its ponderous wheels cut both his arms off and he barely lived. His fond one, however, attended him and married him in that awful plight. Mr. Haynes sent his lady meantime to be delivered of a son, among the civilized at Westminster, after being safely delivered and well, she went to take a ride, caught cold and died. Both are kind and hospitable men, but this kind of luck is very striking.

The geology of this country and the botany of it too, is the same as that of the Snake country.<sup>60</sup> In fact it is the extreme western corner of the great American buffalo plains. Mr. Haynes is a Roman Catholic, but he like myself, has no religion but God, probably the shortest and surest of all, the least troublesome and the least expensive. This is the best valley of British Columbia for grazing but very arid and dry for agriculture. Mr. Haynes owns about two thousand head of stock, which with his large purchase of land and fixed

---

<sup>57</sup>Osoyoos Lake is an expansion of the Okanagan River, lying partly in British Columbia and partly in the state of Washington. The proper spelling is said to be "So-oyus," meaning "a sheet of water nearly divided by a narrow extension of the land from opposite sides."—F. W. H.

<sup>58</sup>John C. Haynes had been the gold commissioner at Wild Horse Creek, Kootenay, in 1864. In the following year he succeeded Mr. Peter O'Reilly as resident magistrate. After varied services in many parts of the Province he purchased a vast area of land in the Osoyoos country in the early seventies. He was customs-officer at Osoyoos for a great many years.—F. W. H.

<sup>59</sup>W. H. Lowe was for many years customs-officer at New Westminster, from which post he went to Osoyoos. He died there in December 1881.—F. W. H.

<sup>60</sup>The geology is almost entirely different, and the botany has but little similarity.—J. A. M.

government salary, enables him to live like a prince. He does not think that Irishmen will ever be free until they cultivate their own intellects, instead of being captives to the silly tho' fascinating dogmas of Italian Priestology. Ireland as a rule being poor and the people being antagonistic in views and loyalties, and the English and Italian popes having their fingers in her heart, how can she avoid the extremes of both rebellion and servility, fawning loyalty and stealthy blood shed. In these views I thoroughly agrees. For my own part I would prefer a confederacy of the three Kingdoms, England Ireland and Scotland on the Labouchere [?] plan.<sup>61</sup>

Thirty miles brings us to Pin-tik-tin, where the Okanagan Reservation is made. The only white resident in the vicinity is another Irishman, Ellis, has an English lady, a large tract of land, plenty of stock, and is a close relation of Judge Reilly of Kootenai fame.<sup>62</sup> Most of the Irish in British Columbia are loyal. No doubt their being vaccinated spiritually by a bastard Norman-English Pope explains the difference between them and Parnell. The monster land question in Ireland and the British Isles is making terrible strides in the United States, and the day is fast approaching, yes already come when America will weep with blotted eyes and dishevelled hair, while looking into her own looking-glass. The Christian monsters of church and state, or landocracy and church craft, have been for ages the murderers and stealthy spiders that strangled and smothered the struggling millions of christendom. Whilst speaking to an intelligent Irishman in Missoula of these things last spring, he cried out "Good God! don't you know that there has been a terrible curse on Ireland since Saint Patrick put his foot on that island?"

At Pin-tik-tin<sup>63</sup> we have left behind us Dog Lake,<sup>64</sup> called by that

---

<sup>61</sup>Labouchere's plan, if such it can be called, for it never came within the range of practical politics, was a central parliament for the British Isles and a local parliament for each portion, England, Scotland, Ireland, and Wales. It was merely a suggestion; no definite and detailed plan was ever seriously offered by him. Possibly our author's affection for it may be the unconscious result of his admiration of "Labby" because of his ungrudging support of Bradlaugh, the atheist, his co-member for Northampton. Labouchere died in 1869.—F. W. H.

<sup>62</sup>This is an error. Thomas Ellis, the person referred to, was no relation of Judge O'Reilly. The mistake has probably arisen because of the deep, almost paternal, interest of the latter in the welfare of the former.—F. W. H.

<sup>63</sup>This is Penticton, a small town at the southern end of Okanagan Lake. It is derived from the Indian name, "Pente-hik-ton." Our author is following the regular trail from Osoyoos to Okanagan Lake, thence along the eastern side of that lake to its northern extremity, and thence by way of Grand Prairie to the South Thompson River, near the present Ducks station on the Canadian Pacific Railway.—F. W. H.

<sup>64</sup>Dog Lake is immediatel south of Penticton, and is about eight miles long. At its southern extremity is a waterfall about nine feet high which is the only break in navigation from the head of Okanagan Lake to Fort Okanagan on the Columbia.—F. W. H.



name for the number of fat dogs<sup>65</sup> the Hudson Bay Company's men used to kill and eat there, when they could not have venison or fish. The great Okinagan Lake<sup>66</sup> coming down the valley in length 84 miles, averaging about three broad, washes this Reservation with its feet. It is the largest fresh water lake on the Pacific coast, and full of fish of many kinds, but salmon do not thrive well in it, the waters being so warm. The defile between it and Thompson River is very low, perhaps not over a hundred feet high, and the old Indian tradition is that this lake passed on to the sea by that way down the Frazer River, but that a great shaking of the earth opened the way and called to it to go down the Columbia to the sea. "Okinagan" should be spelled "ou-kina-kine"<sup>67</sup> as pronounced by the natives, meaning a certain rocky point in the mountains of So-jos. We have in Montana the Flathead term Sklen-kine i. e. Beaver Head, a point of the Missourian Mountains.

Mr. Ellis is not at home, but his lady is very kind and having refreshed myself with some excellent cognac and cake at her hands, I pass on to camp by the Lake. This Mrs. E. was rather good looking on her first arrival, but he is strong and young and the labor of making four or five children took much of the crimson out of her cheeks and she looks pale and loose of skin. These ladies go down to New Westminster to be delivered of their babies. Would it not be better for them to be delivered of them where they make them? Mine always performed that serious work alone. Only once a physician was sent for by her own permission, but she freed herself before he arrived. She said that the old Indian mothers held, children brought to the world with the help of midwives were not so self reliant and brave as those born with no help but that of the laboring mother.

---

<sup>65</sup>The voyageurs were quite partial to the meat of the dog, especially of the small kinds. Frequent references to this, to us, strange taste are to be found in the records of the early travellers. See, for example, Fraser's Journal, in Masson's *Les Bourgeois*, i, 182.—F. W. H. Describing dog meat as a food, Cox says: "It somewhat resembled mutton in taste. We generally had it roasted, but the Canadians preferred it boiled, and the majority of them seemed to think it superior to horse flesh. In this, however, I entirely differ from them, for the latter is a cleaner animal, and in taste bears a stronger resemblance to beef than dog meat does to mutton (Ross Cox: *Columbia River*, i, 203). Cox makes frequent mention elsewhere of the use of dogs for food, and of the purchase of from 20 to 30 head at a time for use as food (ii, 25, 28, 29, 30). The only record I have found of the price of dog meat, "on the hoof" is in Swan's *Northwest Coast*, p. 235, where it is stated that they were worth \$15 a head in trade on the Greene River, in 1838.—W. S. L.

<sup>66</sup>This lake is about sixty-five miles in length; it empties by the Okanagan River, which is ninety-eight miles long, through Dog and Osoyoos Lakes into the Columbia River.—F. W. H.

<sup>67</sup>It is doubtful if there is any other place name which has been spelled in more different forms. Symons: *Upper Columbia River*, p. 130, gives a number of variations, and more will be found in the *Handbook of Indians of Canada*, p. 360. The etymology of the name Okanagan is, like its proper spelling, doubtful. The late J. W. McKay claimed that it was an Indian word, "Ukanakane," meaning "the people of Ukana," the affix "ane" signifying "the people of."—F. W. H.

Forty miles of plain and forest and mountain bring us to the Okanagan Mission<sup>68</sup> held by the Oblant Society of Catholics. They have a ranch of a hundred acres here, well cultivated with grain and fruit, a very fertile spot called by the French name *Ans-de-sable*,<sup>69</sup> meaning a sandy beach. Elly,<sup>70</sup> a Frenchman keeps store and ranch here with his wife, too from France. They give me and my horses hospitable quarters for the night gratis; never charge me a cent. There was up this way last season a news reporter, a strange man with excellent letters to the papers of the west and east. He travelled entirely afoot and without blankets or money; he had been all over north and South America, over a great deal of Asia and Africa, and said that the only people that never charged him for a nights quarters were Indian, Irish and Negro. His theory for the rest he said was cold-blooded, but said he, "I might include also the kindness of the French and Spanish with the black and red man and the Irishman," The Custom House Officer at So-jos thought he had been some Confederate officer thus reporting and finding his way and writing to the world of that world. Oh! man what a blessed devil art thou. They were going to hang him in the Yakima settlement, because he wrote justly of the rights of the Indians. And these are your Christians! Why not? for the voice cried "These are those that eat their own Gods." The safest settlement in the interior of British Columbia is here. Seventy more miles by the Okanagan Lake and beyond it brings me to Grand Prairie,<sup>71</sup> a beautiful vale of about ten miles by two. It is now all ranched. By right it belongs to me, having been given to me and allotted to me by the master of the whole country of the Okanagan. He was the chief Nicholas, and deeded this plain to me in presence of his sons, some of whom are still living. Years afterwards when I spoke to Sir James Douglas, Governor of British Columbia, he thought for various reasons that it would be difficult to secure it for me. Had I a written deed of it, he said, before the col-

---

<sup>68</sup>Okanagan Mission was established in 1857. It was situated on the eastern side of Okanagan Lake, at the spot now known as Kelowna. The Mission Valley runs north from the Mission for about forty miles, and is finely adapted for all kinds of farming. The distance from Penticton to Okanagan Mission (Kelowna) is thirty-five miles. At the time of this visit it was the headquarters of the Roman Catholic Church in the Okanagan country. The author's "Oblant Society of Catholics" is the Oblates of Mary Immaculate—the great missionary society.—F. W. H.

<sup>69</sup>A. C. Anderson's map attached to his handbook of the gold regions shows *Anse de Sable* on the western side of Okanagan Lake.—F. W. H.

<sup>70</sup>This is probably Eli Lequime, who, in 1881, was a trader, rancher, hotel-keeper, and postmaster at Okanagan Mission.—F. W. H.

<sup>71</sup>Grand Prairie is so named from the character of the country, and is a translation of the Indian name "Eshelli-wha-spellam." It is seventeen miles from the South Thompson River and about thirty-five miles from Kamloops. The Hudson's Bay Company's "brigade trail" from Fort Okanagan to Kamloops passed through this beautiful prairie. The line of the Canadian Northern Railway from Kamloops to Vernon is located through it. Our author's distances are again excessive.—F. W. H.

ony was organized I might get it. I remarked that living witnesses should always be as good as writing, but he thought the colony would not agree to it. The heirs of the chief insist yet that it should be given to me.

Thirty-five miles more and I am at my daughter's<sup>72</sup> house for the coming winter. She is well lodged and married, on her own ranch on the left bank of the Thompson River facing the Indian Reservation. She is now a large woman, weighing over two hundred pounds. In the summer she often bathes in the river and remains in its cold waters about an hour, enough to test the endurance in that cold stream, of the most powerful Indian. What a narrow thread is the road of life! Once when she was a toddling baby, dressed in a Glengary tartan frock, she fell into the Pend O'Reille river, from a cut clay bank of the stream above the lake. The children screamed. An Indian woman standing by was awed by the depth of the water and the sudden disappearance of the child, and stood with a blank gaze at the river, a rare want of presence of mind with the Indian. The tender ear of the mother, however, heard in her tent at sixty paces from the bank the screams of the children. She rushed to the top of the bank and saw the top of the head of her little one borne rapidly out and away by the deep and flowing river. The bank was a high, stepless clay cliff. She sprang into the river from the top of it and swam in her clothes to the sinking child. That child with life's last instinct paddled and struggled with her little hands and the porous tartan frock making a safety collar around her neck as lifted by the waters helped to keep her up, but making her way out into the stream. The mother at last having swum her way slanting with the current to the child, caught her and held her with with one hand while she swam with the other one. The weight of this position and twisting of her dress around her limbs soon told her that she would fail the land. She then laid hold of the back of the head of the child in her teeth, and thus the use of both hands was had and required to bring her after a long, determined and fatiguing swim ashore. The child was apparently dead. By rolling and pressing the water out of her, the little things first cry after her unconsciousness was "Mama I'm drowning." The mother springing from the cliff, head foremost into the current to seize her own, would in the hands of an artist make

---

<sup>72</sup>This daughter is Mrs. Christina McKenzie. The ranch referred to was situated on the South Thompson River near Chase station of the Canadian Pacific Railway. In 1877 she was engaged in business in Kamloops, which her intimate knowledge of the fur trade enabled her to carry on successfully. After the death of Mr. McKenzie she married Mr. E. Charles Williams.—F. W. H. Christina McDonald McKenzie Williams, now of Spaulding, Idaho.—J. A. M. I am indebted to Mrs. Williams for some notes and suggestions furnished me for the introduction and foot-notes.—W. S. L.

an excellent subject for his brush. I may ask here, where was the soul when the little Tina became unconscious in the drowning scrape? Apart from the mind there can be no soul, and if the mind dies all is blank. The wildest Indian of the Rocky Mountains is here as learned as St. Augustine or Pope Henry, the murderer of his own loves. What a world!

I was not long here with my Christina, when invited to an Indian donation feast, or feast of the dead. Strange that I was the only white man in the country invited to it. An insight into that learned "Mystery of the Mounds" was undoubtedly to me the result, and I went, and here it is.

There were about three hundred Indians there in a Mound House.<sup>73</sup> The inside of the mound chamber was about fifty feet square. The outside circular height of this simple building was about twenty feet, one half below and the other half above the surface of the earth. The inside square or hall of donation was built with rough but strong timbers, simply and wisely made to converge and rest on one massive central pillar. The Indians told me these buildings were from the beginning. These houses in the perpetuity of time and the active changes of death and of other secret causes filled up with the vestiges of things that were and yet are may be taken as the seal mounds that now puzzle our learned antiquarians.

In the interior and to the northwest many such mounds are found. Large tribes built large ones, and small tribes made smaller ones. At every fest of donation when a man of consequence was raided on by death, a new mound building was made and the tribes invited to the feast. The Jew has his day of atonement; and the Christian his Palm Sunday and his sacrament of blood and flesh, to renovate the spirit in reality and in token of one who is not. The red man's day of donation is to gather with good will in memory of the departed and to offer one another the humble offerings of their estate in interchange of good will. Did all the chapters of Christendom offer more? A mournful music of a few solemn notes is kept time to by dances of that measure. There are only seven notes in the National anthem of Great Britain, adopted too by America, a simple but splendid strain composed by an Englishman or a Scotchman.<sup>73½</sup>

---

<sup>73</sup>This is the winter dwelling of the interior Salish, called, in common parlance, "keekwillie house." For further particulars regarding such dwellings consult Hill-Tout: *The Far West: The Home of the Salish and Dene*—F. W. H.

<sup>73½</sup>The origin of the national anthem of Great Britain is shrouded in mystery. An endless discussion has raged around the question; but there is no conclusive, or even satisfactory, evidence to establish the authorship



As the feast continues four or five days a livlier measure is now and then introduced to relieve the pressure of the strain of death. A hundred ——— hours of the dead march of Saul would suggest a similar relief.

As to the sacraments of the "Free Kirk" parties are in and parties are out, for the building cannot hold them. Love, wonder, sorrow and story are whispered and chattered and smothered there. The old are old and the young are young. Indecourtn if inclined is kept down by the sages of the tribes, as her Majesty's paid police hold check on such when London goes to prayer. But look at that mound house of two doors; one enters below and the others opens out by a notched ladder resting on the central pillars. The building tho' simple in its architecture has the principal lines of the White House, the straight or vertical, the oblique, the horizontal and the curve, and the spirit of man is in that little building. A spirit which no tyrant nor freeman can gainsay. A spirit that made fire without mining beneath the earth or trafficking in Heaven's providence of sulphur above the earth, a spirit that naked or ragged felt the presence of the Divine Unknown.

Some learned bigots tell us that the Jews were the only people of antiquity that worshipped the true God. How silly that assertion! How little they know of the endless ways of the Inscrutable with his own. Pompous sheets that cannot tell how many bubbles pass over the Astorian bar in one night, assert a knowledge of things impossible for them to know. Is not the vain, egotistical assertion a terrible libel on man and on the Omnipresence of his deity. But in that mound and out of it, with all opportunities offered to human possession (passion) some few morals were propounded, were they ever excelled on Sinia or in St. Peters or Pauls? No, never! The gifts to man of the moral intellect from the beginning are his and they are subservient to one law, not the law of capricious and racial religion or fancy, but that of the staid understanding and the foreknowledge instilled by the intuitive apprehension. Give the human intellect in charge to religion and man is a beast. Put religion in the safe keeping of the intellect and man is a man. Wherefore the wild red man is a man, and his simple yet profound theology compares with anything of that kind we yet had from Paris or Jerusalem.

The mounds were generally built at the winter place of gathering.

---

of either the words or the music. Henry Carey and "rare Ben Jonson" are the favorites as regards the former, and Dr. John Bull and Dr. Arne as regards the latter. Those who wish to follow the subject to the extent of seeking the origin of the words of "America" are referred to the "Report on the Star-spangled Banner," etc., by O. G. T. Sonneck issued by the United States Government in 1909, pp. 72-78.—F. W. H.

Shelter and a hall to meet in for days were the first motives for building, and built large or small according to the means of the builder. Many are filled to the top and growing higher while others grow lower, and others await yet unfilled the leveling progress of nature and the offerings of her passing winds. Few of them are found in the interior game plains, whose tribes followed the game as that game followed the grasses, but the fish and berry tribes had their common wintering grounds, and there the mound house was built.

An old man whose hair was strangely white saluted me from the dense crowd in the hall: "I am already old; I was younger when I heard of you, I was far when I heard of you and you gave flour and ammunition and blankets and shirts and flints and awls and thread to our people; and you covered our dead, and you went to see the sick. For all that and for more than that we heard of you. The white man says he had a God and says he has a priest and says he has a Christ. You often were a Christ to us; our distressed were relieved by you; we preserve you in our hearts with good will and keep you there as a great chief; you are here and our hearts and our eyes are glad you came."

Soon one of the donators gave me 4 and  $\frac{1}{2}$  silver dollars. Since I had been in charge of the Colville district they never forgot me.<sup>74</sup> In 1871 on my way down by Litton<sup>75</sup> to Victoria some of them shook my body that never saw me and said they were ready to die having once seen me. So much for Indian Gratitude, a thing often experienced by me tho' stoutly denied by many. A fine canoe and strong steersman were soon at my disposal. Christina and I and her husband floated down two miles of the river in it to our home at about one o'clock in the morning. A few flames of wind and cloud passed between us and the stars; the dark pine covered mountains shadowed down to the water's edge and I sang while she joined in the chorus, Clan Ronald's Boat song "Agus ho Moraig," to which the waters and the hills and the solemn echoes of the red man's domain made splendid and suggestive reply. This fine boat song was made in the unlucky rising of 1745 when the Stewarts made their last essay at the sword and lost an empire by its failure. In early spring I

---

<sup>74</sup>Angus McDonald was always a warm friend of the Indians. In 1858, when David McLoughlin's party were travelling along the Okanagan River, they were attacked by the natives who later stole some of their cattle. Two of the thieves were caught in the act of jerking the beef. McDonald, then on his way from Colville to Hope, happened along very opportunely, and at his request the culprits were discharged.—F. W. H.

<sup>75</sup>Lytton is a small town at the confluence of the Thompson and Frazer Rivers, named after Sir Edward Bulwer, afterwards Lord Lytton, the novelist, who was Secretary of State for the Colonies at the time of the formation of the Colony of British Columbia in 1858.—F. W. H.

made a visit to a friend at Lac La Hache<sup>76</sup> i. e. Lake of the Axe and had my passage free aboard the *Lady Dufferin*<sup>77</sup> as far as she went. This steamer is named after the Countess Dufferin, an Irish title, the Earl himself having been Governor General of Canada and a very able Governor. I was introduced to both of them at Fort Hope.<sup>78</sup> She is said to be a kind of a petulant, literary Poute.<sup>79</sup> She is erect, wiry and active and of a vivacious look. I was told by some one that she was a ballad maker. She is very fond of going to fish with her rod and hook.<sup>80</sup>

I found at Lac la Hache the oldest living of the Flathead tribe of Montana, the all that remains of the wife of Chief Factor Ogden.<sup>81</sup> Her hair is white as snow, leaves her bed once a day for a short time and is very deaf. She, however, is well cared for by her kind daughter, Mrs. McKinley,<sup>82</sup> once well known in Oregon. McKinley is a Scotch Highlander, a most hospitable man, but having often drained his cup and been unlucky in the fast chances of the west he left Oregon to ranch it in the high dry and cold solitudes of Lac la Hache. He has a fine flock of Cashmere goats here, whose hair with his band of cattle keep him comfortable. Man would always have enough if he did not want too much. After all what can an ambitious averice be but an anointed hell. The son of many called by the believers of the Redeemer asked for "Our daily bread." This is a fine short prayer. It seems he got it all in the Jewish Talmud. An English passage in that well known prayers says "Lead us not into temptation. The French one says, "Let us not succumb to ditto," Which is the

<sup>76</sup>Lac le Hache is situated on the road from Ashcroft to Cariboo, about one hundred miles north of the former place. It is about ten miles long. The Hudson's Bay Company's "brigade trail" connecting Forts Kamloops and Alexandria passed along its shores.—F. W. H.

<sup>77</sup>The steamer *Lady Dufferin*, one of the earliest on the South Thompson River, was built by William Fortune in 1878. It was a sixty-ton boat, ninety-five feet long and sixteen feet wide. It made regular trips from Spallumcheen to Kamloops by way of the South Thompson River and Shuswap Lake.—F. W. H.

<sup>78</sup>Lord Dufferin and his party were at Hope for a few hours on their trip up the Fraser River on September 6, 1876.—F. W. H.

<sup>79</sup>Perhaps this word is "pout" or "poute" which, by the Scotch, is sometimes used figuratively to mean a child, a young person, a maid, or a sweetheart.—F. W. H.

<sup>80</sup>"*Lady Dufferin* is an expert sportswoman and throws a fly faultlessly."—St. John: *The Sea of Mountains*, II, 146.—F. W. H.

<sup>81</sup>Peter Skene Ogden. For a full account of his life see Mr. T. C. Elliott's article in the *Oregon Historical Quarterly*, xi, 229-278. Mr. Elliott says on page 239 that Ogden's first wife was of the Cree nation; his second wife was a Spokane Indian. The latter might be said to be a Flathead or Saleesh Indian.—F. W. H.

<sup>82</sup>The marriage of Archibald McKinlay and Sarah Julia Ogden took place at Fort Vancouver in June, 1840. Mr. T. C. Elliott gives in the *Oregon Historical Quarterly*, x, 325-328, a short account of these persons, and appended thereto a photographic reproduction of their marriage certificate.—F. W. H.

true? St. James says, "God tempt no man,"<sup>83</sup> but Gittau thinks otherwise.

The news of the assassination of the Russian Emperor was sent me by an English engineer, who said in closing his letter, "So be it to all tyrants." Yet what can be more tyrannical than some of the English laws. Look at the evictions in the Highlands of Scotland, and at the damned law of Thirlage<sup>84</sup> that fines a poor highlander if he does not grind his own grain at a certain mill. All the crowned ones of Europe murmured a vindictive moan of alarm at the death of the Russian Czar, but for the distressed millions of their starving nations how seldom runs a tear. Kingcraft and Christianity drive every screw to its head in the coffin of the freedom of the nations, Jefferson well said that "Eternal vigilance is the price of liberty." Withal the loyalty of British Columbia, I heard not a man in his unguarded moments say it was a pity to kill the Czar, yet he may have been a good man. In his capacity man cannot shower universal good like a night of dew. Washington had his faults and St. Paul lies as he says "For the glory of God."<sup>85</sup> Perhaps Victoria is checked in her sympathy for her down-trodden by her awe at the honor of Peers and landocracy, although tis observed that her generosity never equalled her means. Paine says fear is the cause of man's servility. I think it arises for his leaving to another man to abide the wish of the one engaging him. This I hold was man's first curse.

Here at Kamloops<sup>86</sup> the H. B. Co. keep a pretty house and store in charge of officer Tait,<sup>87</sup> who is a fine, tall  $\frac{1}{8}$  Indian, and once a steward at Vancouver. He speaks good Cree and French and English, had a fine family of daughters. Two of them play a few English but no Scotch tunes on the piano. His wife, a strong muscular woman,

<sup>83</sup>"For God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man."—James, i, 13.—F. W. H.

<sup>84</sup>A term in Scottish law meaning a servitude by which lands are thirled or astricted to a particular mill so that the possessors must have their grain ground there, paying certain tolls as the agreed or customary price of grinding.—F. W. H.

<sup>85</sup>The reference is probably to Romans, iii, 7: "For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?"—F. W. H.

<sup>86</sup>At this time the Hudson's Bay Company's fort at Kamloops was situated on the south side of the Thompson River just west of the junction of its two branches. Two earlier forts, at least, had existed in this vicinity; one in the flat between the North and South Thompson Rivers; the other on the west bank of the North Thompson River. David Thompson's celebrated map of 1813-14 places the fort on the flat referred to; the map attached to the Report upon the Hudson's Bay Company, 1857, shows it on the west side of the North Thompson River. It was at the former post that Samuel Black was murdered in 1841; John Tod, his successor, says: "The fort was on the right [left?] bank of the North Thompson at its mouth, opposite the modern village, or town, of Kamloops." Soon after taking charge Tod built a new fort on the right or west bank of the North Thompson River. The transfer to the south side of the Thompson River appears to have been made in the early sixties. See Wade: Thompson Country.—F. W. H.

<sup>87</sup>John Tait, J. P., Factor of the Hudson's Bay Company at Kamloops. His names appears in the directories for 1877, 1882, and 1885.—F. W. H.



fell dead on Christman night, while preparing supper, with heart disease. She, too, was of some red man's blood. Heart disease is very uncommon to the Indian. Have a good time of it with this officer, sipping cogniac and speaking of Sitting Bull, Fenians, on which he is very severe, and old Oregon love scrapes and murder of the Russian Czar.

Saw here the Chief Magistrate and an M. P., a short, frizzled hair lively fellow, and an O. M. of Irish descent. In this vicinity lived the family of the late Chief Trader McLean, three of whose sons for some reason murdered the sheriff and another man. In the finale they were hung at N. Westminster with the French halfbreed Hare, their fellow in crime. It was whispered by the initiated that they had intended other victims, but this is merely gossip.<sup>88</sup>

Here but out of town I was hospitably received by Walker,<sup>89</sup> whose life I once saved near the Rapids of the Dead,<sup>90</sup> upper Columbia. I was in a boat conveying up to the base of the Rocky Mountains the Pacific Coast Express. In approaching the rapids I saw something like a man jumping in the stones about a mile below us. Calling to our steersman to heave to the shore. The nearer it came the shape looked like a man. Poor fellow there he was, his clothes in shreds, his feet bleeding out through his moccasins, his face gaunt as death, yet resolute and determined. He was out with two Indians to meet us with the Caledonian & F. River Express, but his week's rations of dried salmon had been eaten a week previous, and yet we came not at the expected day, and the delay nearly cost him his life. His only arms was an old English pistol of the horse kind, and he had only two bullets for it, and he saw nothing but death before him unless he met us. Here he made the desperate resolution of making a raft and running down the Columbia in search of us. It was in May and the mountain waters were high and to run the Dalles then by a little raft was terrible work; but he resolved on tying on to the raft by

<sup>88</sup>In December, 1879, Allan McLean, Charles McLean, Archibald McLean, and Alexander Hare—the Kamloops outlaws—were charged with horse stealing. John Ussher and three special constables with warrants for their arrest found them in the Nicola Mountains, and summoned them to surrender. In reply they opened fire, killing Ussher and wounding two of his assistants. The outlaws then killed an inoffensive sheep rancher named Kelly. A large posse pursued them and they were surrounded and captured. They were tried in New Westminster in November, 1880, and found guilty. The four criminals were hanged on one scaffold at New Westminster, on January 31, 1881.—F. W. H.

<sup>89</sup>Donald Walker came to York Factory in 1849. After spending some time at Norway House he was sent to Fort St. James. In 1854 he was at Fort Kamloops. From 1855 till 1859 he was in charge at Fort Hope. In the latter year he retired from the Company's service. He died at Kamloops in November, 1912, aged 84 years.—F. W. H.

<sup>90</sup>The celebrated and dreaded Dalles des Morts of the Columbia River, forty-three miles above the town of Revelstoke, B. C.—F. W. H. See, also, Kane: *Wanderings*, p. 355; also, David Douglas' *Journal* (ed. Wilkes, London, 1914), p. 252.

stout twisted willows his two mates and himself, so that the whirlpools as he said could not "pull them off the raft." The two Indians seeing the desperate resources he relied on sat on the bank and would not go near him. Seeing this, he said "Well I only see one more chance of life before the express arrives. Yonder are the high frozen summits of the Rein Deer, I have two balls, let us go up and run down a reindeer on our snow shoes." And they went. Up and up they labored on the frozen snow with their glancing snow shoes, yet up and up they went. Meantime we passed on, not knowing we passed them and took breakfast above the site of their raft, then started on. They soon saw from the high snowy summits of the Rapids of the Dead, a smoke curl up to the skies above the green, tremendous forests of those solitudes, and knew at once it must be us. Now for a snow shoe run for life to catch us, while we knew nothing about it, but made our way against the bold and far-famed Columbia by oar, and line and pole as fast as we could. Arriving where we took breakfast to have a thorough proof the nature of our smoke, Walker commanded the two Indians to come on behind him with the express box, as far as they could, while he unburdened by anything but his pistol and two bullets would run his last to overtake us, and off he started. It was soon dark, the snow in places very soft and deep. The forests were desperate, trees standing, trees down, brush, rocks and thorns thick, yet the man of iron nerve, fed on the west coast of Scotland on potatoes, salt and fish held on his tumbling, stumbling way all night through those mountainous roads. It was now near dawn and he felt sleepy. He feared sitting down, but stood with his back against a tree, and closed and opened and closed his eyes again, and when he last opened them the dawn had already cleared and covered the mountains. The voice of a goose, of several geese, was rousing the shores as they smelt something. Walker crawled a few paces to the river bank. Five geese were close on the foot of it. The bank was cut steep down. He aimed at one of them, right below him, close to the mouth of his pistol. A smothered report. The pistol struck him in the forehead, slipping his grasp, and the goose swan away with his broken wing on the other side of the Columbia. His last ball was now put in, asking God if he intended to forsake him, and off again he started. It was just about three in the afternoon as above stated when I first saw him, jumping and running on the stones of the beach, waving his last bit of a hat to stay for him.<sup>91</sup> He is one

---

<sup>91</sup>This incident occurred in April, 1854. The story above corresponds very closely with the version which I have had from the lips of Donald Walker himself. Walker's memory, however, was that he had been four days without food and not a week as herein stated.—F. W. H.

of the most determined men I ever knew. I find a fine collection of old Gaelic Poetry in his house. While looking over it I found the following literary curiosity in the shape of a latin translation of the well known Scotch Reel of Roy's Wife.

Rubri uxor Aldivallis,  
 Rubri uxor Aldiivallis:  
 Seisne qua decepit me  
 Colles cu mtransirem Ballis?  
 Vovit ac juravit illa,  
 Meam semper se futuram  
 Sed vae mihi virgo levis  
 Istum prae me legit furem.  
 Optime saltavit virgo  
 Laetiozem nunquam malles  
 O, Utinam fuisset mea  
 Aut ego Ruber Aldivallis.  
 Oculos nitentes habet,  
 Atque palchros ut Dianne,  
 Semper mihi cara erit  
 Quamvis perfida Joanni.<sup>91½</sup>

Having served him with a fair libation of brandy and a little food, I put him to bed until his mates arrived with the express packet. and then furnishing him with food and shoes for their backward trip we separated, us to ascent the dreaded Rapids of the Dead. or Rapids de Mort as our first job and then to walk the frozen summits between the Columbia and the Thompson Rivers.

<sup>91½</sup>The words of this reel were written by Mrs. Grant of Cannon, afterward Mrs. Dr. Murray of Barth. Burns also wrote verses for the same air, beginning "Canst thou leave me thus, my Kate?" See David Laine, Additional Illustrations to Johnson's Museum, Vol. IV., pp. 368, 369.

The verses of Mrs. Grant are as follows:—

Roy's Wife of Aldivalloch.

Roy's wife of Aldivalloch.  
 Roy's wife of Aldivalloch.  
 Wat ye how she cheated me  
 As I cam o'er the braes o' Balloch?  
 She vow'd, she swore she wad be mine;  
 She said she lo'er me best of onie;  
 But O the fickle, faithless Quean,  
 She's ta'en the earle and left her Johnnie:  
 \* \* \* \* \* Roy's wife, etc.  
 O she was a cantie quean.  
 Weel could she dance the Highland walloch;  
 How happy I, had she been mine,  
 Or I been Roy of Aldivalloch.  
 \* \* \* \* \* Roy's wife, etc.  
 Her hair sae fair, her e'en sae clear,  
 Her wee bit mou' sae sweet and bonnie  
 To me she ever will be dear,  
 Though she's forever left her Johnnie.  
 \* \* \* \* \* Roy's wife, etc.

The tune is old and was formerly called "The Ruffian's Rant"; a name happily superseded by "Roy's Wife" after the writing of these verses by Mrs. Grant.—W. S. L.

The Rapids de Mort are named for the drowning of eleven souls in them in 1838.<sup>92</sup> The H. B. boat officered by Wallace<sup>93</sup> and steered by a powerful French Candian, Charlefioux.<sup>94</sup> Mrs. Wallace and a Catholic Priest<sup>95</sup> were in the boat with the rest. The Steersman suggested above the rapids that it was time to camp, it being late in the evening, and thought broad daylight would be required to run those dangerous whirlpools, whose huge serpentine throats were darkened the more by the grand overhanging forests and perpendicular cliffs of the closed up mountains through which the Columbia, God know when, wore down her way; but Wallace thought there was light enough to run them, and the steersman, sensitive as a she mountain martin, curbed the boat's prow again into the current, calling on all hands to stretch to their oars. In the middle leap she was down like a shot swallow, spinning and sinking as she spun in the mouth of one of the whirlpools. Wallace who as a splendid swimmer took his lady in his arms and jumped into the whirlpool to swim ashore. The Priest followed them. Their strongest effort had no more effect that would my foot have in Vulcan's Vice. They were at once swallowed never more to breath. On leaping off the edge of the boat she was upset and the crew and all drowned, but the steersman held on to the upset boat. As she approached the shore by the course of the current, down a mile below the rapids he swam ashore and the boat grounded close to him. He ran half frozen on the beach to warm him, in doing so he heard as if it were the cry of a young bear or deer or something. He looked and looked but could see nothing. He then waded into the river and looking under the gunnel<sup>96</sup> of the boat saw a child perched as a squirrel and holding on for life by the thwart<sup>97</sup> of the boat. He rescued the child,<sup>98</sup> and being a very strong man

---

<sup>92</sup>This origin can scarcely be correct, for we find these dalles known by this name in 1827. See, Ermatinger's Journal (Translations of The Royal Society of Canada, 1912) under date April 25, 1827; and see, also David Douglas' Journal in Oregon Historical Society, Quarterly, vi, 207. From Ross' Fur Traders (ii, 180) and Kane: Wanderings (p. 329-332), a similar accident seems to have occurred about 1816, and from this it would appear that the name is really derived, though the two authors mentioned do not agree upon the exact details.—F. W. H.

<sup>93</sup>The Reverend F. N. Blanchet, who was one of this party, calls Mr. Wallace "an English botanist."—F. W. H.

<sup>94</sup>The names of J. B. Charlefioux and Pierre Charlefioux appear in the lists of employees of the Hudson's Bay Company.—W. S. L.

<sup>95</sup>There were only two priests in the party, the Reverend Fathers Demers and Blanchet. Both of these persons had descended the rapids in safety on the first downward trip of the boat. The accident occurred on the second trip. The reference to a priest in the boat is therefore an error.—F. W. H.

<sup>96</sup>Usually spelled "gunwale."—F. W. H.

<sup>97</sup>A provincial English form of "thwart," the rower's seat, extending from side to side of an open boat.—F. W. H.

<sup>98</sup>Father Blanchet in his account says: "The body of a child was caught under the boat."—F. W. H.



turned the boat keel down and made his way with it and the child safely to Colville.<sup>99</sup>

When the boats next run the rapids in 1839 we came within an inch of being lost. Big Michel was our steersman, a splendid chestnut-haired half Cree and Norman French Canadian. Everything was prepared to run them, men belted tightly with their coats off. Michel, or in English Michael, wound a twisted silk herchief round his head to keep his sweeping coils of hair from blinding him, and grasping his reserve paddle eight foot long and 14 inches breadth of blade, turned our little Columbian craft into the current of her native river, telling the men calmly, yet sternly, to row strong "ram fort"; besides the crew three English families were in the boat and straight before us and below, within fifty yards of us roared and heaved and coiled the very whirls wherein the Wallace party with their priest were swallowed. The families were uneasy at hearing the sound of the messenger of death in those whirlpools, it made the party feel that a minute more would tell their fate. On rowing to the lower edge of the dark eddy from which the Rapids deMort takes his leap, the crew gave one quick side look ahead. Michel cried "Hurrah, my men, row strong," plunging and glancing like a pursuing eagle down the headlong leap we landed right in the throat of death's whirlpool and the boat filled and became helpless. The women screamed and prayed and a powerful Orkney blacksmith, attending to the water, sat forgetting his duty and prayed and wept in the bottom of the boat. The crew held their oars and seats, silent and passive as death. Michel looked fine, but too much like marble to think he was a thing that breathed. He seemed transfixed as hewn granite in his sublime attitude, awaiting any sign of hope. Young and active I thought of a large kettle and seized it and poured in a short number of second a large weight of water out of the boat. The whirlpool being then in heaving up instead of swallowing down I cried "Michel." He looked at me as if a thrill of lightening passed through his brain and he said again with aroused confidence "row strong." Every sinew found then and there its use and she was rowed by strange luck to the beach. On landing the whole of the crew and all the families looked with joyful terror on the grim folds of death that streamed in its foam before them. Until this I felt no fear, but now while walking on the beach, I felt dry and a certain rising spasm as if choking me. I never

---

<sup>99</sup>The whole version of this tragedy as given above does not correspond in its details with that of Father Blanchet, which will be found in *Historical Sketches of the Catholic Church in Oregon*, published in Ferndale, Wash., in 1910. —F. W. H. For another account see Kane: *Wanderings*, p. 335.—W. S. L.

felt it before. I drank a good draught of snowy water and walking away my nervous spasm was laid. In was so strange to me that I mentioned it once to our good Dr. Barclay.<sup>100</sup> He said "Your mind was more suggestive than theirs, and you found occupation for it. This scattered in you the sense of awe that so seized the others. That choking spasm was the last effort of the nerves in a tuzzle (?) with life. You might well drink after it."

Governor McLaughlin, who from ashore saw what was going on, sent for me immediately, and as the majestic, gray-haired man advanced toward me, I felt very grateful when he cried "Oh Angus, Angus, your have saved them, come and take some wine."

Passing from Walker's by Nicholas Valley and Lake,<sup>101</sup> I come to the Canadian Pacific Railroad party. It is the advance one from the Pacific and in charge of Berry<sup>102</sup>. They have terrible work in these canons of the Fraser River. Ceaseless blasting and killing of men by its accidents. Roger,<sup>103</sup> the chief engineer, who passed a night with me at Christina's home, says none of the American Pacific are anything compared to the difficulties of this one of the Canadian. Rogers is an American, does not believe in Christianity, but believes there is one Supreme God. He thinks Ingersol has gone beyond his depth in denying it. Who knows? Three more days ride down the heated cut rock and gold bearing country, brings me to New Westminster.<sup>104</sup>

---

<sup>100</sup>Dr. Forbes Barclay came to Oregon Territory, evidently in our author's company, in 1839, as surgeon of the Hudson's Bay Company at Fort Vancouver, and remained in that position until 1850. In 1848 he married Miss Maria Pambrun, a daughter of Pierre Chrysologue Pambrun. After retiring from the Company's service he was very prominent in the civic life of Oregon City, where he died in May, 1873.—F. W. H.

<sup>101</sup>Nicola Valley and Lake. Nicola Lake, thirteen miles long, is situated thirty eight miles east of Spence's Bridge on the Canadian Pacific Railway. A branch of that railways connects Nicola Valley with Spence's Bridge. The brigade trail, which our author is perhaps following, ran from Kamloops by way of Nicola Lake and the Coldwater River across the Cascade Mountains, and down the Anderson River to the Fraser River, opposite Spuzzum; there the Frazer was crossed by a ferry, and the trail continued through a low pass to Fort Yale. The word is an anglicization of "N'kuala," the name of a prominent Indian chief, who lived about 1812. For some facts regarding this man see, Wade: Thompson Country, pages 14-16. The Hudson's Bay Company used the form "Nicholas"; see, Anderson's Hand Book to the Gold Regions, and the map attached thereto. So general became this form that it is to be found on Arrowsmith's map of 1859, in Part II of the Papers Relating to British Columbia.—F. W. H.

<sup>102</sup>The person referred to is probably Mr. Henry A. Berry, who was timekeepers in 1882, on contract 61, on the Canadian Pacific Railway, having his head office at Salmon River, near North Bend. By the arrangements between the Canadian Government and the Railway Company the Government undertook to build the very expensive portion between Emory (four miles below Yale) and Savona's Ferry, a distance of 127 miles. This included the heavy work through the canyons of the Fraser River.—F. W. H.

<sup>103</sup>Major A. B. Rogers, upon whom devolved the selection of the route through the Rocky and the Selkirk Mountains, arrived in British Columbia in April, 1881. In the summer of 1882 he discovered the pass through the Selkirks now known as Rogers Pass in which the railway now runs.—F. W. H.

<sup>104</sup>Our author's route here is vague. From the reference to the canyons it would seem that he was following the old brigade trail which led from Kamloops to Yale; but he mentions no other place until he reaches New Westminster by horseback. This makes it probable that he may have travelled from Kamloops to Hope by his familiar route along that

I saw several Indians who knew me, one of them gave me a pair of Moccasins. The heat is intense and they are far cooler than my gaiter shoes. When very hot I ride in my socks only, as too much warmth from the feet would soon lead to sunstroke. Perhaps the eastern towns do not know this, but I do through experiences.

Put up at the Colonial, where Mr. Chisholm<sup>105</sup> and I had several Gaelic songs. He too is a descendant of the forty-five,<sup>106</sup> now of loyal prudence but of Jacobeth<sup>107</sup> feeling. This town which is the capital of this interior colony is sustained chiefly through the salmon fisheries. Many think it would have been long ago abandoned, since that supply and the canning of them brings bands of men to spend their money there. Its first pioneers are gone forever to build with the worm. Governor Douglas,<sup>108</sup> Colonel Moody,<sup>109</sup> and Bushby,<sup>110</sup> with whom I had many a happy round of wine have taken to the turf for their sleep. A vast perspective of bluish green, dotted on its half horizon with many a frozen summit limits the sight from this town. Fields there are none, and the whitened peaks like shattered stars rise from their solemn nativity above these gigantic forests, as if the deity were gathering some frozen chips with which to form new worlds. In the gloomy grandeur of the scene before him the traveller cannot help repeating "Your ways are not like the ways of man." A vast

---

brigade trail and thence continued his horseback travel to the coast. Otherwise we must assume that he ferried needlessly the Fraser River twice. The reference to the canyons may relate to some other trip, or it may be simply the statement of a patent, well-known fact. New Westminster is situated on the Fraser River about twenty miles from its mouth. The selection of the site was made in 1859 by Colonel R. C. Moody. It was the capital of the mainland colony of British Columbia from 1859 to 1868 when, after the union with the colony of Vancouver Island, the capital was removed to Victoria.—F. W. H.

<sup>105</sup>Donald Chisholm was born in Antigonish, Nova Scotia, though his parents came from Inverness-shire, Scotland. He went to California in the gold rush of 1849 and thence to British Columbia in the excitement of 1858. For some years he was in business at Hope, and later at New Westminster. He was a very prominent man in the affairs of the country. In 1887 he was elected as a member of the House of Commons of Canada.—F. W. H.

<sup>106</sup>The Jacobite rebellion of 1745, when the highland clans attempted to overthrow the Hanoverian line of monarchs and place Prince Charles Edward Stuart, "the bonnie Prince Charlie," upon the throne of Great Britain.—F. W. H.

<sup>107</sup>This seems an error for Jacobite.—F. W. H.

<sup>108</sup>The life of James Douglas, later Sir James, may be read in every history of Oregon, Washington, and British Columbia. He was the Governor of the colony of Vancouver Island from 1851 to 1863, and was also the Governor of the separate colony of British Columbia from 1858 to 1864. Perhaps the best view of him is to be obtained from Coats and Gossnell: Sir James Douglas.—F. W. H.

<sup>109</sup>Lieutenant-Colonel Richard Clement Moody was sent out to the colony of British Columbia in 1858 in command of a detachment of the Royal Engineers. This detachment remained in existence for five years, and was disbanded in October, 1863. Its duties were both civil and military—to maintain order and to explore and survey the country, lay out roads, etc. Colonel Moody returned to England in 1863. Later he became Major-General Moody.—F. W. H.

<sup>110</sup>The Hon. Arthur Thomas Bushby came to British Columbia in 1858. He married Agnes Douglas, one of the daughters of Governor Douglas. He occupied the positions successively of postmaster-general of the colony, registrar, and county court judge. He died in 1874, leaving a reputation of great ability and faultless honour.—F. W. H.



abundance of native berries are here, and although the red man is not fencing large or small fields, yet on his fruits and venison and fish in splendid quantities, and with choice importations of solid groceries added thereto, he really lives like Rothchilds, and they are happy yet in being more or less extinguished. To be extinguished in happiness unalloyed, however, is not their fate. All night on the river, some anchored or travelling or strolling canoe is heard to give its north-west season, love song, death song, and war song to the ear that hears it. Light sea and land steamers meet here, but the flag of the red, white and blue are mottos in their numbers. Steamers go from here to Victoria, across the Georgian Gulf in eight hours, and to Yale up the river in a day and a half. Grandeur and gloom, wood, water and stone are the five deities that resign over here.

Eight hours in the Steamer Enterprise<sup>111</sup> brings us to Victoria. This vessel is well furnished, by the Hudson Bay Company, who bought her from her American owners. My friend, her old Captain McNeil<sup>112</sup> of American birth is dead. He was a noted pioneer sailor on the northwest coast. From wrecks of Chinese junks<sup>113</sup> discovered by him and found years ago, he had no doubt of the discovery in ages gone of this continent by the Chinese and Japanese. The features of both are indelibly fixed in the physiognomy of the Alaska Indians.<sup>114</sup> The Purser,<sup>115</sup> an old friend of mine, is all I know on the Enterprise. Chief Factor Finlayson,<sup>116</sup> and Chief Trader B.<sup>117</sup> and Captain Swanson<sup>118</sup> and my daughters Maggie and Christiana passed nearly a whole

<sup>111</sup>The steamer Enterprise, a sidewheel vessel of 200 tons, was brought up from San Francisco in 1861 by Curry Bros. to run between Victoria and Puget Sound ports. She was bought in 1862 by the Hudson's Bay Company for about \$60,000 and placed on the Victoria-New Westminster route, on which she continued almost steadily until July, 1885, when, being badly injured in a collision, she was beached at Cadboro Bay near Victoria and abandoned.—F. W. H.

<sup>112</sup>See a full note upon this man, Captain William McNeill, in this quarterly, vii, 61.—F. W. H.

<sup>113</sup>See, hereon, the entry in the Nisqually Journal under date of June 9, 1834, and the note thereon in this quarterly, vii, 62.—F. W. H. See also Swan, Northwest Coast, p. 206.—W. S. L.

<sup>114</sup>Those interested in this subject may consult the very complete study by the Reverend A. G. Morice: Northwest Denes and Northeastern Asiatics, in the Translations of the Royal Canadian Institute for 1914.—F. W. H.

<sup>115</sup>The person referred to is, likely, Mr. George Hardisty, who was purser of the Enterprise in 1882.—F. W. H.

<sup>116</sup>Roderick Finlayson was born in Ross-shire, Scotland, in 1818. Entering the service of the Hudson's Bay Company, he was sent to the west of the Rocky Mountains in 1839. Until 1843 he was at the northern forts, but in that year he was transferred to Fort Victoria, then in process of construction. From 1844 to 1849, when Douglas removed from Fort Vancouver, Finlayson was in charge of Victoria. He became Chief Trader in 1850 and Chief Factor in 1859. In 1849 he married Miss Sarah Work, a daughter of John Work. He died in January, 1892.—F. W. H.

<sup>117</sup>Who? James Birnie, John Black, F. D. Boucher, Robert Ballantyne, Horace Belanger? Possibly Chief Traded James Bissett, in the employ of the Hudson Bay Company about 1870; though his name does not appear in any later directories, and no Chief Trader whose name begins with B. is included in the list of employees of the company about 1881.—F. W. H.

<sup>118</sup>Captain John Swanson was born in 1827. He arrived on the Pacific Coast in 1842; became a master mariner in 1855; and commanded several



night aboard of her at New Westminster, they dancing to my strains on a Jews Harp. I may say that, few men equalled me at this unassuming instrument. Some of them of choice sound, in the mouth of the initiated make very soft and sensitive harmony. We were off for the interior and it was a kind of farewell to the remaining and the going; some of us since have gone never, never to return.

I lodge in the old St. George, now, owned by Driard, a Frenchman. Here lodge the travelling aristocrats and high toned gentry of saloon fame, although the now chief factor Finlayson, who crossed the Rocky Mountains with me in 1859 built the first house in Victoria, I knew but few of its denizens. Most I knew are gone, and those remaining going fast. Doctor Wm. F. Tolmie<sup>121</sup> and daughter and I rode to Carmichael's, where we had a great treat in hearing played the great war pipe of my native hills. Some fine Pibroches and Reels were fingered by him. He played by note, and a large old musical note book got up by the Highland Society of London. His daughter, a maid of fifteen and her brother of thirteen<sup>122</sup> danced a Scotch reel. I never saw it better danced. Chief Factor Munro<sup>123</sup> takes me to his house and from it I visit my few living friends. I met the ex-Governor's lady,<sup>124</sup> the once Miss Hyde of Oregon, but now Mrs. Trutch in the H. B. store and I went by her invitation to her house. She once in her sister's home in Oregon played for me on the piano, while she sang the Irish Mother's Wail for her children, and I thought it very affecting. She has no children, which is a pity, she being when

of the Hudson's Bay Company's vessels, the Beaver, Labouchere, Otter, and Enterprise. He died at Victoria in October, 1892. It would thus appear that the reference in this sentence must be to an earlier visit.—F. W. H.

<sup>121</sup>Dr. William Fraser Tolmie arrived at Fort Vancouver in 1853. His journal, covering about a fortnight April 26 to May 15, 1853, is printed in the Quarterly, vi, 126-131. He was in charge of Fort Nesqually from 1849 to 1853. He retired from the Hudson's Bay Company's service in 1870. For a short biography of his life see Howay and Scholefield, *History of British Columbia*, pp. 516-519. In 1855 he married Miss Jane Work, eldest daughter of John Work. He died in December, 1892, at the age of 74 years.—F. W. H.

<sup>122</sup>The son is Dr. Simon Fraser Tolmie of Victoria. The daughter is Miss Margaret Cecilia Tolmie, now deceased.—F. W. H.

<sup>123</sup>Alexander Munro was born in Ross-shire, Scotland, in 1824. After engaging in the practice of law, and later, in banking, he entered the Hudson's Bay Company's service in 1857. He was placed at Fort Victoria, where he almost constantly remained, rising steadily all the time, until in 1874 he became a Chief Factor and accountant of the western department, which included all of British Columbia. He also had charge of the Company's lands as well as those of the Packed Seed Agricultural Company. When he retired in the early twenties to an honorable and well-earned rest, he was the senior Chief Factor in the Company's service.—F. W. H.

<sup>124</sup>Lady Trutch, the wife of Sir Joseph William Trutch. She was Julia Elizabeth Hyde, daughter of Louis Hyde, of New York. She was married in 1855 and came to British Columbia in 1856. Her husband built a great part of the Cariboo Road through the Fraser valleys, including the celebrated Suspension Bridge. He was Lieutenant-Governor of the Province from 1871 to 1876, and was knighted for his services in 1887.—F. W. H.

young very handsome and kind. Governor Seymour's<sup>123</sup> was with her, having but lately returned from Australia. Bidding them good night I went straight home. The next I went by invitation to Senator McDonald's.<sup>124</sup> He has a fine, square, stone castled house out of town by the seashore. He speaks excellent Gaelic and has a kind wife, daughter of Captain Reed,<sup>125</sup> and fine children, one of them named after the celebrated Flora McDonald.<sup>126</sup> I met here with an intelligent French lady, who insisted that I resembled Judge Bigby<sup>127</sup> very much. I told her I would so tell him, he and her being yet unmarried. She seemed delighted to find that I spoke a little French. Full pictures in Highland garb were shown me of the chiefs of McDonald and McLean. Although the men were well made, I did not think the dress put, at all in perfect taste. The one had a slovenly shaped Glengary bonnet on his head, spoiling the top of the figure. The other had a kilt on as long as that formerly worn by the red squaws of Oregon. I told the ladies that their chieftains' figures were spoiled by the ignorance of their artists. They laughed and putting the pictures by said I was hard to please. There was also a fine picture of Prince Charles, and I remarked that so ended all not equal to their undertaking. Evil luck and evil judgment are inseparable twins. In his last and fatal battle of Calloden he showed

<sup>123</sup>Frederick Seymour was the Governor of the Colony of British Columbia (then separate from the Colony of Vancouver Island) from 1864 to 1866. After the two colonies were united in 1866, Seymour became Governor of the united colony, which was called the colony of British Columbia. He was still in office as Governor when he died, in June, 1869, very suddenly, while on a mission of pacification amongst the northern Indians.—F. W. H.

<sup>124</sup>William James McDonald was born in Inverness-shire, Scotland, in 1832. He came to Vancouver Island in 1851. He took a prominent part in the political life of the early days, and in 1871 was appointed a senator of Canada. In 1915 he published his *Reminiscences*. He died in 1916.—F. W. H.

<sup>125</sup>Catherine, second daughter of Captain James Murray Reid, was married to W. J. McDonald, in March, 1857. Captain Reid was in command of the Hudson's Bay Company's brigantine *Vancouver* when, in 1854, she was lost on Rose Spit, Queen Charlotte Islands.—F. W. H.

<sup>126</sup>The name of Flora Macdonald will be remembered as long as that of the "bonnie Prince Charlie" himself. After the Battle of Culloden, in 1745, when the Prince was being hunted through the Western Isles, it was by her keen wit and cool presence of mind that his escape was effected. Dr. Samuel Johnson said of her that her name was "one that will be mentioned in history, and, if courage and fidelity be virtues, mentioned with honour."—F. W. H. She assisted Prince Charlie, disguised as her female attendant, to escape from the island of Benbecula to Sky, on June 27, 1746. She afterwards came to America for a time where her husband, Allan MacDonald, was a brigadier-general in the British army during the American Revolution.—W. S. L.

<sup>127</sup>Sir Matthew Baillie Begbie was sent out from England in 1858 to be judge when the colony of British Columbia was being formed. He became later the Chief Justice of the Province of British Columbia. He was a man of great learning, scholarly attainments, and the highest integrity. He died in 1894.—F. W. H.

<sup>128</sup>The reference here is to the well-known poem by Thomas Campbell, "Lochiel's Warning." Our author's Jacobite leanings show very plainly in this and other passages.—F. W. H. As the manuscript is somewhat illegible, it is difficult to make out this Gaelic correctly. McDonald's words are

little capacity. Fann Campbell's warning<sup>125</sup> to Lochiel is very fine, although too late, on that affair.

"For a field of the dead rushes red on my sight,

And the clans of Culloden are scattered in flight."

Yet he was not there, and although one of the best of English classics, the unadorned native poet who was in that battle from its inception to its retreat painted it more powerfully in his own native tongue, as he begins,

Air thus an lathda dol sìos.

Bha neula Caithidh nan sainn.

S'ma na h'sghaidh gan thrial naspeuran.

D'fhas an talamh che trom.

Gach fraoch-gach fearann s'guch fonn.

San diubh cha Chodthrow dhuin lom an t' sleibhe."

which can be literally interpreted thus:

"Beginning the day going east,

Clouds cast storms,

And against us the firmaments travelled,

Grew so heavy the earth,

Each heath, each field and each turf,

That the day failed our chance on the plain of that moor."

Fair fellow might well say that the firmaments did travel against them on that fatal day, being as they were out-numbered, out-generaled and betrayed; yet those who fought there, never fought better. There was a prophecy in the Western Isles that when Scotland's right hand in battle<sup>126</sup> was withdrawn from the McDonalds there would be bad luck. The position being that of our clan given by Bruce at the battle of Bannockburn and changed at Culloden.

Arriving at Judge Higby's in the evening before I left Victoria, he was out. His gille<sup>127</sup> knew my name and gave me some refreshments, said the Judge was very punctual and would be home at the hour. But I wished to leave and left my name. Passing out one way the Judge entered by another, saw my name, whereupon he im-

<sup>125</sup> *MacDonald's* a variation from those of the "Ode on the Battle of Culloden" by the Scotch Soldier, John May Stuart, which are as follows:

Air thus an lathda dol sìos.

Bha gach a cathadh nan slàn.

As an adhar bha trian ar leiridh, etc.

S'gach bu chothrom dhuinn lo man t-sleibhe.

D'fhas an talamh a's fonn.

Gach fraoch, fearann a's fonn.

<sup>126</sup> *John Macdonald*, who ended the rebellion of 1745, was the last to be fought in Scotland and the McDonalds, deprived of the possession of Bannockburn, the right which they had held since Bannockburn, were thus driven to the sea. They refused to charge and were swept down by the fire of the royal army.—F. W. H.

<sup>127</sup> *Gille* is the Highland Scotch term for a man-servant.—F. W. H.



mediately yelled and whooped after me like an Indian Chief, so glad was he to see me. He made his first tour into the interior over the Cascade Mountains with me,<sup>131</sup> accompanied by Judge Reilly and Secretary Bushby. Bigby is six feet four and a half inches in his socks and as straight as a needle. He has a fine education and speaks well in French and German, Italian and Spanish with a good store of Greek and some Hebrew, but no Gaelic. We went straight to dinner, sans ceremony. Brandies of all kinds and wines of all vines were there, as also whiskey from Ireland and Scotland. He was knighted by Victoria in person a few years ago. He wishes to leave British Columbia, although a most sensible man and of great influence, he probably thinks he is rather unpopular from his stern decisions on the bench. He showed me a full grown stag's head he valued highly. Told him that even his own height, though tall, would be short with giants and that occasionally we found greater specimens on our buffalo plains and in the glens of Montana. He is a very true shot, but not much of a hunter, and I promised him if ever I found one of superior antlers to keep it for him. I told his Honor sans ceremony that he or I owed the one the other one and repeated the remarks of the French lady, but he divined who she might be without my mentioning her name. We dined alone. I felt curious to learn before the Judge arrived that his man was a thorough English socialist and hinted to me that a great change was gradually working its way on the minds of the masses of the world; that ignorance must be expelled and tyranny made to bite the dust. I say Amen, amen, "Thy Kingdom come."

I went on, leaving the hosiptable Knight and Chief Justice of British Columbia, Sir Mathew Bigbie, to see the only male heir of Sir James Douglas.<sup>132</sup> I often carried this boy in my arms. He is now very ill from hereditary visitations I suppose of his generations. The Hebrew said "The blood is the life."<sup>133</sup> It seems that when any

---

<sup>131</sup>In September, 1859, Judge Begbie made his first trip over the Cascades from Fort Hope. His party, consisting of himself, Peter O'Reilly (then a Stipendiary Magistrate), and Arthur Thomas Bushby (then registrar of the Supreme Court) were proceeding to Kamloops on foot. They attached themselves to Lieutenant Palmer's party who were being guided by our author. After five days' travel they reached Campment des Femmes, where the trail for Kamloops separated from that for Colville. In recommending Lieutenant Palmer to engage the assistance of our author, his superior officer wrote: "Mr. Angus McDonald is a gentleman of great information who has travelled much in this country and is kindly disposed to assist your enquiries."—F. W. H.

<sup>132</sup>James William Douglas was born at Fort Victoria on June 1, 1851, and died about two years after the time of our author's visit, to wit, on November 7, 1883. He had been educated in England and had studied for the bar. He had married Mary Rachel Elliott, a daughter of the Hon. A. C. Elliott, then the premier of the province of British Columbia.—F. W. H.

<sup>133</sup>The passage referred to is likely from Deut. xii, 23: "Only be sure that thou eat not the blood; for the blood is the life; and thou mayest not eat the life with the flesh."—F. W. H.



virus enters the blood, man becomes a creeping hell. I should be grateful, for the blood of my stem was as pure as the flake on Mt. Hood. I tried to cheer the young man for about an hour and bade him farewell. His father, Sir James, was one of the best of my friends, but he went and will not come back. A lineal, but distant descendent of the "Black Douglas."<sup>134</sup> He was a powerful specimen of the tribe that fought so well for Scotland. He, too, was Knighted by Queen Victoria's own hand on arriving in England from Vancouver Island. When living he once told me in presence of naval Company that my letter<sup>135</sup> about the finding of the mines in British Columbia saved his position with the government, while he explained more of it to those naval officers, who were three years out of the true reckoning about. His lady is a fine sensible matron, daughter of an Irish gentleman, Conolly,<sup>136</sup> by a Cree woman of Red River. She had by her Sir James some beautiful children. One of them now with her husband, Governor Frank Dallas,<sup>137</sup> inhabits and owns Duncan, i. e. hill of the Bird, in Scotland, where Jef Davis staid awhile with them. The Gaelic is wonderfully expressive in definitions. Throughout Europe many of its names will last as long as white man live. Its inherent force, mingling with no other language is the secret cause of this expressive power. The other daughter, Agnes, is widow of the Colonial Secretary Bushby.<sup>138</sup> This gentleman was highly sociable and a great musician. Before he and my Christina's husband McKenzie, died, both entertained the English church at New Westminster

<sup>134</sup>William Douglas, Lord of Nithsdale, commonly called "The Black Douglas," who was prominent in the history of Scotland, died in 1390. Some remarks regarding him will be found in Sir Walter Scott's *Tales of a Grandfather*, xi.—F. W. H.

<sup>135</sup>Mr. A. C. Anderson says that the first intimation of the existence of gold in British Columbia was in 1855 when Angus McDonald at Colville "wrote down to Fort Vancouver that one of his men, while employed hauling firewood, had almost undesignedly amused himself by washing out a paannikin of gravel on the beach near Colville."—F. W. H.

<sup>136</sup>William Connolly entered the service of the Northwest Company about 1801. In 1803 he was at Rat River in the Athabaska Country. This post was 2,000 miles from York Factory and 1,200 miles from Red River. There he married, according to the custom of the country, a Cree woman, named Suzanne. The validity of this union was declared in a "cause celebre," in 1869. The full report is to be found in *La Revue Legale*, i, 253-397. In 1807 he was at Cumberland House, and later at Little Slave Lake. On the union of the two companies he entered the service of the Hudson's Bay Company. From 1824 to 1830 he was superintendent of New Caledonia. He became a Chief Factor in 1825. He retired from "Les pays d'en haut" in 1831. For several years he wintered at Ladousac, below Quebec. He finally settled at Montreal, of which city he was afterwards elected mayor. He died on June 3, 1849. See, further, upon this man, Archibald McDonald's *Journal*, p. 25; a letter from Archibald McDonald in the *Washington Historical Quarterly*, ii, p. 162; and a note in Masson, *Les Bourgeois*, i, 128.—F. W. H.

<sup>137</sup>A. J. Dallas, a Scottish merchant who had been in business in China and later was Chief Factor of the Hudson's Bay Company at Victoria. While in that office he figured prominently in the San Juan trouble. In 1862, after the death of Sir George Simpson, he became Governor of Rupert's Land, the head of the Hudson's Bay Company in America.—F. W. H.

<sup>138</sup>This appears to be a mistake. Perhaps our author intended to write "Postmaster-General."—F. W. H.

on a Sunday afternoon. Both felt their horns [?] and Bushby sat down to the organ, while McKenzie helped all he could with his Highland voice. There the poor fellows played and sung alone, making that church ring as it never did before, but the two never played there again, for death soon found them both. Old voices join, young voices join, young girls join. Do men that are to die in the same way join like these. Lady Douglas still lives in her husband's house, built in the middle of a splendid garden, whose every tree and bush was planted by his care. She often expresses a desire to see the Indian country before she died. She married her Knight when a maid of sixteen. She is very fond of bitter root and Kamas and of a buffalo tongue, when she can have them. I sometimes send her some from Colville. Oh! Father nature thou art indeed infallible as thy Father. Roots and buffalo tongues for this lady while she is much bored by the compound dishes which the rank and wealth of civilization offer her table every day. She is about 75. Her youngest daughter, a kind girl, Martha, has lately married.

Sir James once told me when the row about San Juan was on foot that he, in the event of a war, would muster for one item fifty thousand Indian riflemen at Victoria.<sup>139</sup> The most stupid thing I knew of a military officer high up was the inquiry of me by Col. Woody of the R. B. Engineers<sup>140</sup> whether the Americans could not be prevented from entering the valley of the Frazer by the roads of Fort Hope. I asked him how? "By filling the canon with trees." I stared at him. There to be sure was the educated Cockney. I fired three rounds from a Lancaster rifle with her Majesty's prize sargeant at the Colonel's quarters. We fired at a small bit of stick standing at 600 yards in the river, and he was easily badly beaten, and both of us fired with his own weapon, which I never saw until then. Sir Bigbie and others were present. The sergeant was a fine looking man who had taken his prize at Wimbledon,<sup>141</sup> but I thought his eyes, though fine, were too large for sharp and distant hitting.<sup>142</sup>

<sup>139</sup>One of Sir Douglas's pet ideas, whenever any trouble appeared, was the possibility of arming the Indians as auxiliaries. When the Council were discussing the protection of Vancouver Island during the Crimean War he proposed a similar scheme, but the other members opposed it so strongly that he dropped it.—F. W. H.

<sup>140</sup>This reference is unintelligible. Perhaps the name "Woody" may be intended for "Moody," and the "R. B. Engineers" for the "Royal Engineers." In that event, there is the further incongruity that Colonel Moody was not opposed to the entrance of Americans into the country, and also that there were no roads from Fort Hope to or towards the canyons of the Fraser, in 1859.—F. W. H.

<sup>141</sup>Wimbledon, Sherry, England, the former meeting place of the British Rifle Association, where representatives from all parts of the British Empire competed in rifle shooting.—W. S. L.

<sup>142</sup>Among the old settlers of the Colville Valley there is a former British soldier holding Wimbledon medals; this may be the identical man referred to by our narrator.—W. S. L.

Only vessels of second rate weight can get into the inner harbor of Victoria. The outer one of Esquimalt<sup>143</sup> is deep and commodious. Some line of battleships and frigates are always there. I was invited about the *Ganges*<sup>144</sup> once there. She was an 84 and to me who had spent my days away from the handiwork of man all my life, was a great curiosity every where I went, and I went to see all her secrets. I could see only one design, to kill all, her object to destroy, wonderful adjustment, flashing precision, ponderous power, order, music and majesty; and there she was at rest as easy as a duck on the upbearing water. The cabin was splendidly furnished and wine and biscuit were served at once for refreshments. The best thing I heard or saw at Victoria was her band in the summer evenings, rousing the shores and the seas with her masterly playing. These first rates have always a good band. She was clean and trim as a washed flint. She is one hundred yards in length<sup>145</sup> with a very stately contour, and I felt a little secret pride in seeing her, and thought after all that she was there or anywhere else to defend those that would defend her. After all man must be something of a tyrant to be great. Wealth and cunning are required to bring man's genius to perfection. War, war is the order of nature! Race upon race, fish upon fish, the sea upon the shore and the shore upon the sea. To do, is to undo; organized life would over-people the world. Yes rot it out, without this war of life on life. Yet no nation should be permitted by man to overgrow his good. The British Empire, Russian America and China are already too prolific with overgrown monsters. There is too much room there and the more they grow, the more they are insatiate. Strange, but our happiness is in destruction. A good appetite is to consume. Love is to consume, inventions to consume. Universal peace would never do. It would in the march of centuries eat up its own farrow, as the Scotch lady said to the sow.

I suppose all the language of the earth are spoken in this little town of sixteen thousand souls. While standing one day by the door of my old St. George I saw a bent, gray-headed, poor, old man plainly watching me at about sixty yards from me. He looked and tottered and yet looked toward me; he must know me surely. It was old

<sup>143</sup>Esquimalt, the naval station, three miles from Victoria.—F. W. H.

<sup>144</sup>Probably H. M. S. *Ganges* is referred to here. She was an 84-gun ship, the flag-ship of Rear Admiral Baynes, and was on the Pacific station, 1857-1860. The *Ganges* was the last sailing line-of-battle ship in active commission on foreign service. She was built in Bombay, after the model of the French man-of-war *Franklin*, captured at the Battle of the Nile in 1798, which was the most handsome and swiftest ship in the British navy.—F. W. H.

<sup>145</sup>If this vessel be the *Ganges*, our author has over-estimated her length. It should be 195 feet. A very full description of this vessel will be found in the *Victoria Gazette* under date of October 28, 1858.—F. W. H.



Gowdie,<sup>146</sup> the Colville blacksmith, that threw up his irons and left there to make his fortune in Hope; but she has totally jilted him and he is now living on the town, old, poor and despondent. He made us some fine ale and whiskey while at Colville, and once made me a superior Jews Harp, but his chief curse was the bottle. Poor man, glad to see me. I gave him two dollars and after an old quiet chat we parted to see or not to see each others face again. I wish I were as young as I was when I first saw him. The old Hebrew Sanhedrim once decided that life upon the whole was not worth living for, a terrible decision, yet who can say that it is not true.

San Juan is separated from this island by a strait of six miles in width. Other islands called Orcas Islands stud the course of the Gulf of Georgia as it streams down in its darkened eddies to end in the straits of San Juan De Fuca. All these channel islands are reefs of the main continent, and even this vast continent may be the oldest or youngest piece of Asia, or Asia of it, before some supreme effort of nature drove the Deep boiling down between them. The forces required to upheave the ridges of the Andes and Rocky Mountains and that of the Cascades would do it in a twinkling. A few years ago<sup>147</sup> at ten in the evening the vast continent shook from Victoria to Canada and from San Francisco to Chicago, as if the Eternal said, "Watch for I come as a thief in the night." Mount Rainier, the grandest of the Cascade upheavals, and in his perpetual Artic harness overlooking all the sounds and summits in sight of his, is seen from the skirts of this town. His snow wrapped brother, Mt. St. Helens, I saw burning thirty-six years ago. After all what can geologists and astronomers do with what they do not know? The liquid fire idea of the heart of the earth is contradicted by opposing scientists. The vague idea of the eage of man on the world, and of that world, are in the main mere guesses. If no vestige of man has been found beyond a certain period, there is no accounting for his absence beyond that. It is not to be supposed that vestiges of vast numbers of ages are to be found as more recent ones occur. Millions of years of inconceivable pressure and unknown change will not show vestiges as fresh as those of more recent periods. If the deep once covered all the land how dry, that now under the Deep where no recorded man ever enters or can enter to observe may have much older unrecorded signs

---

<sup>146</sup>James Goudie, who carried on for some years the trade of a blacksmith in Victoria, after abandoning the gold mining. He seems to have died prior to 1885, though the exact date has not yet been found.—F. W. H. Query: Was this the Goudie who built the "Goudie Mill"?—W. S. L.

<sup>147</sup>This earthquake occurred on December 14, 1872. It was particularly violent near Chelan Lake, and along the lower Spokane River; in the latter place several large crevices are said to have been made; the Reverend H. T. Cowley mentions having seen these in 1874.—W. S. L.



of man than is in the possession of the present dry land. Plato says that the entire continent of Atlantis was suddenly swallowed by the eastern Atlantic. If so its people with all vestiges of them are gone and no record even of their fancies. A past blank eternity overfrowns our ken with its fall, and the spirit of man that boasts of his immortality and of annihilating space in his instantaneous speed, is as a startled little deer on the top of his mountain when leaping only one foot nearer the morning star.

Some of the old Chiefs of the Columbia long before Moses beheld the burning bush were wont to climb Ranier, but called by the red man Taccoama,<sup>148</sup> and some of them took off their shoes before smoking. The last of these noted ones cost the United States six million, but he died in peace in his bullrush tent<sup>149</sup> five years ago. He was Jamaikan,<sup>150</sup> a fine well-formed and powerful Indian, standing five feet eleven in his moccasins; his hair twisted down over his shoulders of auburn color in its points, but as usual darker nearer the roots. His weight was about two hundred pounds, muscular and sinewy. The year before he died he slew the last of the Columbia Doctor Seers for failing his promised remedies.<sup>151</sup> Did the white man thus act there would be fewer quacks and butchers. His sagacious intellect clearly foresaw the tendencies of the red man's destiny, but the neighboring tribes would not heed his warning and he threw up the sponge of combat with Uncle Sam disgusted with his own races.

While enjoying a pipe and a Coaich (?) of wine with him years ago, he said that to pass five days and nights on the top of Mount

<sup>148</sup>Partisans in the controversy over the name here find another authority; our narrator was, however, impartial and gives the name Mount Rainier on a subsequent page.—W. S. L.

<sup>149</sup>In early days it was the custom of the Indians living in the interior of the Columbia River basin to gather bundles of tules or bullrushes and sew them into mats three feet or more in width and eight to ten feet long. These mats were spread over the tepee poles as a lodge covering. Pictures of Indian camps in the Spokane country in the early eighties show these bullrush coverings still in use.—W. S. L.

<sup>150</sup>In the Indian war of 1855-1858, which had its origin in the unwillingness of the Indians to give up their lands; Kam-aly-ah-kan or Kamliken, Head Chief of the Yakimas, was the leader in opposing the intrusions of the Americans. As early as 1853 he is said to have proposed war, and Major Alvord at the Dalles so reported to General Hitchcock, then in command on the Coast. As probably the ablest head of all the Saleesh tribes, he had great and deserved influence. He was a man of commanding personality. He planned to consolidate all the Saleesh tribes, west of the mountains, with those of the interior, and to make a concerted attack on the whites during the winter when, the Columbia being blocked with ice and the mountain passes barred by snow, the whites would be unable to send any aid to the interior. The impatience of Quachien, one of his chief lieutenants, thwarted the plan. After the defeat of the allied Indians by Colonel Wright in September, 1858, Kamliken shrewdly kept out of Wright's reach and for safety removed for a time to the Saleesh tribes of Montana. On his return he took up his abode on the Palouse River. See ante page 88 of the present volume of the Quarterly. In his prime he was the most able and influential Indian leader within the bounds of the State of Washington.—W. S. L.

<sup>151</sup>"The doctors are sometimes subjected to pretty rough treatment and occasionally lose their lives from assaults of relatives of persons of consequence who have died under their operations." Swan's Northwest Coast, p. 177.—W. S. L.

Ranier without food and drink was the severest feat of his life, and I have no doubt of it. In such a cold rarified atmosphere with also the ever active labor of the mind yearning to be initiated into more of that lights that blinds without seeing it. A woman is a virgin at twelve, a man at fifteen, and at that decimal number of odd snows, when decimals have no odds he mastered his thoughts and quiver and ascended the sublime and solemn Mt. Ranier,<sup>152</sup> how he felt I leave with himself, in the silence that speaks not. One thing that particularly impressed him was the pressure of some of those forward whirlwinds that anon like spirits at home caused that mountain to smother him with their frozen reception. He said that he was glad when the number of his initiating suns and nights had passed and he came down to speak again with man. In the Oregon war this savage made one of the boldest designs ever made by an American Indian, but the tribes not being of accord and treason in his own, he soon became disgusted and declined the prolongation of further war. He was a hospitable man and fond of fun and anecdote. His dress was invariably deer skin with fisher skin cap and a feather of the game eagle. He once sent me an offer of a hundred horses for seventy pounds of powder, but I declined acquiring wealth in that way.

---

<sup>152</sup>Schoolcraft gives an interesting account of these Indian fasts which is quoted by Swan; the latter (Northwest Coast, pp. 171-176) makes the following statement of the ordeals such as Kamiaken described: "When a young person wishes to go through the ordeal of the fast, he is usually some time preparing his mind for the event, and gradually accustoms himself to a reduction of diet preparatory to fasting. When he is fully ready he goes alone...taking nothing with him but his axe and a bowl of water... Then he proceeds to the top of...the mountain, and builds a fire. His duty is now to keep that fire burning constantly during the period of his fast, which lasts from three to seven days. During this time he neither sleeps nor eats, etc."—W. S. L.

## BOOK REVIEWS

---

*Religion, Theology and Morals..* By HARVEY W. SCOTT. (Cambridge: Printed at the Riverside Press. 1917. Two volumes, pp. xxiv+351; xvi+403.)

The compilation of these volumes was made by Leslie M. Scott, son of the author, who has manifested a high quality of filial devotion in his work. On the title page there appears after the name of Harvey W. Scott the legend—"Forty years editor-in-chief *Morning Oregonian* of Portland, Oregon." In reality that gives the reason for publishing these books.

The preface says: "The compiler of Mr. Scott's writings has selected for this book the general subject of Religion, Theology and Morals, because this branch of study was the editor's favorite one and occupied his mind more continuously for a longer time than any other. His essays, as early as 1865, show the activity of his mind in this study; the earliest of those reproduced in this book he wrote in 1875. Up to the last days of his editorial activity in April, 1910, he was writing on religion and theology and the affiliated subject of morals."

Mr. Scott had a large share in the making and writing of the history of the Pacific Northwest. These books, evidently published privately, form a monument to one portion of a great man's mental product.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

---

*Guide to Materials for American History in Russian Archives.* By FRANK A. GOLDER. (Washington, D. C.: Carnegie Institution of Washington. 1917. Pp. 177.)

The Department of Historical Research in the Carnegie Institution of Washington has been publishing a series of manuals of this kind to aid historical investigators. This particular manual is of interest to readers of this *Quarterly* for two reasons. The subject relates to Russian activity in the Northern Pacific regions and the work was done by Professor Frank A. Golder of the Washington State College at Pullman.

In an introductory note, Professor J. Franklin Jameson, Director of the Department of Research of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, says: "Very few students of American history have ever made any researches in the archives of Russia. The contribution which the Russian archives can make to that history is nearly confined to

two fields, that of the diplomatic relations between Russia and the United States, and that of the exploration of the North Pacific and the settlement of Russian America, now called Alaska. But those two fields are by no means of small importance in our history, and for them the archives of Petrograd and Moscow are replete with materials of the greatest, indeed of indispensable, value. Accordingly Professor Golder, familiar with the Russian language and with the portions of history involved, and author of a notable work upon Russian Expansion on the Pacific (Cleveland, 1914), was invited to proceed to Russia and to make those examinations of archives of which the following book is the result. His period of sojourn in Petrograd and Moscow embraced several months of the year 1914, from the beginning of March until November, five months immediately preceding the great war, and three months after its outbreak. The data presented in the volume should be understood to be of that year, though in some matters it has been possible to secure later information."

At the present time much interest is being awakened in Russia. Here in the Pacific Northwest great expansion is taking place in commerce with Russia. One additional item was the placing of an instructor in the Russian language in the University of Washington through the helpfulness of Mr. Samuel Hill. These are evidences that Mr. Golder's book will come into use during the next few years. Interest in history and its sources is sure to follow the closer commercial relations.

---

*Tsimshian Mythology.* By FRANZ BOAS. (Washington: Government Printing Office. 1916. Pp. 1037.)

This is the "accompanying paper" in the Thirty-first Annual Report of the Bureau of American Ethnology for 1909-1910. The first twenty-six pages of the large book are devoted to an administrative report and the balance of the volume is given over to this special study based on texts recorded by Henry W. Tate.

Doctor Boas says in his preface: "The collection here presented evidently contains the bulk of the important traditions of the Tsimshian." This large collection of materials is especially interesting to readers and students in the Pacific Northwest as the Indians studied are in British Columbia. The author says: "The Tsimshian, who belong to the northern group of tribes, inhabit the valleys of Nass and Skeena Rivers and the channels and islands southward as far as Milbank Sound. They are fishermen, who subsist partly on the salmon that ascend the rivers of the coast in great numbers; partly on deep-



sea fishery, which is prosecuted on the codfish and halibut banks off the coast. At the same time they hunt seals and sea lions, and use the whales that drift ashore. The people of the villages along the river courses and deep fiords of the mainland are also energetic hunters, who pursue particularly the mountain goat, but also the bear and the deer."

There are three full-page plates and twenty-four textual illustrations. The bibliography covers fifty-eight items, seventeen of which are from the writings of Doctor Boas, himself. The appendix includes an index, a glossary, list of Tsimshian proper names and place names, a summary of comparisons, and Bellabella and Nootka tales.

---

*A History of the United States.* By EDWARD CHANNING. Volume IV, Federalists and Republicans, 1789-1815. (New York: The Macmillan Company. 1917. Pp. 575. \$2.75.)

The present volume by Prof. Channing is similar in style to the preceding volumes and continues the narrative from the organization of the new government under Washington down to the close of the War of 1812. In taking up a volume that covers a field traversed by McMaster, Schouler and in part by Henry Adams one wonders whether he is to find a new treatment of old material, or new material. Prof. Channing contributes both. Good use has been made of the newspapers and the footnotes and notes at the close of each chapter form a practically complete bibliography of the period. The chapters on High Finance 1789-1800, and The Revolution of 1800, which was not a revolution, are especially interesting. The volume is an excellent example of the very highest historical scholarship.

---

*Librarian's Fifth Biennial Report.* By JOHN HAILEY. (Boise: Historical Society of Idaho. 1916. Pp. 54.)

The report very naturally deals with finance and with accessions to the library and museum of the society. These show a wholesome and growing condition.

One article records business changes in Boise. A list is published of men who had entered business there during the sixties and who have passed away in later years. A much shorter list gives the names of such old-timers who are still living.

Pages 29 to 54 are used to record the "Early Reminiscences of 'Uncle' Tom Beall of Lewiston, Idaho." This old pioneer came to the Pacific Coast in 1853 and to Walla Walla in 1857. He was with

Colonel E. J. Steptoe in the Indian battle near Rosalia, which has been commemorated in the naming of Steptoe Butte. The old man recounts the details of that battle and tells also about a number of less dramatic happenings.

---

*The Mexican War Diary of George B. McClellan.* Edited by WILLIAM STARR MYERS, PH. D., Assistant Professor of History and Politics, Princeton University. (Princeton: Princeton University Press. 1917. Pp. 97. \$1.00 net.)

McClellan graduated from West Point in the summer of 1846 and in September left for General Taylor's Army in Mexico as a brevet second lieutenant of engineers and the diary begins with his leaving West Point and continues *The Narrative of McClellan's Experiences Through The Battle of Cerro Gordo in 1847*. The youthful soldier, but not yet twenty years of age, gives us a picture of himself as a happy-go-lucky, joyous, carefree individual; at times, ill at ease, restless, critical and faultfinding.

The book adds nothing to our knowledge of the war, but it does present some interesting pictures of the deficiencies of the volunteer system and the "political" generals who had charge of them. Critical notes of value are supplied by the editor, many of them from *The Life and Letters of General Meads*. The book is well worth reading.

---

*Touring Afoot.* By C. P. FORDYCE. (New York: Outing Publishing Company. 1916. Pp. 167. 80 cents, postage 5 cents extra.)

The author, Dr. C. P. Fordyce, is well known among out-of-doors people in the Pacific Northwest. He has prepared this book from experience in the open. The book is Number 52 in the series known as *Outing Handbooks*.

---

*Myths and Legends of British North America.* By KATHARINE B. JUDSON. (Chicago: A. C. McClurg & Co. 1917. Pp. 211. \$1.50.)

This is the sixth volume in the series of myths and legends of American Indians compiled by Miss Judson. The other five relate to the Mississippi Valley and the Great Lakes, the Great Plains, Alaska, the Pacific Northwest, California and the Old Southwest. Miss Judson frankly acknowledge that she uses the publications of the Bureau of American Ethnology, the Jesup North Pacific Expedition, the

American Museum of Natural History and the Canadian Bureau of Mines.

In the preface to this volume she says: "As in all other volumes of this series, only the quaint, the pure, and the beautiful, has been taken from the tales of the Indians. Anyone wishing pure ethnology, good and bad together, would do better to go to ethnological reports." These stories are prepared for young readers. The book is well illustrated.

---

*Alaska, the Great Country.* By ELLA HIGGINSON. (New York: The Macmillan Company. 1917. Pp. xii+588. \$2.50.)

Mrs. Higginson's well-known book has been given a new edition unchanged except for the addition of a chapter at the end of the book, bringing the information about remarkable recent developments "along the lines of commercial, mining, agricultural, and government development" down to date.

The book is descriptive of the wonders and beauties of the country as well as of its marvellous material wealth. It is beautifully illustrated. As in the original edition, the dedicatory page reads: "To Mr. and Mrs. Henry Elliott Holmes."

---

*Washington State Society, Sons of the American Revolution, Register.* (Seattle: The Society. 1917. Pp. 216.)

The newly issued volume of the Washington Society of the Sons of the American Revolution follows the traditional form of the Registers of State Societies. Information is given in regard to the State Society and the several chapters in the State of Washington. The roll of active members in the State comprises about one-half of the volume.

A special feature is the list of Revolutionary Reference Books compiled by State Librarian J. M. Hitt. This check-list was prepared with the cooperation of the State Library and the State University Library and the public libraries of Seattle, Spokane and Tacoma and locates the revolutionary rosters to be found in each of these libraries.

---

*The History of the Forty-ninth Parallel Survey West of the Rocky Mountains.* By OTTO KLOTZ. (New York: American Geographical Society. 1917. Pp. 382 to 387.)

The pamphlet of six pages reprinted from The Geographical Review for May, 1917, opens as follows: "The object of this paper

is to tell the—one may almost say—romantic story of the survey in 1857-61 of the boundary between the United States and Canada along the forty-ninth parallel west of the summit of the Rocky Mountains and to relate how the final report, which had been lost until that time, was found in July, 1898."

The story, though briefly told, is well authenticated with citations and a sketch map adds to its value. It is one of the fugitive little items which collectors of Northwest Americana will prize in the future.

---

*Proposal to Change the Name of Mount Rainier.* By CHARLES TALLMADGE CONOVER, VICTOR J. FARRAR and Others. (Seattle: Privately published. 1917. Pp. 58.)

*The Mountain.* By JUSTICE TO THE MOUNTAIN COMMITTEE. (Tacoma: The Committee. 1917. Pp. 24. 50 cents.)

Here we have the two pamphlets or briefs submitted to the United States Geographic Board at the open hearing in Washington City on May 2, 1917.

The Washington State Legislature by joint memorial had asked that such a hearing be given. The above two pamphlets represent the principal testimony submitted, though much oral testimony was offered at the same time. The pamphlet entitled "The Mountain" presents the Tacoma side of the case and puts forth every possible argument against continuing the name of Mount Rainier and makes a strong plea to substitute the supposed Indian name Tacoma. Indian evidence is offered in abundance and a rather extensive bibliography is added under the title, "Authorities Consulted." The pamphlet ends with a reproduction of a pamphlet issued by Hon. James Wickersham in 1893. This was a paper read by Judge Wickersham before the Tacoma Academy of Science under the title of "Is It 'Mt. Tacoma' or 'Rainier'? What Do History and Tradition Say?"

The other side, as represented by pamphlet first cited, opposed the change of name from Mount Rainier. The original discovery and naming of the mountain by Captain George Vancouver in 1792 is established by accurate citations and much evidence is given to show the solid foundation of this fact. The general and continued use of that name is shown. The validity of Tacoma as the real Indian name is attacked and it is shown that there were several Indian names for the mountain. It is a stronger and more logical brief than the other. It would be stronger if the same identical evidence were not repeated in the different portions of the pamphlet.

This pamphlet is also marred by an absurd blunder on page 21,



where General Kautz is credited with having made the first ascent of Mount Rainier in 1857. That blunder would never be made by anyone who had read General Kautz's narrative and who had himself made the ascent of Mount Rainier or of any other snow mountain for that matter. The narrative carries its own denial. No point is gained by this false statement and the compilers of the pamphlet having misplaced the credit for the first ascent, speak of the real first ascent by General Hazard Stevens (page 25) as "his ascent in 1870."

Under the caption "The Decision," Mr. Conover reproduces a letter he received from C. S. Sloane, Secretary of the United States Geographic Board, under the date, May 28, 1917, as follows:

"In compliance with the petition expressed in Senate Joint Memorial, No. 14, of the Legislature of the State of Washington, the United States Geographic Board held a public meeting on May 2, 1917, to receive evidence and hear arguments for and against changing the name of Mt. Rainier in the State of Washington.

"At a special meeting held May 11, the evidence presented on May 2, together with other data collected, were carefully considered, and after discussion, the United States Geographic Board declined to reconsider its former action establishing the name Rainier for the mountain.

"The name Mount Rainier, given by Vancouver in 1792, fixed by a century of world usage, was confirmed by action of the United States Board on Geographic Names in 1890.

"For a hundred years the name of Mount Rainier has been used wherever the mountain has been mentioned in the histories, geographies, books on travel and exploration, scientific publications, encyclopedias, dictionaries, and atlases of many nations—by the United States, Canada, England, France, Germany, Holland, Italy, Russia, Spain, and even Arabia. In recent years a few dictionaries and encyclopedias have added the word Tacoma, usually in parenthesis, following the name Mount Rainier, but general usage is overwhelmingly in favor of Rainier.

"The mountain is within a national park and Congress has decided the name of the park to be Mount Rainier National Park. The mountain is also located in a forest reserve, known as the Rainier National Forest. It would appear, therefore, that the name Rainier is well established, both by an executive order and by act of Congress.

"No geographic feature in any part of the world can claim a name more firmly fixed by right of discovery, by priority, and by universal usage for more than a century. So far as known, no attempt has ever

been made by any people in any part of the world to change a name so firmly established."

---

## Other Books Received

- AMERICAN ANTIQUARIAN SOCIETY. *Proceedings, October, 1916.* (Worcester, The Society, 1916. Pp. 203-472.)
- CONNECTICUT STATE SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI. *Papers, 1783-1807.* (Hartford: Connecticut Historical Society. 1916.)
- CONNECTICUT STATE SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI. *Records, 1783-1804.* (Hartford: Connecticut Historical Society. 1916.)
- CONNECTICUT HISTORICAL SOCIETY. *Collections, Volume 16. The Wolcott Papers, 1750-1754.* (Hartford: The Society. 1916. Pp. 557.)
- CONNOR, R. D. W., Compiler. *North Carolina Manual issued by the North Carolina Historical Commission.* (Raleigh: State Printer. 1917. Pp. 452.)
- DUNN, WILLIAM EDWARD. *Spanish and French Rivalry in the Gulf Region of the United States, 1678-1702.* (Austin: University of Texas, Studies in History, No. 1. 1917. Pp. 238.)
- LANCASTER COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY. *Survey of the Philadelphia and Lancaster Turnpike Road.* (Lancaster, Pa.: The Society. Pp. from 265 to 342 from Vol. XX. 25 cents.)
- MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION. *Fourth Annual Report, 1916.* (Lansing: The Commission. 1917. Pp. 34.)
- MINNESOTA HISTORICAL SOCIETY. *Nineteenth Biennial Report, 1915-1916.* (St. Paul: The Society. 1917. Pp. 88.)
- NEW JERSEY ARCHIVES, SECOND SERIES, No. 5. *Newspaper extracts relating to New Jersey, October, 1780, to July, 1872.* (Trenton: State Gazette Publishing Company. 1917. Pp. 490.)
- SKELTON, O. D. *The Language Issue in Canada.* (Kingston, Ontario: Queen's University. 1917. Pp. 40.)
- WEYFORTH, WILLIAM O. *The Organization of Labor.* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press. 1917. Pp. 277.)
- YOUNG, L. E. *Mine Taxation in the United States.* University of Illinois Studies in the Social Sciences, Volume 5, Number 4. (Urbana: University of Illinois. 1916. Pp. 274. \$1.50.)

## NEWS DEPARTMENT

---

### *The Associates of Eighty-Nine*

This new organization of the men and women who were living in Seattle at the time of the great fire held its first "family party" on the anniversary of the fire—June 6. All the speakers had had some duty to perform during or immediately after the fire. Josiah Collins, chief of the volunteer fire department in 1889, was toastmaster. Clark Davis gave the invocation. Vivian M. Carcock, historian of the new organization, gave an address beautifully illustrated with stereopticon views on "The Seattle Fire." The rest of the programme was as follows: "City Administration of '89," by Hon. Samuel H. Piles; "Guarding the Burned District," by Major E. S. Ingraham; "The Governor's Proclamation," by Hon. Miles C. Moore; "Seattle Before the Fire," by Professor Edmond S. Meany; "The Volunteer Fire Department," by Gardner Kollogg; "June 6th, 1889—Seattle's Transition Day," by George F. Cotterill; "The Press of '89," by J. B. Nelson; "The Good Little Fairy," by Mrs. J. T. Handsaker; "Physical Changes Made Possible by the Fire," by R. H. Thomson; "The Departed Eighty-niners," by Hon. C. H. Hanford.

During the program there was a chorus of shouts and a gang of newsboys entered to distribute "extras," consisting of photographic facsimiles of the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* issued on the morning after the fire. It is needless to say that these were saved as souvenirs of the occasion. Another souvenir was the reproduction of Mayor Robert Moran's proclamation of June 6, 1889.

---

### *Washington Pioneers*

The Pioneer Association of the State of Washington held its thirty-fourth annual meeting and reunion at its hall in Seattle on June 4 and 5, 1917. On the first day the reports of officers were received and other business was transacted, closing with the election of the following officers for the ensuing year: President, Edmond S. Meany; Vice President, Henry C. Comegys of Snohomish; Chaplain, Rev. A. Atwood; Secretary, Major W. V. Rinehart; Treasurer, William M. Calhoun; Trustees, James McCombs, M. R. Maddocks, Leander Miller, W. H. Pumphrey and Frank H. Winslow.

On the second day the principal address was given by General Hazard Stevens on "Pioneers and Patriotism." The audience felt that

the topic was peculiarly appropriate for the day on which the young men of the nation were registering for service under their country's call.

Delegates were present and gave greetings from their organizations to the State Association as follows: Donald McInnes, President of the Clallam County Pioneer Association; W. F. Oliver, President of the Stillaguamish Valley Association of Washington Pioneers; Mrs. Charles E. Hill, delegate of the Pierce County Pioneer Association; H. M. Williams, President, and Lillie L. Crawford, Secretary, Kitsap County Pioneer Association; David Longmire, President of the Yakima Pioneers' Association. Letters were received from Mrs. Charles L. Denny, delegate from the Seattle Historical Society, and from C. E. Ivey, Secretary of the Lincoln and Adams County Pioneer and Historical Association. It is expected that this feature of the annual meeting will increase in importance and interest as the years go on.

Mrs. Frances Goin presented the Association with a pen drawing of the Schooner *Exact*, which brought the colony to Alki Point on November 13, 1851, from which has grown the city of Seattle. The drawing was the last work of her father, John S. Alexander, who was a passenger on the *Exact*, but continued on to Olympia instead of landing at Alki. Mr. Alexander attended last year's reunion, though he passed over the "Great Divide" before this year's meeting. For these reasons the picture has a particular interest for the pioneers.

---

#### *History in Railroad Literature*

Kenneth C. Kerr, editor of *Railway and Marine News* of Seattle, has collected all available folders and pamphlets issued by American railway companies in which the subject of history is treated. As is well known, the railway companies use the finest printing and illustrative material. Historic scenes and localities are often beautifully described and illustrated.

From these materials, Mr. Kerr has been preparing a series of articles for his magazine under the caption, "American History as Told in Transportation Literature." He is now presenting the entire collection of original pamphlets and folders to the University of Washington library.

---

#### *National Board for Historical Service*

Soon after the United States had entered the war, the Carnegie Institution of Washington, through its Department of Historical Research, invited a score of well known students of history to assemble



at Washington City to consider certain duties of the hour. Out of this meeting grew a temporary organization called "National Board for Historical Service." James T. Shotwell is chairman; Charles H. Hull, vice chairman; Waldo G. Leland, secretary-treasurer; the others on the board are Victor S. Clark, Robert D. W. Connor, Carl Russell Fish, Charles D. Hazen, Baillard Hunt and Frederick J. Turner.

They are representative men in the field of history. The only object in view by this prompt action is to prepare for any service possible for the historians to render in the crisis of war.

---

### *Launching the Sanwan*

Many promoters were included in the more than four hundred guests of Mr. Robert Moran, who travelled on his chartered steamer *Indianapolis* to his beautiful home at Rosario on Orcas Island to witness the launching of his power yacht *Sanwan*. The enjoyment of the occasion was not lessened by the knowledge of the fact that Mr. Moran had tendered the new boat to the nation for service in the war.

# The Washington Historical Quarterly

## Contributing Editors

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, Seattle.	W. D. LYMAN, Walla Walla.
T. C. ELLIOTT, Walla Walla.	EDWARD McMAHON, Seattle.
FRANK A. GOLDER, Pullman.	O. B. SPERLIN, Tacoma.
WILLIAM S. LEWIS, Spokane.	HAZARD STEVENS, Olympia.
F. W. HOWAY, New Westminster, B. C.	

Managing Editor  
EDMOND S. MEANY

Business Manager  
CHARLES W. SMITH

VOL. VIII. NO. 4

OCTOBER, 1917

*ISSUED QUARTERLY*

## Contents

R. D. GWYDIR.....	A Record of the San Poll Indians.....	243
OSCAR CANFIELD .....	Pioneer Reminiscences .....	251
W. B. SEYMORE.....	Port Orchard Fifty Years Ago.....	257
T. C. ELLIOTT.....	David Thompson's Journeys in the Spokane Country .....	261
EDMOND S. MEANY.....	Washington Geographic Names .....	265
DOCUMENT—	Attitude of the Hudson's Bay Company During the Indian War of 1855-1856. Edited by Clarence B. Bagley.....	291
BOOK REVIEWS .....		308
INDEX TO VOLUME VIII. ....		312

THE WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY  
STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

UNIVERSITY STATION  
SEATTLE, WASHINGTON

# The Washington University State Historical Society

---

## Officers and Board of Trustees:

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY, President

JUDGE JOHN P. HOYT, Vice President

JUDGE ROGER S. GREENE, Treasurer

PROFESSOR EDMOND S. MEANY, Secretary

JUDGE CORNELIUS H. HANFORD

JUDGE THOMAS BURKE

SAMUEL HILL

## The Washington Historical Quarterly

---

### A RECORD OF THE SAN POIL INDIANS\*

It was several years after the close of the Nez Perce War that the Government concluded to locate Chief Joseph's band of Nez Perce Indians permanently on the Colville Indian reservation, in the neighborhood of Nespelem, where they had been placed temporarily after their surrender at the close of the Nez Perce War.

When the commissioner of Indian affairs informed me of the intentions of the Government, I wrote informing him that the land in question was claimed by the San Poil Indians, who would be bitterly opposed to any action on the part of the Government in locating Chief Joseph's Nez Percés on their lands permanently. I was satisfied that the Government would pay but little attention to the claims of the San Poils to the ownership of the lands in question. I was therefore somewhat prepared for trouble ahead when in the summer of 1888 I received instructions from the commissioner of Indian affairs for me to request from the commanding officer at Fort Spokane a detail of troops to accompany me and to proceed immediately to carry out my instructions.

When I made my request to Major Kent, commanding Fort Spokane, for a detail of troops, I explained to him that I anticipated trouble with Skolaskin, chief of the San Poil Indians, who had been telling his people what God and he would do if the Great Father of the whites tried to give their land to Joseph's people. Skolaskin was good for much and serious consideration. He was shrewd, cunning and the power he had over his people was almost absolute, and obtained by a curious chain of circumstances.

The chief of the tribe dying and their being no hereditary successor, a council of the tribe was called to elect a chief. Skolaskin was

---

\*Major R. D. Gwydir, of Spokane, was United States Indian Agent on the Colville Reservation from 1887 to 1890, during which time Chief Joseph's band of Nez Percés was placed there. His article appeared in the Spokane Spokesman-Review for July 8, 1917. The author sends it with additional material for publication in the Washington Historical Quarterly.—Editor.



one of the many aspirants for the position, but he, having been a cripple from birth (one of his legs being much shorter than the other, so much so that he was compelled to use a heavy staff when walking), his candidacy did not appeal, or satisfy the warriors, who wanted a strong, athletic man for chief, a man who could lead them and to whom they could look up, not a cripple who could not walk. Skolas-kin, hearing of their talk from some of his followers, became angry and, mounting his pony, rode to where the warriors were assembled, and shaking his fist at them exclaimed:

"Before another sun you will be sorry that you did not make me your chief.

"For," he continued, "God sent me here to be your chief."

His remarks were met with shouts of derision by the assembled braves, some asking him if his medicine was so strong why he didn't straighten his crooked leg. He answered their jibes by saying that when he was born "God cut him up in little pieces," and "when he put him together again one of his legs was bent under the other, but that God would straighten it when he was ready to do so, and, raising his voice, he shouted that "before another day has passed God will punish you for making sport of his work."

He then rode away amidst jeers and laughter. That night came an earthquake that shook the entire country and worked on the fears of the frightened and superstitious Indians, who, remembering Skolaskin's prophecy of the previous day, thought it was the vengeance of their God upon them for ridiculing his prophet, for that is what they now considered Skolaskin to be. As soon as day broke, after a night of terror, they hastened to the teepee of Skolaskin. As they approached they could see Skolaskin seated on a bearskin at the entrance. One by one they hailed him "Illunigum Skolaskin!" (Chief Skolaskin).

He paid no attention to their salutations until the entire tribe was before him. Then, selecting the member of the tribe who owned the greatest number of horses, said to him:

"Am I your chief?" The other answered immediately that he was.

"How many kuitans [horses] have you?" was the next question. "One hundred," was the answer. "Then, if I am your chief bring me twenty-five of them," said Skolaskin.

This was done immediately. Another was called with the same result, and so it kept on until the entire tribe had contributed and before the sun had reached the meridian Skolaskin was not only the chief but the wealthiest member of the tribe, and from that time on

as chief, prophet and medicine man, his power was almost absolute among his people.

Besides being chief, Skolaskin continued to claim the rights and powers of a prophet. He insisted that he held direct and almost daily communication with God, whom he said directed all his actions, and on one occasion, nearly forty years ago, informed the tribe that God had told him to prepare for a flood that was soon to come, and which would cover the earth and destroy all wicked people, and directed him to build a big boat that his people might be saved when the wicked were destroyed. Immediately the men and women of the tribe began preparing timbers for the ark, but after a great number were made ready and piled at White Stone, one of the principal villages of the tribe (these timbers were still there a few years ago), Skolaskin told them that God had changed His mind and would not destroy mankind at present, so the timbers for the ark were never put together.

The reader can see what power this cunning savage had over his people. He was somewhat of a Mormon as concerned himself, taking a new wife every few months as "God directed him to do." Skolaskin was always a thorn in the flesh to the Indian agent, as he always opposed the management of the Indians by the Government.

Skolaskin held a bitter enmity against Chief Joseph and his people, as well as against Moses, chief of the Columbia Indians, who was a warm friend to Chief Joseph. Moses and his tribe since located at Nespelem, the Government having built a mill and school for his people at that point. Moses knew of the hatred that Skolaskin had for him and naturally wanted Joseph as a neighbor and friend on whom he could depend if the San Poils should at any time start hostilities, for Joseph's warriors had the reputation of being good fighters.

The Major, taking the same view of the situation, detailed two companies of infantry and a troop of cavalry to accompany and assist us in locating the Indians on their allotments. The distance from Fort Spokane to Nespelem by the Idaho trail was about seventy miles, but the route the troops were compelled to take was twice that distance, as they had to cross the Columbia River at "Wild Goose Bill's" ferry, and build a road from there the greater portion of the way to Nespelem.

When the troops left Fort Spokane it was thought that they were going on their summer outing or practice. I remained at the agency until an Indian runner brought the information that the troops had crossed the river the day previous, and then, accompanied by my interpreter and Indian farmer, I crossed the Columbia above the mouth

of the Spokane River, in a canoe, swimming our horses. We made camp for the night in the neighborhood of one of the San Poil Indian villages and the headquarters of Chief Skolaskin.

Knowing of our arrival he sent a messenger to request me to be present at a council of his people to be held that evening. Knowing what absolute power he had over his people and how bitterly he opposed the locating of the Nez Perces on the lands claimed by the San Poils, I was very anxious to hear what he would have to say.

After our horses had been picketed for the night, with my two companions I proceeded to the council, which was held in a crater-like enclosure, capable of holding 2,000 people. It was almost surrounded by a solid wall of stone and was well lighted by two fires of resinous wood, attended to and kept burning brightly by the old squaws. Excepting on a platform built against the wall at one end of the enclosure, there were no seats. The rough seats and the platform were covered with skins of the bear, cougar, lynx, wolf and beaver. Never had I seen so numerous and great variety of wild animal pelts at one time.

Skolaskin, chief, prophet and medicine man of the San Poils, occupied a raised seat on the platform. On each side of him were his two principal men. In front of the platform was a band of picked warriors, to the number of fifty, decked out in all their barbaric bravery, war bonnets, beaded and silk-worked suits of buckskin, in fact, all the paraphernalia belonging to a well-dressed warrior. It was certainly a formidable looking band of warriors.

Giving me a seat alongside of his latest and favorite squaw, and seating my companions near me, he wasted no time in preliminaries, but immediately launched into a violent attack on the Government for wanting to place Joseph's band on the land of the San Poils.

This land, he said, was the home of the San Poils from the beginning, and should be to the end, when all the country from there to the rising sun was a big sea.

"When God made dry land," he chanted, sonorously, "when there was water, it was our land, and here our forefathers hunted the cougar, bear and deer, ages and ages before the white-faced race was known. Our medicine men prophesied to our forefathers of the coming of a new race with white faces like the snow, and warned us never to injure them, but to help them and be their friends. The white man of to-day is the race our medicine men prophesied were to come, and we have lived up to their advice, and have always been friends to the whites, and our boast that a white man's blood has never been shed by a San Poil is true.

"Then why should the white race, whom we have always befriended when they were few and we were many, now that they are strong and numerous, take our land from us and give it to our enemies? To a people who have made war against the Great White Father of the whites, who have murdered the white settlers and their families, burned their houses and stole their cattle, and after fighting two or three battles with the soldiers of the Great Father, lost their heart and surrendered. And the great chief, instead of punishing them for being bad, took care of them and placed them on the lands of San Poils—only for a short time, as the Indian agent told us to protect them from the angry settlers; and from that time to the present they have become fat, lazy and good-for-nothing. And now the Government wants to give them our lands."

"I would ask the Indian agent who is present if it is right for the Great Father to take the land of the San Poils, who have always been industrious and self-supporting, who have never asked or taken anything from the Government, and at all times have been friendly to the whites, and give it to a people like Joseph's band of Nez Perces? If the agent would answer as his heart tells him, he would say that the great father was doing wrong, but he will not speak his straight mind. He will say, 'My chief orders and I obey.'

"But I say the San Poils will not obey. They will not see their country, the country they have inherited and lived in since the coming of man, the country that their children will inherit after them, be taken from them without making a struggle for the future welfare of their children.

"The cougar, the wolf and the bear will fight for their young, and why not the Indian? Does he care less for his offspring than the wild beast does for its young?"

As he finished he sank into his seat apparently exhausted. The fierce expression on the countenance of his hearers, and the simultaneous expression of the Indian words, "Onah, onah sha" (yes, we understand), convinced me that his talk was well received and met with their approval.

Waiting until quiet was restored, and putting on an appearance of ease that I did not altogether feel, I arose and addressed the assembled Indians. I said to them that, while their chief had made a strong talk, that a great part of it was foolish and childish. That no race or tribe of people could be allowed to hold large territories of land without putting them to some use that would be of benefit to them as well as others. That it was true, before the coming of the white man, the Indians claimed large tracts of land which they held



in its wild state for hunting grounds, which supplied them game to live upon and skins for clothing, as the Indians killed game as their needs demanded, game being plentiful, but with the coming of the white race there came a great change. Game was hunted for the skins, the carcasses left for the wolves, and became more scarce every year, and the Indians, who depended on them for their existence, became sufferers and hunger and disease swept them off by thousands. Wagons and roads took the place of the pack horse and trails. Railroads were built and the white race began to pour into the country, establishing their ways and customs.

"I say to you, they have come to stay," I told them, "and the sooner you San Poils fall into line the sooner your conditions will be bettered. Some of the chiefs on this reservation, looking to the welfare of their people, have taken the advice of the Great Father, and thir people are protected and cared for, for the white man's laws reward or punish all alike.

"Whistelposum, chief of the Spokanes; Tonasket, chief of the Okanogans, and Moses, chief of the Columbias, have taken this advice and their people have mills and schools, and are taken care of by the Government until such time as they will be able to care for themselves, while you San Poils, who claim ownership to all this land, and who persist in refusing to listen to the Great Father, or take his advice, will be treated like disobedient children, who refuse to obey their fathers, and be punished according to your disobedience. When your Chief, who should talk words of wisdom to you, says that you will oppose the will of the Great Father, he talks foolish. As well might a few trees on the mountain try to stop the avalanche as for you to attempt to oppose the will of the Great Father."

From the expression on their faces I could see that my remarks were not well received by my hearers, so I drew them to a close, and was satisfied after what I had seen and heard, that Skolaskin intended, by force if necessary, to oppose the locating of the Nez Perces on the lands the Government gave them. I was also satisfied that as yet they had no intimation as to the movement of the troops.

I was not surprised greatly the next morning, when I started on my way to Nespelem, to find Skolaskin and twenty of his warriors following me. When we arrived at Whitestone, another of his villages, we were joined by about as many more; at San Poil another bunch joined us, and by the time we arrived at Nespelem, late in the evening, there must have been nearly two hundred of Skolaskin's to find that the troops had not yet arrived, and the agency farmer knew nothing of their movements or present location. After sending

a couple of runners with a letter to the commanding officer of the troops, explaining the situation, and requesting him to make all haste, I instructed my interpreter to go among the Indians and learn the feelings of the different tribes.

The Indians held two councils during the night, one composed of Joseph's and Moses' people, and one of the San Poils, and early the following day sent a messenger to request me to have a pow-wow immediately. I answered that I would have a talk, but was not yet ready. It was almost noon when my interpreter informed me that the Indians were getting impatient, and were saying that the agent was afraid (and I sure was), as to the windup. If the two factions started a fight the finish would be like the fight of the Kilkenny cats, nothing left but head dresses.

I immediately called the council at the Government mill. Standing in the doorway I directed where each band should be placed, so that when they were all in the places assigned them Chief Joseph and the Nez Percés on my right, Chief Moses and his people on my left, and Chief Skolaskin and the San Poils in front of me, I had forbidden them to carry arms to the council and there were none visible, but if hostilities had started I believe there would have been plenty visible in short order.

When quiet was restored I stated to them that my object in coming to Nespelem at that time was to notify the Indians that Joseph and his people were to be given lands, and located permanently upon the reservation by order of the great father, in Washington. Immediately there was an uproar, Joseph's and Moses' people shouting "Orah" (Yes) and Skolaskin's people shouting "Tah" (No).

When quiet had been partially restored Skolaskin was on his feet denying the right of the Great Father to give away land that did not belong to him; that the land he wanted to give to Joseph's people was the land of the San Poils, and that the Great Father was a thief when he gave their lands to murderers like Moses and Joseph.

I stopped him at this point and said to him that he must cease that manner of talk and if he persisted in abusing the Great Father that I would stop his talk entirely. I couldn't see my way clear to do it if he persisted, but the bluff worked and the rest of his harangue was a bitter denunciation against Chief Moses as a coward, liar and murderer, but had little to say about Joseph and his people.

When he concluded Chief Moses arose, using his usual expression on such occasions, "Uika Moses" (I am Moses) began his talk. He pointed out to his hearers how he had taken the advice of the Great Father and by so doing had helped his people, who now had lands,

mills and a school, and horses and cattle. At one time, he stated, he was an enemy of the whites, but that was when he was as ignorant as a child and did not understand the ways of the Great Chief and the good he was doing for his Indian children, but he could see it now and his friend Joseph and his people could now see it as he and his people saw it and would always obey and do "as the great father wished them to do."

Continuing, he said that he was glad that his people were not ruled like the San Poils, whose chief was a dreamer, who could not make a talk without frothing at the mouth like a dog and who in his opinion was not as good as a dog. At this point the San Poils became wild, but without orders from Chief Skolaskin, who sat as stolid and impassive as a stone image, could not make a movement.

Seeing how critical the situation was I stopped further talk from Moses, for it only needed a word from Skolaskin to start the fireworks, and I believed that he was debating in his own mind whether or not to give it. If anything started I would be held to blame by the Indian department for not using proper precaution and I would be the goat, for the department would have to have one.

The reader may imagine my feelings at the situation, but at that moment I heard the bugle call of the cavalry. The troops had arrived and not a minute too soon.

Ordering the Indians to keep their places I went to the door as Lieutenant Hoppin rode up with the advance guard. In a few words I told him the situation. He immediately gave orders to his men to dismount and picket their horses and forming these in front of the entrance to the mill, gave orders to load and stand at ease. A portion of the Indians could see what was being done, but all of them could hear the military click as breech of the carbine was closed. The Lieutenant and I then entered the mill, when I closed the pow-wow for the time, the main body of the troops having arrived. The crisis was passed and wily Skolaskin perceived in an instant that he had been outgeneraled, and, without delay left for home, accompanied by his San Poils. Without further trouble Joseph and his band of Nez Percés were located on the land the Government gave them and have resided there to the present time.

R. D. GWYDIR.

## OSCAR CANFIELD'S PIONEER REMINISCENCES\*

I was born in Mercer County, Pennsylvania, on March 8, 1838, and am now in my seventy-ninth year. My father was William D. Canfield and my mother Sarah Ann Lee from Arlington, Bennington County, Vermont. The family moved to Iowa in 1842 and in the spring of 1847 started for Oregon, and arrived at the Whitman Mission that fall. Father concluded to settle there and was engaged as a blacksmith by the missionaries. There were five children then in the family: Ellen, aged sixteen years, who died in California in 1858; myself (Oscar), aged ten years; Clara, aged seven, who died at Sebastopol, California, in 1914; Sylvia Ann, aged five, who died at Blucher, California, in 1854; and baby brother Albert, who died on the Spokane prairie in 1879.

There is little that I can add at this late day to the oft-told story of the Whitman tragedy, though these events of nearly seventy years ago made such an impression on my mind as a boy of ten, that I can recall them vividly. It may be interesting to know the manner in which we first met the half-breed, Joe Lewis, who participated in the massacre and who shot Frank Seger.

At Fort Hall a bunch of trappers came into our camp looking for this man, Joe Lewis, saying that they wanted him for horse stealing, and that they would hang him when found. After they had gone away Lewis, who had hid in the willows close to our camp, crept out from his hiding-place and camp into our camp. He protested that he had not stolen any horses and said that the trappers had just gotten down on him, and had accused him on account of their dislike for him. He said that he wanted to go to Oregon with us and pleaded with the leaders of the party to permit him to accompany them. Winslow, one of our teamsters, was sick, and father asked Lewis if he could drive an ox-team. Lewis said he could, and he was accordingly taken into our party and came through with us from Fort Hall to the Whitman Mission.

At the time of the massacre, everyone about the Mission was busy. Sister Ellen was in the schoolroom; mother and the rest of us children were in the blacksmith shop. We had then been at the Mission about three weeks, living in our wagons and cooking in the blacksmith shop until suitable quarters could be prepared for us.

---

\*Oscar Canfield of Clarkston, Washington, a pioneer and one of the few survivors of the Whitman massacre, related these reminiscences to William S. Lewis, Corresponding Secretary of the Spokane Historical Society, who has forwarded the article to the Quarterly.



Father, Jacob Hoffman and Nathan Kimball were butchering a beef; Isaac Gill [iland], the tailor, was sewing; Peter Hall was at the flour mill; and Mr. Saunders was teaching the school.

The massacre occurred about 2 o'clock in the afternoon—a short time after noon. I was outside the blacksmith shop watching the men at the butchering just before the shooting commenced. I had been sick with camp fever and father said, "You had better go back into the blacksmith shop." Six Indian bucks sat on a pile of fence rails close to the men butchering. Kimball and dad each held a hind leg of the slaughtered beef, while Hoffman was splitting it with an axe. Just as I went into the blacksmith shop the shooting commenced.

The bucks on the pile of rails suddenly took guns from under their blankets and commenced to shoot. Father was shot in the back. Mr. Kimball's arm was broken. Mr. Hoffman was crippled, and although he fought off the Indians with an axe he was soon killed.

I ran out of the blacksmith shop just as father came running in. He told mother that the Indians had attacked the missionaries. The first gun fired had been the signal for a general attack. The Indians had stationed themselves around wherever the men were working. None of the men were killed on the first firing. We—father, mother and we children—now all ran from the blacksmith shop to the "Old Mansion House," an old adobe building. Father and I looked out the window. We saw Mr. Saunders come out of the schoolhouse fighting the Indians with a piece of fence rail; he was killed in a few minutes. Mr. Gill [iland] was shot through the lungs while at his bench and had no chance to escape or defend himself. Dr. Whitman was attacked while reading by the fireplace.

About forty Indians engaged in the massacre. After this first attack they held a council. Towards night they withdrew to their teepees in a camp about one-half or three-quarters of a mile up the river from the Mission. Father told mother that he did not think the Indians would kill the women and children, and that he would try to escape to Oregon. Though wounded, he slipped from the house during the night and hid all night and the next day in some brush along the creek. During this time he heard no further firing at the Mission. He finally decided that he would head for Mr. Spaulding's Mission at Lapwai, as the Indians would not be likely to hunt for him in that direction. He reached there in safety some four days later.

At the time of the massacre two families lived in the "Old Mansion House": Mrs. Saunders and Mrs. Kimball. Later Mrs. Hall, Mrs. Page (?) and Mrs. Hays came over with their children from

the Whitman house. The next morning the women and children all expected to be killed. A council was held by the murderers and the friendly Indians. Chief Telo-kite was there. The Indians finally decided not to kill the women and children, but to keep them prisoners until spring and then to send them down the Columbia River to the Willamette Valley.

On the morning after the massacre, mother saw Joe Lewis passing the house. She called him in and asked him why he took part in the killing. He told her he had to or the Indians would have killed him. I believe that he agitated the massacre. We all understood that he told the Indians that while he (Lewis) was sick at Dr. Whitman's he had heard the Doctor tell Mr. Spaulding that "his medicine had come, and he was going to poison all the Indians." The Indians themselves told this to the women.

On the evening of the day after the massacre a Catholic priest, Father Brouillet, came up from Umatilla to the Indian camp and baptized the children of these murderous Indians. He then came up to the adobe house where we were. The bodies of the murdered then lay around the yard and the Whitman house. The murderers said that they would leave them there for the dogs and crows to eat. My mother said to the father, "Mr. Gill [iland]'s body is here in the house! The Indians say they are going to leave the bodies unburied for the dogs and crows to eat. Can't you have them buried?"

The priest told her he would see what he could do. He then had a talk with the Chief. Later they took one of our wagons and the lead oxen, loaded all the bodies into the wagon, and hauled them off and buried them in one grave about four hundred feet from the adobe house. I went up to the grave with Mrs. Saunders, Mrs. Hays, Mrs. Kimball and two or three of the children. There were only a few Indians about. The priest then read from a book. I had never heard such reading before. I asked mother what it was and she told me that it was Latin. The priest then got on his horse and rode back to Umatilla.

During the time we were held prisoners by the Indians many of the women were abused by them. I do not recall the women pleading with Father Brouillet to protect them. Miss Lorinda Bewley was taken to Umatilla by Five Crows as his woman. She ran away from him, and the women said she asked the priest to protect her. Five Crows fetched her back. Five Crows was a half-brother of Chief Joseph.

Eight or nine days after the first massacre Amos Sales, a teamster, and Crockett Bewley, who were sick with camp fever and con-

fined to bed in the "Old Mansion House" with us, were killed. Camp fever is a sort of malaria fever contracted from camp life on the plains. I had it myself. It is a slow, debilitating fever. There is no particular pain. Mother had waited on these two sick men. Six Indians came into the room and went up to the bed, two or three on each side of the bed, and tomahawked them. Then they dragged the bodies through the room and threw them out the door. The bodies lay there for two days and we had to bring in our wood and water past them. Finally Timothy and Eagle, two Indians, came down from Lapwai to take Liza Spaulding home. She was a little girl about my age and had been at the mission at the time of the massacre. She is now living at Walla Walla—Mrs. Eliza Spalding Warren. When Timothy and Eagle saw these bodies lying there unburied, Timothy said to the Indians, "Is this the way you do things here?" The next morning the bodies were gone.

After the massacre a courier, either a French-Canadian or an Indian, was sent down from Walulla to Fort Vancouver with news of the massacre and Mr. Peter Skene Ogden of the Hudson's Bay Company came up to release us. He talked with the Indians for three days. He knew the Indians' ways and tried to secure the release of the women and children without a fight. The Indians finally agreed to sell us, and we were delivered over to the Hudson's Bay Company at Fort Walulla (Walla Walla) and then taken down the river in Hudson's Bay Company batteaux to Fort Vancouver. From there we were taken to Oregon City and delivered to Governor Abernethy. We located at Oregon City. We were beggars; all that we had left father tied up in a blanket and carried up the hill.

I shall never forget the parting with Mr. Ogden at the River. Father and mother, in bidding him good-bye, both cried, and I wondered why, but I can see now that they were bidding good-bye to the man who had saved them, their children, their neighbors and their children from savage violence and a bloody and unknown grave. We went up the hill and he went back to his waiting boat.

Mother was confined a few days after we arrived. When she got about again Dr. McLaughlin said to father, "If you want to go back with the volunteers, I will take care of your family." While we were going up to Oregon City we had passed the volunteers at Portland, on their way up the Columbia to chastise the Cayuses: self-armed, self-uniformed and self-paid.—five hundred men. They fought the Warm Springs Indians at The Dalles. The next day they fought the Cayuses. Colonel Cornelius Gilliam, Grandfather of Lane Gilliam, was the commanding officer. He had previously distinguished himself

in the Seminole War. Father joined the volunteers and later brought back some of our cattle.

In April, 1848, we settled on Soap Creek about six miles from Corvallis, Oregon. We left there in March, 1849, and went to San Francisco.

I shall never forget Dr. McLaughlin, a fine old man with long white hair. When I would go down to the store he would say to me in his kindly way, "Little gentleman, what can I do for you to-day?" Dr. McLaughlin was truly the "Father of Oregon." He sacrificed a princely salary, said to be \$12,000 a year, to aid and abet American emigrants coming to Oregon. He was called back to London by the Hudson's Bay Company, which found fault with him for having sent his boats to The Dalles to save poor, naked and starving American emigrants. He instructed his men to supply goods to all needy families. Those who had money could pay; those who did not were sold to on credit, and he charged whatever they got to his own personal account with the Company. It is a regrettable fact that some of the Doctor's debtors, who afterwards came into better fortune, neglected to repay him.

In 1878, I came north from California, and became one of the first settlers in the vicinity of Coeur d'Alene City. Canfield Mountain is named after me. I arrived there the same winter that the troops under Colonel Merriam established the military post, and I took up some land in the vicinity of Fernan Lake. I was also one of the pioneer miners and prospectors in the Coeur d'Alene mining country. Pritchard, Bill Girard and myself went prospecting in the Coeur d'Alenes in 1882.

I had then known Pritchard some five or six years and Girard about the same length of time. Pritchard was a very enthusiastic believer in the theory of evolution, or rather in the doctrine that man evolved from a monkey ancestor. He called his camp on the South Fork of the Coeur d'Alene River, near Bill Osborne's home, "Evolution." During the season Girard and Tom Irving, who had been prospecting along the South Fork, crossed over the mountains and panned the first gold from Pritchard Creek. They got about \$1.75 from some twenty pans. They then came back to the South Fork. Later I came home. They stayed there and laid the foundation for the great Coeur d'Alene stampede of 1883-1884.

As confirming the earlier Robinson stampede from Walla Walla in the sixties, I might mention that Pete Davis, a miner now living at Republic, Washington, and whom I met to-day at the Halliday Hotel in Spokane, while working on Pritchard Creek below Eagle



City in 1884, found an old prospect hole, evidently dug many years before.

The first galena found in the Coeur d'Alene country was found by Bill Sutherland and Charlie Toole on Sunset Peak while on their way to St. Regis, Montana. The galena ledge had been stripped bare by the elements, so that the ore was exposed to view on the surface. I do not think that they made any location of the ground at that time. This was the first discovery of galena in the Coeur d'Alenes.

Pritchard died some ten or twelve years ago. His favorite reading matter was the "Truthseeker" and Tom Paine's "Age of Reason," and some Kansas newspapers of advanced thought. Billie Whistler was his step-son. The "Widow" claim on Pritchard Creek was so named after Pritchard's wife, Billie's mother. Some Montana and Black Hills men jumped it.

The oldest continuous quartz location in the Coeur d'Alene Country is the Evolution claim, and the Coeur d'Alene Crescent. The Sunset, located by Lake Wolford, was the first location made in the Coeur d'Alene mining country.

Girard died only a year or so ago. In those early days the only settlement between Pine Creek and Government Gulch was at the "Mud Prairie Ranch."

OSCAR CANFIELD.

## PORT ORCHARD FIFTY YEARS AGO\*

Returning to San Francisco from Arizona and the Colorado River in the spring of 1867, I shipped before the mast in the ship *Helios* owned by Glidden and Colman, of Pier 21, Stewart Street, for a voyage to their sawmill at Port Orchard. As most of the freight to Puget Sound ports went by sail in those times, we "lay on the berth" for several days receiving freight for Seattle and the mill.

There was nothing noteworthy on our passage up the Coast, but coming from a hot country I well remember how the northwest winds seemed to search out the very marrow in my bones; and I never was colder in my life than when I was "lookout" on the night we passed in by Cape Flattery. Of the crew of twelve men before the mast there were a few exceptional characters whom I remember distinctly. One was the former carpenter of an English ship, who had deserted in San Francisco and shipped with us, who could never get accustomed to the abundance of food served to the "fo'castle," and who developed an amazing appetite for stewed dried apples. In fact, the watch would often let him eat all that was furnished for six men, just to see him gorge himself.

There was another, a New York sailor, who had always been in the New York and Liverpool packets, a "bos'n," and one of the old-time sailor-men, who knew nothing but the water-front of New York and Liverpool, and ships. How well I remember him in his singlet, arms burnt to an old mahogany color, breast bare and as hairy as an ape's, and his little close-fitting skullcap with a dab of plush in the crown. But more of him anon.

There was an Englishman by the name of Brown, a very steady-going chap, who sailed on the Coast in summer and worked in the sawmill in winter, saving his money to buy a piece of land to farm. Years later I met him, and learned that he had a nice place on Whidbey Island, and had his mother and sister with him from the Old Country.

It was sometime in July when we sailed into Seattle, let go the starboard anchor with eighty fathoms of chain, and swung in alongside the only wharf there, at the foot of what is now Yesler Way, then Mill Street. I think we were only a day or so discharging our

---

\*Captain Seymore read this article before the Kitsap County Pioneer Association on June 23, 1917, and furnished a copy for publication in the Washington Historical Quarterly.—Editor.

freight, and so unimportant was the town then that no one cared to go ashore except the Captain, who had to collect his freight money. We then made sail again, crossed the Sound, and worked up through Port Orchard Narrows (and quite a little task, too) to the mill at Port Orchard, which was located about a mile north of Manette, at what is now Inatai, the summer home of Mr. Maurice McMicken.

Of course the first thing was to whip out some four hundred tons of ballast, after which we hauled into the wharf, got our chutes rigged, and started loading.

The firm of Glidden & Colman owned three vessels: the ship *Helios*, the largest and best, and the barks *Scotland* and *Huntsville*, of which the *Scotland* was at the wharf loading when we arrived.

The first Sunday was a bright, warm day, and immediately after breakfast it was all hands for a swim; but the water was so cold that none remained in longer than necessary. Some of us went up the beach to the hotel, which was on the spot now occupied by the residence of Mr. L. A. Bender; but all old residents of Port Orchard and Port Washington will remember the old Fellows' House. At that time it was the hotel for the mill and as I remember The Williams was running it; but of this I am not positive. It was later used as a schoolhouse and sold to Mr. Fellows. Some years later I was going up into Port Washington Bay for a boom of logs in the steamer *Linnie* and passed the place just as school was being dismissed, and I never shall forget the sight of those children climbing into their canoes and scattering in all directions.

Returning to the "bos'n" I spoke of earlier, we were all back aboard again long before he returned. The trees and the wild country were something entirely new to him and the driftwood on the beach was a perfect marvel. But about three o'clock he came into the "fo'castle" boasting of the funny kitten he had found, which would make a nice pet for us, and opening his shirt wherein he had placed it for safe-keeping, turned loose a cyclone among a dozen men. With a screech it shot out of that "fo'castle" and was ashore in a jiffy. How he had got it he never was able to explain. It was a young wildcat which he had caught and the chest and upper part of his abdomen were a sight to behold.

It seems that the firm which owned the mill was in financial difficulties and sometime during the next week a deputy sheriff, one George MacDonald, quite notorious in later years, came up and attached the mill and the lumber on the wharf, and that put a stop to our loading. A day or two later the two vessels were also attached

and Mr. MacDonald came aboard as keeper, but as neither vessel would feed him, he had to go to the cook-house for his meals.

On the next Sunday the crew wandered off as before and I chanced to return before any of the others. Captain Nickels was on the wharf and near her gangway. That you may understand what is to follow I will explain that in those days it was customary for vessels loading lumber to drop an anchor out ahead and then haul stern-on to the wharf, taking their lumber in chutes through the stern ports. In that position they were at right angles to the tide, which ran along shore. The *Helois* had out one stream-chain and a hawser as stern moorings; the *Scotland* two hawsers.

As I came up to the gang-plank to go on board the Captain asked me if I thought we could cast off the chain mooring as there was a pretty good strain on it, to which I replied that I thought we could. He then told me to go on board and get an axe from the carpenter shop, and when I returned, sent me to the stern moorings of the *Scotland*. After a bit he sung out for me to cut, and then I cut the hawser of the *Helois* just as he let go the chain, and we both scrambled up the gang-plank as the two vessels swung away from the wharf. MacDonald, who was ashore getting his dinner at the time, saw the vessels swinging away from the wharf, ran down on the beach and, jumping into a canoe, came alongside the *Helois* and started to climb aboard, but the Captain, with a six-shooter, convinced him that as the vessels were riding to their anchors they were out of his jurisdiction and only a United States marshal could take them by an order of the Federal Court.

That afternoon Captain Houdlette of the *Scotland* came over from Seattle with two steamers to take us in tow. The *Scotland* went to Port Madison by way of Agate Pass, and the steamer *Black Diamond*, which was about as big as a grasshopper, took us in tow for the sawmill at Freeport, where Luna Park now is; but about ten o'clock we were routed out to make sail, as a breeze had sprung up and the steamer could not handle us. We passed her astern and worked our way out of the Narrows and across the Sound to the mill, where we finished loading and sailed for San-Francisco.

That ended my first experience in Port Orchard Bay. MacDonald remained in charge of the mill and lumber, but as there was no chance of a settlement the sawmill crew scattered, and sometime that fall, the mill caught fire and burned to the ground. That was the last of Port Orchard as a sawmill.

The most distinct recollection of the Bay I have is the old "Fellow's House," just inside the Narrows, and the scow that used to tow



logs down from the head of the Bay to the mill. They had several coils of rope and two anchors with a boat. They would run out all the rope they had and then drop an anchor. The donkey engine would then haul herself and the boom up while the rope was being coiled into the boat so that when they had got up to the first anchor they were ready to run out the second. Not a very speedy method, but it got there just the same.

Captain Glidden finally took the *Scotland* and went to China with her, and some ten years later I saw the tops of her masts sticking out of water where she had struck a rock, just south of the Yangtze River, with the loss of all hands.

Of course, as a lad of seventeen, it is not to be expected that my recollections of those early days would be very vivid, but what little I have narrated stands out in my mind as if it had happened only a year or so ago. The practically unbroken timber around the shores of the Bay, the absence of any habitations save the shacks of the mill-town, and the solitude of the place are as fresh in my mind as ever, and these reminiscences are given in the hope that, as we look around and see what changes have come in the last few years, we may realize something of conditions fifty years ago. This paper, placed among the records of the Kitsap County Pioneers' Association, will have even a greater interest fifty years hence, and so I leave it in your hands for preservation.

W. B. SEYMORE.

## DAVID THOMPSON'S JOURNEYS IN THE SPOKANE COUNTRY

The shortest route by railroad at the present time between Portland, Oregon, and Spokane, Washington, is by the cut-off of the Union Pacific system, which was completed from the Snake River northward about the year 1914. This cut-off crosses Snake River at the mouth of the Palouse River. It is interesting to note that in August, 1811, a little more than one hundred years previous, David Thompson, when on his return journey from Astoria to Spokane House, made use of and left a record of nearly this same line of travel between the Snake and Spokane Rivers, deviating from it because his objective point was lower down the Spokane River.

In the last issue of this Quarterly Mr. Thompson was described as arriving at Spokane House on June 14, 1811. From there he proceeded overland to Kettle Falls on the Columbia River (of which journey his record will be given later), built a canoe there, and voyaged down the River to Astoria, being the first white man to travel that part of the River between Kettle Falls and the mouth of the Yakima River. From that point to the Ocean members of the Lewis and Clark party had preceded him. Returning up the River that summer, Mr. Thompson did not follow the longer route around the "big bend" of the Columbia, but on the morning of August 6 turned up Snake River, and in the afternoon of Thursday, August 8, 1811, landed at the established Indian crossing of the Snake River, namely, at the mouth of the Palouse River. His record of arrival reads:

"At the end of course put ashore at the mouth of a small brook and camped, as this is the road to my first Post in the Spokane lands. Here is a village of 50 men; they danced until they were fairly tired and the Chiefs had bawled themselves hoarse. They forced a present of 8 horses on me, and a war garment."

The following summer (1812) John Clarke of the Pacific Fur Company led his party over this same trail, for an account of which see "Adventures on the Columbia River" by Ross Cox. It is also interesting to note that Captain John Mullan in laying out the military road from Fort Walla Walla to Fort Benton used this same Indian crossing at Snake River.

The trail used by David Thompson, therefore, became in later years in part the "Mullan Road," and in greater part the "Colville Road," which was used so heavily and so long in the commercial and

agricultural development of the Colville, Spokane and Big Bend districts of the state of Washington from Walla Walla northward. Mullan and in Vol. 12 of Pacific Railway Reports by Governor Isaac I. Stevens will make this route more clear to the reader.

While at the Indian camp on the Columbia on August 6, Mr. Thompson had dispatched an Indian to Jaco Finlay at Spokane House with instructions that provisions and horses be sent to meet him. But time was pressing and he proceeded to buy horses and started with a hired guide, traveling by night at first. His journal entries of August 9-13, inclusive, are as follows:

[1811]

Aug. 9th

*Friday.* A fine day, Wind a Gale South. Obsd. for Longde., Time, & Ltde. This Aug. 8, Astronom Day.  $118^{\circ} 44'$  W. Latde  $46^{\circ} 36'$  N. It was late before the Horses could be collected & I left one they could not find. They said the Chiefs below knew how to talk but not how to act, they declared they did not wish for any return for the present of horses, but that they knew the nature of a Present. I gave each of them Notes for the Horses, to be paid when the Canoes arrive. At 5 P. M. set off & held on up the Brook cutting off the great Pt. till  $11\frac{1}{2}$  P. M. when we camped. Co. N. 5 E.  $11\frac{1}{2}$  m., Brook at 1 m., crossed end of Co. went up the Banks, Co. N. 20 E. 14 m., last 1 m. along the Brook. The land very rocky & full of rocky hills cut perpend. wherever the rocks show themselves, & exactly the same kind of rocks as along the Columbia, with much fragments in splinters &c. very bad for the Horses & the Soil a sandy fine impalpable Powder which suffocated us with dust & no water to drink to where we camped.

Aug. 10.

*Saturday.* A fine, cloudy, blowy Day. At  $7\frac{1}{4}$  a.m. set off & held on at N. 10 E. 5 m. then crossed a shoal Brook of 6 yds. wide from the East, held on Co.  $+2\frac{1}{2}$  m. & baited at  $11\frac{1}{2}$  a.m. At 1 p.m. set off & held on say North  $2\frac{1}{4}$  m. a Brook came in from the N. Ed. held on up the left Brook & put up at 6 P.M., say Co. North 8 m. The appearance of the country is much the same, tho' somewhat less rude, & there is often a few Aspines, Alders with a very rare Fir along the Brook, much wild Cherry & 3 sorts of currants, one sweet & red, the others yellow acid, red light acid.

Aug. 11

*Sunday.* A very fine Day, mostly cloudy. At  $7\frac{1}{4}$  a.m. set off Co. up the Brook N. 10 E.  $2\frac{1}{2}$  m. when we crossed a Rill from the Nwd., we

kept on along a Rill of water in the Spring, now dry North  $9\frac{1}{2}$  m. to a little water among some Poplars & Willows, it is a long time since we saw any here, we baited from  $1\frac{1}{2}$  p.m. to 2.20 p.m. We then went off North 1 m., N. 20 W.  $11\frac{1}{2}$  m. to a kind of lead wet Ground, hereabout are Willow Bushes & Woods before us, held on Co. N. 15 E.  $6\frac{1}{2}$  m. for the last 2 M. we had a kind of Brook or Ravine on our left, camped at a Pond at  $6\frac{1}{2}$  P. M. Killed a Duck our Provisions being fairly done & fasting all day, not seeing the People who were to have met us with Provisions & Horses we were obliged to kill a Mare for food, as our Guide told us we had yet 3 days Journey to go. The Country till 10 a. m. like the past, very rocky & barren, since which it has much mended, & only stony where on wet low Ground, the rest is tolerably well for Grass & the soil appears good, tho parched up for want of Rain, which rarely, or never falls during the Summer Months. At the Camp the Firs are thinly scattered along the kind of Ravine, all the rest is all wide Plain without a Tree, a few Chevrueil Tracks & Dung.

Aug. 12th

*Monday.* A fine day. At 6.20 a.m. set off, held on along a line of Woods on our (abt. North 1 m. to a Pond of some size, then N. 50 E. 4 m., N. 30 E. 5 m. & stopped at  $11\frac{1}{2}$  a. m. to bait the Horses among a few Ponds & good grassy land with thin woods. At 1 p. m. set off & camped at a Rill at  $6\frac{3}{4}$  p. m., say Co. N. 30 E. 1 m., N. 10. E. 7 m. across a large Plain, without water, to the Woods of a Brook, we descended the banks, which are high & crossed it abt. N. 10 No. 1 m., then along the Brook of 6 yds  $\propto$  N. 10 W. 1 m., here it sank in the ground & we went North  $11\frac{1}{2}$  m. & camped at a Rill to which we were guided by a Spokane we met, from whom we got a little dried Salmon.

Aug. 13th.

*Tuesday.* A very fine day, at  $5\frac{1}{2}$  a.m. set off & at  $6\frac{1}{2}$  a.m. arrived at the House. Thank God for his Mercy to us on this Journey, found all safe, but Jaco was with the Horses, sent to meet me, late in the evening he arrived. Our Co. was abt. N. W. 3 m., we came faster but our road was always down hill.

---

Stated in narrative form David Thompson was camped on Friday, August 9, 1811, with a band of Indians of the Sahaptin family (Nez Perces) at the mouth of the Palouse River in Whitman County, Washington. He told these Indians that it was the purpose of the North-West Company to establish a trading post near them, and



purchased horses from them by the use of demand notes upon the Company; this being the first record of commercial paper issued in the Inland Empire. Late that afternoon he set off up the Palouse River (which he called a brook) for a mile or two and then up the steep ridge on the east of the River to the prairie or wheat lands of to-day and across the bend of the River to a late encampment near the present town of Hooper. The railroad and the wagon road at present follow around the bend of the River to the west and north instead of across.

The following day he proceeded across the eastern end of Adams County, north to the present line of the S., P. & S. Ry. and then northeast to Rock Creek about where the Mullan Road used to cross it, and thence up that Creek; his camp seems to have been near the source of the Creek and about five or six miles southeast of Sprague, Lincoln County.

On Sunday, the 11th, he continued northward across Lincoln County into Spokane County and camped for the night somewhere near the line of the Northern Pacific Railway between Cheney and Sprague; and on the following day turned more to the northeast into the vicinity of Medical Lake and on to Deep Creek where that stream sinks on Section 3 of Township 25 north, of Range 41 E. W. M., and then a few miles further to Coulee Creek for the night. The regular trail or road to the lower crossing (Le Prez) of the Spokane River to Colville passed to the west of Medical Lake several miles, but Mr. Thompson kept to the northeast toward Spokane House. The following morning, Tuesday, he found himself within five or six miles from his destination. His clerk, Jaco Finlay, in going to meet him, had evidently followed the trail from Spokane House to the mouth of Latah Creek below the Falls of the Spokane and thence up that Creek southward, and had missed him entirely. T. C. ELLIOTT.

## WASHINGTON GEOGRAPHIC NAMES

After several years of research as to the origin, history and meaning of the geographic names in the State of Washington, it is now determined to publish the results first in the Washington Historical Quarterly.

There have been many changes in the names during their development to present forms. Some changes have occurred while this research has been in progress. In the nature of the work there is danger of errors being made. Readers are therefore urged to make note of any changes or errors that may be observed and report them as soon as possible. All such corrections will be incorporated into the published entries so that the whole may be issued in book-form soon after the last installment has appeared in the Quarterly.

While this plan will surely help to make more perfect the information being collected, such preliminary publication should greatly widen the people's interest in the Washington Historical Quarterly. During the next few issues there will appear in this proposed series of articles something of historic value about every portion of territory and about every named community in the State of Washington.

In carrying on these researches, use has been made of all known journals of discoverers and explorers, all known maps and charts, the books of early travellers, all local histories available, newspapers, magazines, pamphlets, and many other sources. One of the most laborious portions of the task has been the seeking of information from individuals. Thousands of letters of inquiry have been sent out. The replies, many of which convey most valuable help, are filed in what is called Names Manuscripts, each such letter being given a separate number for purposes of reference. Effort is made to give each one credit for the information given.

Many of the authorities cited, like Vancouver, Wilkes, United States Coast Survey and representatives of the Hudson's Bay Company, will be found repeated in many of the entries. One reason for this is the desire to make each entry as nearly perfect as possible. Those making frequent and practical use of the list will avail themselves of the alphabetical arrangement and they are entitled to find under each heading all the accurate information that can there be given.

A word of acknowledgment should here be made to the Lords of the British Admiralty, who have contributed a number of valuable charts. These have greatly aided the work and have helped to clear up several cases of names that were previously puzzling problems.

The extensive series of charts of the United States Exploring Expedition, commanded by Captain Charles Wilkes, has been photostated for this work. Here are found the origins of hundreds of the geographic names.

ABERDEEN, city in Grays Harbor (formerly called Chehalis) County. The town was platted by Samuel Benn in 1884 on his homestead. Benn was born in New York City and in 1856 he came to San Francisco. Three years later he moved to Washington Territory and settled on the Chehalis River. There are two sources claimed for the name of the city. John J. Carney (*Names MSS.*, Letter 65) says it arose from the fact that the Aberdeen Packing Company of Ilwaco established a cannery in early days on the Benn homestead. Hawthorne's *History of Washington*, Volume II., page 602, declares that the name was suggested by Mrs. James Stewart, who, before her marriage in 1868, was Miss Joan B. Kellan of Aberdeen, Scotland, who had come to America with her parents in 1849 and settled in Ohio. She and her husband moved to Washington Territory in 1874.

ABERNETHY CREEK, see Nequally Creek.

ACME, town in Whatcom County. The word is Greek in origin and has come to mean the highest point of achievement or of excellence. Charles F. Elsbree (*Names MSS.*, Letter 195) writes that Thomas Stephens and Samuel Parks sent East for a couple of Acme hymnals and were joked for so doing. About 1887 Parks was sent to Bellingham with a petition for a new postoffice. No name was in the petition. He asked if Acme would do and on receiving an affirmative answer that name was written into the records.

ADAMS COUNTY, organized under the law of November 28, 1883, the name being in honor of President John Adams.

ADELAIDE, town in King County. When the postoffice was established there in 1886, it was named in honor of Miss Adelaide Dixon. (*Names MSS.*, Letters 40 and 442.)

ADMIRALTY BAY, in Island County, west coast of Whidbey Island. It probably takes its name from Admiralty Inlet. The name makes its first appearance on Kellett's Chart, 1847.

ADMIRALTY HEAD, on Whidbey Island, opposite Point Wilson. It was undoubtedly named for Admiralty Inlet. The name first appears on Kellett's Chart, 1847, and is now carried on official Government charts. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, had given it the name Red Bluff, which name has not persisted.

ADMIRALTY INLET, the waterway connecting the Strait of Juan de Fuca with Puget Sound. The name was bestowed on Saturday,

June 2, 1792, by Captain George Vancouver, the discoverer, in honor of the Board of Admiralty, which supervises the work of the Royal Navy of Great Britain. The Spaniards were first to see the waterway. Quimper saw its entrance in 1790 and Eliza examined it more carefully in 1791. He did not explore it because the Indians said canoes would be necessary to reach its farthest limits. These Spaniards gave the entrance the name Boca de Caamano. As their maps were not published, Vancouver had no way of knowing that his name of Admiralty Inlet was not the first one given. The Wilkes Expedition (Volume IV., page 479) makes use of the name Admiralty Sound, but in present usage the name Puget Sound is encroaching on the other. On the original chart of Vancouver, Admiralty Inlet extended to where the city of Tacoma is now located. On the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey Chart, 6450, dated February, 1905, Admiralty Inlet ends and Puget Sound begins at the lower end of Whidbey Island.

**ADOLPHUS ISLAND.** The Wilkes Expedition charted in 1841 two little islands north of Orcas Island, which were called Adolphus and Gordon Islands. George Davidson of the United States Coast Survey proved in 1853 that the two little islands did not exist.

**AENEAS,** town and creek in Okanogan County. The name came from Chief Aeneas, who was at one time a Government guide. He died about 1913 reputed to be more than one hundred years of age. (Charles Clark, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 288.)

**AGATE PASSAGE,** in Kitsap County, connecting Port Orchard with Port Madison. It was named by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841, in honor of one of the party—Alfred T. Agate, artist. It has often been asserted, erroneously, that the name arose from the finding of agates among the pebbles of the shores.

**AHAHAWAT,** a summer village of the Makah Indians, in a little cove three miles south of Cape Flattery. The name is here given as spelled by James G. Swan in his writings for the Smithsonian Institution. On the Kroll map the name is spelled Archawat.

**AH-KWAHLK-HAHT,** a point on Tulalip Reservation beach on Port Susan, Snohomish County. The meaning of the Indian word is unknown. (Charles M. Buchanan, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 155.)

**AHTAHNAM,** see Atanum.

**AINSWORTH,** town east of Pasco in Franklin County. It was named in honor of J. C. Ainsworth, a prominent railroad man of the West.

**ALA SPIT,** in Island County near Hope Island, off the northeast portion of Whidbey Island, as shown on the Wilkes Expedition chart of 1841.



ALAMEDA, a postoffice in Douglas County. In 1907 the people petitioned for a postoffice and three names were to be submitted for a choice by the officials. Vernile F. Hopkins, an old settler, suggested that Alameda be one of the three and it was the one selected. (William F. Edwards, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 434.)

ALAMICUT RIVER, in Wahkiakum County. The old settlers claim that the Indians called the slough Alamicut, meaning "Deep River." (C. Arthur Appelo, *Names MSS.*, Letter 304.) On Kroll's map the name is Deep River. On the Wilkes Expedition chart, 1841, the name is Ela-be-kail.

ALBION, town in Whitman County. The former name Guy was changed in March, 1901, at the instance of an English miller by the name of Thomas to honor the early discoveries in the Northwest by the British, who called the region Nova Albion. (Thomas M. Farnsworth, *Names MSS.*, Letter 438.)

ALDEN BANK, in Georgia Strait, north of west from Lummi Bay. It was discovered and named by the United States Coast Survey in 1853 in honor of Lieutenant Commander James Alden of the *Active*. Alden had been in the same waters with the Wilkes Expedition, 1841, and also took part in the Indian wars on Puget Sound in 1855-1856. He died in San Francisco in 1877.

ALDEN POINT, west cape of Patos Island, Strait of Georgia. The name is evidently an additional honor of Lieutenant Commander Alden. It appears on the Richards chart of 1858-1860.

ALDER, town in Pierce County. It was named by Martin Hotes in February, 1902, after a grove of alder trees where the town is located. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 108.)

ALDER CREEK. There are three creeks by this name in Washington. One is in Stevens County (see also Powwow Creek) flowing into the Columbia at Fruitland; another is in Klickitat County, flowing into the Columbia at Alderdale; and another has its rise near Mount Baker and flows into the Skagit River.

ALDER RIDGE, hills back of Alderdale, in Klickitat County.

ALDERDALE, station and village in Klickitat County. William Warner, Robert Warner and Mrs. M. L. Warner, constituting the Western Investment Company, platted the townsite and named it Alderdale because it is near the mouth of Alder Creek. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 555.)

ADLWELL CANYON in Clallam County. The name is in honor of Thomas T. Adwell, who located his homestead there many years ago. At present the site is being used for a dam and power plant by the

Olympic Power Company. (H. B. Herrick, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 267.)

ALFALFA, a town in Yakima County. The name was given because of the quantities of alfalfa hay shipped from the station. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 353.)

ALGONA, a town in King County. The place was first called Valley City, but as there was already a postoffice in the state called Valley the authorities rejected the name of the newer aspirant. A mass meeting in February, 1910, selected the name "Algoma," a word said to mean "valley of flowers." In adopting the name, the post-office department changed one letter and the settlers do not know what Algona means. (Claude E. Googe, in *Names MSS.*, Letters 36 and 79.)

ALKI POINT, now a part of Seattle, in King County. The first name given this place was "Point Roberts" by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841. It is not clear just what man was sought to be honored. In the crews of the expedition there were four men bearing the name of Roberts—Abraham, Humphrey, Owen, and William. It may have been any one of them. Furthermore it may have been the diplomat, Edward Roberts, who had gained fame in the Orient a few years before. Although the name appeared on a number of early charts, it was supplanted by the first settlers who made their homes there. On November 13, 1851, the famous Denny colony landed on that point. In the party there were twelve adults and twelve children. From that colony has grown the city of Seattle. The settlers were very ambitious. They called the place "New York." As the one little store and the few cabin homes grew so slowly they added a hyphen and the Indian jargon word Alki, meaning "by and bye." New York-Alki meant that it was to become the metropolis of the Pacific Coast in the near future. When a majority of the settlers moved to the east shore of Elliott Bay and began the city of Seattle, those remaining at the point dropped the name "New York," but Alki Point has remained as a well-established geographic name. For a time the Government charts showed this point as Battery Point. See entry under that name.

ALLAN ISLAND, in Skagit County, west of Fidalgo Island. It was named in 1841 by the Wilkes Expedition in honor of Captain William Henry Allen of the United States Navy. The name of Allen often suffers when transferred from biography to geography. In this case there is little doubt, for the Wilkes chart shows the waterway between Fidalgo Islands as "Argus Bay" and it was in the *Argus* that Captain Allen was mortally wounded while fighting the British brig *Pelican* on August 14, 1813. It was a favorite scheme of

Wilkes to link the name of an American naval officer with his ship by placing two geographic names close together. "Argus Bay" has been changed on recent charts to Burrows Bay, but the old name of the island remains. The two islands—Allan and Burrows—had previously been named by the Spaniards in the "Sutil y Mexicana" Expedition as "Las dos Islas Morros."

ALLARD, town in Benton County, named in honor of Samuel Allard. (Alice Dumert, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 259.)

ALLEN BANK, southeast of Blake Island and stretching across to Point Vashon. The bank was discovered and named by the United States Coast Survey in 1857.

ALLEN POINT, in Island County, southeast extremity of Camano Island. This is one of the original names by Vancouver, but badly distorted. He named one waterway Port Gardner after Sir Alan Gardner of the British Admiralty. The other waterway he called Port Susan in honor of Lady Susana Gardner, and to the point of land he gave his friend's first name, calling it Point Alan. After different spellings it has come upon the most recent official charts as Allen Point.

ALLSHOUSE ISLAND, see Raft Island.

ALMIRA, a town in Lincoln County. In the year 1889 this place was named by the Chief Engineer of the Northern Pacific Railroad Company in honor of Mrs. Almira Davis, wife of Charles C. Davis, the town's first merchant. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 357.)

ALMOTA, a town and three creeks in Whitman County. The creeks are West Almota, Little Almota and Almota. Rev. Myron Eells is authority for the statement that the name is a corruption of the Nez Perce word "Allamotin," meaning "torch-light fishery." Lewis and Clark camped there on October 11, 1905, and mention the Indian houses which John Work of the Hudson's Bay Company found and described in his journal of 1825.

ALOCKAMAN RIVER in Wahkaikum County. On Preston's Map of Oregon and Washington West of the Cascade Mountains, 1856, and on the Map of the Surveyor General of Washington Territory, it is shown as Strong's River. In the Pacific Railroad Reports, George Gibbs refers to it as "Elokamin." The United States Coast and Geodetic Chart shows it "Elochoman."

ALLOWEZE, see Burke, in Grant County.

ALLYN, a town in Mason County. It was named in honor of Judge Frank Allyn of Tacoma, who was interested in the new town about 1889. (Soren C. Nelson, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 411.)

ALOHA, a town in Grays Harbor County. The name is the Hawaiian term of tender greeting.

ALPHA, see Latah.

ALPINE, a town in King County. The place was formerly called Nippon, but in January, 1915, C. L. Clemans, mill owner there, secured a change of name to Alpine as the location is at the summit of the Cascade Mountains.

ALPOWA, a creek and a town in Garfield County. Originally a town was started under the name of "Alpowa City" where Silcott, Asotin County, is now located. The word Alpowa is from the Nez Perce language and means "a spring forming a creek," although Thomas Beal, an old pioneer, says it came from missionary experiences and meant that on Sundays they should go to church. The Nez Percés formerly had a village at the mouth of the creek where it flows into the Snake River. The name has also been spelled "Alpahwah" and "Elpawawe." (Fred W. Unfried, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 322.)

ALTAHNUM, see Atanum.

ALTO, a town in Columbia County, eleven or twelve miles northeast of Dayton. The railroad engineer gave the name because it was the summit of the divide between Whetstone Hollow and Tucanon.

AMBER, in Spokane County. The place was originally called Calvert, after an old settler by that name. The name was changed to Amber to conform to the name of a postoffice already established on the homestead of Mr. Costello. (L. C. Gilman, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 590.)

AMELIA, formerly a postoffice in Mason County, named in honor of Amelia Edmonds, the postmistress. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 234.)

AMERICAN LAKE, a town and lake in Pierce County, near Tacoma. In 1917, Camp Lewis, one of the Federal Cantonments for the new army, was located in that vicinity and gave to American Lake an increased importance. There is a persistent error as to the origin of this name. The error declares that the name arose from the fact that the Wilkes Expedition celebrated the Fourth of July, 1841, on the shore of the lake and thus contributed to it a name. That is very beautiful but not true. Hubert Howe Bancroft (*Works*, Volume XXIX., page 189, footnote) quotes Elwood Evans's *Puyallup Address* as it appeared in the *New Tacoma Ledger* for July 9, 1880, as follows: "The lake was never formally named; but on account of the American celebration and the residence of the missionaries, was called American Lake, and sometimes Richmond Lake, by the settlers of the Puget Sound Company. The prairie was also called the American Plains, and by the natives, 'Boston Illahee.'" The Wilkes narrative



does not even mention the lake, but it is quite clear in fixing the place of the famous Fourth of July celebration. In Volume IV., page 412, the record shows that the place of celebration was on the edge of Mission Prairie and that the men were landed from the ships and marched to the place "about a mile distant." The second or new Fort Nisqually was later built near the scene of the celebration and the fence of the Dupont Powder works now encloses the ground. Five years after the celebration, the Inskip chart, 1846, showed the location of the new Fort Nisqually, the mission building site, the race-course and also indicated a road marked "To Gordon Lake" leading probably toward the present American Lake. Ten years later Preston's Map of Oregon and Washington West of the Cascade Mountains, 1856, shows the lake, then called "Lake Tolmie." Mrs. Mary Perry Frost says that in 1854 she moved into a cabin on their donation claim near the lake. Other American settlers had claims in the same vicinity and the name of American Lake undoubtedly grew from that fact, as the British still held the ground around Fort Nisqually. The monument erected in recent years to mark the site of the Wilkes celebration of 1841 is located about three miles from the right place.

ANACORTES, a city in Skagit County. The place was settled about 1860 and received the name of "Ship Harbor." In 1876, Amos Bowman, a civil engineer, bought the site and platted a town. He sought to give it the maiden name of his wife—Anna Curtis—but the records perpetuated in some way the present spelling, possibly to give a Spanish tone as the city is on Fidalgo Island.

ANATONE, a town in Asotin County. What is now known as Ten Mile Creek was known to the Indians as Anatone. It is claimed that it was so called for a noted Indian woman who lived near the present site of Anatone. (J. C. Packwood, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 381.)

ANDERSON ISLAND, in Pierce County. It was named in 1841 by the Wilkes Expedition. In the *Narrative*, Volume IV., page 305, Wilkes says: "Twelve miles more brought us to the anchorage off Nisqually, where both vessels dropped their anchors about eight o'clock. Here we found an English steamer [Beaver] undergoing repairs. Soon after we anchored I had the pleasure of a visit from Mr. Anderson, who is in charge of the fort, and Captain McNeil. They gave me a warm welcome, and offered every assistance in their power to aid me in my operations." He honored these two men by naming for them the nearby islands—Anderson and McNeil. Alexander Caulfield Anderson was born in Calcutta on March 10, 1814. He became a Chief Trader of the Hudson's Bay Company and was located at Fort Nisqually during the year 1840-1841. After other

service with the Company, he retired in 1858 and took up his residence near Victoria. He died in May, 1884. The island has had at least two other names. The Inskip chart, 1846, shows it as "Fisgard Island" after the British frigate which was on this station, 1844-1847. Inskip sought to carry the honor further by changing the name of McNeil Island to "Duntze Island" for Captain John A. Duntze of the frigate. Anderson Island was also known for a time as "Wallace Island" in honor of Leander C. Wallace, who was killed by Snoqualmie Indians during their attack on Fort Nisqually in 1849.

ANDREWS BAY, on the west coast of San Juan Island. On some charts the bay is shown as "Manzanita."

ANGELES POINT, in Clallam County at mouth of Elwha River. The Spaniards—Quimper, 1790, and Eliza, 1791—called it "Punta Davila." Kellett's chart, 1847, shows it as "Angelos Point." Most American charts now show it as Angeles Point.

ANGLE LAKE, in King County, near Orillia. "I think it was named on account of its shape, forming almost a right angle. It was named before 1864." (J. D. Cameron, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 68.)

ANGLIN, town in Okanogan County. Named in honor of T. S. Anglin, who was appointed postmaster on October 28, 1902. (T. S. Anglin, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 263.)

ANKENY, a town in Adams County. It was named in honor of former United States Senator Levi Ankeny, who was a land owner in that vicinity. (L. C. Gilman, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 590.)

ANNAS BAY, an indentation at the great bend of Hood Canal. Wilkes in the United States Exploring Expedition, Volume XXIII., page 323, refers to it as Anna Bay and also as Anna's Bay. The latter spelling without the apostrophe is now adopted.

APPLE COVE, see Apple Tree Cove.

APPLEDALE, a town in Douglas County. "In 1909, the Great Northern Railway Company built a branch line from the Columbia River to Mansfield, Douglas County. This place was then called Appledale on account of the many apple orchards there." (Julius Hollenbeck, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 478.)

APPLE TREE COVE, in Kitsap County. It was named on May 10, 1841, by the Wilkes Expedition, whose *Narrative*, Volume IV., page 304, says: "This was named Apple-tree Cove from the numbers of that tree which were in blossom around its shores." No landing was made there at that time; no white settler was located there and so the conclusion is forced to the mind that Wilkes saw dogwood trees

in bloom and mistook them for apple trees. The name has persisted on all subsequent charts, though the word "Tree" is sometimes omitted.

**APUTAPUT**, falls in the Palouse River not far from its mouth. See Palouse Falls. The Narrative of the Wilkes Expedition, Volume IV., page 466, says: "The falls upon this river are of some note, and are called Aputaput; and they will hereafter be an object of interest to the travellers in this country." There is also given in the same record an Indian legend of Aputaput.

**ARCADIA**, a town in Mason County.

**ARGUS BAY**, see Allan Island and Burrows Bay.

**ARGYLE**, a town in San Juan County. There is a town of the same name in Nova Scotia and another in Wisconsin. It is possible that the Washington name was derived from one of these.

**ARGYLE LAGOON**, a small triangular lagoon about one mile south of the Puget Sound Marine Station on San Juan Island.

**ARIEL POINT**, see Nodule Point.

**ARIELS POINT**, see Double Bluff.

**ARKANSAS CREEK**, in Cowlitz County. It was named in the early fifties for the reason that a number of settlers there had come from the state of Arkansas. (E. B. Huntington, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 158.)

**ARLETTA**, a town in Pierce County. It was named about 1893 by Mrs. G. W. Powell, who used part of the name of her eldest daughter Arla and a portion of Valetta, the name of a city on the Island of Malta, which is reputed one of the most beautiful cities in the world. (William W. White, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 443.)

**ARLINGTON**, a town in Snohomish County. When the railroad's arrival gave promise of a city there Morris G. Haller called it Haller City in 1888 in honor of his father. Two years later, Earl & McLeod, railroad contractors, purchased the townsite and changed its name to honor the memory of Lord Henry Arlington, one of the notorious "Cabal" cabinet of Charles II., of England. (W. F. Oliver, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 196.)

**ARMSTRONG'S POINT**, see Point Chehalis.

**ARROWSMITH**, postoffice in Grant County. The place was named in February, 1908, "Mitchell" by Jackson Robinson to honor his mother's maiden name. Since then another postoffice was granted for the same vicinity and was named for George Arrowsmith. (F. C. Koppen, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 110.)

**ARTESIAN**, a town in Yakima County. It was named by J. H. Gans about 1906 from the numerous artesian wells in the district. (Marian McShane, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 347.)

ARTIC, a town in Grays Harbor County. In the eighties a post-office was desired and the name in the petition was "Arta" to honor Mrs. Arta Saunders. The postoffice authorities misread the last syllable. (M. J. Luark, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 548.)

ASH, see Carson, in Skamania County.

ASHBY, see Cohasset, in Kittitas County.

ASHFORD, a town in Pierce County. It was named in honor of an old settler, W. A. Ashford, who located there on February 2, 1888. It has gained importance in late years by being the railroad station for the entrance to Mount Rainier National Park. (Cora J. Ashford, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 229.)

ASOTIN, a county, a town and a creek in the southeastern corner of the State. The name is from the Nez Perce language and means "eel creek" from the abundance of eels caught there. The town at the mouth of the creek, where it flows into Snake River, took the same name in 1878, as did the County when it was organized under the law of October 27, 1883.

ATANUM, a river and an old Indian mission in Yakima County. A. J. Splawn is given as authority that the Indian word, sometimes spelled "Ahatahnum," means "the creek by the long mountain." Theodore Winthrop in 1853 spelled the word "Atinam." The early records speak of the priests and their successful mission on the banks of the Atanum.

ATEESOWILL, see Bear River, Pacific County.

ATLANTA, on Samish Island, near Point Williams, in Skagit County. "Platted by ex-Sheriff G. W. L. Allen in 1883. He erected a two-story hotel, established a store, secured a postoffice and built an extensive wharf, but failed in his larger purpose. This was the extent of the town's growth." (*History of Skagit and Snohomish Counties*, page 247.)

AT-SAR-KAL LAKE, see Lake Washington.

ATSMITH, see Willapa Harbor.

ATTALIA, a town in Walla Walla County. It was named by Mrs. V. K. Loose of Seattle. While touring Italy she visited a little hamlet whose name appealed to her so strongly that her husband adopted it for his irrigation and townsite projects in 1906. (R. C. Julian, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 341.)

AUBURN, a city in King County. Dr. Levi W. Ballard, in 1886, laid off part of his claim as a townsite and called it "Slaughter" in honor of Lieutenant W. A. Slaughter, United States Army, who lost his life there during the Indian war of 1855-1856. On the completion of the railroad the town grew rapidly and in 1893 petitioned



the Legislature to change its name to Auburn. One of the agitators for the change of name told a group of legislators that it was discouraging for the hotel boy to shout to passengers leaving the train: "Right this way to the Slaughter House!" For all that, the gallant lieutenant deserves an enduring monument.

**AVERY**, a town in Klickitat County. It was named in honor of A. G. Avery, right-of-way attorney for the Spokane, Portland & Seattle Railway Company. (L. C. Gilman, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 590.)

**AVON**, a town in Skagit County. The first settler there was W. H. Miller, 1882. He sold part of his land to A. H. Skaling on October 27, 1883, who opened a store. In 1890, H. W. and F. S. Graham started a nearby town which was called North Avon. It is said that those early settlers sought to honor Shakespeare.

**AXFORD**, postoffice and prairie in Grays Harbor County. The postoffice was named in October, 1880, after the pioneer settler of that place. (Hilda E. Evans, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 230.)

**AYERS POINT**, see Ayres Point.

**AYOCK POINT**, in Mason County, on the western shore of Hood Canal. It is one of the names given by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841.

**AYRES POINT**, in Mason County, on Hood Canal, opposite Potlatch. The name was given by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841, and possibly in honor of John Ayres, a member of his crew. On Kellett's Chart, 1847, the spelling is "Aynos."

## B

**BAADAM POINT**, in Clallam County, northeast of entrance to Neah Bay. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, called it "Village Point." Kellett's Chart, 1847, calls it "Mecena Point." The United States Coast Survey in 1852 found a neighboring Indian village called Baadah and that is the name used in the Pacific Coast Pilot. Recent charts retain this name, but with the last letter changed, making it Baadam.

**BACHELORS ISLAND**, in Clarke County. On Saturday, March 29, 1806, the Lewis and Clark Expedition gave this island the name Cathlapole (one spelling being Quathlapotle) Island after the Indian nation of that name, who lived near there. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, named it "Pasauks Island" and what is now Bachelor Island Slough was called Pigeon Creek. Recent charts carry the name Bachelor for both features.

**BACON**, in Grant County. The place was named by the railroad builders in 1900. The name was given as a joke, but still remains. (Arch Gill Bacon, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 523.)

**BADGER**, in Badger Flats, four miles north of Badger Canyon, in Benton County. Badgers were numerous in that vicinity and as

the water of Badger Springs was first found flowing from a badger hole the name so plentifully used was suggested. (W. L. Bass, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 224.)

BADILE BAY, see Padilla Bay.

BAG ISLAND, see Brown's Island.

BAHIA DE GASTON, see Bellingham Bay.

BAHIA DE LA ASUNCION, see Columbia River.

BAHIA DE NUNEZ GAONA, see Neah Bay.

BAHIA DE QUIMPER, see New Dungeness Bay.

BAILEY, a town in Grant County. It was named by Mrs. R. J. Bailey on March 21, 1911. (Robert A. Bailey, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 100.)

BAINBRIDGE ISLAND, in Kitsap County. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, by discovering Agate Passage, made known the existence of the island. It was named in honor of Captain William Bainbridge, hero of the *Constitution* in the *Java* action, and one of the famous men in United States naval records.

BAIRD, a town in Douglas County. It was named in honor of James Baird, a Scotchman, on whose homestead the postoffice was located, and he was the first postmaster. (N. E. Davis, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 116.)

BAKER, see Concrete, Skagit County.

BAKER, a mountain in Whatcom County, see Mount Baker.

BAKER BAY, in Pacific County, near the mouth of the Columbia River. It was named in 1792 by Lieutenant W. R. Broughton of the British expedition whom Captain Vancouver sent to explore the Columbia River, previously discovered and named by Captain Robert Gray, the American. The name was in honor of Captain James Baker of the American schooner *Jenny*, which Broughton found anchored in the bay. The Lewis and Clark Expedition makes this entry: "This Bay we call Haley's Bay from a favorite trader with the Indians." Sergeant Patrick Gass of the same expedition called it "Rogue's Harbor" from trouble with Indians. The name Baker Bay has persisted. It is often written Baker's Bay.

BAKER LAKE, in the vicinity of Mount Baker, Whatcom County.

BAKER RIVER, a tributary of the Skagit River in Whatcom and Skagit Counties. The *History of Skagit and Snohomish Counties*, page 118, says: "In 1877, a party, consisting of Otto Klement, Charles von Pressentin, John Duncan, John Rowley and Frank Scott, set forth from Mount Vernon in canoes manned by Indians to explore the upper Skagit. At the mouth of what the Indians called the Nahcullum River, which Klement renamed Baker River, the party

debarked." The proximity of the great mountain of that name was the reason for the rechristening.

BALCH'S COVE, in Pierce County; see Glencove.

BALCH PASSAGE, between Anderson and McNeil Islands, in Pierce County. The Inskip chart, 1846, shows it as "Ryder Channel." Lafayette Balch, owner of the brig "George Emory," in 1850, failed to receive proper encouragement from the townsite owners at Olympia and moved to the newly established Fort Steilacoom, where he began a merchandising business. It was in his honor that the nearby waterway was named.

BALLARD, formerly an independent city, now a portion of the City of Seattle, King County. R. W. Grover (*Names MSS.*, Letter 571) says: "On July 17, 1882, the present site of Ballard was platted in five- and ten-acre tracts under the name of Farmdale Homestead, by John Leary, Thomas Burke and W. R. Ballard. In May, 1888, Farmdale Homestead was vacated and Gilman Park plat was substituted, which consisted of some 700 acres. Captain W. R. Ballard was the active manager of the Gilman Park enterprise, which was promoted by a corporation called the West Coast Improvement Company. In 1889, the Seattle, Lake Shore & Eastern (now absorbed by the Northern Pacific) Railway Company constructed a spur to Gilman Park. Mr. Jennings, manager of the road, needing a name for the station at the end of the spur, decided to honor Captain Ballard and the new station was called Ballard. The name Gilman Park ceased almost immediately as a local designation for the townsite, but it was not until November, 1890, that steps were taken to change its legal name when, at a public meeting called chiefly for the purpose of discussing incorporation, Mr. R. W. Grover made the motion that Gilman Park be known as Ballard."

BALLSAM BAY, see Bellingham Bay, Whatcom County.

BANCROFT, in Skagit County. The *History of Skagit and Snohomish Counties*, page 247, says: "A town laid out around Alder Academy, Fidalgo Island, in 1883 by Rev. E. O. Tade. It was so named in honor of Hubert Howe Bancroft, the author of the Pacific Coast series. An unsuccessful enterprise, which never prospered beyond the sale of a few lots."

BANGOR, on Hood Canal, in Kitsap County. The place was formerly called "Three Spits," as there are three spits adjacent to one another jutting out into Hood Canal. When a postoffice was being established there the postoffice department gave it the name of Bangor. (H. W. Goodwin, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 412.)

BARE BLUFF, see Jim Crow Point, Columbia River.

**BARE ISLAND**, north of Waldron Island, in San Juan County. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, charted Ship Jack Island, evidently intending that the name should embrace the two small islands. The Admiralty Chart, known as the Richards Chart, 1858-1860, shows the smaller island as "Penguin Island." In the meantime, the United States Coast Survey, in 1853, observed the contrast in what were then called the "Shipjack Islands" and charted them under the new names Wooded and Bare Islands. On subsequent charts the name of Bare Island has persisted, while that of "Wooded Island" has gone back to Shipjack Island.

**BARNES ISLAND**, northeast of Orcas Island, in San Juan County. The Spaniard Eliza, 1791, charted Barnes and Clark Islands as "Islos de Aguayo," using part of the long name of a Spanish nobleman who will be more particularly noted under the name of Orcas Island. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, here honored an American naval hero as was done in the other names of islands in what they called the "Navy Archipelago."

**BARNESTON**, in King County. The postmaster writes (*Names MSS.*, Letter 466): "Barneston is so named in honor of John G. Barnes of Seattle. At the time the postoffice was established at this place, Mr. Barnes was one of the property owners in this vicinity and the postoffice was named in his honor, June 12, 1901."

**BARREN ISLAND**, a small islet north of San Juan Island, in San Juan County.

**BARRETT LAKE**, in Whatcom County. It was named in honor of Henry Barrett, who owned land there. (Fred L. Whiting, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 156.)

**BARRIER RIVER**, see Methow River.

**BARROWS BAY**, see Yukon Harbor in Kitsap County.

**BARRY**, a postoffice in Douglas County. It was named in 1893 in honor of A. J. Barry, who was postmaster at the time. The name was retained, though the office was moved to Stenson Ferry and Mrs. R. C. Steveson became postmistress. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 216.)

**BASALT POINT**, north of Port Ludlow, in Jefferson County. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, called it "Point Kanawi." The United States Coast Survey evidently gave the name in 1855 as it appears on the charts of that and subsequent years.

**BASCOMB**, a supposed town in Okanogan County. Guy Waring, of Winthrop, writes (*Names MSS.*, Letter 291): "Bascomb is a laughing place on the map. There is not and never was any such place, but instead it was the homestead of Henry Bascom Station, which the surveyor of rectangular townships that in this mountain country



were as a round peg in a square hole, called, carelessly, Bascom 'Station' instead of Station and on the maps it has been Bascom Station ever since. Draw a pen through it. Mr. Station is at present living at Twisp."

**BATTERY POINT**, one of the names for Alki Point. It was given that name by the United States Coast Survey in 1856. George Davidson, of that Survey (*Pacific Coast Pilot*, page 607), says that the Admiralty chart corrected to 1865 shows this point as Roberts' Point (the Wilkes names of 1841) and he also says that the Indian name was "Me-kwah-mooks." The recent Government charts use the name Alki Point.

**BATTLE GROUND**, a town in Clarke County. Aug. H. Richter writes (*Names MSS.*, Letter 538): "In early days, forty or forty-five years ago, the Indians drove off live stock across the Lewis River three miles north of this place. The grandchild of Chief Jack told me the whole story thirty years ago. The Twenty-first Infantry from Vancouver was ordered out and there was fighting all around here. The soldiers received orders in the morning to shoot all Indians on sight. While the scouts were out, peace was declared, but they did not know it, and accidentally shot and killed the chief. In 1886, I built a store here and called it Battle Ground Store. In 1902, I platted the place."

**BATTLESHIP ISLAND**, a small islet north of San Juan Island, in San Juan County. It is so named because of its resemblance to a battleship.

**BAY CENTER**, a town in Pacific County. The name was first spelled Bay Centre. It was suggested by Mrs. Mattie Rhoades, then Miss Mattie Goodpasture, as the village site was about the middle of the landward side of Willapa Harbor. (L. L. Bush, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 97.)

**BAY CITY**, a town in Grays Harbor County. It was named because of its location on South Bay. (American Pacific Whaling Company, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 45.)

**BAYVIEW**, a town on Padilla Bay, Skagit County. It was platted and named on April 7, 1884, by William J. McKenna, the pioneer who died on May 3, 1916. The object in selecting the place was the desire of D. A. Jennings, a wholesale grocer of Seattle, to establish there a branch store.

**BAZALGETTE POINT**, on the northwest extremity of San Juan Island, in San Juan County. It was named in 1868 by Captain Pender of the Royal Navy in honor of Captain George Bazalgette of the British Army, who commanded at British Camp, 1860-1867, during

part of the time of joint occupancy of the island. This was during the dispute over the ownership of the San Juan Islands.

BEACH, a town on the eastern shore of Lummi Island, Whatcom County. It was named in honor of Wade H. Beach, who filed on his land claim there on November 20, 1884. (Mrs. Pauline A. Buchholz, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 507.)

BEAR RIVER, emptying into the southeast portion of Willapa Harbor, Pacific County. The Indian name was "Atisowil," which is said to mean Bear River.

BEAN'S POINT, see Restoration Point.

BEAVER LAKE, a small lake five miles east of Lake Sammamish, King County. J. B. Scott (*Names MSS.*, Letter 499) says: "A habitat of beavers years ago."

BECKETT POINT, south of Cape George, Port Discovery, in Jefferson County. The Wilkes Exploring Expedition, 1841, charted it as "Sandy Point." Beckett Point evidently originated with the Kellett chart, 1846, and has been retained on subsequent maps.

BEE, a postoffice on McNeil Island, Pierce County. The name arose from the fact that an extensive apiary was maintained there when the postoffice was secured.

BEEBE, a postoffice in Douglas County. It was named in honor of James Beebe of Wakefield, Massachusetts. He was president of the Wenatchee-Chelan Orchard Company, which owned a large orchard tract on the east side of the Columbia River. The office was established in December, 1912. (Grace D. McInarie, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 510.)

BELFAST, see Mentor in Garfield County.

BELL'S BLUFF, see Cape Horn, Columbia River.

BELLE ROCK, in the middle of Rosario Strait, San Juan County. The United States Coast Survey discovered, named and charted this danger to navigation in 1854. George Davidson, of that Survey, describing it (*Pacific Coast Pilot*, page 563), says: "The steam-ship *Republic* ran upon this rock, also the pilot-boat *Potter*, and other vessels."

BELLEVUE ISLAND, one of the former names of San Juan Island.

BELLEVUE POINT, on the western shore of San Juan Island. It was charted in 1855 by the United States Coast Survey and evidently obtained its name from the former name of San Juan Island.

BELLINGHAM, a city on the bay of the same name in Whatcom County. The first white man to enter the bay was the Spaniard Eliza, 1791, who named in Seño de Gaston or Gulf of Gaston. On June 11, 1792, the bay was surveyed by Joseph Whidbey in a boat

excursion under Vancouver. The latter, on receiving his officer's report, charted the name Bellingham Bay. He does not say for whom the name was given, but he frequently associated the surnames and Christian names of those honored by giving them to nearby or related geographic features. He gave the name of Point William to the prominent point south of the entrance to the bay. In studying up his contemporaries, it was found that Sir William Bellingham checked over Vancouver's supplies and accounts as he was leaving England. There is very little doubt that Sir William Bellingham was the man thus honored. In that same year, 1792, the Spaniards of the "Sutil y Mexicana" Expedition again charted the bay and sought to retain a form of Spanish name by calling it Bahia de Gaston. The Spanish charts were not published for years, while the British charts appeared promptly and fixed the name permanently. David Thompson of the North-West Company of Montreal referred to the bay as "Ballsam Bay." The United States Coast Survey in 1854 showed the northern portion of the bay as "Gaston Bay," a partial recognition of the older Spanish name. The first town on the bay was given the Indian name Whatcom. Later there were established the towns of Sehome and Fairhaven. There were several combinations of these rival settlements, all of which later joined in the one City of Bellingham. Mrs. Ella Higginson, the poet, says she has had the distinction of having lived in three cities of Washington—Sehome, New Whatcom and Bellingham—without having moved out of her house.

BELLINGHAM CHANNEL, the waterway between Cypress and Guemes Islands, Skagit County. The Indian name was "Tut-segh." The Spaniard Eliza, 1791, called it "Canal de Guemes." The present name was given by the United States Coast Survey in 1853, taking it, of course, from the large bay just beyond.

BELLETOWN, that part of Seattle, King County, which developed on the donation claim of William N. Bell, one of the original founders of the city.

BELMA, a former postoffice in Yakima County. The postmaster at Grandview writes (*Names MSS., Letter 498*): "No town; there used to be a postoffice and a little store. Office was discontinued about five years ago; store also. Schoolhouse goes by the name of Belma School."

BENCH CREEK, a tributary of Bonaparte Creek in Okanogan County. It was named from being on a prominent bench not far from Anglin. (Charles Clark, in *Names MSS., Letter 288.*)

BENNIGHT, a town in Lewis County. On December 11, 1913, the town was named in honor of J. E. Bennight, manager of the Wash-

ington Coal & Mining Company, whose mines at the place so named are on the line of the Eastern Railway & Lumber Company's line to Kopiah.

BENSTON, a postoffice in Pierce County. The office was first called Huntersville, which was unsatisfactory. Mrs. Isabel Carlson (*Names MSS.*, Letter 135) writes: "The postoffice department asked for a list of old settlers' names to select from and they chose Benston from my father's name, William Benston. I think it was in 1893."

BENTON CITY, in Benton County. It was named in 1909 by F. L. Pitman, chief engineer, and C. E. Woods, general right-of-way man of the North Coast Railroad. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 587.)

BENTON COUNTY organized under the law of March 8, 1905, and named in honor of Thomas H. Benton, a great friend of the West, while United States senator from Missouri.

BERLIN, a projected town in Garfield County. The *History of Southeastern Washington*, page 549, says: "Berlin was platted January 9, 1883, by Charles Ward and Sarah E. Ward, his wife. Ward's addition was platted June 23, 1884, by the same parties. But this town existed only on paper. At one period it was rumored that Berlin would become a candidate for the county-seat as a compromise between Pomeroy and Pataha City, but nothing eventuated."

BERLIN, a postoffice in King County. The postmaster (*Names MSS.*, Letter 447) writes: "Named by the Great Northern Railroad Company in honor of Berlin, Germany, on account of the large sum provided by Germany for building the Great Northern."

BERRIAN, a postoffice in Benton County. "Named for the oldest settler here." (A. F. Berrian, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 374.)

BERTODANO COVE. This geographic feature appears on Kellett's Chart, 1847, and apparently on no others. It is located between Dungeness and Washington Harbor in Clallam County.

BERTRAND CREEK, a tributary of the Nooksack River, Whatcom County. It was named for James Bertrand, the first white man to settle on the creek. (Mrs. Phoebe Newton Judson, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 187.)

BESSEMER, a projected town in Skagit County. It was platted by Harrison Clothier in 1890 when the Cokedale mines were opened. It was town in name only.

BEULAH LAND, see Palissades, Douglas County.

BEVERLY, a town in Grant County. The name was chosen from Beverly, Massachusetts, by H. R. Williams, vice-president of the Chicago, Milwaukee & St. Paul Railway Company, who introduced many eastern names along the western line. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 530.)



BIG CAMASS PLAIN, near Springdale, Stevens County. It was mentioned by that name by John Work, of the Hudson's Bay Company in his journal for September 20, 1825, and the name still persists. (T. C. Elliott, in *Washington Historical Quarterly*, July, 1914, page 166.)

BIG CREEK, an upper branch of the Yakima River, in Kittitas County. J. K. Duncan, topographer with Captain George B. McClellan, 1853, mentions the creek as "Wahnoowisha River." (*Pacific Railroad Reports*, Volume I, page 210.)

BIG ISLAND, see Blalock Island.

BIG LAKE, in Skagit County east of Mount Vernon. On James Tilton's *Map of a Part of Washington Territory*, 1859, it is shown as "Delacy's Lake."

BIG SHEEP CREEK, in Stevens County, near the Canadian boundary. It is often called Sheep Creek and under the date of April 19, 1827, David Douglas, the botanist, writes: "Last night I forgot to say, a small stream four miles below our last camp falls into the river—called White Sheep River, from the antelopes found on its banks—a few miles back from the Columbia." (*Journal Kept by David Douglas*, 1823-1827, p. 248.)

BIG SKOOKUM, see Hammersley Inlet.

BILL POINT, south cape of Eagle Harbor, Kitsap County. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, named the harbor from its fancied resemblance to an eagle in shape. Wing Point still remains, but Bill Point does not so often appear on recent charts.

BILL OF ORCAS, see Point Doughty.

BINGEN, in Klickitat County. Theodore Suksdorf (*Names MSS.*, Letter 101) says: "The town was named by P. J. Suksdorf, owner of the premises, after the beautiful town on the Rhine, in Germany. The location of Bingen on the Columbia is much like Bingen on the Rhine. The town of Bingen was laid out in 1892. The postoffice was established two or three years later."

BIRCH BAY, in Whatcom County, near the Canadian boundary. In June, 1792, Vancouver made this bay an anchorage from which he sent out exploring parties in small boats. When describing the trees found on shore, he said: "and black birch; which latter grew in such abundance that it obtained the name of Birch Bay." The Spaniards, Galiano and Valdes, of the "Sutil y Mexicana" expedition, had already named it Enseñada de Garzon as they record meeting the Vancouver ships there on the evening of June 12, 1792. George Davidson (*Pacific Coast Pilot*, page 575) says the Indian name for the place was "Tsan-wuch."

**BIRCH POINT**, north cape of Birch Bay in Whatcom County. The name arose from the older name of Birch Bay. The Spaniard, Eliza, 1791, seems to have charted this point as "Punta de Señor Jose." The Admiralty Chart known as Richards, 1858-1859, shows the point as "South Bluff."

**BIRD ROCK**, in Rosario Strait, east of Decatur Island, in San Juan County. This feature consist of three small rocky islets very close together and rising to a height of about forty-feet. The name was given by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841, undoubtedly from the fact that many sea birds were found nesting there.

**BIRDSVIEW**, a town in Skagit County on the Great Northern Railway. Th epostmaster (*Names MSS.*, Letter 130) says the postoffice was named by George Savage in 1880. A different origin is given by the *History of Skagit and Snohomish Counties*, page 119. There it is claimed that B. D. Minkler established the postoffice in 1880 and was the first postmaster. Continuing—"The name of BirdsvieW was not derived, as might be supposed, from any ornithological connection, but from the fact that Mr. Minkler's first name, which was Birdsey, was commonly abbreviated to Bird, and from this the town took its name."

**BISHOP**, a town on Snake River in Whitman County. It was named by the railroad officials after Bishop Brothers, who settled on the bar there in 1877. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 61.)

**BISSELL**, a town on the Columbia River, in Stevens County. The postmaster (*Names MSS.*, Letter 105) says: "Named by Postmaster General Bissell in 1898." Wilson S. Bissell was Postmaster General in President Cleveland's second Cabinet from 1893 to 1895, which requires adjustment of the above statement at least in regard to the year.

**BLACK CREEK**, see Skohomish River.

**BLACK HILLS**, west of Olympia, in Thurston County. They are mentioned in the Treaty with the "S'Klallam" Indians January 26, 1855, and they are shown on the Map of the Surveyor General of Washington Territory, 1857.

**BLACK LAKE**, near Olympia in Thurston County.

**BLACK RIVER**, two rivers of that name, one in King County, the other in Thurston County. The one in King County drained Lake Washington into the Duwamish River. This Black River at the present site of Renton had the name of "Quo-doultz-spu-den" in the Duwamish language. Recent changes are doing away with this "Black River" as a geographic name. The river of that name in Thurston County has a longer history. In the Journal of John Work of the

Hudson's Bay Company (published in the *Washington Historical Quarterly*, July 1912) we have one of the earliest known records of the river. When the North-West Company of Montreal was absorbed by the Hudson's Bay Company, Governor George Simpson brought out Doctor John McLoughlin to be Chief Factor of the Columbia District. Arriving at Fort George (Astoria) in November, 1824, Governor Simpson ordered an expedition to proceed northward to discover the mouth of Fraser River. Under James McMillan a party of forty-three, including John Work as one of the clerks, started on November 18, 1824, by way of what is now Willapa Harbor, a portage to Grays Harbor and up the Chehalis River. On Sunday, November 28, they continued up that stream "to where it receives a little river called the Black River from the Northward." Such a reference in the journal indicates that the name may have been used before the arrival of this party. In the same day's entry Work says: "The Black River, so named from the colour of its water, is from 20 to 30 yards wide." On the next day they sent to an Indian village seeking Pierre Charles, "who has been with the Indians for some time." This is another evidence that this party was not the discoverers of Black River. On reaching Black Lake, Work simply remarks it as the source of the river, but on the return trip, under the date of December 26, he refers to it as "Scaadchet Lake." The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, refers to the river and lake as "Sachal." The Secret Mission of Warre and Vavasour reported, 1846, that light baggage could be forwarded by way of "the Satchet or Black River." (*Washington Historical Quarterly*, April, 1912, page 151.) George Gibbs in 1854 (*Pacific Railroad Reports*, Volume I., page 468) called the river "Satchall." Work declares in 1824 that there was ample evidence that the portages had long been used by Indians, which helps to account for the Indian names.

BLACK ROCK, east of Blakely Island, in San Juan County. It was named by the United States Coast Survey in 1854. Near it the Survey named White Rock. These two were called "The Pointers" by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841.

BLAINE, a city in Whatcom County at the Canadian boundary. It was namad by Cain Brothers on April 23, 1885, in honor of James G. Blaine, Republican nominee for President the year before. (J. W. Sheets, *Names MSS.*, Letter 349.)

BLAKE ISLAND, near the entrance to Port Orchard, in Kitsap County. In charting this island in 1841, the Wilkes Expedition did not explain the choice of names. It seems most likely that it was intended as an honor for George Smith Blake, a naval officer who

had charge of the United States Coast Survey, 1837-1848. This officer and Wilkes must have had many conferences before the expedition sailed in 1838.

BLAKE'S LAKE, in the northern portion of Spokane County. The missionary, De Smet, named it "Lake De Nef." (N. W. Durham, *Spokane and the Inland Empire*, page 139.)

BLAKELY, an island in San Juan County; a rock, harbor and town on Bainbridge Island in Kitsap County. The island and the harbor were both named by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841, in honor of Johnston Blakely, an American naval hero of the War of 1812. The name of the rock and of the town were derived from that of the harbor. In 1813, Blakely was given command of the new sloop-of-war *Wasp*, in which he made a number of most daring captures. On June 28, 1814, he captured the *Reindeer*, for which Congress voted him a gold medal. After a number of other successful exploits, news of the sloop ended. No word was ever received of the *Wasp* or her brave crew. There is now being made an effort to standardize the spelling of the name. The officer himself on one sheet of manuscript spelled his own name Blakely and Blakeley.

BLALOCK ISLAND, in the Columbia River, Benton County. The name is in honor of Dr. Nelson G. Blalock, a Civil War surgeon, who became one of the best known pioneers of the Walla Walla country, his greatest ambition being to extend and improve fruit culture. One of his largest undertakings was on the island that now bears his name. He was a member of the Washington Constitutional Convention. For thirty years he was a member of the Board of Trustees of Whitman College and for twelve years he was President of the Board. He died at Walla Walla on March 14, 1913, aged 77 years. John Work of the Hudson's Bay Company mentioned in his journal for June 27, 1825, the island as "Big Island." T. C. Elliott, editor of the *Work Journal*, says the fur traders called it "Long Island." (*Washington Historical Quarterly*, April 1914, page 86.)

BLANCHARD, a town in Skagit County. In about 1913, the name of a town known as Fravel was changed to Blanchard. (*Names MSS., Letter 25.*)

BLIND BAY, on the north shore of Shaw Island, in San Juan County.

BLOCKHOUSE, a town in Klickitat County. It was established in 1856 and was a fort for Government troops during the Indian war of that time. (*Names MSS., Letter 524.*)

BLOWERS BLUFF, the north cape of Penn Cove, Whidbey Island, in Island County. A family by the name of Ford lived there about



forty-five years ago when it was known as Fords Point. After the Fords left and the Blowers family lived there it became known as Blowers Bluff and is so indicated on the Government charts. (*Names MSS.*, Letter 28.)

BLUE CANYON, a town on Lake Whatcom, in Whatcom County. The townsite was located on a homestead taken up in 1886 by Fred Zobris. Joe Wardner, a noted miner for whom the town of Wardner, Idaho, is named, purchased some coal claims about 800 feet above Lake Whatcom in 1891. In climbing up for his second inspection of the properties on a hazy autumn day he said: "We will call this Blue Canyon Mine and the townsite, Blue Canyon," and that was done. (J. D. Custer, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 209.)

BLUE MOUNTAINS, in Columbia and Garfield Counties. One of the first references to these mountains is by Gabriel Franchere, one of the Astorians. On arriving at the Walla Walla River, he wrote: "A range of mountains was visible to the S. E., about fifty or sixty miles off." He does not give the mountains a name. On July 9, 1811, David Thompson of the North West Company of Montreal, refers to them as "Shawpatin Mountains," but in his entry for August 8, 1811, he says: "Beginning of course see the Blue Mountains, between the Shawpatin and the Snake Indians." In a footnote, T. C. Elliott, editor of the Thompson Journal, says: "Apparently the first record of this name Blue as applied to these mountains." (*Oregon Historical Society Quarterly*, Volume XV., pages 57 and 121.) Alexander Ross, J. K. Townsend, David Douglas, Peter Skene Ogden, John Work and other early travellers continued the use of the name, Blue Mountains. One of the first references is by Rev. Gustavus Hines (*Exploring Expedition to Oregon*, published 1851, page 323): "As you approach the Blue Mountains on the south, particularly on the Umatilla and Walla Walla Rivers, the hills disappear, and you find yourself passing over a beautiful and level country, about twenty-five or thirty miles broad, on the farther borders of which rise with indescribable beauty and grandeur, that range which, from its azure-like appearance, has been called the 'Blue Mountains.'"

BLUESLIDE, a town in Pend Oreille County. "Blueslide took its name from a point of the hill having slid into the river leaving a gap behind. The blue comes from the color of the face of the slide towards the river. It must have been named during rainy weather. The face is principally clay and when wet is blue, but when dry is more of a gray." (C. L. Peters, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 132.)

BLUESTEM, a town in Lincoln County. It is in a large wheat-growing section and "bluestem" is the principal kind of wheat grown

there. This gave rise to the name. (H. A. Thompson, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 256.)

BLUNT'S ISLAND, see Smith Island.

BLUSTRY POINT, see Point Ellice.

BLY, a postoffice in Asotin County. It is named in honor of the postmaster, Joseph Bly.

BOAT CHANNEL, the passage between Turn and San Juan Islands, San Juan County. It is shown on the British Admiralty Chart, Number 2840, but is not named on the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey charts.

BOAT HARBOR, see Mats Mats.

BOCA DE ALAVA, see Cape Alava.

BOCA DE CAAMANO, see Admiralty Inlet.

BOCA DE FIDALGO, see Rosario Strait.

BOCA DE FLON, see Deception Pass.

BOCA DE HORCASITAS, see San Juan Channel.

BODIE, a town in Okanogan County. It was named for the Bodie Mine. (Merrill & Rowe, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 313.) A small creek at that place has the same name.

BOISFORT, a town in Lewis County. Boisfort Prairie received its name at the hands of the French-Canadian employes of the Hudson's Bay Company. Pierre Charles, a Canadian half-breed, is reputed to have been the first settler there. The first American settler was C. F. White in 1852.

BOLTON PENINSULA, between Quilcene and Dabop Bays, Hood Canal, Jefferson County. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, Volume XXIII., page 325, says: "Col-see-ed [Quilcene] Harbor is separated from Dabop Bay by Bolton Peninsula, which is 4 miles long, by 1 mile wide." No reference is made to the honor intended by the name. There was a twelve-gun bomb-brig by that name and also a Midshipman William Finch, who afterward became Captain Bolton. He was placed in charge of the captured *Nocton*, a prize of the *Essex*. Wilkes, in his scheme of honors, might have intended either one of these.

BONAPARTE, a creek, lake and mountain in Okanogan County. The creek is a tributary of the Okanogan River at Tonasket. The Wilkes Expedition, 1841, charts the creek as "River Bonaparte."

BONILLA ISLAND, see Smith Island.

BONITA, a town in Douglas County. It was named in 1902 by Lieutenant Edward Nasler from a name he picked up in the Philippine Islands. (G. T. Goudrey, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 421.)

BONNIE LAKE, see Rock Lake in Spokane County.

BORDEAUX, a town in Thurston County. It was named in 1900 in honor of Thomas Bordeaux, who started a large logging enterprise there. Dora E. Webb, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 35.)

BOSSBURG, a town in Stevens County. It was platted in 1892 and named from the owners of the land—John Berg and C. S. Boss. (Elmer D. Hall, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 520.)

BOSTON HARBOR, near Olympia in Thurston County. C. D. Hillman, a Seattle real estate dealer, purchased the Dofflemeyer donation claim at Dofflemeyer Point and adjacent lands, which he platted and tried to sell under the name of Boston Harbor.

BOSTON POINT, on Hood Canal near the present Pleasant Harbor. It was so named by the Wilkes Expedition, 1841, but the name as applied is not found on recent charts.

BOTHELL, a city in King County. George Bothell is a well known citizen and early legislator of the state. He and his brother began in 1886 a logging and shingle-making business where the present city stands. In naming the place an honor was conferred upon their father, David C. Bothell. The city was incorporated in 1908. (I. T. Williamson, in *Names MSS.*, Letter 371.)

BOULDER ISLAND, at southeastern extremity of Lopez Island, San Juan County. It was charted by the United States Coast Survey, 1855.

BOULDER REEF, off the northwest shore of Sinclair Island, Skagit County. It was discovered and named by the United States Coast Survey in 1854. The description includes: "A huge erratic granite boulder is seen at ordinary tides inside the outer point of the reef." The British Admiralty chart of 1859 sought to name this "Panama Reef," probably from an accident to the steamship *Panama*, which was on the San Francisco run during the Fraser River gold excitement of 1858.

BOUNDARY BAY, the western portion of Semiahmoo Bay, Whatcom County. The Galiano and Valdes expedition for the Spaniards, 1792, charted the whole gulf as "Ensenada del Eugaño," meaning "Gulf of the Deception," probably because the explorers had run into shallow water. The Admiralty chart of 1847 simply indicated shallow water. The United States Coast Survey named it "Mud Bay" in 1855, but on a second edition of the chart, it was called Boundary Bay and has so remained on all recent charts.

(To be continued)

## ATTITUDE OF THE HUDSON'S BAY COMPANY DURING THE INDIAN WAR OF 1855-1856

Most writers of the history of the Yakima or Indian War of 1855-1856 have deemed it necessary to discuss to some extent the alleged participation of the Hudson's Bay and Puget Sound Agricultural Companies in this event, to the discredit of both. The usual allegation, briefly stated, is that these Companies, by their acts of omission, if not actual commission, gave comfort to the enemy. One has to go no further than Governor Isaac I. Stevens to secure the typical attitude of most of the pioneers and territorial officials. In two reports—one a message to the Legislature, another a report to the Department of Indian Affairs—Governor Stevens summarizes the problem with the above Companies in a forceful light. In his message appears these words:

"The orders were accordingly given, and all the arrangements made to penetrate the fastnesses whence the Indians sallied forth to spread devastation and death, when a difficulty, which had been felt, acknowledged, and made great cause of complaint from the commencement of the war, assumed an aspect which called for the promptest action.

"I refer to the so-called neutrals in the war, who remained on their claims unmolested, when our patriotic citizens were compelled to live in block houses. There is no such thing, in my humble judgment, as neutrality in an Indian war, and whoever can remain on his claim unmolested, is an ally of the enemy, and must be dealt with as such. These men, I ordered into the towns, giving them their choice of residence at Olympia, Nisqually, or Steilacoom, and on their returning to their claims in violation of orders, I caused them to be put in close confinement at Steilacoom.

"Thereupon, exertions were made to procure their release, which I met by my proclamation placing Pierce County under martial law.

"The testimony of the military officers in the field that their exertions were fruitless to find the enemy till the decisive step had been taken of ordering and keeping in the suspected persons, and that afterwards they repeatedly struck them, and effectively prevented their rallying again, is the best evidence of the necessity of the course taken by the executive."

In his report to the Indian Department under date of October 22, 1856, the Governor states:



"Again, what is the interest of the Hudson Bay Company? There are unquestionably large deposits of gold, both north and south of the 49th parallel, east of the Cascade Mountains. A road has been made connecting Fraser River with the British interior, and the Hudson Bay Company have established a post in connection therewith on the main Columbia, north of the 49th parallel. This post and Fort Colville were supplied over this road the present year.

"I ask again, what is the interest of the Hudson Bay Company? Most unquestionably to develop the British interior and its mines of gold, and to keep Americans out, which will be most effectually accomplished by yielding to the demands of the Indians east of the Cascades, and making peace by an abandonment of the country.

"I charge no man of that company with collusion with the Indians, but I know what human nature is; it will look out sharply for its own interests, and the interest of the Hudson Bay Company is the same as the Indian conceives to be his interest in that quarter." (Hazard Stevens, *Life of General Isaac I. Stevens*, ii, 229.)

It is quite possible and reasonably probable that some of the superannuated employees of the Hudson's Bay Company living with their Indian wives and half-blood children on claims, were in collusion with Indians on the warpath; but a verdict even unfavorable to the position of these ex-servants can in no way be an indictment of the Company. The Governor's further charge: "I charge no man of that Company with collusion with the Indians, but I know what human nature is; it will look out sharply for its own interests, and the interests of the Hudson Bay Company is the same as the Indian conceives to be his interest in that quarter," although a hypothetical statement, did, coming from a man of unblemished character, carry great weight with the pioneers who have gone the Governor one further and for his suspicions have substituted their convictions: they believed the Hudson's Bay Company actually abetted and comforted the Indians.

The whole truth will never be known.

It is the purpose of this document to place before the reader evidence, much of which has heretofore been unavailable, which will show that the Hudson's Bay Company actually rendered valuable and indispensable aid to the authorities, in many cases freely and without hope of recompense; that they kept the authorities at all times informed of the movements of hostiles within the limits of their observations; and that the fullest confidence was placed in them by the authorities (despite suspicions) and at no time was this confidence dispelled by an overt act.

Several of the letters are republished from a pamphlet entitled "Message of the Governor of Washington Territory," etc. (Olympia, Edward Furste, Public Printer, 1857); others have been printed from the originals or copies thereof which are now in my collection located at room 234 County-City Building, Seattle.

CLARENCE B. BAGLEY.

Fort Victoria

5th November 1852

William F. Tolmie Esq're

Dear Sir

I have barely a moment to inform you that one of our men was this day shot at the sheep station near the north dairy. The poor man was found there lifeless, near the hut, by his associate shepherd, who supposes the deed must have been committed by 2 Cowegen Indians, whom he left at the hut with poor Brown that morning when the sheep were driven out to pasture.

We have stopped the sale of powder.

Very truly yours,     †  
James Douglas

(Signed)

Fort Victoria,  
17th Nov. 1853

William F. Tolmie Esq.,

My dear Sir

I now despatch a canoe for the purpose of bringing on any letters for this place that may have accumulated at Nisqually, and I transmit by the same conveyance a letter for the Colonial Office, which I will now thank you to forward by earliest mail as I am anxious it should reach the hands of the Colonial Secretary as soon as possible.

All is quiet here at present, though much alarm is felt by the settlers, for which there is no cause; the murderers have fled to Nainaimo, and we propose giving them chase as soon as the steamer arrives here, it being the intention to send a sufficient force to take them wherever they may be found.

The Cowegians appear to regret the untoward event very much, and have sent in word that they will not harbour nor screen the murderers, and will apprehend them if possible.

That is satisfactory provided they keep their promise, which I think they intend to do.

There is no word of the "Mary Dare" or "Recovery" from California, and we are rather anxious for intelligence from abroad.

Please send a few rams for Mr. Langford by the return canoe.

With best wishes,

I remain, dear Sir,

Yours truly,

James Douglas.

(Signed)

Fort Victoria

13th June 1854

William F. Tolmie Esq're

Nisqually, W. T.

My dear Sir

I was yesterday favored with your letter of the 4th June, and the packet, forwarded by Mr. Mason, which he kindly left at Bellevue with Mr. Griffin.

I am of course obliged to you for contradicting the foolish reports in circulation about arming the Stickine Indians to attack the people at Bellingham Bay, though I would not have taken the trouble of doing so myself.

No man in his right senses would ever suppose that the Governor of a British Province would be guilty of the monstrous outrage of arming a horde of savages and letting them loose upon the defenceless frontier of a neighboring and friendly state. The truth is the reverse of that, the Indians arrived here, from Nisqually, exasperated to the last degree about the loss of their chief, and under Providence would infallibly have fallen upon the defenceless American settlements, had they not been opposed in the most decided manner by this Government. I, moreover, sent a message by Mr. Crosbie, a gentleman from Nisqually, to the American settlements on the opposite side of the Straits, warning them to be upon their guard, as I feared the Indians meditated a treacherous attack.

I also last summer supplied those settlements with arms for their defense, which have not yet been returned.

In fact the agis of the British Government has been thrown over them, and to us more than to their own government are they indebted for their present security.

Nothing is known here about the Indian attack upon the inhabitants of Bellingham Bay or who were the assailants. Mr. Mason must look for that information elsewhere, my own anxieties are enough, without intermeddling with matters beyond the range of my duties.

The "Otter" lately returned from Fort Simpson where all was well. The ice ship had taken in a full cargo, and left for San Francisco. That is quite an achievement. "Kennedy" was himself again, and had recovered his vigour of body and mind.

I have since seen Governor Mason at this place and had a very pleasant interview with him.

With best wishes,

Yours sincerely,

James Douglas.

(Signed)

Olympia, W. T.

Oct. 30th 1855

My dear Doctor,

The indian recommended by you to the Company of Capt Eaton, reports to Wm. Poe, that he was with Wm. McAllister & another man when they were attacked by a large party of Indians, & all killed except your guide,

I write to ask what credence you give to this story? do you think the Clickitats have crossed the mountains? & if so what is their probable force?

In a word, let me know your opinion of the matter and also what you would advise to be done, and oblige

Yours Truly

James Tilton

Adjt Gen W. T.

We are very scarce of arms if you can furnish 25 muskets we would be pleased to receive them, as there are about that number of men here without arms.—although 100 Rifles are on the way he from Fort Vancouver

(Signed)

J. Tilton

Office Adjt Gen W. T

Olympia W. T

Oct 31—1855

To Doct W. L. Tolmie

Chf Factor, etc.

Pugets Sound Agri Co.

Dear Sir,

I beg to offer my thanks for your kind letters, and we are exceedingly obliged for the prompt transmission of the gratifying intelligence of Capt Eaton's safety.



Also for your valuable suggestions in regard to a cantonment at Porters & the Snoqualmie pass, which I will take especial care to urge upon Gov. Mason & Gen Wool.

With regard to your sentiments of affinity of blood & interests in cooperating with the British authorities at Vancouver's Island I cordially sympathise; & will avail myself of it, as an element in the formation of plans for the prosecution of the war upon the savage.

Do me the further favor to send the enclosed note to Lt. Nugen, as all the Horses in Olympia are *out*

I am Sir

With the highest respect & esteem

Your Obt Srvt

(Signed)

James Tilton

Adjt Gen W. T.

Head Quarters, Fort Steilacoom,  
November 1st, 1855.

James Tilton

Adj't. Gen. W. T. Volunteers, Olympia:

Sir:—I have detained Capt. Wallace's company of volunteers to assist in protecting this port in case an attack should be made. Dr. Tolmie, just in from Nisqually, informs me that one of his shepherds saw a band of some twenty Klickitats just in rear of Nisqually last night.

I have nearly all the women and children in the county at the post, and will of course protect them.

I would respectfully request that all the men in this section of the country be called out, as I am firmly of the belief that we are to have a general Indian war in this vicinity.

Send me down cartridges at the earliest moment, as it is reported the Indians are to make an attempt at taking our fort to-night. This is only a report, but I wish to have plenty of ammunition, and I am rather short just at this time.

With great respect, I have the honor to be,

Your most obedient servant,

(Signed)

John Nugen,

2d Lieut. 4th Inf. Com. Post,

Executive Office, Ter. Wash.,  
Olympia, Nov. 1st, 1856. [1855]

Hon. James Douglass,

H. B. M. Governor:—

Sir:—It having been made apparent to us that the Indians inhabiting both sides of the Cascades have a determined combination among their various tribes to make war upon us, and as they have been sufficiently bold to attack us within a short distance of our settlements, I deem it as we are in great need of arms and ammunition, to request from you, sir, what assistance is in your power to afford.

Your known courtesy to Americans generally, and the feeling our people know you entertain towards us, leads me to make this request with the less hesitation. I do it also that it may be made apparent to the savages upon the Sound that the affinities of blood and interest existing between our nations, are always sufficiently strong to bring forth from the one to the other, support when threatened with danger.

If it could be done without serious injury to the affairs of your Hon. H. B. Co., I would deem it an additional service that the arms should be sent here by one of your steamers, as you are aware our settlements are so isolated, the presence of steamers such as yours, may deter attacks which I have reason to think may be made upon one or more of them in a few days.

The presence of a steamer in this part of the Sound will be of great advantage.

The Active and Massachusetts are expected in the Sound in a few days, and the arrival of one of these vessels will relieve us from trespassing further upon your kindness. . .

Such services as you may render, sir, will, I beg to assure you, be most warmly appreciated by the government of the United States, as well as the inhabitants of this territory.

With assurances of my highest respect,

I have the honor to be, very respectfully,

Your most ob't servant,

(Signed)

James Tilton,

Ad't Gen. W. T.

Victoria, Vancouver's Island,

November 6th, 1855.

Hon. James Tilton

Adj't Gen. W. T. V., Washington Territory:—

Sir:—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of a letter from you, dated, "Olympia, November 1st," representing the danger

to which the settlements on Puget Sound were exposed from the inroads of savages, and soliciting aid in arms and munitions for the purpose of defending the country, and repelling the threatened invasion of the Indian tribes.

I most cordially acknowledge the moral obligation which binds christian and civilized nations to exert their utmost power and influence in checking the inroads of the merciless savage, and it is a cause of sincere regret on my part that our means of rendering you assistance comes infinitely short of our wishes.

We are, I confess with sorrow, badly prepared for the exigencies of a state of warfare—there being, at this moment, only one hundred stand of arms in this colony, and those are in the stores of the Hudson's Bay Company.

I have made a purchase of fifty of those (all that can be spared) for your service, and now forward them by Captain Hunt, under consignment to Dr. Tolmie, who will arrange with you about their delivery. I have also secured ten barrels of gunpowder and a supply of ball, a part of which will also be now forwarded by the steamer, "Traveller."

Her Majesty's ship, "President," sailed about a week ago, from this colony, for the port of San Francisco, or I might have procured efficient aid from her commander.

The Hudson's Bay Company's steam vessels are also both absent at this time, or I would instantly have despatched one of them to Nisqually, not of course in the character of a belligerent, but with orders to aid and assist in protecting your settlements against the attacks of savages.

We are hourly expecting the arrival of the steam vessel Beaver, and it is my intention to send her on to Nisqually, with as little delay as possible at this place, and by that conveyance, I will cause the remainder of the ammunition, which the steamer Traveller cannot take, to be forwarded.

The moral effect of the steamer "Beaver's" visit to the Sound will be powerfully felt by the native Indian tribes, and may contribute in some measure, to confirm their wavering loyalty, and to detach them from the general Indian confederacy.

I trust in God, that such may be the event, and have again to express my deep regret, that we have not a more efficient force to send to your relief.

I have the honor to be, sir, your obedient servant,

(Signed)

James Douglass,  
Governor V. Islands.

Government House, Victoria, V. I.,

19th November, 1855.

Major James Tilton,

Or office administering the government of Washington Territory:—

Sir:—The Honorable Hudson's Bay Company's steamer, "Otter," having arrived at this fort, and discharged part of her cargo, I have decided on despatching her for the sake of greater expedition, with the remnant of her cargo on board, to Nisqually, and to proceed, should it be of advantage to your cause, as far as Olympia, with the supply of ammunition promised in my letter to you of the 6th inst. Her presence in the Sound will, I trust, convince the native tribes that our warmest sympathies are enlisted in your favor, and that they have to expect neither countenance nor support from Her Majesty's authorities in this quarter.

I much regret that it is not in my power to afford you more efficient assistance, and that the unprotected state of our own settlements, renders it peculiarly inadvisable to dispense with the services of the "Otter" for more than a few days. The natives in this quarter continue quiet and friendly, though evidently powerfully moved in favor of their race, a feeling which may exercise a mischievous influence on their excitable minds, while it constrains us to maintain a vigilant control over their movements.

I have no fears as to the result of the struggle at Nisqually. If the Indians leave their fastnesses, and venture to meet your forces in the open country, they will soon be made to yield the palm of victory, and in any case, destitute as they are of resources, they cannot protract the war beyond a very few months.

Begging to refer you for further information to Captain Hunt, to whom I have fully explained my views,

I have the honor to be, sir,

Your obedient humble servant,

(Signed)

James Douglass,

Governor Vancouver's Island.

Executive Office, Washington Territory,

Olympia, Nov. 23, 1855.

His Excellency, James Douglass,

Governor Vancouver's Island:—

Sir:—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your favor of the 19th inst., with the additional supply of ammunition.



The steamer "Otter" arrived here on the evening of the 21st inst.

I fully concur with you as to the influence her presence here will have upon the tribes within our waters, who may be considered as wavering. The results, however, which have been accomplished by our troops since application was first made to you, have, I think, been sufficient to prevent at least for the present, any hostile movements on their part.

The present emergency is not such as to render the presence of the "Otter" here indispensable, otherwise I should avail myself of any assistance she might be able to render. I am daily expecting the arrival of a steamer at Steilacoom, with additional forces and munitions of war, which must of themselves have an intimidating effect upon the Indians of the Sound.

Permit me again to tender to you my acknowledgments of your cordial co-operation in the present excited state of affairs

I have the honor to be, sir

Very respectfully, your ob't serv't,

(Signed)

C. H. Mason

Acting Governor Washington Territory.

Head Quarters, Puget Sound District,  
Fort Steilacoom, Dec. 4th, 1855.

Acting Governor C. H. Mason,  
Olympia, W. T.

Sir:—In order that I may be able to acquaint myself more intimately with Indian affairs in this part of the territory, I take the liberty to request that you will forward to me a list of the sub-Indian agents on this side of the mountains, their several stations, and the number of Indians they each have in charge. It will also be of service to me if those agents could be instructed to report to me all changes that may occur at their several posts.

Dr. Tolmie, of the Hudson's Bay Company, has applied to me for a guard of soldiers to protect his stores at Fort Nisqually. As our pack animals are small in number, and nearly broken down, and as the rivers are getting high that we cannot ford them with supplies, it may be necessary to withdraw the troops from the field in a short time, and to distribute them at such points as may most need, and such as have the best claims to protection. In view of such a state

of things, and of the case in all its relations, do you think it advisable for me to send a guard to Fort Nisqually?

I am, sir, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

(Signed)

E. D. Keyes,

Capt. 3d Artillery, Commanding.

Office Adj't Gen W. T Vols

Olympia W. T

Feb. 19, 1856

N. Piers Esq

Agt P. S. Agri Co.

Sir

I am directed by Governor Stevens of this Territory, to request your aid in procuring men for a Lewis County Company to take the field with a detachment now *en route* for the White River Country.

C. C. Pajett of Cowlitz Landing is the enrolling officer.

Knowing your influence with the people of your vicinity or with Whites or half Breeds W. P. has been directed to confer with you.

In the hope of your assistance in this

I am Sir

Very Resp Yours

(Signed)

J. Tilton

Office Adj't. Genl. W. T.

Olympia W. T.

Mch 2d 1856.

Doctor W. T. Tolmie

Chief Factor P. S. Agri. Co

Sir:

By order of the Governor and Comdr in chief, I am instructed to send to your Fort certain settlers—with their families,—whose further continuance upon their farms are deemed incompatible with the public safety or interests.

The Governor desires you to cause these people to be detained at your Fort,— keeping an account of their expenses and making a Report of your observations upon them, and any suggestions relative to them you may deem proper. As soon as possible arrangements will be made relative to these people, but in the meanwhile the Govern-

mnt here depnds upon your assistance in keeping them at Nesqually and seeing that they have no communication with the hostile Indians—

Very Respectfully,

Your Obdt Servt.

James Tilton Adj. Genl.

(Signed)

Nisqually March 3rd 1856

James Douglas Esquire

Dear Sir

I have received your letter by the "Active" with accompanying letter for the Columbia and England which will be duly passed.

I have received from Mr. Mackenzie an account of the silver money lately sent to Victoria. It does not belong to the Puget's Sound, but to the Hudson's Bay Company, as payments to the former body are almost invariably made in gold.

The war with the Indians has been resumed, and there are now about 500 soldiers, and volunteers in the field. Our guard of soldiers has been reduced to five, and I had some difficulty in prevailing on Coll. Casey to leave us any.

I mentioned to Capt. Keyes the charge proposed for the services of the "Beaver" which he seemed to consider reasonable enough. Next day however Lieut. Nugen called to say that the officers were of opinion that no charge should be made, in consideration of their having, at great inconvenience, furnished a guard for the place, the property of a private Company. He added that if we insisted on charging payment would be made, to which I replied that I had never supposed they would object, that I would represent the matter and doubted not, but that it would be as they desired.

The present mail is forwarded by a man named Robinson, who will be entitled to a payment of five Dollars for its safe delivery.

I am Dear Sir

Your very obedt. Servt.

(Signed)

W. F. Tolmie

Nisqually W. T.

15th March 1856

Dugal Mackintosh Esquire

Dear Sir

I have received yours dated Cowlitz 1st March, and shall attend to the instructions therein given as to the selection of articles to be sent across the portage by return of Peers' wagon.

On the Sunday following your departure from this, two white men were murdered by Indians on the south side of the Nisqually, and such has been the alarm since, that I do not at present look for the arrival of any wagon from Cowlitz.

We are all well here. By a recent order of the Governor's all the foreign born white residents on the south side of these plains have been ordered into this place, or Steilacoom, and by the Governor's written request, I am supplying such as are here, with necessities. The P. S. Co.'s Shepherds having been excepted. Mr. Hugins still remains with his assistants at Muck where three thousand sheep pasture, but all the Indian women, wives of the men herding sheep there, have come to the Fort.

Genl. Wood<sup>2</sup> is reported at Steilacoom with a re-inforcement of 150 Soldiers.

Mr. C. T. Graham's letter of the 28th ulto. has come to hand.  
I am Dear Sir.

Your Very Obedt. Servt.

(Signed)

W. F. Tolmie

Nisqually W. T. March 26th 1856

To Colonel Casey U. S. A.

Com.ding Puget Sound District

Washington Terry.

Sir

I learnt yesterday evening that on sunday afternoon, one of the Company's shepherds' (Finlayson) saw and was spoken to by eight Indians on foot, at Muck, near the Cold Spring, a well known locality at the S. E. corner of the plains whence a trail leads through a timbered country to swamps and small prairies on the upper Nisqually.

These Indians are considered to be part of the gang seen at Muck by Smith, and others, soon after the murder of White and Northcraft.

They told Finlayson that last week a train of wagons had been attacked on the Puyallip and the drivers killed, and they warned him to keep at a distance from the woods as there were five hundred Klikatats concealed there.

I do not believe that any but small parties of Klikatats can have crossed the mountains recently, but think it probable that the Indians



from White and Green Rivers may be moving toward the headwaters of the Nisqually. I am Sir

Very Respectfully

Your obedient Sert.

(Signed)

W. F. Tolmie

Fort Nisqually, W. T. May 23d 1856

To Lieut. Colonel Silas Casey U. S. A.

Comang. Puget Sound District W. T.

Fort Steilacoom W. T.

Sir:

In compliance with your request communicated yesterday, that I should report to you particulars relative to the murder of a friendly Indian here on the afternoon of the 21st. Inst. I have to submit the following statement—

On Tuesday the 21st May 1856 at about 2 P. M. as the work people of Fort Nisqually were going out to resume labor after dinner, two young lads—volunteers—passed the Fort, and enquired the way to camp Montgomery of the Indian Bob, or “Saysilloh,” as he was proceeding out to work—about half past two, another volunteer, on foot, dressed in a red Shirt, corduroy trousers, and old felt hat, and armed with a rifle, came from the direction of Packwoods Ferry, and asked the way to camp Montgomery, and also, whether the two lads above mentioned had already passed—and loitering about the Fort a short time after obtaining the desired information he set out on the wagon road to Montgomerys and in a few minutes after, the report of a gun was heard in the direction he had taken, and where the Indian Bob was chopping firewood—

In about three quarters of an hour subsequent to the red shirted volunteer's leaving the Fort Bob was found on the slope of a bank in sight of the establishment, two hundred yards or so from the spot where he had been working, wounded in the back. He had fallen helpless there in his endeavor to reach assistance. In answer to questions he said that he had not been shot by either of the young men he had directed to Montgomery's but stated that he saw a man in a red shirt running across the road from beyond the fence, and within a few yards of him—

Bob, when shot, was chopping, a tree into lengths, inside an enclosed field, and in sight of about a cord and a half of billets of wood lying in three heaps one next the fence and two near the opposite side of the road, but all visible to anyone traveling that way. The spot where he must have been standing, as indicated by the position of the axe, found there by me yesterday morning, is distant from the

east gate of Fort Nisqually, 506 paces in a direct line, and, by the route the said volunteer followed—640 paces. From the fence, where the road adjoins the field, said spot is distant three yards or thereabouts, and in the fence there are spaces between the rails wide enough to admit of taking good aim with a firearm—

Bob it is supposed was wounded about 3 P. M. he died at eight P. M.

Between 5 and 6 o'clock by the sun on Wednesday two White men trading Sheep about 7 miles S. E. of Ft. Nisqually saw a man in a red shirt and hat running in the direction of Muck, but he was too far off for them to distinguish his features—at the P. S. Coys. Farm at Muck sometime before sunset on the same Wednesday a Sandwich Islander and halfbreed Canadian boy at work there, were accosted by a Volunteer dressed in a red shirt, cord. pants, and old felt hat and armed with a rifle, who wanted a horse to ride to camp Montgomery. After dark that night a volunteer named Aaron Lake or Leek dressed and accoutred as above described—reached Mr. Cronons at Thithlow 6 miles from Muck—On entering the house, he said that he was hungry and very tired—that he had lost his way coming from Olympia, and had “walked good 40 miles.” The distance by the road is about 22 or 23 miles. Lake lay down immediately after eating. On seeing his Rifle handled, he stated that it had been recently loaded—On Thursday morning he reached camp Montgomery, where he was placed under arrest for having killed an Indian Prisoner at Olympian—

The deceased Indian “Bob” as is known to many citizens of this county, was a remarkably quiet and unoffensive man—a general favorite. He had been for years employed as man of all work, and occasionally cook by Mr. Thos. Dean—Bailiff for the P. S. A. Coy. at Tithlow about 7 miles from this. On the outbreak of Indian hostilities “Bob” moved to the reservation opposite Steilacoom. He left in course of the winter and returned to Ft. Nisqually through dread of an Indian to whom he had formerly been a slave, and who had recently leveled a gun at him, on failing to extort property. The Indian Agents Messrs. Mcaw (?) and previously, Swan were aware that “Bob” had come to reside here and so also were Colonels Hurd & Shaw of the volunteer service.

I have the honor to be Sir      Very respectfully

Your Obdt. Servt.

(Signed)

Wm. Fraser Tolmie

Agent H B Co. & P. S. A. Co.

Fort Nisqually W. T.

Olympia, Washington, Territory,  
August 27th, 1871.

Hon. Joseph Howe,  
Secretary of State for the Provinces,  
Ottawa, Ontario, Canada.

Sir:—Although a personal stranger to yourself and not a citizen of British Columbia, yet my residence and interests in Washington Territory make me an interested observer of the policy and progress of that neighboring Province. The relations between the Indians of British Columbia and this Territory are so interwoven that a judicious system of treatment to the British Indians becomes as important to mutual stability as the conducting our own Indian policy wisely and well. Hence it is quite natural that I should feel a lively interest as to who should receive the delicate and very important position of Indian Superintendent of British Columbia. I have been advised that Hon. Wm. F. Tolmie, formerly a long and valued resident of this vicinity, is being pressed by his numerous friends for that position.

To sum up his varied qualifications for that office would require more space than I am at liberty to trespass upon you. How truly it might be said, "He would be the right man in the right place." He came to Nisqually, on Puget Sound, in 1843, and continued there till 1859, when he took up his residence at Victoria. In 1850 he saved our American Puget Sound settlements from the horrors of a general Indian war. In our Indian war of 1855-6 he labored disinterestedly and successfully to avert the horrors of Indian warfare, and to his great influence with the Indians and his intimate knowledge of their character, are our people immeasurably indebted for saving life and property and hastening the restoration of peace. I came to Puget Sound in 1851, the first Federal appointee in what is now Washington Territory. I early made the acquaintance of Dr. Tolmie. In 1855-6 I held the position of Quartermaster-General, and speak the above from personal knowledge. I afterward held the position of Superintendent of Indian Affairs for this Territory, and I know how great had been his influence and how highly he was still regarded by our Indians, and to me he was then most useful as an adviser, to say nothing of the ease of official duty, based upon the healthful influence upon the Indians of Puget Sound by his efficient charge over them for some sixteen years.

Begging your pardon for this seeming trespass,  
I am, with great respect,  
Your most obedient servant,

(Signed)

Wm. W. Miller.

Olympia, August 31st, 1871.

Dear Sir:—The friends of Dr. Wm. F. Tolmie, I am informed, are asking that he be appointed Superintendent of Indian Affairs for British Columbia. Although an American, and strictly speaking without interest in the matter, I cannot refrain from bearing testimony to the truly remarkable qualifications which fit Dr. Tolmie for this position, and which I have had abundant opportunities to observe as an old resident of Washington Territory, as the son of its first U. S. Governor, and having served in the Indian war of 1855-6, and as U. S. Collector for several years. I need not dwell on these qualifications. They are universally known and recognized, and will doubtless be brought to your attention. His great control over the Indians, the respect and esteem with which he is regarded by our people, and his well known ability and firmness, prove him the best fitted to settle those vexatious disputes and difficulties which constantly spring up along a boundary line, and especially so in this instance from the migratory habits of the Indians.

I am, Sir, very respectfully,

Hazard Stevens.

(Signed)

The Hon. Joseph Howe,

Secretary for the Provinces, Ottawa.



## BOOK REVIEWS

*Ka-mi-akin, The Last Hero of the Yakimas.* By A. J. SPLAWN.  
(North Yakima, Washington, Mrs. A. J. Splawn. 1917. Pp. 446. \$5.00.)

For more than twenty years A. J. ("Jack") Splawn was known to be busy collecting materials and writing a book about Indians, pioneers and early history, especially of the Yakima country. He finished his work but did not live to see it published. He had made all arrangements for the first edition to appear on heavily coated paper and morocco binding stamped with gold. These plans have been completed by his widow and the limited first edition is now available.

The first quarter of the book is devoted to Ka-mi-akin and the other Yakima leaders, including their conflicts with soldiers on several occasions. After recording these events and noting the deaths of the greater chiefs, the author heads the nineteenth chapter, "Entering the Promised Land." There he tells how in 1860 he, a boy of fifteen, followed his brother Charles into the Klickitat valley "to see this wild land, inhabited only by the red man. After much persuasion, my mother finally consented to let me go with my brother."

With that as the beginning and with much the same intimate tone he proceeds through the balance of the book to tell the interesting and exciting events which he witnessed and of which he was often a part.

In this book, Mr. Splawn has made a distinct contribution to the historical literature of the Pacific Northwest. He makes very few citations to archives or other books. He is very largely his own authority. Readers and users of his book will have to depend upon his statements, checking up as occasions require, with such government archives and other first-hand sources as may become available. He uses many definite dates and if by tests from subsequent researches these prove dependable his book will become one of the reference works on the "Inland Empire."

Here is an example (pages 274-275) of the self-reliant way he writes of men and dates. He is speaking of J. L. (Jordie) Williams, who worked on the Columbia River and was with Lieutenant Phil Sheridan in the battle of the Cascades. "Williams," says he, "came

to Yakima in 1866 and was in the cattle business with John Allen. They moved their herd from Yakima to the east side of the Columbia, where they located, their cattle ranging principally on Crab Creek. In 1870 Egbert French also moved his herd and family there. Allen soon left the country, but Williams remained. His herd increased to a goodly number till the winter of 1880-1 left him poorer than when he first came. Men came and went with their herds, but Jordie stayed for twenty years, often alone, except for old Indian Jim and his few people. He was an eccentric man, but a true friend. He died a few years ago in North Yakima."

Another paragraph (page 297) tells about the founding of the beautiful city of Ellensburg by building the first store as follows: "In the year 1870 Ben Burch, who was camped in the Kittitas Valley looking after Purdy Flint's cattle, and I decided to start a store. We bought a hewn log house, 14x18 feet, which stood a few miles away and contracted with Martin Daverin to haul and put it up near our old camp. We bought goods and November 20 our pack train and loaded wagons arrived. When we got through unloading the stuff, the cabin was so full that it looked as if there would be no room inside for customers. John Gillespie, a young settler of the previous year and a good friend of mine, rode up and asked how I was going to get inside to do business. I told him that I should sell first the goods nearest the door and thus gradually work my way in. He said that I needed a sign and volunteered to make me one. I accepted his offer. A few mornings later I read over my door, 'Robber's Roost.' It staggered me for a moment; but, on second thought, I concluded that perhaps John knew more about the sign business than I did. Though it did look very suggestive, I decided to let it stay."

That incident explains why some old pioneers still playfully refer to Ellensburg as the "Roost." A book filled with such stories of the old times is sure to have an earnest welcome in the Northwest. Quotations from and references to Splawn's *Ka-mi-akin* will become familiar in writings about Central Washington during the next few years.

It is unfortunate that the book has no index. The topical table of contents is helpful, but by no means takes the place of a good index. raphy and eulogy of the author. The eulogy was delivered at the raphy an deulogy of the author. The eulogy was delivered at the funeral by Austin Mires, himself a pioneer and for many years a close friend of Mr. Splawn. Judge E. P. Preble's appreciate address is also reproduced.

EDMOND S. MEANY.

*The War and Trans-Pacific Shipping.* By ABRAHAM BERGLUND. (Ithaca, New York, American Economic Association. Reprint from the American Economic Review, September, 1917, pages 553 to 568.)

Professor Berglund of the University of Washington presents a study of ownership, tonnage, freight rates and other phases of trans-Pacific shipping as affected by the present world war. The author reveals in his first paragraph the reason for his present study as follows: "The phenomenal rise of ocean freight rates since the outbreak of the present European war has been due in the main to the withdrawal of the great mercantile fleet of Germany from ocean commerce and the requisition of a large proportion of the better class of mercantile tonnage for war purposes by the allied governments. And the destruction of vessels by submarine activity has contributed its share to the increase in ocean freight rates."

He has fortified his discussion with tables of statistics gathered from Oriental, American and other sources.

---

*The Relation of Government to Property and Enterprise in the Americas.* By CHARLES W. SUTTON. (New York, Academy of Political Science, Columbia University. Reprint from Proceedings, 1917, Volume VII., pages 502 to 513.)

This address was given under the auspices of the above named organization before the National Conference on Foreign Relations at the Chamber of Commerce, New York, on June 1, 1917. The author is a graduate of the University of Washington who has had extensive experience in geologic and other surveys in eastern states, in Panama and in Peru. In the latter republic he was the Government Engineer in charge of irrigation for a number of years. At present he is a consulting engineer with offices at 2 Rector Street, New York City.

The author being a product of the Pacific Northwest, his address in pamphlet edition is receiving notice here. One quotation will suffice to illustrate his main argument: "The game of commerce is played between individuals. It will not be fairly played in the dark and under auspices of secret diplomacy. Neither the seeker after commercial advantage nor the bureaucrat of North or South America can carry on his activities with benefit to himself and to the community in the long run without the guidance of public opinion. One of the most effective and far-reaching instruments of public opinion is a free press. The press is, no doubt, far from what it should be,

but if we are to have a just relation between government and business in America we must have a press informed upon American questions."

---

*The English-Speaking Peoples.* By GEORGE LOUIS BEER. (New York, The Macmillan Company, 1917. Pp. 322. \$1.50.)

The sub-title of the book is "Their Future Relations and Joint International Obligations." The author was formerly a lecturer on European history at Columbia University. He is the author of "The Old Colonial System, 1660-1754," and "British Colonial Policy, 1754-1765." After those studies in the far past he now gives us his best thought as to the future. Readers in the Northwest with English-speaking neighbors will rejoice over the birth of such a book.

---

*Illinois in 1818.* By SOLON JUSTUS BUCK. (Springfield, Illinois, The Illinois Centennial Commission. 1917. Pp. 362.)

This work does not fall in the chosen field of this Quarterly, but it is a joy to note such activity in any part of the broader field of American history. The book is beautifully printed. The illustrations include many portraits, quaint old cuts and maps and a frontispiece in colors of Paisau Rock Alton. No doubt others of the later states will be glad to do similar work as occasion is presented.

---

#### Other Books Received

CALIFORNIA HISTORICAL SURVEY COMMISSION. *Preliminary Report, February, 1917.* (Sacramento State Printing Office. 1917. Pp. 71.)

DEBEL NIELS H. *The Veto Power of the Governor of Illinois.* (Issued as Volume 6, Parts 1 and 2, of the University of Illinois Studies in the Social Sciences. 1917. Pp. 149.)

LOUISIANA HISTORICAL SOCIETY. *Publications, Volume 9, 1916.* (New Orleans: The Society. 1917. Pp. 134.)

NEW HAMPSHIRE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. *Proceedings, Volume 5, 1905-1912.* (Concord: The Society. 1917. Pp. 443.)

WASHINGTON STATE FEDERATION OF WOMEN'S CLUBS. *Twenty-first Annual Report.* (North Yakima: Mrs. A. C. Davis, secretary. 1917. Pp. 140.)

WASHINGTON STATE GRANGE. *Proceedings of the Twenty-ninth Annual Session, June, 1917.* (Tumwater, Washington: Fred W. Lewis, secretary. 1917. Pp. 134.)



# INDEX TO VOLUME VIII, 1917

Aberdeen Pioneer Association.....	9
Alaska, the Great Country (Higginson). Note.....	234
Alexander, John S. Death.....	36
American Historical Association Meeting, December, 1916.....	80
Angus, McDonald. A Few Items of the West. Document edited by F. W. Howay, W. S. Lewis and J. A. Meyers.....	188-229
"Associates of Eighty-nine." Organized 1917.....	238
Attitude of the Hudson's Bay Company During the Indian War of 1855-56 (Documents). Edited by Clarence B. Bagley.....	291-305
Bagley, Clarence B., editor. Documents Relating to the Attitude of the Hudson's Bay Company During the Indian War of 1855-56 .....	291-305
Bagley, Clarence B. Presents Transcript of Early University of Washington Records to the University Library.....	160
Bagley, Clarence B. The Waterways of the Pacific Northwest. (Note) .....	157-158
Barclay, Dr. Forbes. Biographical (Note).....	217
Barr, Mrs. Margaret Jane. Death.....	39
Bassett, John Spencer. The Middle Group of American His- torians. Reviewed by Edward McMahon.....	155
Baynes, Robert Lambert. Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Sta- tion, 1857-1860 .....	195
Beall, Thomas B. Pioneer Reminiscences.....	83-90
Beer, George Louis. The English-Speaking Peoples. (Note)....	311
Benton County (Wash). Old Settlers' Union.....	8
Berglund, Abraham. The War and Trans-Pacific Shipping (Note)	310
Bornstein, Mrs. Louisa. Death.....	35
Boas, Franz. Tsimshian Mythology. (Review).....	231-232
Bowman, J. N. Review of Lipson's Europe in the Nineteenth Century .....	154
Brents, Judge Thomas H. Death.....	37
Brewer, Mrs. Margaret. Death.....	33
Bunch, Mrs. Sarah Isabell. Death.....	34
Burnett, Charles H. Death.....	32
Burton Historical Collection, Manuscripts From. (Note).....	68
Buck, Solon Justus. Illinois in 1818. (Note).....	311
Bushby, Arthur Thomas. Biographical Note.....	218
Byles, Mrs. Mary. Death.....	35
Callbreath, Captain John C. Death.....	34
Canfield, Oscar. Pioneer Reminiscences.....	250-256
Carlton, Robert. The New Purchase, or Seven and a Half Years in the Far West. (Note).....	70
Chambers, Thompson McLain. Death.....	38
Chief Sluskin's True Narrative. By L. V. McWhorter.....	96-101
Chisholm, Donald. Biographical Note.....	218
Chittenden, H. M. Review of Meany's Mount Rainier, a Record of Exploration .....	63-65
Channing, Edward. A History of the United States, Volume 4 (Note) .....	232
Clarke, Wellington. Death.....	32
Cochran, Jesse F. Death.....	37
Colville, Andrew. Member of Hudson's Bay Company.....	194
Colville, a Fort Established 1859.....	194
Comkanee. Indian Name for the Horse Plains in Montana....	192
Canada, Review of Historical Publications Relating to. (Note)..	72-73

Conover, Charles Tallmadge and Others. Proposal to Change the Name of Mount Rainier. (Review).....	235-236
Coonc, Elizabeth Ann. Reminiscences of a Pioneer Woman.....	14-21
Corwin, Edward S. French Policy and the American Alliance of 1778. (Note).....	67
Crawford, Samuel Le Roy. Death.....	37
Creswell, Donald C. Death.....	34
Dallas, A. J. Biographical Note.....	224
David Thompson's Journeys in the Spokane Country. By T. C. Elliott.....	183-187; 261-264
Denny, Mrs. Louisa Boren. Death.....	36
Denny, Orion D. Death.....	33
Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey. Edited by Victor J. Farrar.....	40-62; 124-152
Douglas, James. Letters Showing Attitude of Hudson's Bay Company During the Indian War of 1855-56. (Document)....	291-305
Douglas, James William. Biographical Note.....	223
Drumheller, Mrs. Martha A. Death.....	38
Duncan, William. Death.....	39
Dunlap, S. S. Death.....	33
Early Records of the University of Washington. By Edmond S. Meany.....	114-123
Ebey Diary. Edited by Victor J. Farrar.....	40-62; 124-152
Elliott, T. C. David Thompson's Journeys in the Spokane Country.....	183-187; 261-264
"Enterprise." Steamer Brought to Puget Sound in 1861.....	219
Farrar, Victor J. Pioneer and Historical Societies of the State of Washington.....	7-13
Farrar, Victor J., editor. Diary of Colonel and Mrs. I. N. Ebey.....	40-62; 124-152
Farrar, Victor J. joint author. Proposal to Change the Name of Mount Rainier. (Review).....	235-236
Finlayson, Roderick. Biographical Note.....	219
First Immigrants to Cross the Cascades. By David Longmire...	22-23
(The) First White Women in Wyoming. By Grace R. Hebard...	29-31
Fleming, C. P. Death.....	32
Fordyce, C. P. Touring Afoot. (Note).....	233
Forts of the Washington Fur Trade (Sperlin).....	102-113
Frost, Mrs. Jane. Death.....	34
Fur Trade Forts of Washington (Sperlin).....	102-113
Garfield County Pioneer Association.....	8-9
Geographic Names of Washington (Meany).....	265-290
Gholson, Richard Dickerson (Meany).....	180-182
Gillespie, John W. Death.....	35
Glore, Michael. Death.....	32
Gold Discovered in British Columbia, 1855.....	224
Gold Discovered at Colville in 1854.....	201
Golder, Frank A. Father Herman, Alaska's Saint. (Note)....	73-74
Golder, Frank A. Guide to Materials for American History in Russian Archives. (Review).....	230-231
Golder, Frank A. The Russian Offer of Mediation in the War of 1812. (Note).....	71-72
Government, Teaching of. (Note).....	73
Grand Prairie.....	205
(The) Gray Memorial.....	76-77
Gray Memorial Celebration. (Note).....	68-69
Gray's Harbor County, Pioneer Association of.....	9
Grennon, Mrs. Genevieve. Death.....	34
Gristmill at Colville Falls.....	198
Guide to Materials for American History in Russian Archives. By F. A. Golder. (Review).....	230-231

Gwydir, R. D. A Record of the San Poil Indians.....	243-250
Hailey, John. Report of the Librarian of Idaho Historical Society, 1916 .....	232-233
Hall, Clifton R. Andrew Johnson, Military Governor of Tennessee. (Note) .....	156
Hayes, C. J. H. Political and Social History of Modern Europe. (Note) .....	73
Haynes, Fred E. Third Party Movements Since the Civil War; With Special Reference to Iowa. Reviewed by Edward McMahon .....	66-67
Haynes, John C. ....	202
Heberman, Charles G. Death.....	154
Hebard, Grace Raymond. The First White Women in Wyoming. ....	29-31
Henry, Mrs. Eliza B. Death.....	36
Higginson, Ella. Alaska, the Great Country. (Note).....	234
Hill, Robert Crosby. Death.....	35
History in Railroad Literature.....	239
Historical Society of Southern California. Annual Publications, 1915-16. (Note) .....	155-156
Howay, F. W., joint editor. Angus McDonald: A Few Items of the West. (Document).....	188-229
Howay, F. W. The Spanish Settlement at Nootka.....	163-171
Hughes, Mrs. Flora Eloris Payne. Death.....	32
Idaho History Outline. By H. L. Talkington. (Note).....	69
Idaho, Historical Society of, Librarian's Report, 1916. (Note) ..	232-233
Immigrants of 1853 Who Crossed the Cascades to Puget Sound (Longmire) .....	22-28
Indian War of 1855-56, The Attitude of the Hudson's Bay Company During .....	291-305
Inland Empire Pioneer Association.....	12
Isaacs, Mrs. H. P. Death.....	38
Israel, George C. Death.....	38
Jackson, F. J. F. Social Life in England, 1750-1850.....	74
Jacobs, Hiram J. Death.....	36
Janes, George Milton. The Control of Strikes in American Trade Unions. (Note).....	69-70
Jenner, Charles K. Death.....	35
Judson, Katharine B. Myths and Legends of British North America. (Note) .....	232-233
Justice to the Mountain Committee. Pamphlet Urging a Change in the Name of Mount Rainier. (Review).....	235-236
Ka-mi-akin, the Last Hero of the Yakimas (Splawn). Reviewed by E. S. Meany.....	308-309
Keyes, E. D. Letter During Indian War of 1855-56. (Document) ..	300-301
Kitsap County Pioneers' Association.....	9
Klotz, Otto. History of the 49th Parallel Survey West of the Rocky Mountains. (Note).....	234-235
"Kullyspell House," built by David Thompson, 1809.....	194
Ladd and Bush Quarterly. (Note).....	157
Lewis, William S. The Case of Spokane Garry. (Note).....	156
Lewis, William S. Presents Transcript of the Walker Diaries to the University of Washington Library.....	159-160
Lewis, William S., editor. Pioneer Reminiscences of Thomas B. Beall .....	83-90
Lewis, William S., joint editor. Angus McDonald: A Few Items of the West. (Document).....	188-229
Lincoln and Adams County Pioneer and Historical Association..	9-10
Lipson, E. Europe in the Nineteenth Century. Reviewed by J. N. Bowman.....	154
Longmire, David. First Immigrants to Cross the Cascades....	22-28

Lyman, W. D. The Congregational Home Missionary Associations of the Northwest. (Note).....	156
McClellan, George B. Mexican War Diary of. By W. S. Myers. (Note) .....	233
McDonald, Angus. A Few Items of the West. (Document)....	188-229
McDonald, Finan. Employed by Hudson's Bay Company, 1821-1825 .....	194
McDonald, John Fulton. Death.....	34
McDonald, William James. Biographical Note.....	221
McDonnen, Phinan. Same as McDonald, Finan.....	194
McMahon, Edward. Review of Haynes' Third Party Movements Since the Civil War.....	66-67
McMahon, Edward. Review of J. S. Bassett's The Middle Group of American Historians .....	155
McWhorter, Lucullus V. Chief Sluskin's True Narrative.....	96-101
Markers for the Oregon Trail.....	77-79
Mason, Charles H. Letter During Indian War of 1855-56. (Document) .....	300
Meany, Edmond S. Early Records of the University of Washington .....	114-123
Meany, Edmond S. Richard Dickerson Gholson.....	180-182
Meany, Edmond S. Review of Mrs. Warren's Memoirs of the West, the Spaldings.....	65-66
Meany, Edmond S. Review of Quaife's The Journals of Captain Meriweather Lewis and Serjeant John Ordway.....	153-154
Meany, Edmond S. The Pioneer Association of the State of Washington .....	3-6
Meany, Edmond S. Review of Scott's Religion, Theology and Morals .....	230
Meany, Edmond S. Review of Splawn's Ka-mi-akin, the Last Hero of the Yakimas.....	308-309
Meany, Edmond S. Washington Geographic Names.....	265-290
Meany, Edmond S., editor. Mount Rainier, a Record of Exploration .....	63-65
Memoirs of the West. The Spaldings (Warren). Reviewed by E. S. Meany.....	65-66
Meyers, Jacob A. joint editor. Angus McDonald: A Few Items of the West. (Document).....	188-229
Mexican War Diary of George B. McClellan. By W. S. Meyers. (Note) .....	233
(The) Middle Group of American Historians (Bassett). Reviewed by Edward McMahon.....	155
Moody, Richard Clement. Biographical Note.....	218
Moorehead, Warren K. Stone Ornaments Used by the Indians in the U. S. (Note).....	154
Moran, Robert. Launches His Yacht "Sanwan".....	240
Mount Rainier, a Record of Exploration. By Edmond S. Meany. Reviewed by H. M. Chittenden.....	63-65
Mount Rainier. Proposal to Change the Name of.....	235-236
Mount Rainier. Chief Sluskin's Narrative.....	96-101
Munro, Alexander. Biographical Note.....	220
Munroe, Mrs. Elizabeth. Death.....	38
Murphy, John Miller. Death.....	39
Murray, Mrs. Henry. Death.....	35
Myers, William Starr, editor. The Mexican War Diary of George B. McClellan. (Note) .....	233
Names of Washington, Origin of.....	265-290
National Board for Historical Service.....	239-240
Native Daughters of Washington.....	8
Native Daughters of Washington Pioneers.....	8
Native Sons of Washington.....	8



Nootka, The Spanish Settlement at (Howay).....	163-171
Noyes, Mrs. Melissa L. Death.....	34
Nugen, John. Letter to James Tilton During Indian War of 1855-56. (Document) .....	296
Okanogan County Pioneer Association.....	10
Okanogan Mission .....	205
Oregon Historical Society. Meeting in Portland, October, 1916..	79-80
Oregon Place Names (Steel).....	157
Oregon Trail, Markers for.....	77-79
Pacific Coast Branch of the American Historical Association. Meeting at San Diego, December, 1916.....	80
Pickering, William. Washington's War Governor.....	91-95
Pierce County Pioneers' Association.....	10
Pig, Quarrel Over a Hudson's Bay Company's.....	195
Pioneer Association of the State of Washington. Annual Meet- ing, 1917 .....	238-239
Pioneer Association of the State of Washington.....	7
Pioneer Association of the State of Washington. By E. S. Meany	3-6
The Pioneer Dead of 1916. By Edith G. Prosch.....	32-39
Pioneer and Historical Societies of the State of Washington. By V. J. Farrar.....	7-13
(The) Pioneers and Patriotism. By Hazard Stevens.....	172-179
Pioneer Reminiscences. By Oscar Canfield.....	250-256
Pioneer Reminiscences. By Thomas B. Beall.....	83-90
Porter, Nathaniel E. Death.....	37
Port Orchard Fifty Years Ago. By W. B. Seymore.....	257-260
Priestley, Herbert Ingram. Jose de Galvez. (Note).....	67-68
Prosch, Edith G. The Pioneer Dead of 1916.....	32-39
Prosch, Edith G. Presents Wallace Collection of Documents to University of Washington Library.....	159
Quaife, Milo M. editor. The Journals of Captain Meriweather Lewis and Sergeant John Ordway. Reviewed by E. S. Meany .....	153-154
Rabbeson, Mrs. Lucy A. Death.....	36
Railroad Literature Preserved.....	239
A Record of the San Poil Indians. By R. D. Gwydir.....	243-250
Religion, Theology and Morals (Scott). Reviewed by E. S. Meany	230
Reminiscences of a Pioneer Woman. By Elizabeth A. Coonc....	14-21
Richard Dickerson Gholson. By E. S. Meany.....	180-182
Russian Archives, Guide to (Golder).....	230-231
Ross, Mrs. Mary Jane McMillan. Death.....	36
Saleesh House, First Established by David Thompson, 1809....	192
San Juan County Pioneer Association.....	10
San Juan Dispute .....	195-196
San Poil Indians (Gwydir).....	243-250
"Sanwan," Launching of the. By Robert Moran.....	240
Schurman, J. G. The Balkan Wars. (Note).....	73
Scott, Harvey W. Religion, Theology and Morals. Reviewed by E. S. Meany.....	230
(The) Seattle Fire. Commemorated by the "Associates of Eighty-nine" .....	238
Seattle Historical Society .....	9
Seymore, W. B. Port Orchard Fifty Years Ago.....	257-260
Seymour, Frederick. Biographical Note.....	221
"Sin a Jial a min," a Jesuit Mission Established 1853.....	190
Skagit County Pioneer Association.....	10
Sons of the American Revolution. Register of the Washington State Society. (Note).....	234
Southwest Washington Pioneer Day Association.....	12
Southern California, Historical Society of. Annual Publications, 1915-16. (Note) .....	155-156

Spalding, Eliza Hart. First White Woman in Wyoming. (Hebard)	29-31
Spalding Family History in a Book by Mrs. Eliza Spalding Warren	65-66
(The) Spanish Settlement at Nootka. By F. W. Howay	163-171
Sperlin, O. B. Washington Forts of the Fur Trade Regime	102-113
Splawn, A. J. Ka-mi-akin, the Last Hero of the Yakimas. Reviewed by E. S. Meany	308-309
Spokane Country, David Thompson's Journeys in the (Elliott)	183-187; 261-264
Spokane County Pioneer Society	11
Spokane Garry, the Case of. By W. S. Lewis. (Note)	156
Spokane Historical Society	11
Steel, William Gladstone. Steel Points. (Note)	157
Stephenson, J. W. Letter to, From Governor William Pickering	91-95
Stevens County Pioneer Association	11
Stevens, Hazard. The Pioneers and Patriotism	172-179
Stevens, Isaac Ingalls. Plan to Honor Memory of	160
Steward, Mrs. Angeline. Death	38
Stillaguamish Valley Association of Washington Pioneers	10-11
Stuck, Hudson. Ten Thousand Miles With a Dog Sled. (Note)	68
Sutton, Charles W. The Relation of Government to Property and Enterprise in the Americas. (Note)	310
Taft, William Howard. Our Chief Magistrate and His Powers. (Note)	70
Talkington, H. L. Outline for the Study of Idaho History. (Note)	69
Teggart, Frederick J. Prolegomena to History. (Note)	68
Templeton, William. Death	33
Third Party Movements Since the Civil War (Haynes). Reviewed by Edward McMahon	66-67
Thurston County, Pioneer and Historical Society of	11-12
Tilton, James. Letters During Indian War of 1855-56. (Document)	291-305
Tolmie, William F. Letters During Indian War of 1855-56. (Document)	291-305
Tolmie, William Fraser. Biographical Note	220
(The) Tourists Northwest. By R. K. Wood. (Note)	70-71
Turney, L. J. S. Territorial Secretary Under Governor Pickering	94
University of Washington. Early Records	114-123
University of Washington Records. Transcribed by C. B. Bagley	160
Van Brunt, William D.	33
Walker, Donald. Biographical Note	212
Walker, Reverend Elkanah and Mary R. Diaries From 1835-1852. Transcribed by W. S. Lewis	159-160
Wallace Collection of Manuscripts Presented to University of Washington Library	159
Warren, Eliza Spalding. Memoirs of the West, the Spaldings. Reviewed by E. S. Meany	65-66
Washington Forts of the Fur Trade Regime. By O. B. Sperlin	102-113
Washington Geographic Names. By Edmond S. Meany	265-290
Washington Pioneer Associations	7-13
Washington State Historical Society	7-8
Washington University State Historical Society	8
Waterways of the Pacific Northwest. By C. B. Bagley. (Note)	157-158
Weaver, Charles E. The Tertiary Formations of Western Washington. (Note)	72
Weir, Allen. Death	38-39
Whatcom County, Old Settlers' Association of	12
Whitman County Pioneers' Association	12
Whitman Massacre. Reminiscences of Oscar Canfield	250-256
Whitman, Narcissa Prentiss. First White Woman in Wyoming (Hebard)	29-31

Wichliff, Nathaniel. Lieutenant Stationed at Fort Colville.....	196
Wolf, Mrs. Regina. Death.....	32
Wolf, Simon. Death.....	34
Women's Pioneer Auxiliary of the State of Washington.....	8
Wood, Ruth Kedzie. The Tourists' Northwest. (Note).....	70-71
Woodbridge, F. J. E. The Purpose of History. (Note).....	72
Wright, I. A. The Early History of Cuba. (Note).....	69
Yakima Columbian Association.....	13
Yakima Pioneer's Association.....	12-13











3 9001 02057 2361





